This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Googlebooks

https://books.google.com



## GREAT WAR

THE STANDARD HISTORY
OF THE
ALL EUROPE CONFLICT

Edited by H.W.WILSON

Digitized by Google

Ex Libris
C. K. OGDEN

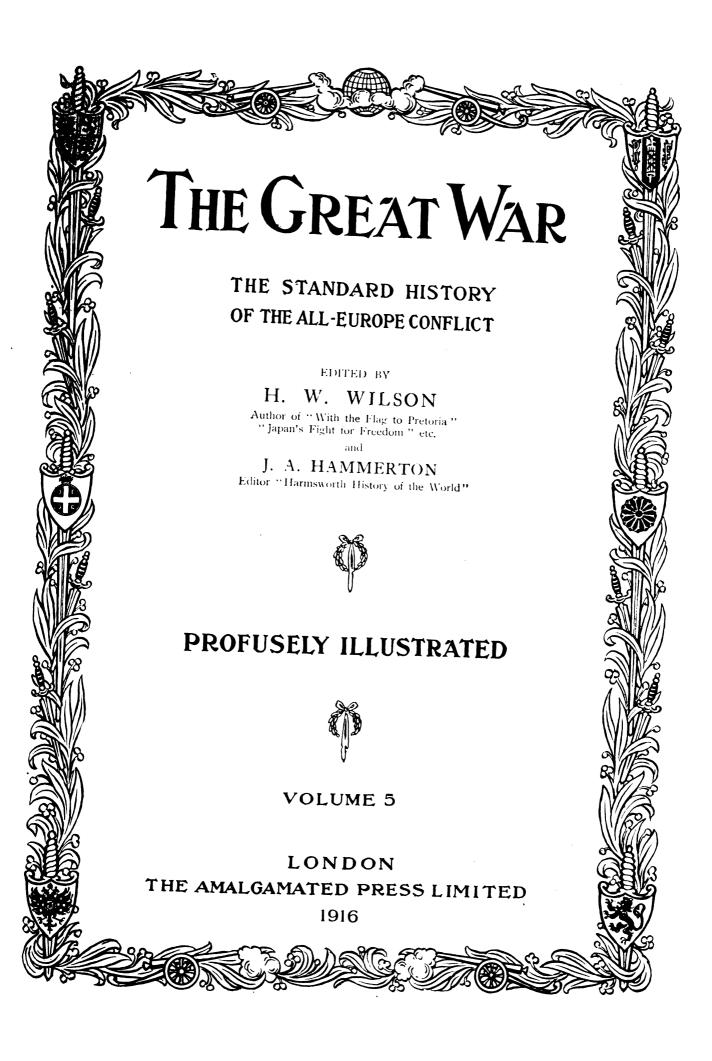
## THE GREAT WAR

VOLUME 5



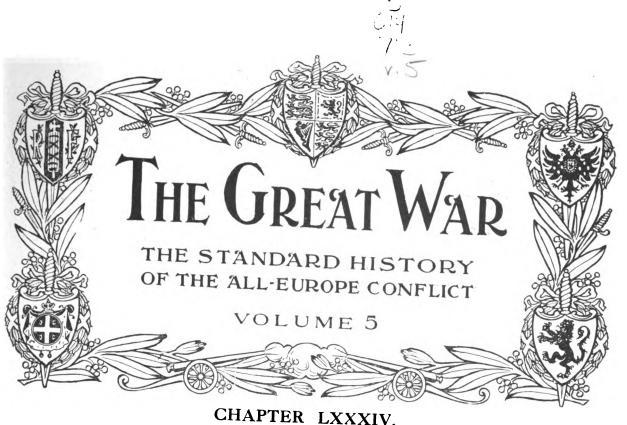


Digitized by Google





								PAGE
CHAPTER Intrigue and Treachery in the Balkans		v.						1
CHAPTER The Breaking of the Russian Fortress Lin and Hindenburg	LXXX <sup>1</sup> ne and th	V. e Fa	ilures	of	Mac	k e n s e	en	29
CHAPTER The New Cabinet and its Work: Politics			ns					65
CHAPTER The Conquest of Togoland and Cameroon	LXXXV	/II.						79
CHAPTER The Great Drive in the West and the Ba								91
CHAPTER The Great French Offensive in Champag			; <i>-</i>					152
	ER XC.							177
CHAPT The Mountain Battles for "Italia Irredo	ER XCI							207
CHAPT German Inhumanity to British Prisoners	ER XCI	Σ. •						250
CHAPT: Serbia's Glorious Resistance and the Fa	ER XCII		•	•				271
CHAPT: The Glorious and Terrible Campaign o	ER XCI'		ımıar	ı Ar	m y			292
CHAPT The Great Leaders of the Allies in the	ER XC							325
CHAPT The Aerial War along the Western Fro	ER XCV	71.				•		353
CHAPT The Struggle on the Dwina and the Ro	ER XCV		. បននា					371
CHAPTI The Derby Recruiting Campaign	ER XCV	III.					•	397
CHAPT Serbia's Hard Fate, the Allies' Retire	ER XCI		ntene	gro's	s Ov	erthr	cw -	421
	•••		- <del>-</del>					
SPECIAL PHOTO	GRAVI	JRE	PL	.AT	ES			
Charging Through the German Trench	nes at Lo	os				1	Front	ispiece
The Historic Landing from the "Riv	er Clyde	,,				Fa	cing	page 7
General Sir William Birdwood						Fac	ing p	age 78



Stack Annex

## CHAPTER LXXXIV. INTRIGUE AND TREACHERY IN THE BALKANS. By Robert Machray.

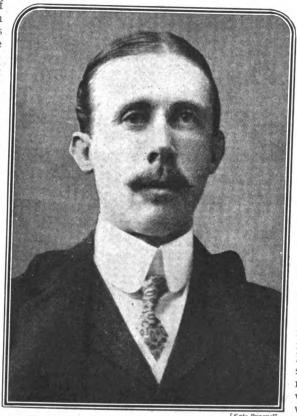
How the Situation in the Balkans Favoured the Entente when 1915 Opened—More in Seeming than in Reality—Factors at Work Below the Surface—The Balkans a Geographical and Historical Tragedy—Bitter Racial and Ecclesiastical Animosities Prevent League's Success in First Balkan War—How Discord Arose over Macedonia—Increased by Treaty of London—Bulgaria's Ground—Discomfiture of Bulgaria Fought Serbia and Greece, Rumania Intervened, and Turkey Recovered Lost States against Germany—Opposition of Germany—Demands of Bulgaria—Entente Negotiations for Union of the Balkan between Venizelos and the King of Greece—Fall of Venizelos—"The Terror of the Danube"—The Secret Treaty Between Fresh Quarrel between Venizelos and Greek King—Venizelos Again Resigns—French and British Troops Land at Salonika—The Secret Treaty Revealed—Serbia Invaded

A

1915 the situation in the Balkans appeared to be distinctly favourable to the En-

able to the Entente Powers. To the surprise of the whole world, the third invasion of Serbia by Austria had in the end been disastrously defeated by the heroic mountaineers, their astonishing victories culminating in one of the most dramatic episodes of the war—the recapture on December 15th, 1914, of Belgrade, their capital, after it had been in the hands of their arrogant enemy for no longer a period than a fortnight.

Bitterly humiliated, but on that account all the more determined to destroy her small but unexpectedly formidable opponent, Austria soon concentrated on the Danube another large and powerful army. In January, however, her attention was diverted from Serbia by successful Russian offensives in Bukovina and in the Carpathians, which placed Hungary in danger, and led her to withdraw the bulk of her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her



her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier and mass them in her forces from the Balkan frontier in Sofia, a few weeks before the British declaration of war against Bulgaria.

threatened territory—with the result that the little kingdom was given a respite from serious attack.

Serbia was the pivot on which the war turned in South-Eastern Europe, and her signal defeat of the big bully who had planned to compass her ruin was of vital service to the Entente Powers, as it prevented the Austro-Germans from carrying out then their cherished project of linking up with their ally Turkey.

The striking triumph of Serbia had naturally a marked effect on the other Balkan States, who, as the new year opened, were still further impressed by the débâcle of the Turks which Russia brought about in the Caucasus and, later, by the Russian operations against Austria. Greece, allied by treaty with Serbia and inalienably hostile to Turkey, rejoiced, the great majority of her people showing openly their strong animosity to the Germanic league. Popular feeling was deeply stirred in Rumania, whose contiguity to Bukovina made the Russian occupation of that province of peculiarly intimate interest, and whose

2025823





KING CONSTANTINE AND M. VENIZELOS.

The King of the Hellenes chatting with his Prime Minister prior to the latter's resignation in October, 1915.

hopes of union with her blood-brethren in Transylvania flamed high because of the terrible reverses Austria had sustained. M. Take Jonescu, one of Rumania's leading statesmen, declared emphatically that his country would cast in her lot with Great Britain, France and Russia, and said he was confident that Bulgaria, of whose probable course he professed himself to be well informed, would act in a similar manner.

But if the aspect of affairs in the Balkans thus looked roseate for the Powers of the Entente, there were factors in the situation which, an class counting

Treachery beneath
the surface
in the situation which, on close scrutiny.
inevitably suggested that beneath the
smiling surface lay treacherous, perilous
depths. These factors were based on

geography and racialism, and rooted in history and religion. They included the aspirations and ambitions, the passions and the prejudices, the struggles and the bitternesses of hundreds of years all centred, as by a burning glass, in the war. In no other portion of the globe, or within so comparatively small a part of its extent, could there be found such a welter of human beings, such differences of character, disposition and outlook, as in the Balkans. And over all towered the colossal form of the Central Powers, whose "Drang nach Osten" was a constant menace to their independence, if not their very existence, long before the war began, and still was a force to be reckoned with

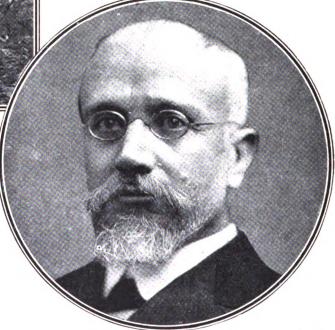
in spite of Russian and Serbian victories. Well might the Balkans be called the witches' cauldron of Europe!

The geography of the Near Eastern region was an embodied tragedy. In some period not geologically far distant a vast subsidence of the earth's crust took place in that quarter—the Balkan countries, the Ægean Islands, and Asia Minor—the highlands of the submerged continent remaining above the invading waters. Of these survivals the area to which the ranges of the Balkans have given their name was a veritable maze of mountains, broken only by small rivers, and devoid of valleys or plains suitable for large communities. Within the peninsula there was no natural centre around which, as a

nucleus, a really great State could form and grow. This meant that amongst the inhabitants of

the land intense rivalries were sure to develop. From north to south there was but one highway—or rather defile, for it was not unobstructed—the road from the Danube at the modern Belgrade to Salonika on the sea. It had been the avenue along which many armies had passed, and nothing was more significant of the terror it inspired than the fact that, with the exception of a few cities, the towns and villages hid themselves away from it in the hills. There were two other natural highways, both branching from the north-to-south road; one went south-east to the Bosphorus—another blood-stained passage—and the other struck west to the Adriatic; both were difficult, being defiles rather than roads.

History is the child of geography, and the story



M. ELEUTHEROS VENIZELOS.

Greek patriot and statesman. Retired from his position as Premier on King Constantine refusing to support his policy.

of the Balkans but accentuated the tragedy which Nature had imposed. In modern times that story revolved round the slow, painful deliverance from the Turks of the races they had conquered centuries before, and the establishment of these races in the kingdoms of Greece, Serbia, Rumania, and Bulgaria. Montenegro, of close kin to Serbia, never had been entirely subdued, and Albania, though it had been made into a principality, was not much more than a mere name. At the outset of the war, Greece,



Montenegro, Rumania, and Bulgaria were known collectively as the Balkan States; but, except between Serbia and Montenegro, and more loosely between Serbia and Greece, genuine cohesion did not exist. Neither in race nor in religion did they find a bond of union. The Serbians and the Bulgarians hated each other, though they came of Slav stock, and racially neither had anything in common with the Greeks, nor with the Rumanians, who were of Latin origin, and whose territory, properly speaking, lay outside the Balkans, yet was brought within their orbit by the force of circumstances. Furthermore, of the monarchs who occupied the Balkan thrones only



ARRIVAL OF BRITISH TRANSPORT AT SALONIKA. The landings at Salonika proceeded in perfect order. It was reported that some enemy submarines tried to cause trouble, but without any success.

Kings of Serbia and Montenegro were natives. The faith professed by the bulk of the Balkan peoples was that of the Eastern or Greek Church, but the religious organisation of each country was independent of that of the others, and all were at variance.

Yet it was in union, and only in union, that the Balkan States could be really strong. Separately each was weak; but together their population approximated to twenty millions, and, having universal and compulsory service, they would have been able to put into the field very nearly two million of men-a formidable army which not

even a Great Power could despise. Mutual Balkans' strength interests in commerce and industries did not suffice to unite them. Outside pres-

sure might conceivably have welded them into one; outside pressure there was, but it was divided, and instead of leading to a confederation of the States, had the effect of making it impossible. They were overshadowed by Austria and Russia, both of whom showed the deepest concern with their affairs; but as these mighty empires were rivals, the one more or less offset the other.

BRITISH TROOPS DISEMBARKING AT SALONIKA.

When, in October, 1915, Bulgaria threw in her lot with Austria, Germany, and Turkey, British and French troops were landed at Salonika to aid Serbia, Greece making only a purely formal protest.

At various times in their history one Balkan State or another had invoked and received the assistance of one or the other of these Great Powers, and hence the policy of individual States had a definite leaning towards Austria or Russia.

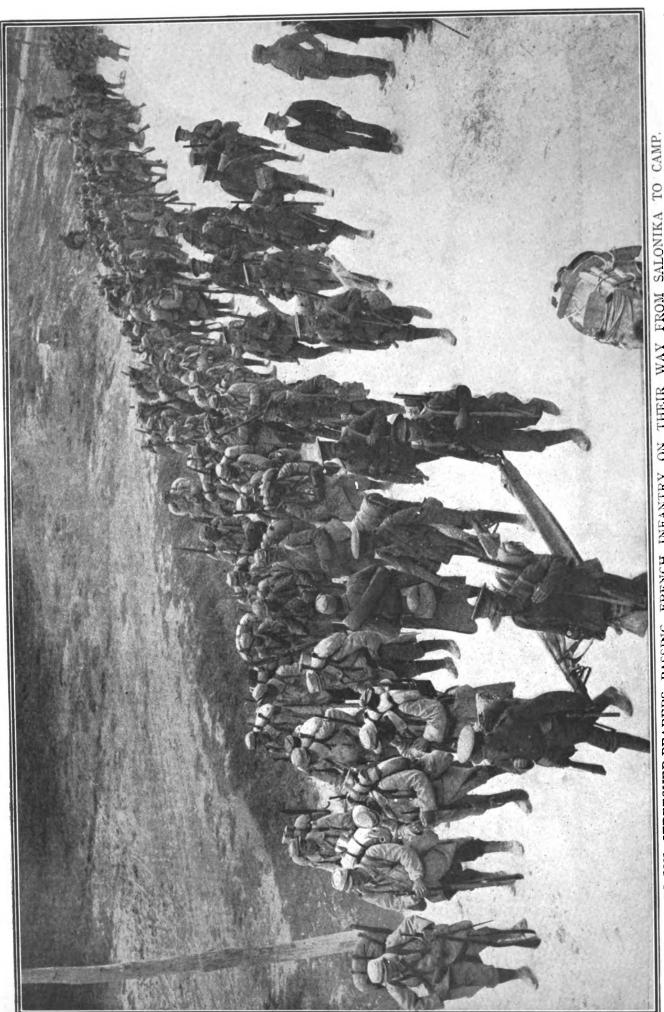
It might be thought that at least in one direction the Balkan States would have presented a united front — that is, against Turkey; but the only union of the States against her did not include them all, and eventually led to further divisions, which seriously complicated the whole Balkan situation. This union produced the First Balkan War,

and it looked at its outset as if the world were in sight of

the achievement of what had been held impossible—the formation of a veritable Balkan League's Balkan League, which was the title given deceptive promise to the allied States who declared war on

Turkey at the close of September, 1912. Rumania stood aloof; her interest, however, in the struggle was less direct than that of the others. On the other hand, her very aloofness from it made her position decisive in the conflict which came afterwards. In spite of the fact that Bulgaria and Serbia had not been friends, and had tried conclusions on the battlefield of Slivnitza with disaster to the Serbians, they were the first members of the League. Greece joined them a little later, and with Serbia went Montenegro. This union of four of the States was in the main the work of three remarkable men, natives of the country, Pasich the Serbian, Gueshoff the Bulgarian, and Venizelos the Greek, each of them being at the time Prime Minister of his State.

The story of Eleutheros Venizelos was one of the romances of modern politics. When he was no more than fifteen he shouldered a rifle in Crete, which then belonged to Turkey, and fought bravely with other insurgents to bring about



BRITISH STRETCHER-BEARERS PASSING FRENCH INFANTRY ON THEIR WAY FROM SALONIKA TO CAMP. real bading troops at Salonika in the early part of October, 1915, gallant little Serbia the Bulgarians attacked the Salonika-Nish railway near Vrania. It was announced that the French General on the introduced many on the little Serbia sarrail was in full command of the allied operations. The British trayps were met on their arrival by Brigadier-General A. B. Hamilton. While the Allies were landing troops at Salonika in the early part of October, 1915, gallant little Serbia was being attacked from the north by Austro-German forces under Generals von Mackensen, von Gallwitz and von Koevess, and from the east by the Bulgarians. While the Teutonic forces occupied Belgrade,

Digitized by Google

Greece was governed for some months by "The Military League,"

but finding the situa-

tion getting beyond control, the League appealed to Venizelos,

then Prime Minister

of Crete, for help. Within three weeks

he brought order out

of chaos by obtaining the consent of all parties, including the King, who had thought

of abdicating, to the creation of a National

Assembly to revise the

the cession of the island to Greece. For long this was his chief aim in life. His honesty caused him to protest against the arbitrary rule of Prince George of Greece, to whom, as High Commissioner, the Powers had entrusted the government of Crete on its being handed over by the Turks, and he was instrumental in procuring that prince's recall. He came to have a great reputation in Greece, and 1910 brought him his opportunity there. In the previous year, as the result of a peaceful revolution headed by certain Army officers,

[ Killiott & Fry. DR. DANEFF.

The Bulgarian patriot, one of the most enthusiastic followers of Karaveloff, the founder of the party which arose in opposition to the anti-Russian propaganda of the notorious Stambuloff.

constitution. Shortly afterwards he became Prime Minister of Greece, and immediately set about Prime Minister of Greece, and immediately set about reorganising the administration and reconstructing the Army and Navy. Simple in life and unaffected in manners, he had the gift of persuasive eloquence, a cool judgment joined to the power of rapid decision, and executive ability of the highest kind.

M. Pasich, the Premier of Serbia, was by profession an engineer, but soon turned his attention to politics, in which he achieved marked success. He was not always on the

he achieved marked success. He was not always on the winning side, for during the reign of King Milan he stoutly

Workers for Balkan unity

opposed the pro-Austrian policy of that sovereign, was arrested, and thrown into prison. Easily the best and most progressive politician in Serbia, he was a strenuous

advocate of the unification of Serbia, Montenegro, Bosnia, Herzegovina, Dalmatia, Croatia, Slavonia, and the Slovene districts of Austria in one mighty confederation of the Southern Slavs.

Of M. Gueshoff, the third of the Balkan leaders, not so much was known, but he was a statesman of the first rank, a far-sighted patriot, and a man in whom the majority of

the Bulgarians had every confidence. Behind him, however, stood the sinister figure of Ferdinand, the King, a crafty, intriguing prince with ideas of his own, one of which was to make himself not only Autocrat of Bulgaria but of All the Balkans.

The Balkan League had for its object the freeing of Macedonia and Albania from the Turks, and the division among its members of the land thus acquired. The chief preoccupa-tion of Bulgaria was to get Macedonia; of Serbia, to obtain an outlet to the sea through Northern Albania (of which Montenegro also desired a share); and of Greece, to add to herself Epirus, in Southern Albania, Crete, and some at least of the Ægean Islands.

War broke out on September 30th, 1912, and its issue was a wonderful triumph for torious at Lule Burgas,

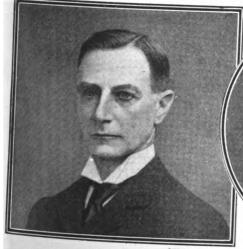


the League. The Bulgarians were vic
M. P. HADJIMISCHEFF.

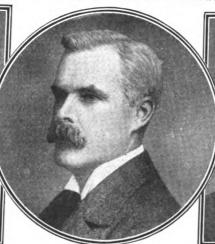
Bulgarian Minister in London from December 1974 to October 1975. ber, 1914, to October, 1915.

and the Serbians at Kumanovo, while the Greeks drove their old enemy to and then from Salonika. Adrianople was occupied, and Constantinople threatened. The Serbians reached Durazzo on the Adriatic, and the Montenegrins took Scutari. Turkey, hopelessly beaten, sued for peace, which was arranged by the Treaty of London, May 30th,

The very success of the Leaguers, however, opened up grave disputes among them, and one of the Great Powers that overshadowed the Balkans, and had hoped that



SIR FRANCIS E. H. ELLIOT. British Minister to Greece. He went to Athens in 1903, after being Consul-General at Sofia from 1895 to 1903.



SIR GEORGE H. BARCLAY. British Minister to Rumania. He went to Bukarest in 1912. In 1906 he was at the British Embassy in Constantinople.



SIR CHARLES LOUIS DES GRAZ. British Minister to Serbia. He was appointed in 1913, having been formerly attached to the Legations at Teheran. Athens, and Rome.



MAP OF THE BALKANS BEFORE THE FIRST BALKAN WAR OF 1912-13.

the war, through the defeat of the League, would lead to her own profit, persistently busied herself in adding fuel to the flames. This Great Power was Austria. Had she acted differently, there would have been no Second Balkan War; but she hated Serbia, and already was resolved on her destruction.

Largely because of the determined attitude of Austria. who had the support of Germany in the London Conference, Albania was made an independent principality, Serbia was denied its coveted outlet, and Greece was deprived of Epirus, while Montenegro had to give up Scutari. Both Serbia and Greece had conquered parts of Macedonia during the war, nor would they yield to Bulgaria those portions which she had earmarked for herself.

Macedonia was the rock on which the League went to pieces. The Treaty of London confirmed Serbia and Greece in The Treaty of London the possession of the portion of the province from which they had ousted the Turks, and no

more than a month passed when Bulgaria, deeply resentful, particularly with Serbia, and secretly egged on by Austria,

plunged the Balkans into war again.

Feeling between the two little Slav nations was most bitter; their immemorial mutual hatred was stirred to the lowest depths. Both had a case. Serbia maintained that at the London Conference Bulgaria failed to back up her claim to a port in Albania, and, therefore, that she was entitled to compensation in Macedonia; but Bulgaria retorted that the treaty between herself and Serbia, which had been entered into before the war and was the foundation of the League, definitely assigned to her that part of Macedonia which Serbia had taken, and further, that this territory was inhabited by Bulgarians, who desired to unite themselves with her and not with Serbia. Bulgaria undoubtedly had a certain amount of justice on her side, and it was unquestionably the fact that, although

without her there could have been no League, and that Turkey could not have been conquered, she yet obtained less under the Treaty of London than either Serbia or

Macedonia, or rather "the Macedonian Question," as it was termed, had for years been one of the open sores both of the Balkans and of Europe. Bounded on the north by the Kara Range and Bulgaria, on the east by the Mesta, on the south by the Ægean and Greece, and on the west by the Shar, Grammus, and Pindus chains, the province derived its importance mainly from containing the valley of the Vardar, the southern part of the great natural highway across the Balkans, the gate of which in the north was Belgrade and in the south

Salonika. A railway connected the two "The Macedonian cities, crossed the Danube, and linked up Question "

with Central Europe. The vast majority of the population, which was over two million, was Christian, Greek or Bulgar; Salonika, a city of 160,000

souls, was largely Jewish.

Bulgaria, after being subjected to atrocities which shocked the world, was rescued from Turkey by Russia, aided by Rumania, in 1877-78, after a desperate and pro-tracted struggle. By the Treaty of San Stefano, March 3rd, 1878, all Macedonia, except Salonika and the Chalcidic Peninsula, was included in Bulgaria, but this was set aside by the Treaty of Berlin, July 13th, 1878, which gave Macedonia back to the Turks who, however, covenanted to reform their administration of it, according the Powers the right of seeing this bargain carried out.

Turkey, taking advantage of the rivalries of the Powers, introduced few reforms, and the general condition of the province gradually became worse instead of better. When the revolution brought about by the Young Turks succeeded, and the restoration of the Turkish Constitution



MAP SHOWING THE NEW BALKAN FRONTIERS, AS SETTLED BY THE TREATY OF BUKAREST IN 1913, AT THE CLOSE OF THE SECOND BALKAN WAR.



Digitized by Google



of 1876 was proclaimed, the Powers, looking for a change in the state of Macedonia, desisted from urging reforms; but there was no improvement under the Young Turks. The Bulgars of Macedonia turned their eyes to Bulgaria, and it was to deliver them that she allied berself with Serbia against Turkey. The Treaty of London, however, placed them under Serbia.

MOUNTED BATTERY OF THE RUMANIAN ARTILLERY. Both horse and field batteries of the Rumanian artillery were armed with the 75 mm. Krupp quick-firer.

Rankling under what she considered an intolerable wrong, and incited by Austria, her evil genius, who was playing a deep game of her own, Bulgaria suddenly began the Second Balkan War, on June 29th, 1913, but was defeated—to her great surprise and the profound disappointment of Austria, who had anticipated an opposite Within a fortnight Rumania intervened with such

The Second Balkan War decisive effect that the conflict was at an end, and on August 10th of the same year, the terms of peace were settled by the Treaty of Bukarest, the upshot being

that Bulgaria was left in a much worse position than that existing after the first war. She had to give a slice of her own territory to Rumania, and return a portion of Thrace, including Adrianople, to the Turks, who had taken advantage of her reverses to regain some of the ground which they had lost to her shortly before. Serbia kept South-East Macedonia, and Greece both Salonika and Kavala, the latter the natural economic outlet of Bulgaria on the Ægean. Bulgaria retained as a port on that sea the poor roadstead of Dedeagach, but as some miles of the railway by which it was reached passed through Turkish territory, the operation of the line was dependent on the goodwill

Naturally, the Bulgarians were wroth with Serbia, Greece, and Rumania, but it was against the first that their anger burned hottest; many of them were furious with their King, and threatening notices were displayed on his palace walls. Expecting a successful issue from the Balkan Wars and the realisation of his grand dreams of becoming Autocrat of All the Balkans, King Ferdinand had ordered, it was reported, a magnificent diamond crown to be made for him in Paris for his coronation in Constantinople; but here, at any rate for a time, was an end to his dreams.

Ferdinand of Bulgaria was in some respects the most striking figure among the Balkan sovereigns; if for nothing also be a solution of the striking also be a solution of the s nothing else, his inordinate ambition placed him in a

separate class. Of mixed German and French blood, he was connected with some of the highest families of Europe, and he had inherited from his mother, a daughter of Louis Philippe, immense wealth. His mind and talents, which were not inconsiderable, were bent on securing a great position for himself. Elected Prince of Bulgaria in 1877, when the country was still under the suzerainty of Turkey, when the country was still under the suzerainty of Turkey, he strove in all manner of ways, some of them devious enough, to add to his dignity and importance. He was ill-content with the little principality, but he had the satisfaction of declaring it independent of Turkey in 1908, and of being recognised by the Powers as "King of the Bulgarians"—he preferred to style himself Tsar. Before going to Bulgaria he had been an officer of the Austrian Army he had vast estates in Hungary and his Austrian Army, he had vast estates in Hungary, and his sympathies were markedly pro-Austrian, whereas the bulk of his people regarded with reverence Russia, who had freed them from Turkish tyranny. Russia did not look on him with much favour, and to please her, as well as the Bulgarians, he had his son Boris baptised into the Orthodox Church. In spite of his mental powers, he was personally a coward, and always kept well in the rear of the fighting-line. In the Character of

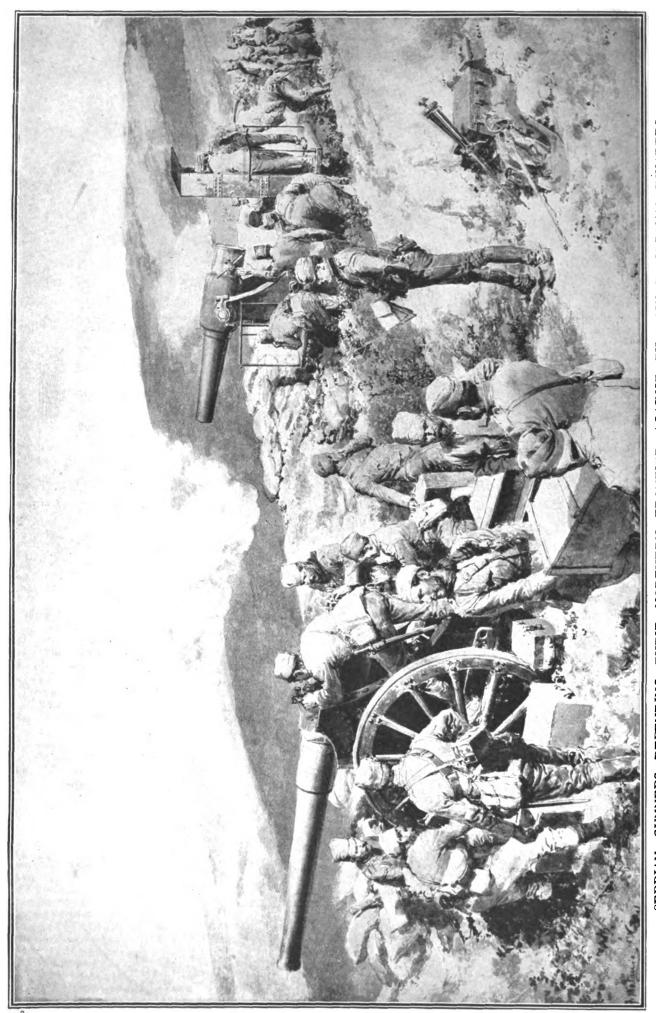
First Balkan War he was fortunate in King Ferdinand having in his service two military men of

eminence, General Savoff and General Radko Dimitrieff, and it was owing to them, and more especially to the leadership of the latter, that Bulgaria was successful in that conflict. He put the blame for the Second Balkan War on General Savoff, but it was well known that he

himself was the culprit.

When the European War broke out in 1914, Bulgaria declared herself neutral, but Ferdinand kept an eager eye for some congenial opening. He must have been terribly disappointed with the splendid victories the Serbians won over the Austrians, but he bided his time.

Of the other Balkan monarchs, King Peter of Serbia was old, infirm, and ill, but he had shown the fine fibre



SERBIAN GUNNERS DEFENDING THEIR NORTHERN FRONTIER AGAINST THE AUSTRO-GERMAN INVADERS.

Though with the aid of their heavy guns the Austro-German forces soon drove the Serbians out of and the conquest of the hills behind Semendria were only achieved after a desperate resistance on the Belgrade and pierced Serbian artillery, in particular, made a brilliant and memorable stand.



The treaty which existed between Greece and Serbia against Bulgaria contained a provision for the lease to Serbia for fifty years of a small tract of land at Salonika, and for running powers over the Greek portion of the railway from that city to the north. It was in this way that Serbia was remunitioned by the French and the British in November and December, 1914, and was enabled to defeat the third Austrian invasion.

King Nicholas of Montenegro identified himself and his tiny State with Serbia throughout. He it was who commenced the

PANORAMIC VIEW OF THE TOWN OF STRUMNITZA.

Strumnitza (or Strumitza) is a Macedonian town just inside the Bulgarian frontier, about sixty miles north-west of Salonika, and about twelve miles from the Serbian railway-station of the same name.

of which he was made by appearing in the trenches when the plight of his country seemed desperate during the third Austrian invasion, and, by telling his soldiers that they might, if they pleased, return to their homes, but that he and his sons would die where they stood, so inspired them with enthusiasm that they fought as never had they fought before. He had retired from the active government of his kingdom, his second son, Prince Alexander, having been appointed Regent.

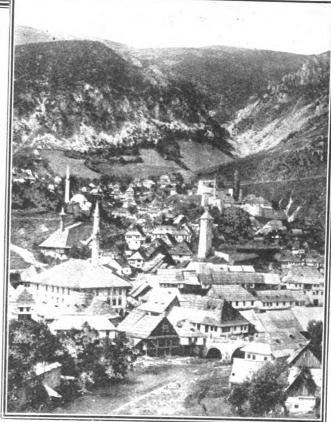
King Ferdinand of Rumania came to the throne on October 11th, 1914, in succession to his uncle King Carol, and was an unknown quantity. The Second Balkan War had given the leadership in the Balkans to Rumania. King

Rumania and Greece Carol was a Hohenzollern, and Rumania, who did not easily forgive Russia for the loss of Bessarabia in 1878, was for many years pro-German, and had, it was said,

a treaty with Germany of a defensive character, perhaps similar to that which subsisted between Italy and Austria-Germany. Latterly, however, the Rumanians had leaned somewhat to Russia, chiefly because of their desire for union with the four millions of their kin in Transylvania—a union which they could not hope to consummate through Austria. Besides, they were sincerely friendly to France, and were on excellent terms with Italy.

Rumania was in no hurry to make up her mind. She enjoyed a very profitable trade with Austria and Germany, and powerful vested interests were hostile to action. There was also the problem of the Dardanelles, a favourable solution of which was most important to her, as, apart from the Black Sea, she had access to the Mediterranean only by land routes through other countries which could be closed against her. Her position was a difficult one, and she remained neutral, as did Greece.

King Constantine had ascended the throne of Greece on March 18th, 1913, after the assassination of his father, King George, by a lunatic at Salonika; but he was married to the Princess Sophia of Prussia, the only sister of the Kaiser William, by whom he was made a German field-marshal, and strong German influence was brought to bear upon him. In the earlier part of his career he had been extremely unpopular with the Greeks; but his success in the Balkan Wars completely altered their attitude towards him and made him a favourite—he was the idol of the Greek Army. Venizelos had been his father's staunch friend and trusted adviser, and he continued him in the Premiership. But Venizelos, like most of his countrymen, was anti-German, and thus there was the probability of sharp differences between him and the King.



THE ANCIENT AND PICTURESQUE SEAPORT OF ENOS
On the south side of the gulf of the same name, twelve miles east-southeast of the Bulgarian port of Dedeagach. Serious damage was inflicted
upon the harbour works, railway-station, and shipping at Dedeagach by
the allied bombardment on October 21st, 1915.

attack on the Turks in the First Balkan War, and when Austria declared war on Serbia in July, 1914, he took up arms in support of the bigger-brother Slav nation. He and his people were pro-Russian in their sympathies.

Although apparently favourable to the Entente Powers, the general situation in January, 1915, in the Balkan States, apart from Serbia and Montenegro, was thus in reality confused and doubtful. If in

reality confused and doubtful. If in Rumania, in Greece, and even in Bulgaria there were pro-Entente elements, there also were elements

Beginning of the crisis

which were distinctly pro-German; in Bulgaria opinion was biased by hatred of Serbia, and in a less degree of Greece and Rumania, and the Austrian predilections of the King materially affected the whole attitude of the country.

The best hope for the Balkan States themselves lay in



BULGARIAN ARTILLERY INSIDE THE CHATALJA BATTERIES.

their union, and as this union also was manifestly to the disadvantage of Germany, the Powers of the Entente worked assiduously to bring it about. The principal effort of the Entente was directed to the reconciliation of Bulgaria with the other States, who, she maintained, had "robbed" her of territory, though it was obvious that she had lost it in consequence of being defeated in a war which she herself had sprung on her former friends.

To placate Bulgaria meant concessions from the others, and the next eight months—until well into September—were chiefly concerned with the endeavours of the Entente to secure such concessions, and, having succeeded in their attempts, to get Bulgaria to accept them. But in this field, as in every other, the Entente Powers were faced with the persistent and unscrupulous opposition of

Germany. It is now known that in January a secret agreement had been negotiated between Bulgaria and Germany. This was signed a little later by Prince Bülow and M. Rizoff at Rome.

The respite given to Serbia by her great defeat of the third invasion by Austria proved to be a long one, as the attention of her enemy was almost entirely occupied for several months—first by the Austro-German campaign against Russia and, secondly, by defensive operations against Italy, who joined the Entente Powers on May 23rd, 1915.

It was not till the beginning of October, 1915, that Serbia was called on to meet another serious attack, the fighting which took place in the interval being comparatively unimportant; but during a considerable part of that time she had to encounter foes of a different and exceedingly formidable kind.

The Austrians, on being driven out of Valievo, had left behind them a dreadful legacy in the shape of typhus and other terrible maladies, and these diseases fastened themselves on the unfortunate Serbians, who succumbed in large numbers. The brave little country had suffered heavy losses in its conflicts with Austria, as well as in the First and Second Balkan Wars, and, utterly unprepared for fighting these new and more insidious enemies, which threatened the utter extermination of its people, it sent forth a cry for help, which was heard and responded to in

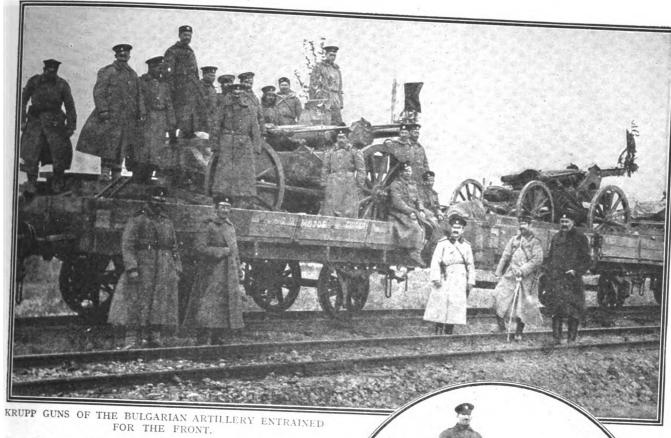


THE BULGARIAN GENERAL SAVOFF.

This distinguished soldier (seen on the right) was falsely blamed by King Ferdinand for the Second Balkan War.



BULGARIAN FIELD TELEGRAPH AT WORK.



Great Britain, France, Russia, the United States, and other lands. Organisations were formed for assisting Serbia in this extremity, and private persons also came forward with offers of money and service. The Red Cross bestirred itself actively, but, overwhelmed with demands elsewhere, was unable to do much. Sir Thomas Lipton took his yacht, the Erin, to Salonika with a supply of doctors, nurses, and medical stores. Lady Paget, Lady Wimborne, and other women of rank in England devoted their whole energies to the cause.

A society of women doctors, known as the Scottish Women's Hospitals, an organisation which was the offspring of the Scottish Federation of the National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies, did a noble work in Serbia. After sending two hospital units to France, the Scottish Women despatched the third they had raised and equipped to the Balkan State, which received it with the deepest

gratitude, agreeing with enthusiasm to Women's noble pay the salaries of its members and work in Serbia the cost of its maintenance. It was stationed at Kragujevatz, where it was

given a hospital of two hundred and fifty beds.

There were thousands of desperate cases in the country—men, women, and children dying everywhere unattended and in the most distressing circumstances and hardly had the unit arrived in the sorrowful land when, recognising the immensity of the effort required, it inundated the mother society with telegrams and letters appealing for more doctors and nurses. The tales these messages told were of the saddest and darkest kind. Owing to the virulent character of the fevers that ravaged every district, the mortality was frightful; in many localities fifty per cent. of the sufferers died.

With all possible speed funds for another hospital unit were invited. In memory of Miss Fraser, the woman golfer who had perished of typhus in Serbia, several well-known golfers sent in handsome contributions. Sufficient money was soon forthcoming, and the unit was got together money was soon forthcoming, and the unit was got together and sent out; but the cry was for more and more medical assistance, and later a third unit followed the second. All the spring and summer of that year the need of Serbia was extreme. In July there were in that country four hundred and twenty British doctors, in addition to



BOMB-PROOF SHELTER IN THE BULGARIAN LINES.



BULGARIAN SIEGE-GUN IN POSITION, WITH ITS CREW.

French, Russian and American medical men, every one of them working at the highest pressure, and doing with very little sleep, yet unable to cover the ground. As the summer waned the situation improved, and by September was nearly normal; but Serbia had endured terrible losses.

Offers were made to Serbia early in the year by the Germanic Powers, which were eager to detach her from the Entente. She rejected their offers on receiving from the British Government pledges of "solid support," provided she reorganised her Army for a fresh campaign. She had not succeeded, unfortunately, in making good these pledges, and when her hour of desperate danger came the 500,000 allied troops needed to save her were not within easy reach.

Negotiations had been proceeding under the auspices



BROTHER-IN-LAW OF THE KAISER.

A remarkable photograph of King Constantine, who succeeded to the throne of Greece on the assassination of his father (George I.) on March 18th, 1913. He married the German Emperor's sister, Princess Sophia of Prussia, in 1889. His hesitation to support the cause of the Allies compelled M. Venizelos twice to resign the Premiership.

of the Entente in furtherance of the union of the Balkan States, and some progress was made, but from the beginning Bulgaria pursued a tortuous course. Rumania had earlier received financial assistance from Austria, but in January a change in the direction of her policy was indicated by

her obtaining a loan from Great Britain of several millions, most of which she applied to her Army, then partially mobilised.

On the other side of the account, Bulgaria got money from Berlin. Attempts were made at the time to explain away the political bearing of the transaction by representing the advance as an instalment of a loan the terms of which had been concluded long before the war, but the essential fact was that the cash came from Germany at

a time when she would not have permitted it to be paid out except for very substantial reasons.

In the same month Rumania tried to arrange with Bulgaria for common action by offering to restore to her part of the territory of which she had been deprived under the Treaty of Bukarest. Bulgaria coquetted with the proposal, but let it be understood that her price for joining in a union of the States which would support the Entente was the part of Macedonia allotted to her by the treaty of alliance between herself and Serbia prior to the First Balkan War, the Valley of the Struma including the port of Kavala, the southern Dobruja, the whole of the territory Rumania had annexed under the Treaty of Bukarest, and that area of Thrace which she herself had taken from the Turks in 1912.

Bulgaria asked a great deal. The Entente Powers took counsel with the other Balkan States, and in order to induce them to fall in, as far as possible, with the Bulgarian programme, suggested certain compensations for what they were asked to surrender. To Serbia, who at first was very averse from the idea of ceding the desiderated part of

Macedonia to Bulgaria, they pointed out that she could find compensation in adding to her territory Bosnia, Herzegovina, and other Slav provinces and dis-

tricts of Austria—that, in fact, she would be able to realise that confederation of the Southern Slavs which had been the ideal of Pasich, her ablest statesman. To Rumania, who already was willing to meet Bulgaria half-way, they said that Transylvania and Bukovina might be hers. To Greece, who had gained more at less cost from the two Balkan Wars than the others, and so might be generous, they held out the prospect of obtaining a considerable area in Asia Minor, in which many thousands of people of her own race were domiciled. To Montenegro, who did not look for much, and who, in any case, might wish to attach herself to the projected confederation of the Southern Slavs under the headship of her friend Serbia, they stated that she could have Scutari and part of the Albanian coast. And as for Thrace, Turkey would have to yield not only the part of it Bulgaria wanted, but also a very large extent of her whole empire.

These suggestions of change and compensation were all dependent on the complete defeat of Germany, which the Entente Powers were confident was a certainty; but Bulgaria requested that at least some—and particularly one or two, such as Serbian Macedonia—of the proposed cessions should be actually made to her forthwith.

Here was a great stumbling-block in the negotiations. The other Balkan States considered that, admitting even that the result of the war would be absolutely in favour of the Entente, these cessions might very well wait till the war had come to an end. In principle they were inclined to agree with the proposals submitted by the Entente.

Venizelos, in a memorandum to the King of the Hellenes, wrote that on the part of Greece concessions were possible to Bulgaria in return for compensation in Asia Minor, the concessions he had in his mind being the Struma Valley with Kavala. But to the evident intention of Bulgaria to aggrandise herself at their expense, before any of the suggested compensations were in sight, the other States took exception. In February no real advance towards a settlement had been made, although a special French Mission, with General Pau at its head, visited the Balkan capitals and tried to expedite matters. But that month was signalised by an event—the bombardment of the Dardanelles by the warships of the Entente—which had a considerable influence in the Balkans, Greece in particular being greatly stirred by it. Venizelos stated, in an interview some weeks later, that he was privy to this action, and had proposed despatching 50,000 Greek soldiers to aid in the attack, this number being afterwards reduced to 15,000 owing to the objections of the Staff of the Greek Army. In the end not one Greek was sent, because King



Serbia's heir & Rear = Admiral Trouoridge.



"The Entente in the trenches."



Getting a British gun into position in the vicinity of Belgrade.



British gunners helping in the defence of Serbia against invasion



"Assembling" a big gun on the Serbian frontier.



Hauling a big gun over Serbia's muddy highways.



British aid for Serbia: Another big gun mounted.



Sighting a gun against the Austrian position at Semlin.



In hard-pressed Serbia: Heavy gun en route to the firing-line.



Rear-Admiral Troubridge and Lt.-Commander C. L. Kerr, D.S.O., on the Danube front.

Constantine could not see eye to eye with his great Minister, and because the Greek Staff was dissatisfied with the careless manner in which the Dardanelles operations were In the same interview Venizelos said that twice Greece had been requested by the Entente Powers to send men to help Serbia, but was compelled to decline through her fear of being set upon by Bulgaria.

In March the Balkans were convulsed by the sudden and unexpected resignation of Venizelos because of insurmountable differences of view with his sovereign, the points in dispute being connected with definite action by Greece on the side of the Entente, which was urged by the statesman, but vetoed by the King. On the morning of March 6th Venizelos called at the British Legation in Athens to say that he was unable to carry King Constantine with him; and that night he resigned.

It was a singular situation. The man who had saved

Greece from anarchy in 1910, met crisis after crisis in her affairs, and guided her through the two Balkan Wars,

affairs, and guided her through the two Balkan Wars, practically dismissed by the son of the monarch whose dynasty he had virtually kept on the throne! The comment of the German Press was enlightening; it spoke of the King as moved by "dynastic considerations"—the reference was to Queen Sophia, the King's consort and the German Kaiser's sister - and declared that if Greece sided with the Entente she had "much to lose and little to gain." The fall of Venizelos, which his organ, the "Patris," pointedly ascribed to German machinations, was a heavy disappointment to the Entente. He was succeeded by M. Gounaris, an ex-Finance Minister, who announced that his policy was, with respect to the war, neutrality, and, with regard to Serbia, the observance of treaty obligations. Venizelos left Greece, declaring in deep disgust that he intended to withdraw from public

Notably increased by the capture, from the Austrians by the Russians, of Przemysl on March 22nd, the agitation in Rumania continued in favour of action against Germany. This agitation ano, the Prime Minister, whose

party was that of the Liberals, also was friendly to the Entente. On the last day of March the Parliament of Bulgaria was closed after a statement by M. Radoslavoff, the Premier, and a creature of King Ferdinand, that Bulgaria would preserve her neutrality, though Gueshoff, now in opposition, maintained that the real interests of the State were with the Entente.

April opened with an occurrence that was pregnant with meaning. A feature of Macedonia under Turkish rule

Guerilla raids on Serbia

had been the activity of revolutionaries organised in komitajis, or armed bands of men, who kept up a guerilla warfare upon the Turks. These societies, which

were composed of Bulgar Macedonians, did not disappear with the transference of the country to Serbia, but, instigated by Bulgaria, remained in being and evinced hostility to the new owner of the land. On April 2nd several of these bands made a raid in considerable force on the south-eastern frontier of Serbia, and after attacking with success outposts and block-houses in an attempt to

cut the railway, were repelled only after severe fighting. Bulgaria loudly disavowed any participation in the affair, but Greece thought the occasion grave enough to demand a Note of protest, which she sent to Sofia a few days later. Bulgaria again affirmed that she had nothing to do with the matter. She was watching and waiting on events in the main theatres of the war. Though

now bound to Germany, she did not mean to strike as yet. If the bombardment of the Dardanelles by the Entente responsibility

had failed, the Russians were victorious in the Carpathian regions and menaced Hungary. It was well, therefore, to be circumspect, an attitude which the landing on Gallipoli

of Entente troops on April 25th probably confirmed.

After the overwhelming defeat of the Austrians in

December only insignificant fighting took place between
them and the Serbians, such fighting as there was being mostly in the nature of artillery actions, the trifling character of which was demonstrated by an arrangement between the two belligerents to the effect that if the Serbians would not bombard Semlin the Austrians would refrain



against Germany. This agitation was led by M. Jonescu, a former Minister and the head of the charge of the British artillery force sent to Belgrade in the spring of 1915. One of the members of Conservative Democrats. M. Bratiano, the Prime Minister whose

from shelling Belgrade. There was, however, some lively work on the river lying between these two towns. Belgrade was defended by a mixed force of Serbians, French, and British. The last had naval guns, and was at least in part drawn from the Navy.

For some time Austrian monitors and picket-boats armed with machine-guns had patrolled the Danube and annoyed the Serbians, but the Belgrade garrison, towards the end of April, put an end to the activities of these vessels, the naval guns being employed with great skill and good results. The British sailors also distinguished themselves by the feats they performed by means of a small picket-boat which, though armed with no more than a single machine-gun, inspired such fear among the Austrians that it came to be called "The Terror of the Danube." Commanded by Lieutenant-Commander Kerr, R.N., the terror poked its way on dark nights into creeks and passages of the river to the serious disturbance of the enemy, subjecting him to constant alarms and no little loss. One of its exploits was the decoying, by pretending to retreat



OFFICERS OF THE MONTENEGRIN GENERAL STAFF. Reading from left to right, the photographs are of Major P. Lompar, Major Martinovitch (First A.D.C.), General Prince Petar (Commander-in-Chief), Lieut. Radonitch, Capt. Yovitchevitch, and Lieut. Giurkovitch (Second A.D.C.).

with all speed, of an Austrian monitor into a prepared mine-field-with disastrous consequences to the monitor. For this its commander was awarded the D.S.O., and its crew received the D.C.M.

May saw a fresh and momentous development of the war in the adhesion of Italy to the Entente, which henceforward was described as Quadruple. This action of Italy was greatly facilitated by a treaty, signed in the first week of the month, between her and Serbia, which defined their respective interests in Dalmatia and on the eastern shores of the Adriatic. All this told heavily against Germany, but May also saw a development of the war that told more

heavily for her. This was the success of the Austro-German campaign in Western Galicia, which resulted in driving the Russians from the Dunajec to the San, and in freeing Hungary from their menace, and was destined to bring about a colossal change in the whole aspect of the war.

On the Balkans, as was inevitable, this triumphant offensive had a tre-mendous effect; but as by the close of the month it was still in its first stages,

The Galician factor

that influence was not so manifest as it became later when further victories fell to the German arms in the eastern For one thing, Rumania saw any immediate of seizing Transylvania vanish, and for theatre. prospect of seizing another, Bulgaria became more and more pro-German. The Entente Powers, however, on May 29th, made proposals to Bulgaria which, by offering her con-

cessions, the fruit of their negotiations with the other Balkan States, were considered to be likely to lead her to fall in with their views. On June 15th Radoslavoff presented in return a Note asking for further explanations. This meant delay, if nothing else.

Meanwhile M. Venizelos had determined to return to public life, reappeared in Athens,

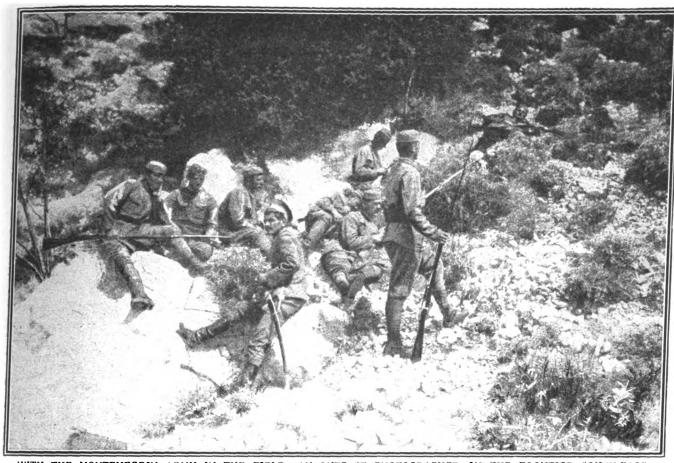


M. ANDRE RADVITCH. and on June 11th he Ex-Prime Minister of Montenegro. Later prominent in the organisation of supplies.

where he received a warm welcome. Within a few days he resumed the leadership of the Greek Liberal Party, and at the general elections, which took place shortly afterwards, had a majority of over one hundred and twenty seats, notwithstanding the most determined efforts made by his opponents. The Greek Parliament had previously consisted of one hundred and eighty members, but by representation accorded to the districts annexed after the Balkan Wars, the number was brought up to three hundred



KING NICHOLAS OF MONTENEGRO AND HIS HARDY SOLDIERS. King Nicholas receiving a report. At the outbreak of the Great War, when Montenegro took such a dramatic stand by the side of her neighbour Serbia, the gallant Army of the little Balkan State was estimated at about 30,000 men, who were armed very largely by Russia and Italy.



WITH THE MONTENEGRIN ARMY IN THE FIELD: AN OUTPOST PHOTOGRAPHED ON THE FRONTIER SOUTH-EAST OF PODGORITZA.



and sixteen. The new constituencies were manipulated by the Government of Gounaris, who still was Prime Minister, in the most unscrupulous manner in order to defeat Venizelos, but all in vain, for he secured a great majority. Venizelos and his pro-Entente policy were emphatically endorsed by the vast bulk of his countrymen, who were well aware that he was the strong man of Greece, and that her fortunes were best committed to his hands. His victory at the polls was a blow to the King, the

pro-Germans, and the Neutralists, but they could point to the taking of Przemysl and Lemberg by the Austro-Germans as confirming their opinions.

During July Serbia was once more approached by Germany with an offer of a separate peace, but M. Pasich, the Prime Minister, passionately declared that she would agree to nothing of the sort, and proclaimed her unshaken loyalty to the Entente. On the 8th of that month Austria delivered a Note to Rumania offering

rewards in territory for her neutrality and substantially larger rewards for her early entrance into the war in favour of Germany and her allies. In the latter eventuality Austria dangled a tempting bait before Austro-German her eyes by promising to conoffers to Rumania quer Bessarabia from Russia and transfer it to her as a permanent possession. In the meantime she was asked to permit at once the passage of munitions of war over her

the King of Rumania-both were daughters of the Duke of Edinburgh, who became Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha-arrived in Bukarest, and tried to induce his brother-in-law, King Ferdinand, to come to terms with Austria, or, at all events, to



AUSTRIAN INFANTRY ON THE MARCH IN SERBIA'S MOUNTAIN FASTNESSES. When Germany decided on her great adventure in the Balkans, with a view to linking up Berlin with Bagdad, General von Mackensen, the organiser of the Grand Phalanx, was withdrawn from the eastern front to the chief Austro-German command on the Danube. In the smaller view General von Mackensen is seen crossing a stream on a white horse.



THE WOULD-BE TSAR OF ALL THE BALKANS. Elected Prince of Bulgaria in 1877, Ferdinand became King in 1908. A man of great mental ability and an ex-officer of the Austrian Army, he was described as a coward personally. It was his ambition to be known as the Tsar of All the Balkans.

In our photograph he is seen with his Staff.

country, as requested. The prince's visit to the Rumanian capital had been preceded by a campaign in the German Press with the object of intimidating Rumania. But the King stood firm, and Prince Hohenlohe-Langenburg moved on to Sofia, where he met a more sympathetic soul in the other Balkan Ferdinand, who, at that moment, was endeavouring to get Turkey to conclude a treaty, for which secret negotiations had been going on for a long period, and by which Bulgaria was to obtain all the Turkish land on the west side of the Maritza River, and so free from Turkish interference the railway to Dedeagach. King Ferdinand was successful, and on July 23rd a convention was signed which gave Bulgaria sole possession of the line.

So far as Bulgaria was concerned, things did not look well for the Entente Powers, who could not but perceive the drift of affairs, and they made further efforts to procure her support. Early in August they made a collective representation to the Balkan States and delivered the Balkan States and delivered the Balkan States.

the Balkan States, and delivered to Bulgaria a

reply to her Note of June 14th; in the one they spoke of the desirability of making further concessions to Bulgaria, and in the other they stated

that it was probable that the causes of friction would be removed and a union of the States brought about. Bulgaria, however, was not satisfied, and Radoslavoff, in an interview with an American correspondent, said that she would enter the war only on receiving absolute guarantees of achieving her national ideals. It afterwards transpired that a fortnight earlier she had completed her arrangements with Germany, Austria, and Turkey. This final treaty, which had been engineered by Prince Hohenlohe-Langenburg, explained the cession of Turkish territory on the Maritza, and promised Bulgaria a great deal more than the realisation of her national ideals—Greek Macedonia being offered besides Serbian Macedonia. Unaware then of the existence of this or the earlier compact, the Entente brought additional pressure to bear on the other Balkan States.

The lion in the path now appeared to be Serbia, and, on behalf of the cause, she was again urged to surrender

"THE NERO OF THE BALKANS."

King Ferdinand of Bulgaria taking the air. After the victorious war against Turkey in 1912-13 he turned upon his allies at the instigation of Austria. In 1915, at the instigation of Germany, he turned against the Power (Russia) to whom primarily he owed his throne.

to Bulgaria all South-East Macedonia. The sacrifice was very great to her, but in a secret session of her Parliament, held on August 24th, she nobly consented to make it. Rumania had been ready to agree to the stipulated concessions, and had advised Serbia and Greece to act in a similar way. On the 16th the Greek Parliament assembled, the Venizelosts were in a large majority, and on the next day the Gounaris Govern-

on the next day the Gounaris Government resigned. On the 22nd M. Venizelos was once again Prime Minister of Greece, and the Entente Powers, who still were

and the Entente Powers, who still were ignorant of that fatal treaty, believed that the whole situation in the Balkans had become much more hopeful, from their point of view, than it had been for a long time. They were soon to be undeceived.

Perhaps the presence of Duke John of Mecklenburg, a relative of the Queen of Bulgaria, in Sofia, in the first



MAP OF THE BALKAN WAR AREA, INDICATING THE RESPECTIVE BOUNDARIES, THE RAILWAY FROM VIENNA TO SALONIKA, DEDEAGACH AND CONSTANTINOPLE, AND THE TERRITORY CEDED TO BULGARIA BY TURKEY.

and second weeks of September, passed unobserved or was deemed unimportant, and nothing may have been thought of his going on to Constantinople, but as he was accompanied by Dr. von Rosenberg, a high German diplomatist and a specialist in Balkan affairs, the Entente Powers might have been on their guard. Bulgaria, however, still kept up the mask, yet her action on September 10th in calling for Macedonian Bulgars and Bulgars from Thrace to come forward and embody themselves in a "Macedonian Division," might have been deemed significant of her real attitude.

By this date reports of the concentration on the Serbian frontier of considerable numbers of Austro-German troops, with heavy artillery, had become much more definite and circumstantial, and the belief was general throughout the Balkans that the fourth invasion of Serbia was imminent,

Diplomacy's

final efforts

and would be made in great strength.

Like the rest of the world, the Balkan

States were aware that during August
and up till this time in September
the Russians had suffered the most serious reverses and

the Russians had suffered the most serious reverses and lost their best fortresses, while the British and the French had made no advance of importance in the west, and had failed of decisive victory in Gallipoli. It was of the utmost moment, therefore, for the Entente to bring to a favourable conclusion without further delay the negotiations between Bulgaria and her neighbours. On September 15th the Entente Powers presented a new Note to Bulgaria,

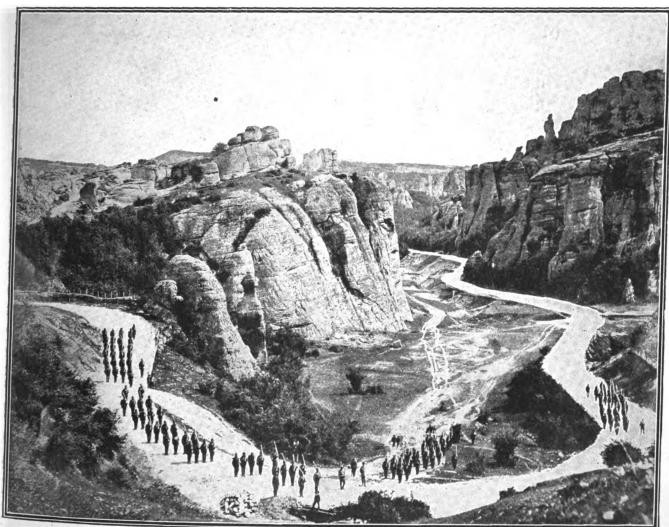
setting forth the concessions they had induced Serbia, Greece, and Rumania to offer to her in the interests of the projected union, provided that she should unreservedly declare against Germany.

Bulgaria temporised, but the pro-German tendency of her policy was evident from the suppression, two days after she had received the Note of the Entente, of the "Preporetz," a Sofia journal, which had urged the

Government to agree to the terms of the Note and come out without further hesitation against Germany. The whole

State, at last aware of the manner in which things were shaping, was thrown into violent commotion. The Parliamentary Opposition, which was favourable to the Entente, and held Russia, who had freed their country from the Turks, in special regard, was greatly perturbed, and the leaders of the various parties comprised within it demanded an audience of King Ferdinand to place their views before him.

Ferdinand agreed to the interview, which lasted for several hours, and was of the stormiest. M. Malinoff, the leader of the Democrats, spoke his mind freely, and told the King that neutrality, or siding with Germany, meant the ruin of the country; even neutrality would not do, he said, for neutrality would result in Bulgaria becoming the Belgium of the Balkans and being ground to powder between the Germans invading Serbia and the Franco-British forces coming to assist Serbia. The leader



WHERE SERBS AND BULGARS FIRST EXCHANGED SHOTS.

Bulgarian troops in a typical mountain pass near According to the Bulgarian account, Serbian, soldiers, "without any occupy the heights west of Bielogradchik. "In reply to this foolish

provocation," the Bulgarians captured, after a sharp conflict, the heights of Kitka, in Serbian territory. According to another report received in Bucharest from the frontier, the Bulgarians opened hostilities on the same date by bombarding a Serbian train conveying munitions.

of the Agrarian Party, M. Stambuliski, did not hesitate to tell his sovereign that if he, the King, led the country into a fresh catastrophe the people would hold him personally responsible, and that it would cost him his throne. Ferdinand was bluntly told that he was guilty of a premeditated crime. White with rage at the fearlessness of these men, he replied that he took note of their threats four weeks later he had Stambuliski arrested, tried, and given a life-sentence—but on that very day, which was September 18th, he showed his hand by ordering certain military measures to be taken, and four days afterwards commanded the mobilisation of the Bulgarian Army.

In a moment the gaze of the whole world was dramatically

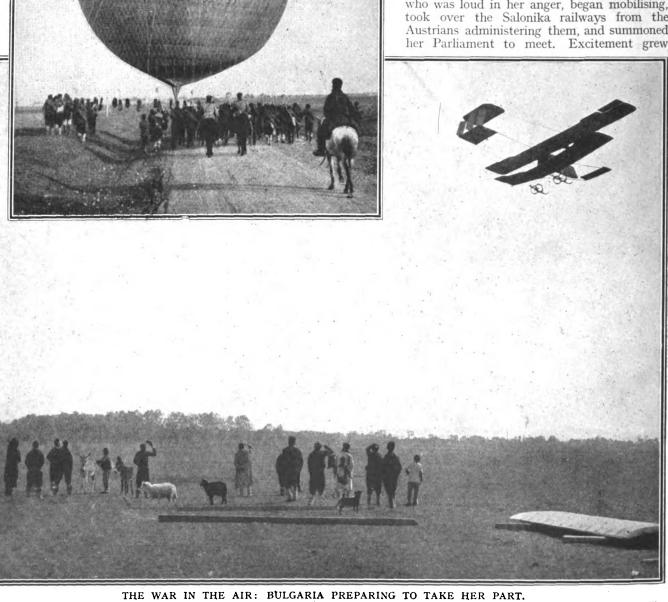
diverted from all the theatres of the war to Bulgaria and the Balkans. German guns were already shelling Semendria, on the Danube, and it was evident that Germany was about to endeavour to realise her grandiose scheme of making a bridge across the Balkans into Turkey, who in any case was now short of munitions and in need of help. The question on the lips of everyone was: What would Bulgaria do? Outside of the Bulgarian Government there was doubt even among Bulgarians themselves as to the answer.

M. Angeloff, the Bulgarian Consul-General in Great Britain, said at Man-chester it was unthinkable that Bulgaria should support Germany, and that no

Greece begins mobilising

Bulgarian would take up arms against the British or the Russians. Bulgaria herself, by the mouth of Radoslavoff, declared that the mobilisation of her Army was self-defensive, connoted armed neutrality, and had no other meaning. In a Note to the Powers she stated that she had "not the slightest aggressive intention," and gave specific assurances to Serbia and Greece that she had no hostile designs.

Venizelos, however, was not to be hood-winked. On September 23rd, Greece, to the surprise and disgust of Bulgaria and Germany, who was loud in her anger, began mobilising, took over the Salonika railways from the Austrians administering them, and summoned



When Bulgaria took the field in October, 1915, little was generally known regarding her aerial resources. Above is a view of one of King Ferdinand's army biplanes making a practice flight, meanwhile an

interested group of country folk looked on at its evolutions. smaller photograph is of a Bulgarian observation balloon use military purposes.



French infantry column advancing from Salonika. The Bay of Salonika and a portion of the port are dimly discernible behind the cypresses.



British troops on the march after the landing at Salonika.



CAMERA STUDIES OF THE LANDING OF THE ALLIED TROOPS AT SALONIKA.

more and more intense throughout the Balkans, anti-German riots occurred in Bukarest and elsewhere, eminent Russians appealed to the leaders of the Bulgarian Opposition to remember what Russia had done for their country, and reports spread that there were divisions in the Bulgarian Cabinet. As late as September 28th Bulgaria still maintained that she would not attack Serbia or

still maintained that she would not attack Serbia or Greece. The mask was not yet lowered.

Sir Edward Grey's In spite of Bulgaria's disclaimers, the Entente Powers, from whose eyes the scales at last were falling, issued a

the scales at last were falling, issued a solemn warning to her through Sir Edward Grey. Speaking in the House of Commons on September 28th, the Foreign Secretary reviewed the whole Balkan situation, and said that in Great Britain not only was there no hostility to Bulgaria, but on the contrary there existed traditionally a warm feeling of sympathy for the Bulgarian people. There was no desire to disturb the friendly relations of the two countries, but, he went on to state, if Bulgaria assumed an aggressive attitude on the side of Great Britain's enemies, Great Britain, in concert with her Allies,

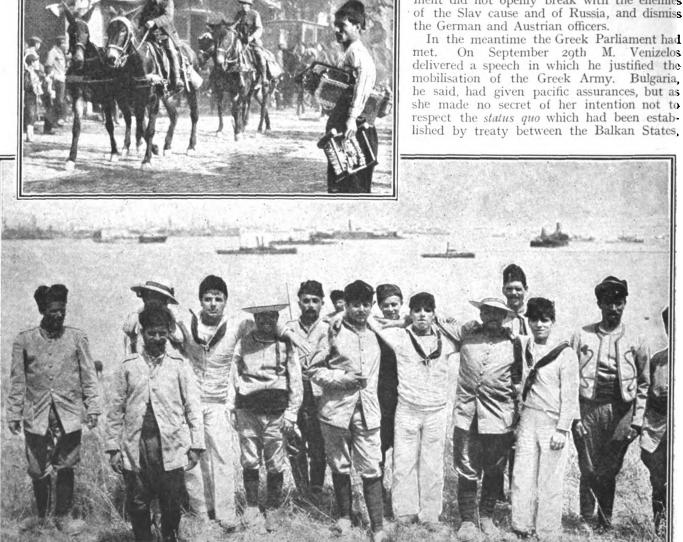
would give her friends in the Balkans all the support in her power.

Coinciding in point of time with a great success by the Franco-British forces in the west, and a fine rally of the Russians in the east, this statement might have had a good effect, but it came too late, as was manifest when on October 2nd Sir Edward Grey published a supplementary declaration of policy. In this it was pointed out that as German and Austrian officers had for several days been arriving in Bulgaria with a view to taking an active part in directing the Bulgarian Army, and as this action was precisely similar to that taken in Turkey, where German officers had forced Turkey to make an entirely unprovoked attack on Russia in 1914, a condition had arisen of the utmost gravity, since the Entente Powers were bound to support the States threatened by such proceedings.

Bulgaria made no satisfactory response, but continued her mobilisation, and concentrated two divisions of her troops on the Serbian frontier. Russia thereupon sent an ultimatum to Bulgaria, in which, after reciting the facts that indicated the latter's decision

for Germany, she said that Russia's ultimatum Russia, who had liberated to Bulgaria Bulgaria from the Turkish

yoke, could not sanction a fratricidal aggression against a Slav and allied people, and that the Russian Minister would be withdrawn if within twenty-four hours the Bulgarian Government did not openly break with the enemies of the Slav cause and of Russia, and dismiss the German and Austrian officers.



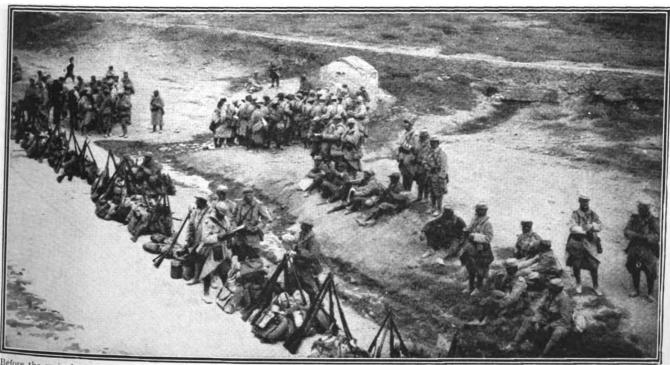
IN THE TERRITORY OF "FRIENDLY NEUTRALS": STRIKING SCENES IN THE LEVANT.

Above is an interesting photograph of British blue jackets and Greek soldiers fraternising, the men having exchanged headgear before posing themselves in front of the camera. Inset: Men of the British Army Service Corps riding their mules through Salonika.



The first regiment to land on the "Serbian Quay" at Salonika on October 5th, 1915, marching through the harbour precincts.

told by eye-witnesses of the landing that the hearts of the Greek people "beat vigorously for the Allied cause."



the main body of the allied troops arrived at Salonika a company of French soldiers was sent ashore and the officers placed single and double sentries all along the streets to the camps. The above camera-picture shows French soldiers resting on their way to camp.

THE ADVANCE GUARD OF THE ALLIED LANDING AT SALONIKA.

it was necessary for Greece to take the precaution of mobilising. Gounaris, the former Prime Minister, and now leader of the Opposition, endorsed the action of the Government. Greece appeared to be united; there had

been rumours of a disagreement between the Cabinet and the Crown, but the unanimous approval in Parliament of the Government's course seemed to disprove and dispel them. The German Press, however, expressed its opinion that this accord between King Constantine and Venizelos was unreal, and prophesied that Greece would not give armed support to the Entente. This forecast proved to be correct, for on October 5th Venizelos resigned, owing to the King's disagreement with his pro-Entente policy, although that policy, after a long and heated debate which lasted many hours, had been approved by a majority of over forty votes in the Greek Parliament that

very morning.

Venizelos had declared that it was not only the duty of Greece in fulfilment of her treaty obligations, but also a matter of necessity for her self-preservation, that she should support Serbia by force against Germany as well as Bulgaria, but King Constantine told him that he did not take the same view. Next day a Coalition Ministry was formed, the Premier being M. Zaimis, Governor of the National Bank, the son of a former Prime Minister, and who himself

had been Premier twice her hour of need. Serbia's before. He was known to be friendly to the Entente Powers, and he announced that, while Greece would continue an armed neutrality that neutrality towards them had to defend a line over three hundred miles in length.

would be characterised by complete and sincere benevolence. The Entente, however, had already derived considerable advantage from the benevolence of Greece, for after making a formal protest, she had permitted the landing

of French and British troops at Salonika in the first week of September in support of Serbia. Bulgaria had replied to the Russian ultimatum, but in so unsatisfactory a manner that Russia, who was acting as the representative of all the Entente Powers, broke off relations with her, the other Powers

following suit.

Any lingering doubts that might still have been felt regarding the treacherous part Bulgaria had played were removed on October 8th when the British Minister at Athens revealed the existence of the secret treaty, a copy of which had come into his hands, between Germany, Austria, and Tur-key on the one side and Bulgaria on the other, that had been signed on July 17th and provided for Bulgaria's aggrandisement at the expense of her neighbours, including Greece. Germany hastened to deny there was such a treaty, but in a powerful oration Venizelos told the Greek Parlia-ment that if, as his opponents asserted, Germany was victorious, Bulgaria would be so enlarged as to render Greece's chances against her illusory. The Greek Government, however, was not to be moved, and on October 12th categorically refused Serbia's request for help in her hour of need. Serbia's



GENERAL BAILLOUD AND SERBIAN OFFICERS.

The French General (right) is seen in conversation with two Serbian officers, entrusted with the duty of meeting the allied troops at Salonika.



SEA POWER: REMARKABLE CAMERA-PICTURE OF THE ALLIED FLEETS IN MUDROS HARBOUR, LEMNOS.



## THE BREAKING OF THE RUSSIAN FORTRESS LINE AND THE FAILURES OF MACKENSEN AND HINDENBURG.

The Kaiser's Anger at Russian Army's Escape—German Troops March Five Days Without Food—Alexeieff Checks Hindenburg's Loses 100,000 Men at Kovno—The Terrible Price of the Vistula Fortress—Osoviec the Russian Mafeking—The Vast Movement Worn Out—Its Total Losses Exceed 1,000,000 Men—Evert Hangs Too Long on to Grodno Fortress—Hindenburg's Geomes Scheme to Shatter Russia—The Battles on the Wings Preparatory to the Blow at the Centre—Russky Stands Firm at Riga Austro-German Armies—Hindenburg Leaps at Evert—Russky Comes South to Vilna to Help Evert—Marvellous Stand by Surrounded—Tremendous Battle of Four Weeks in the Vilna Salient—Russky's Deadly Subtlety Leads to Complete Defeat



FTER the fall of Warsaw, on August 5th, 1915, Kaiser Wilhelm came to the bank of the Vistula with his engineers, and looked at the three bridges which the Russians had blown up in their retreat. The leading generals of the Bavarian army

approached him, hoping for glowing congratulations on reaching the goal towards which Hindenburg had been struggling since his victory at Tannenberg in August, 1914. But the Kaiser remarked bitterly, "There will be no decorations for anybody on this occasion. We have paid too dearly for Warsaw. We have captured only the cage; the bird has flown. So long as the Russian Army is free, the problem of the campaign remains unsolved."

Under the personal impetus of the angry Emperor, all available German and Austrian troops were at once fiercely driven forward across the Vistula, with the aim of bringing off the grand coup. As in the cavalry raid in Belgium at the opening of the war, the advanced

forces were flung out with such rapidity that no arrangements for feeding them were made. They were expected to live on the country, but as the Russians destroyed everything as they retired, after removing the civil population, the German vanguards starved. Moreover, the men were marched for five days and five nights, in

The state of the s

GENERAL NICKOLAUS JAUNSCHKEVITCH.
Appointed Deputy Viceroy of the Caucasus, September, 1915.

spurts of three or five hours' length, each followed by twenty minutes' rest. The result was that when they came upon the Russian rear-guards there was no fight left in them. All along the retiring Russian front in the great bend of the Bug River, from Novo Georgievsk to a point a few miles east of Cholm, the Teutonic troops nominally engaged pursuing their enemy were so mishandled that some of them fell out with feet lacerated by in-cessant marching, and others gave themselves up as prisoners in order to get food. The Kaiser in a fit of bad temper had kicked his generals forward, and the generals, always too much inclined to treat their men as machines, had tasked them beyond the powers of human endurance. So

the amazing spectacle was seen of an apparently badly beaten Russian Army, bent only on retreating to a place of safety, being clogged in its movement of retirement by an increasing number of prisoners.

The fact was, of course, that General Alexeieff's forces were in no wise beaten. By this time every Russian soldier

thoroughly understood it was only the Alexeleff's grip on heavy German and Austrian artillery which compelled the withdrawal into the realities interior of Russia. The hostile guns and

howitzers could not be moved forward more than three miles a day at the most; on many important sectors the rate of movement of the enemy's guns was scarcely half a mile a day. The Russian infantry, therefore, remained in good heart and, instead of being demoralised, was fiercely eager for all opportunities of meeting the enemy on equal terms. The German scheme of sending out advanced troops by forced marches was merely one of the examples of paper strategy by which men were sacrificed without

any concrete advantages.

General Alexeieff, on the other hand, fought with a splendid grip on the realities of the situation. His problem was to withdraw a quarter of a million men from Warsaw towards Brest Litovsk, a distance of one hundred and thirty miles, while Hindenburg was pressing on his right flank and Mackensen on his left flank, with the armies of Prince Leopold of Bavaria and General von Woyrsch assailing his retreating front. Mackensen, with the artillery of the Grand Phalanx, was the most dangerous assailant; so Alexeieff joined his left wing with Ivanoff's right wing, and between Ivangorod and Cholm the combined Russian forces made a surprise attack upon Mackensen's group of armies in a battle that lasted till August oth. Mackensen's

left wing was held up along the Wieprz River, while his centre and right wing were severely handled along the Bug River, some twenty-five miles south of the town of Vlodava. There was a Russian railway running from Brest Litovsk through Vlodava towards Cholm, and it fed the Russian defending forces more quickly than Mackensen could be supplied by the light railway he had built to connect his rear with the Lemberg system. It was not until August 10th that the army of General von Woyrsch, advancing through the Ivangorod region, got into touch with the Austrian force forming the left wing of Mackensen's army group, and on that day Mackensen's centre was merely some eighteen miles north of the Lublin-Cholm railway, which he had reached on July 20th. It had taken him twelve days to advance nineteen miles with his 2,000 heavy pieces of ordnance and the ordinary artillery corps of a group of armies numbering originally close upon a million men. In other words, Mackensen's advance towards Brest Litovsk was so slow that the grandiose scheme of encircling the central Russian armies completely broke down on this section of the front through the magnificently combined efforts of Alexeieff and Ivanoff.

Hindenburg, however, who was working with another million men, from a point near Warsaw to a point near Riga. proved a very formidable opponent. His troops were fresher and less wasted than Hindenburg

those of Mackensen, his siege artillery was

held up

less worn, and he had close behind him the double system of East Prussian railways, which had been extended by roughly-built lines across the frontier towards the Narew, Bobr, and Niemen battle-fronts. There were steam tramways for bringing up ammunition and food,



DEVASTATING EFFECT OF ARTILLERY FIRE ON A RUSSIAN VILLAGE.

Unique impression of a Russian village within the war zone after it had been subjected to continual bombardment. Save for a number of forlorn chimney-stacks, which had strangely escaped being struck, the village

shared the same fate as many others on the eastern front—obliteration-German supply waggons are seen passing on their way to the new zone of operations.





RUSSIAN "DELICATESSEN" IN

Doubtless spirits ran high among the Germans who assisted in capturing the Russian convoy of eatables, some of which are seen in the above photograph in process of distribution. The whole of the supply was divided

with asphalted roads and motor-tractors, and deep beds of concrete were laid from ten to thirteen miles distance from the great Russian fortress towns, in preparation for

the great siege-howitzers. In the open field fighting against Alexeieff's right wing, behind Warsaw, Hindenburg was not successful. He was

held up between Lomza and Warsaw by struggles of a terrible kind in the forests and along the river-banks, and being violently impatient to carry out his part of the enveloping movement as punctually as Mackensen had done, he used his infantry without waiting for his siege ordnance. On August 7th, nine days after Mackensen had the Lublic Chales with the Lublic Chales wi cut the Lublin-Cholm railway, Hindenburg made a series of superhuman efforts to storm the northern Russian front. Deep, dense columns of infantry were launched against the fortresses of Novo Georgievsk, Osoviec, and Kovno, after clouds of poison gas had been floated over the outer defences of the strongholds. But by this time the Russian troops were expect in meeting poison gas by means of lines troops were expert in meeting poison gas by means of lines of petrol fires, which, by the ascension of hot air, lifted the gas over the trenches. At Kovno the German infantry was smashed by the heavy fortress guns. At Osoviec the attacking

column was destroyed on the highway Petrol fires v. between the marshlands. But it was at poison gas Novo Georgievsk that the old German Field-Marshal proved himself once more

the most terrible waster of men in history. He tried to cut off the Vistula stronghold by driving in on the west, at the town of Sierok, where the Narew flows into the Bug River, and at the same time the proper German siege army, under General von Beseler, assailed the stronghold from the north along the Mlava railway.

On the north, the Russian fortress guns broke the enemy; but on the west, in the difficult river country, where the THE HANDS OF THE ENEMY.

among the soldiers by their officers as a special favour. To even the best official liver-sausage and rye-bread available, a little caviare or other dainty from Petrograd might well have been a welcome change.

Russian field artillery was protected by a couple of broad streams from the longer-ranged German ordnance, the infantry battle was indescribable. The attacking columns were slaughtered like sheep. The Russians held the Narew River line only with weak rearguards.

These rearguards fell back immediately German commanders

the pressure against them became deceived severe. Every German commander-

brigadier, divisional, army corps, and army general-misinterpreted the yielding movement of the troops opposed to him. Each thought it was a sign of weakness, and the sign of apparent weakness occurred on the day on which the Kaiser refused to decorate anybody for the Warsaw victory and commanded the pursuit to be carried out with extreme energy.

The German infantry was thrown in great masses across the Narew. The result was that the Russian gunners along the second river line of the Bug were able to use their shrappel with wholesale murderous effect. Then, as they lifted on the German rear, the large main body of Russian infantry concealed in the riverside forests surged forward and recovered Sierok at the point of the bayonet. Hindenburg was also checked at Ostrov, to the north-west of Sierok, where he attempted a lightning stroke against the

Warsaw-Petrograd railway line.

His northernmost forces operating in the Riga region were likewise violently handled, and driven out of their trenches near the Dwina River. The beginning of the second week in August was thus marked by a series of defeats all along the immense line controlled by Hindenburg. Every other German or Austrian commander had some success to show. Prince Leopold of Bavaria was cutting off the Russian army corps at Novo Georgievsk by a movement on Praga, north of Warsaw. General von

## The Great War

Brest Litovsk,

armed forces. Hinden-burg appears to have

attributed his disastrous

delay in closing down upon Alexeieff's army



TSAR AS PRIVATE. The Tsar of Russia photographed in the uniform of an ordinary infantryman.

to the long time required for making the concrete beds of the  $16\frac{1}{2}$  in. howitzers needed to batter down the chain of Russian frontier fortresses. As a matter of fact, there was ample room for him to advance between Lomza and Sierok in the south; and in the north, between Lomza and Grodno, only the small bridgehead fort of Osoviec barred his way. He had, in fact, concentrated his main forces between Lomza and Sierok; but on this section of the front Alexeieff clean outfought him by means of

the brilliant use of forest cover and river marshlands. Hindenburg was no master of strategy. His early successes amid the Masurian Lakes, which had made him the hero of the German people, had been due largely to the treachery of certain highly-placed Russian officers, who had communicated to the German Staff plans of the Russian Staff. Even at the headquarters of the Grand Duke

Nicholas there were persons in the pay of Where German the enemy, with means of communicating important plans of attack. But during spies failed

traitors were discovered and hanged, their names having been strangely obtained from documents found upon dead German officers along the French front, and revealed to the Russian Staff by General Pau. Even if this did not entirely remove all the machinery of treachery at Russian headquarters, the nature of the operations of the retreat considerably disorganised the German spy system; for each army commander—Alexeieff, Ivanoff, Evert, and Russky-was largely thrown on his own

Woyrsch was at Garresources; and as the plans of the Russian headquarters wolin, on the road to altered day by day with the sudden change of circumstances, there was little time for the spy to reveal anything. and Mackensen was across the Wieprz River, and The immediate fighting plan of each army commander was usually not within the range of knowledge of the spies at headquarters; and in particular Hindenburg and his generals, advancing in the same direction. Hindenburg alone with his army generals—Beseler, Gallin their struggle against Alexeieff, a closeminded, reticent, hard-thinking man, bitterly suspicious of witz, Scholtz, Eichhorn, all German influences, had no help whatever from their Below, and Lauenstein—could not make any intelligence agents, and were thrown back on their own intellectual powers of divination. progress whatever, though they had the largest and the best-

These powers were very small. The consequence was that Alexeieff moved southwards through the narrow corridor between the Warsaw-Petrograd railway line and the Garwolin-Lukov front-a distance of from thirty-five to fifty miles-in as complete secrecy as aeroplane methods of reconnaissance would allow. He hid his armies in woodlands; he scattered his grey-coated reserves in the tall growth of harvest-fields; and when he had to send

a column on the march in daylight, he did not mind if the ranks grew ragged and looked like a stream of fugitives. When night fell and veiled his dispositions, his main manœuvres for battle were conducted in the darkness. On August 9th he withdrew from Novo Georgievsk, leaving much less than an army corps in the fortress and only half the fortress guns, with orders to hold out till the main forts were stormed. The troops, sacrificed to win time, formed his chief rearguard, and their most important duty was to sink every vessel that came up the Vistula.

Secret Russian

dispositions



SPIRITED STUDY OF THE TSAR. His Imperial Majesty in his uniform as the Commander-in-Chief of the Russian Army.

The enemy was using the river as his great line of communications, and bringing up cartridges, shells, and charges, by means of steam and motor tug boats. For as the railway bridges at Warsaw and Ivangorod were destroyed, and the rails for some miles in front of both towns needed relaying, the Vistula remained the only quick means of supplying the armies of Prince Leopold of Bavaria and General von Woyrsch. In these circumstances the



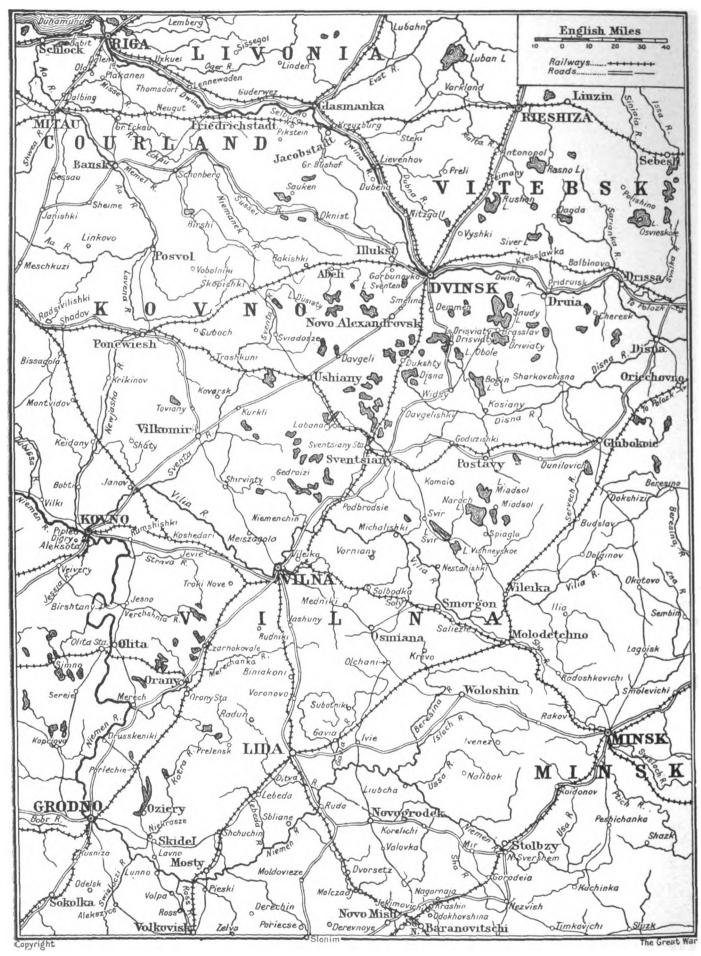
THE TSAREVITCH.
Colonel of the 12th Regiment of
Western Siberian Sharpshooters. As

TRAPPED IN A FOREST OF BARBED-WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS.

Fighting with a strong spiritual conviction that his cause is just, and a fatalism which is characteristic of the Slav temperament, the Russian peasant makes one of the finest soldiers in Europe. Oblivious to personal danger, he is ever willing to sacrifice his life even in what would appear to be a forlorn assault, if it be for the subsequent good of Slavdom. This

wonderful photograph shows how hapless Russian soldiers threw themselves against strong barbed-wire entanglements in an endeavour to break through to the German trenches. The attitude of the figure in the foreground is tragic to a degree. While still grasping his rifle, the man's body is seen suspended by the fatal wire.

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE EASTERN BATTLE AREA SPECIALLY DRAWN TO ILLUSTRATE THE BREAKING OF THE RUSSIAN FORTRESS LINE AND THE ESCAPE OF RUSSKY AND EVERT FROM HINDENBURG'S GRANDIOSE PLAN OF ENVELOPMENT.

Russian commander thought it well worth while to sacrifice 25,000 men in Novo Georgievsk, in order to delay the supplies of ammunition and food for the central Austro-German forces.

All these stratagems of General Alexeieff increased the difficulties of his chief opponent, Hindenburg, and as the capture of Warsaw, Ivangorod, Lublin, and Cholm only served to bring out the impotence of the German left wing, Hindenburg lost all sense of measure in his mad efforts to

## impotence

carry out his part of the movement. He German left wing's was getting far behind the general timetable. Instead of closing down on the Russians well within a fortnight, in co-

operation with Mackensen, he was taking five weeks to advance over the critical distance of forty miles. Save on his old field of strategy at Tannenberg, the bull-necked, grim-faced old Field-Marshal had proved himself the most terrible waster of men in modern history; but the troops he had wasted the previous autumn and winter, in front of Warsaw and Ivangorod, were a small drain on his country's resources compared with the numbers he now employed to retrieve his tactical mistakes on the northern front.

It will be remembered that the excuse which the Germans made for opening the Great War by an invasion of Belgium was that the German Staff reckoned it would cost a hundred thousand men to break through the frontier line of French fortresses. In order to avoid this loss they openly challenged the sea-power of Great Britain for the advantage of getting room for a large flanking movement on the Belgian plain. But twelve months after the invasion of Belgium, the most popular of all German generals was reduced to such straits, at a time when Germany seemed to have Russia at her mercy, that he was ready to lose a hundred thousand men in the capture of a single Russian frontier fortress. We have seen that Hindenburg tried to carry by sudden storm, on August 6th, Novo Georgievsk, Osoviec, and Kovno. He returned to the attack on Kovno and Novo Georgievsk on August 8th,

and for nearly two weeks his main forces maintained a tremendous struggle round these strongholds.

Some days passed before all the 161 in. Krupp howitzers were fully brought into action against the steel domes and concrete walls of the Russian forts. In the meantime, the fortress guns and the mobile Russian batteries were able to fight on fairly equal terms against the besieging armies. But Hindenburg wanted a quick decision. It was necessary for him to break through the line of Russian fortresses, and get on the flank of Alexeieff's retiring troops. His first thrust at Ostrov, between the Narew and the Bug Rivers, had proved ineffectual. For at Ostrov the very slowly advancing German spearhead was not directed sufficiently far north to strike the flank of the withdrawing Russian army. By the time Hindenburg's subordinate, General von Gallwitz, broke through Lomza, he was fighting Alexeieff's front instead of his flank. Therefore, to get a grip round the retreating Russians, Hindenburg had to strike again farther northward; and as the fortress of Grodno was covered by a very strong line of Cossack sharpshooters, fighting with the advantage of ground in the forests, swamps, and lakes west of the Niemen River, the fortified city of Kovno, on the northern bend of the Niemen, was the only possible point at which vast massed German forces could be quickly concentrated for a belated attempt to obtain a decision.

Kovno lies only fifty miles from the Prussian frontier, at the confluence of the Niemen, the Vilia, and some small brooks. Originally it had a girdle of

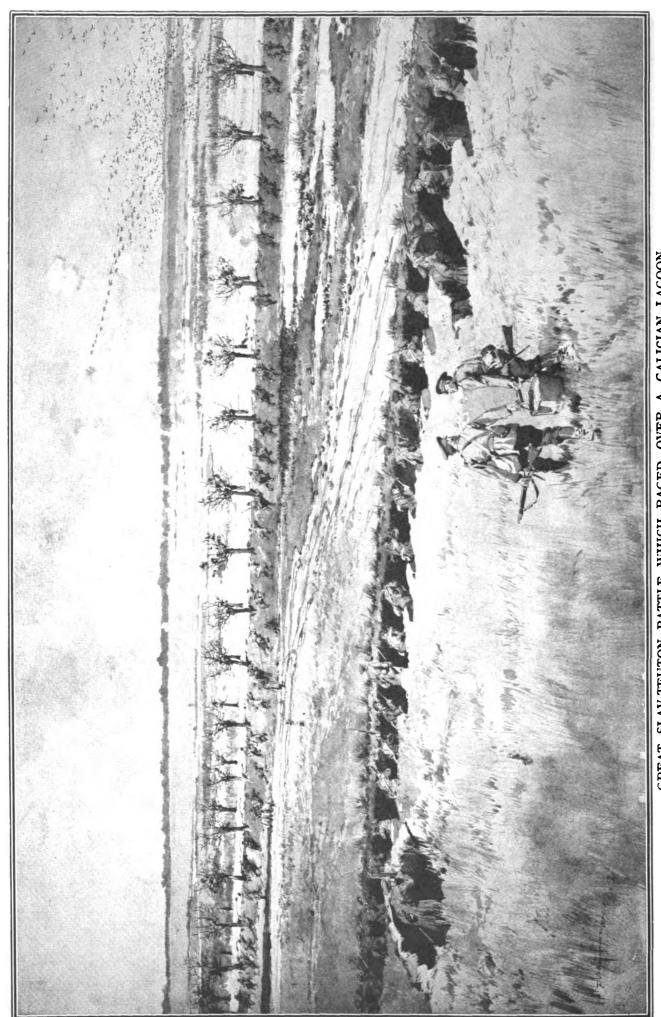
eleven forts, extending about two and a half miles from the old Lithuanian town.

The costly attack on Kovno In times of peace a railway connected

Kovno with the Prussian frontier town of Eydtkuhnen, and though the line had been destroyed, the engineers of General von Eichhorn's army rebuilt the track, and along it brought up a great siege train, including some of the famous 16½ in. howitzers and many 11 in. and 12 in. pieces. The fortress could have been captured at a comparatively small expense of life by allowing the work to be slowly done by the siege



ON THE PICTURESQUE BORDER-LINE BETWEEN THE AUSTRIAN AND RUSSIAN EMPIRES. Austrian artillery crossing the frontier.



RAGED OVER A GALICIAN LAGOON.

disturbed flocks of water-fowl which flew over the conflicting lines in wild confusion, augmenting the din of battle with their raucous cries. In the foreground of the drawing two Russian soldiers are approaching the trench with a cauldron of water, while an officer is seen using a hyposcope in an observation pit on the extreme left. Striking panoramic study of a battle in Galicia during the great Mackensen onslaught of June, 1915, which culminated in the fall of Warsaw, Novo Georgievsk, and Brest Litovsk. The position illustrated was known as the Lagoon, and the Russian troops were strongly entrenched on the marshy ground. The shriek of German projectiles, which fell short of the Russian position and struck the water of the lake, train. But Eichhorn's assistant, General Litzmann, who directly controlled the operations at Kovno, was in as great a hurry as Emmich had been at Liège. He began the attack across the western forest section, extending from the Jessia brook to the village of Piple. His gunners opened fire at midnight with long-range ordnance, in order to draw the fire of the mobile batteries of defence and mark their points by the flames showing in the darkness. This is the manner in which a superior modern artillery always tries to annul the new advantage given in daylight to weaker opposing batteries by the invention of smokeless powder. After a hurricane fire of two hours,

thrown back the German infantry the German infantry threw out some skirmishing lines, and behind these came dense storming columns. But the wooded ground over which the assailers charged was full of land-mines and wolf-pits, and behind these devices were the Russian wire entanglements and trenches, concealed in a tangle of trees and bushes. The mobile Russian field-guns, which had reserved their fire during the hostile bombardment, now came fiercely into action, and the German columns were so terribly shattered by

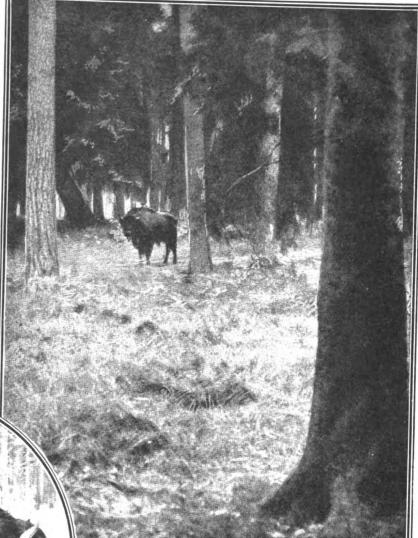


A TWELVE-YEAR-OLD RUSSIAN BISON
This photograph, like that on the right of it, was taken in a Lithuanian forest. The Puscion bisses of the control of the Puscion bisses of the

forest. The Russian bison—popularly, but erroneously, called aurochs—are the last survivors of their kind from an age when Europe was a savage wilderness.

shell fire, machine-gun, and rifle fire, that the Russian troops in the advanced trenches were able to make a daring bayonet charge into the enemy's front. By five o'clock in the morning the German infantry was thrown back into the ravines beyond the village.

The German gunners then tried to wipe out the Russian trenches with some hundreds of thousands of shells. The intense bombardment lasted all day on August 8th, and when night fell the enemy columns again charged up from the forest ravines across the flame-lit rim of woodland between the Jessia and the Niemen. After a struggle of



RUSSIAN BISON CHARGE THE GERMAN INVADERS.
Russian bison in his native haunt. In August, 1915, a company of some two hundred German soldiers was marching through the Bielovieska Forest when a bull at the head of a small herd of bison charged down on the invaders, and, taking them by surprise, trampled and gored nearly all of them to death.

two hours they broke into the advanced Russian trenches, only to be blasted out of them by high-explosive shell and hand-bombs. Then, just before dawn, Litzmann sent fresh masses forward, and the new columns managed to get a footing in a few trenches in front of the outer forts near Digry village.

All the force of the attack was concentrated against the western face of the fortress, but the outer defences were still resisting by August 12th, after six days and six nights of horrible slaughter. On Friday, August

13th, Litzmann managed to capture a Beslegers' enormous work in one of the Niemen woods, but his besieging army was broken by its enor-

mous losses. Large forces had to be detached from the northernmost army under Below, to enable the siege operations to continue. There was a lull of some days in the infantry attacks on Kovno, during which the heavy German artillery, fed with shell by the Prussian railway, maintained an unceasing storm of fire on the Russian trenches, redoubts, and forts. Then on Monday, August 16th, the reinforced German infantry resumed its mass attacks. In the evening a small fort on the left bank of the Niemen, which had been put out of action by the enemy's incessant shell fire, was

captured, and in the intervening spaces between other forts on the western sector the German columns stormed over the trenches.

The Russian commander at first hoped to be able to close in on the German wedge and cut it off by a double counter-attack, based on the forts which still held out on either side of the section of shattered works. But this scissor-like movement had been foreseen by the director of the siege operations. He answered it by massing all his siege-guns on the works between which his troops were advancing. Fort after fort continued to fall under the overwhelming storm of heavy shell, while the mobile Russian field artillery operating in front of the forts was

also overwhelmed. The Russian engineers had designed their cupolas to resist 8 in. shells, but the extraordinary explosive power of the  $16\frac{1}{2}$  in. Krupp projectiles battered down the armoured domes and put the machinery out of order.

The garrison withdrew over the Jessia brook, using its embankment as a last line of defence. For three days the struggle fiercely raged along the western bank of the Niemen and the Jessia brook. General Litzmann had two thousand pieces of ordnance; of these six hundred guns were ranged in an unbroken semicircle, several rows deep, and they were all massed on a single fort until the work was completely smashed. Then the blast of huge shells was directed upon another single fort. An air fleet of thirty aeroplanes and three large airships circled above the

town, dropping bombs, and controlling the gun fire. The front of Kovno Cathedral was wrecked by a big shell, and much damage was done in both the new town

The withdrawal from Kovno

and the old. Yet, though the garrison of the fortress was hammered out of the forts, these works, with their supporting field artillery, wrought a terrible amount of slaughter before the guns were put out of action; for General Litzmann was too eager to consummate his artillery victory, and continued to throw his infantry forward in repeated storming attacks. The result was that the Russian troops won many opportunities of meeting the German troops on fairly equal terms in hand-to-hand fighting, and as the defenders of the half-shattered wing of fortresses had the Vilna railway behind them, and large supplies of war material, they fought with exceeding stubbornness. According to an Austrian report, the German casualties at Kovno amounted to one hundred thousand men.

Since Hindenburg was ready to make this enormous sacrifice of life at a time when he possessed a terrific



GERMAN OFFICERS OVERLOOKING THE COUNTRY FROM AN OBSERVATION POST ON THE CASTLE TOWER AT VILNA. The castle at Vilna, in Lithuania, formerly an archiepiscopal seat, had become the residence of the Governor-General. Vilna was evacuated by the Russians on September 21st, 1915. Above: Group of German officers at an al-fresco meal near Vilna.



IN A RUSSIAN TRENCH: OFFICERS STUDY-ING PLANS.

superiority in heavy artillery and shell supplies, the wonder is not that he captured Kovno, but that he failed to capture the garrison. The Russian troops, however, kept their line of retreat open at Janov, north-east of the town, and at Koshedari, eastward on the line to Vilna. Leaving only a rearguard in the last forts, they withdrew from Kovno on August 21st, on which day part of their forces were still fighting on the west bank of the Niemen. Undoubtedly the fall of Kovno was an extremely disagreeable surprise to the Russian Staff. It had been expected that this town, which was the chief frontier fortress of Russia, as Verdun was of France, would have resisted for several months, and formed a firm pivoting point for the field armies on either side of it, between Riga and Grodno. Had the Russian

Fortresses as death-traps armies been fully supplied with ammunition and big guns, Kovno could have been held,

as Verdun was, by means of the new system of earthworks, enveloping the

forts at a distance of seven to ten miles from the town. But the supporting Russian field armies were still weak owing to the deficiency of munitions, and when the enemy concentrated against them and smashed up their trenches by hurricane high-explosive fire, they could only escape destruction by continuing their retreat.

All the frontier fortresses upon which the Russian engineers had expended great treasure and labour became death-traps. The field armies could not hold them when the German siege trains came fully into action.

Fortresses had to be treated in the same way as temporary earthworks, and abandoned as soon as the maximum amount of loss had been inflicted on the advancing enemy. It is a matter of great credit to the Russian Staff that no fortress, however important, was held too long. But the effect upon the general mind of the Russian people, as stronghold after stronghold fell all along the line of invasion, was extremely disturbing. The week from August 17th to August 25th was the blackest in Russian history. Kovno practically fell on

August 17th; Novo
Georgievsk was occupied by the enemy on

Russia's
black week

August 20th. The next day Bielsk was captured. Osoviec was abandoned on August 22nd; the Austrian cavalry entered Kovel on August 24th; and Brest Litovsk was occupied by the Germans and Austrians on August 25th. It was more like a game of ninepins than a contest between the still intact armies of the largest land empire in the world and the forces of the greatest race of technical experts.



ANOTHER VIEW OF A RUSSIAN TRENCH: OBSERVATION OFFICERS AT WORK

Apparently German technical science, on its warlike side, was absolutely triumphant over the grand human resources of the unprogressive peasant State of Russia. Appearances, however, are not always the same thing as realities.

The swift, smashing victories of the Teutons resembled those which the phalanx of the Greek King Pyrrhus won against the Romans. They were as expensive of life as great defeats would have been. The Germans and Austrians had the advantage of moving forward, which

enabled them to recover in many cases the weapons of their dead, and capture many of the rifles of the dead and badly-wounded Russians. But the loss of life, especially on Hindenburg's front, told more heavily against the attacking troops than against the garrisons of the Russian forts and of the field armies behind them. The single wasted Russian army corps, locked up in Novo Georgievsk, took as terrible a toll of its victors as the garrison of Kovno; for Hindenburg could not wait for the Vistula fortress to be reduced by gun fire. His need for the command of the river communications was urgent. He was racing against time, and the check to the munition supplies impeded the advance of his two southern armies, under Gallwitz and Scholtz, between Warsaw and Grodno, besides interfering even more seriously with the fighting power of the group of armies under Prince Leopold and



COSSACK SCOUTS AND THE TELEPHONE.

On the eastern front Cossack scouts were sent on in advance of the Russian armies, and by means of the field telephones they fixed up, communicated to headquarters all the information they could glean relative to the movements of the enemy.

Marshal von Mackensen. Hindenburg, therefore, used two armies against Novo Georgievsk, the besieging army under General von Beseler being reinforced by another hundred thousand men.

Novo Georgievsk cut off

Gallwitz cut off the fortress on August 9th by his thrust across the Narew River, while Beseler advanced along the

Wkra River on the north, using artillery of double the calibre which the Russian forts were designed to resist. The comparatively small garrison had the odds of nearly eight to one against them in the matter of troops, and still more enormous odds against them in the matter of artillery power. But the German commanders lost all their advantages through using their infantry forces with too brutal a violence. As at Kovno, so at Novo Georgievsk,

rushing tactics by close-packed columns, vainly screened by lines of skirmishers, were employed within the range of the Russian fortress-guns. Night after night there was a hurricane bombardment, followed by a tremendous infantry attack. The Russians lost trench after trench of their outer defences, but the slaughter they wrought with their machine-guns before they fell back was appalling. It certainly appalled the German troops, and they had to be drugged in order to make them careless of their danger.

By August 14th the approach defences on the north-east sector were broken, and, pushing closer his siege ordnance, Beseler for sixty hours bombarded one of the chief forts and its two neighbouring smaller works. These were completely shattered and at last were carried by storm on August 18th, so as to enable the railway running down from Mlava to be reconstructed closer to the doomed fortress. The Russian troops with their field-guns withdrew across the Wkra River, and fought in the angle between that stream and the larger breadth of water formed by the confluence of the Bug and the Narew, with the still wider expanse of the Vistula protecting them on the south. The Russian wire entanglements were covered with German bodies on both the Narew and the Vistula

sectors; for when the fortress guns had been put out of action, the heroic Russian infantry fought on with machine-gun and rife against the German troops ad-

Heroic Russian infantry

and rifle against the German troops advancing to take the ruins. Beseler, however, brought his siege-guns round to the Vistula section on the night of August 18th, and by another hurricane bombardment, lasting two days, all the outer works were destroyed. After inflicting terrible losses on the hostile attacking columns at Zakroczym, near the Vistula, the remnant of the garrison withdrew on the night of August 19th to the old central forts surrounding the citadel. But, battering down two of the forts with shell fire on August 20th, the German commander again launched his infantry columns, and in a violent hand-to-hand combat Novo Georgievsk fell. As it seems to have cost the enemy nearly the effectives of three army corps to take it, the Russian engineers who built the fortress and the wasted Russian army corps that lost half its remaining men in defending it were well repaid for their labours and self-sacrifice.

After Kovno and Novo Georgievsk had fallen, the little marshland fortress of Osoviec was assailed. Osoviec was the Russian Mafeking. It consisted of a small system of earthworks, with some concealed concrete gun emplacements, lying on the causeway which connected the Prussian town of Lyck with the Russian town of Bielostok. It had been subjected to assault for nearly twelve months. The German Emperor had come to the neighbouring town of Grajevo to watch the storming of the little fort. Several 16½ in. Krupp howitzers were hauled up to blast away the defences of Osoviec, and altogether some two million shells were hurled upon the works. But the men of Osoviec held out when stronger Russian entrenched camps were battered down and stormed. This was due to the fact that no arc of hundreds of pieces of heavy artillery could be ranged against the little bridgehead. The fort could be ranged against the little bridgehead. was almost entirely surrounded by marshlands, and as the besieging army could only operate along the narrow causeway, the small garrison could hold the enemy back in the manner in which Horatius and his two comrades held the Tiber bridge against the Tuscans.

The garrison at Osoviec killed quite five times their

The garrison at Osoviec killed quite five times their number of German troops before they retired on Bielostok, and linked up with the Grodno army. It was reported that a gas attack of an unusual character at last drove them from the causeway on August 22nd. The Germans it is said, floated large balloons full of poison gas over the fortress, and exploded them. But we are inclined to believe that it was the progress of the German armies

Nurse Edith Cavell, a victim of German savagery.

This English lady, whose life had been devoted to works of mercy, was, by the order of Baron von Bissing, shot, after summary trial, at Brussels on October 11th, 1915, for helping British and Belgian fugitives across the Belgian frontier.

F 41



Raiding Zeppelin as it appeared to Londoners on the night of October 13th, 1915.



Untouched photograph of Zeppelin over. Eastern Counties on September 8th, 1915.



Zeppelin rising when attacked by anti-aircraft guns and caught by searchlight.



Admiral Sir Percy Scott, in charge of London's gunnery defences against enemy aircraft.

over the Narew front which compelled the Russians to evacuate Osoviec. On August 21st the army of General von Gallwitz had advanced to the town of Bielsk, some thirty miles south of Bielostok and more than sixty miles south of Osoviec. So it was high time for the garrison to retire. Moreover, some ninety miles south of Bielostok the main forces of the Teutonic Empires were then closing round the great Russian entrenched camp of Brest Litovsk.
There were seven German and Austrian armies engaged in a vast sweeping movement in the bend of the Bug River and along the forested country between the Bug and Bielostok. These armies were all converging towards the edge of the immense Pripet Marshes, where Brest Litovsk stood, at the junction of the roads and railways leading to Kieff and Moscow.

So long as the Russians held Brest Litovsk, they could keep all their armies united for common action, with an intercommunicating system of railways behind them. But if the great junction fortress were lost, Ivanoff's army would lose touch with Alexe eff's army, and the two forces would be divided by the greatest stretch of difficult ground in Europe, the Pripet or Pinsk Marsh. The marsh formed a vast wedge with its point near Brest, and beyond Pinsk it broadened eastward to a

width of more than two hundred miles Invaders charged of roadless bog, heath, and forest, quite impassable for an army. For centuries by bison the Pripet Marsh had been one of the main

defences of Russia. Russians had sheltered in it during the Mongolian invasions, and Peter the Great's grand manœuvre was to wait till the enemy reached the Pripet Marsh, and then drive him in and drown him. Since the age of Peter, some 8,000,000 acres of swamp had been reclaimed between Brest and Pinsk, and a single-line railway had been thrown across the morasses to connect the Moscow and Kieff trunk lines. But, despite the immense labour spent upon it, the primeval marsh, three hundred miles long and two hundred miles broad, broke into two distinct portions any forces advancing on it or retiring by it. Marshal von Mackensen expected that General Alexeieff and General Ivanoff would concentrate for a decisive stand round Brest, rather than allow the Russian front to be split by the immense natural obstacle. A grandiose scheme of attack had been planned soon after the fall of Warsaw and though Hindenburg's southern the fall of Warsaw, and though Hindenburg's southern wing, consisting of Gallwitz's and Scholtz's armies, did not move quickly enough, Mackensen's forces were able to sweep in a wide movement of envelopment round Brest Litovsk.

In the north, the army of Gallwitz slowly moved towards the Bielovieska Forest, which is one of the most remarkable tracts of primeval woodland in the Old World. Extending for three hundred and ninety-six square miles between Bielostok and Brest Litovsk, the forest contains—or did contain, towards the end of August, 1915—the last herd of wild European bison surviving from the age when Europe was a savage wilderness. The animals are popularly called aurochs, but they are really closely akin to the bison of North American are really closely akin to the bison of North American are really closely akin to the bison of North American are really closely akin to the bison of North American are really closely akin to the bison of North American are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties of the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the age when the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the bison surviving from the same properties are really closely akin to the same properties are really closely acing the same properties are really at the same properties are really closely at the same properties of North America, on which the Red Indians lived. It was not known at the time of writing if the great herd of the Bielovieska Forest had been made into meat by the armed missionaries of "Kultur," but if the last auroch has vanished we must praise the shaggy, humped picturesque bull for his final exploit. A company of some two hundred German soldiers was marching down one of the forest ways when a bull at the head of a small herd charged down on the invaders, and taking them by surprise, trampled and gored nearly all the company. It is said that only twenty of the German troops escaped without injury.

The army group under Prince Leopold of Bavaria,

which included General von Woyrsch's forces, advanced from Warsaw and Ivangorod towards Siedlee, on the road to Brest Litovsk. But about midway it turned leftward and crossed the Bug towards Wysoko Litovsk, and

there thrust out along the south side of the Bielovieska Forest. The forest was thus hemmed in on the northwest and the north by Gallwitz's troops, and enveloped south-west and south by Prince Leopold's armies. It was barely fifteen miles from the southernmost skirts of the great northern forest to the northern sector of the outer defences of Brest Litovsk. Consequently the mighty fortress was partly encircled near the main line of retreat open to the garrison. Mackensen in person operated with two armies, his own and that of the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand, on the western sector of the great entrenched camp. He also extended his forces northward towards the edge of the Bielovieska Forest, in order to combine with Prince Leopold along the Russian line of retreat. Immediately south of Brest, General von Linsingen, who was supposed to have been retired after his disasters on the



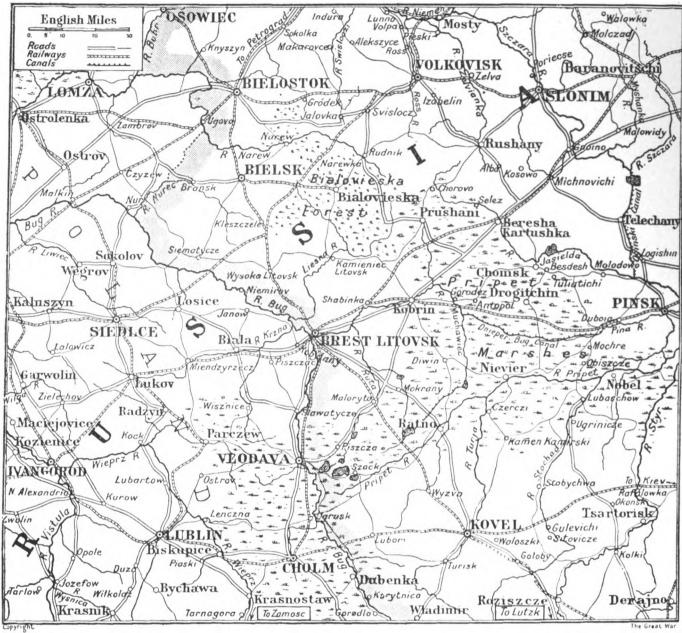
Russian soldier having a tooth drawn by an Army doctor outside a field hospital.

Dniester front in Galicia, unexpectedly appeared with another large army. He advanced on the south-western edge of the Pripet Marsh near the town of Vijva, through which ran the railway connecting Brest with Rovno. Then about fifteen miles southeast of Vijva a large force of Linsingen's un-

Teutonic and Hungarian cavalry, under expected appearance

General Puhallo, was fighting its way to Kovel, along one of the tributaries of the Pripet River.

The general design was to do to the Russians what they had done to one of the Swedish armies in 1717. West of Wysoko Litovsk, and across the River Liesna, there was only a corridor of dry firm land between the morasses of the Bielovieska Forest and the vast stretch of the Pripet Marsh. By massing the main forces of both Mackensen's and Prince Leopold's groups of armies at the



BIELOVIESKA FOREST AND THE PRIPET MARSH WHERE THE TREMENDOUS DRIVE OF SEVEN TEUTON ARMIES AGAINST THE RUSSIAN CENTRE ENDED. MAP SHOWING THE

entrance to the corridor and along the southern edge of the forest as far as Prushani, it was hoped to deliver a flank attack in overwhelming force on the Russian troops, just as their front was being broken at Brest Litovsk, and thus throw them into the marshes, where Linsingen's army and Puhallo's forces would press up from the south and complete the work of destruction.

In order to batter down quickly the defences of Brest Litovsk, the two thousand siege-guns of the Grand Phalanx were hauled up from Lublin on the rebuilt railway running through Lukov to Brest. For three weeks after the fall of Warsaw, fighting of a most furious, incessant, and general character went on in the hilly, water-threaded country stretching for ninety miles between Ivangorod and Brest Litovsk. It was largely owing to the remarkable stubbornness with which the wings of Ivanoff's and Alexeieff's forces

contested every hill and stream, that the The siege of idea was confirmed that the Grand Duke Nicholas and his Staff were preparing to Frest Litovsk offer battle. At the beginning of the

second week in August, Mackensen's artillery was hammering the Russian field army in front of Brest, while Prince Leopold's troops were making their surprising swerve far to the north of the fortress. But the Russian Staff was fully aware of the fact that Mackensen's giant howitzers, though worn by fifteen weeks' work in which they had discharged

an unparalleled number of shells, were still well enough rifled to outrange and overpower the smaller, older guns of the fortress. The Russian Commander-in-Chief therefore treated Brest Litovsk as he had treated Kovno and Novo Georgievsk. The garrison removed about half the artillery. mainly pieces of 6 in. calibre that could be used in field warfare, and left about 20,000 infantry-

men to hold out as long as they could in Feint and counterthe spaces between the forts, while the gunners inflicted as much punishment as

feint

possible upon the attacking German and Austrian columns. Meanwhile the Russian field armies under Alexeieff withdrew northward, in answer to the formidable pressure along the decisive line of attack.

In this way the siege of the greatest of Russian fortresses became a mere incident in the contest of the opposing field armies. Each side tried to deceive the other by attacking and counter-attacking with the utmost violence along the south-western and western sectors of Brest. The German commander wished to force the Russian commander to throw more troops into Brest, so that they might be captured by the turning movement of Prince Leopold's The Russian commander had also to make a brave show around Brest, to prevent Mackensen from abandoning the attempt to carry the stronghold by sudden storming attacks, and combining with Prince Leopold on the north

in the far more dangerous turning movement. As in all great military movements of an intricate and far-reaching kind, the result depended almost entirely upon the play of mind of the opposing commanders, for the forces engaged were fairly equal. The Germans had the mechanical advantage of superior artillery; but the Russians, with the magnificent human material of the retreating armies from Cholm, Lublin, Ivangorod, and Warsaw, could balance, by the slaughter they wrought in infantry fighting, the losses they incurred in the bombardment. There was no question of holding on to Brest. Such a course would only have

given Mackensen his last great chance to make the best use of his heavier artillery and of his larger supply of shells. The pro-

of his larger supply of shells. The problem was to continue the retreat along the railway to Minsk and the railway to Pinsk, while so misleading the enemy as to get full opportunity for two smashing blows against Gallwitz, Prince Leopold, and Woyrsch in the north, and Mackensen

and the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand on the west and southern fronts.

This object was achieved by the evening of Wednesday, August 25th. Using the re-maining guns of the for Press, the reduced garrison of Brest fought one of the most tremendous rearguards actions in the war, while the main Russian forces mowed down Prince Leopold's and Woyrsch's troops, and part of the northern wing of the Mackensen army group, in a battle in the open field by the Liesna River and the edge of the Bielovieska Forest. The army of General von Gallwitz was also met and checked on the north-western side of the same forest, along the narrowing, high-banked waters of the Upper Narew. At Brest the Russians fought until all their guns were put out of action by the enemy's siege ordnance, and so stubbornly did they hold out that when they retired in the darkness towards Pinsk, the victorious Austrian army corps under Field-Marshal von Arz, which first broke through the last line of defences, was appalled by what it saw.

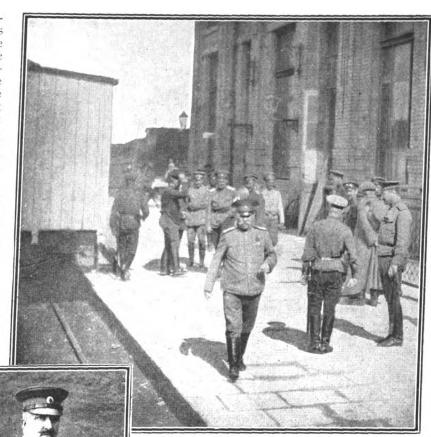
Brest Litovsk had ceased to exist. Everything of value had been removed, excepting the

heaviest fortress guns. These had been completely destroyed, and of the town there remained nothing but flaming or smoking ruins. Every bit of war material, food, useful metal, and household material of importance had been transported by road towards Kieff or Moscow. The Russian in the summer of 1915 met the invader with even more resolution than he had done in the summer of 1812. Moscow was not burned down until Napoleon

A BONAPARTE FIGHTING FOR RUSSIA.

Prince Louis Bonaparte, brother of Prince

Victor Napoleon. He was a General in the Russian Army, and Colonel-in-Chief of a Dragoon Regiment.



COMMANDER OF RUSSIA'S SECOND ARMY.

General Smirnoff, Commander of the Second Russian Army, on a station platform just prior to the evacuation of Warsaw.

The General had been sharing his men's crude meal at the goods waggon.

had entered the ancient capital; but Brest Litovsk, which the modern Russian regarded as the supreme rallying-point of the armies defending Kieff and Moscow, was entirely burnt down before the enemy reached it.

In the afternoon of August 25th the army corps of Marshal von Arz, the most brilliant of Austro-Hungarian commanders, stormed two forts on the south-west front of Brest, the Hungarian Landwehr leading the attack by the village of Kobylany. About the same time some of the new levies from Galicia and Silesia rushed a fort on the west front, and in a night attack Prussian regiments from Brandenburg captured the citadel near the railway bridge. The Hungarians and Austrians carried out the most terrible part of the work, advancing by daylight in the open in dense formations against the

shattered forts, round which the Russian troops fought with field artillery, machine-guns, and rifles. When the defence had been broken

and rifles. When the defence had been broken down by the use of Austrian cannon fodder, the lordly Prussian troops were launched under cover of darkness to win the honour of actually taking the town. There was great exultation in the German Reichstag on August 26th over the

news of the fall of Brest Litovsk. The President explained that the capture of the fortress was the crown of the almost incredible achievements of the German and Austrian armies. But it was noteworthy that no claim was made as to the capture of men and material.

As a matter of fact, the proper garrison of the great Russian entrenched camp was 100,000 men. But only a division was left to hold the forts along the Bug River.



The small body of troops held out while the main army retired towards Pinsk. When this movement had been effected, all the fortifications and bridges were blown up, the large railway-station was set on fire, the citadel was destroyed, and the market-place burnt. A very small rearguard checked the Brandenburg regiment during the night attack, and enabled the garrisons of all the forts to rejoin the field army.

Thus ended the march of the Grand Phalanx, which had begun four months before on the river-line of the

Dunajec and Biala, in Western Galicia. Mackensen's artillery When Brest fell, Mackensen's enormous artillery train was found to be of no train useless further use against the Russians. His

heaviest piece was the famous 42 centimetre Krupp howitzer, which weighed eighty-nine tons, with a carriage of thirty-seven tons. It needed a crew of two hundred men, each shot cost £550, and carried thirteen miles. But for the transport of this gigantic siege-gun twelve railway waggons were required. The Skoda 12 in. gun also needed several railway waggons; and in the muddy soil of Poland



"THE OLD MAN OF THE LAKES."

Field-Marshal von Hindenburg. A photograph taken when he was Commander-in-Chief of all the German forces on the eastern front. Called by the Kaiser from the obscurity of his retirement before the war, Von Hindenburg became the popular idol of the German people. From being referred to contemptuously as "the Old Man of the Lakes," on account of his close study of the Masurian region, he came to be hailed by the Kaiser as "the saviour of Germany." Even though he was eventually superseded by General von Mackensen, this seems to have had but little effect on his popularity among his countrymen.

and Lithuania concrete beds had to be built to prevent the huge pieces of ordnance from burying themselves in their tremendous recoil. Therefore, when the line of battle moved eastward from the front of the fortresses into the dreary region of immense swamps and tumbled forest land, through which ran only woodland ways and unmetalled roads, the technical resources of Germany were exhausted. Even the great concrete construction trusts and asphalt-paving syndicates could not provide material and men for further road-making. So the Grand Phalanx was broken up. One thousand of the heaviest pieces of ordnance, all somewhat the worse for wear, were slowly hauled back to Warsaw, and thence sent through Berlin to the western front, where they arrived with the Prussian Guard Corps of the 1st and 2nd Divisions about the middle of September. A large number of the 12 in. Skoda howitzers were returned to Austria, and railed down to the Danube for use against

the Serbians. Then a part of the Archduke Ferdinand Joseph's army, comprising the troops under the command of General von Kövess, were placed in reserve to refit and rest, preparatory to the new campaign against Serbia, with the general direction of which Field-Marshal von Mackensen was entrusted.

The vast combined movement by Mackensen and Hindenburg had failed. The Russian armies had completely eluded the pair of pincers formed of two army groups, each containing about a million men, with 2,000 heavy siege-guns in addition to their full artillery corps. Hindenburg was mainly responsible for the failure to grip the retiring Russian forces. Yet Mackensen also, though he reached Brest Litovsk in accordance with the revised time-table, had likewise failed in another direction. He had misused his men. Not only was his casualty list enormous, but the men who remained were nearing a condition of utter physical exhaustion. They had been driven harder than they had driven the Russians, with the result that, though the condition of the Russian troops was such as to test these hardy peasants most severely, the state of the German and Austrian soldiers was still more miserable.

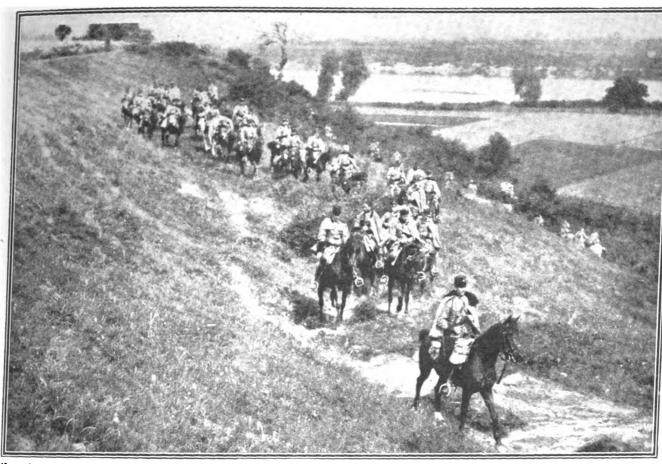
Between June 1st, 1915, and August 1st, 1915, the losses of the Austro-Hungarians are said to have exceeded a million men. The troops that suffered these appalling casualties, which we give on the authority of a Hungarian actuary, only formed part of the group of armies over which Field-Marshal von Mackensen exercised a general control. Linsingen's army, for instance, was mainly German, as was also the Grand Phalanx, of which the Prussian Guard was the spearhead, and German units were used in almost every division, from the Bielovieska Forest front to the Dniester front, in order to stiffen the weakening forces of the Southern Empire. Then, since the actuary's date of August 1st, there had been nearly four more weeks of exceedingly violent fighting between the Vistula and the Bug Rivers, during which the Austro-German forces only progressed slowly by terribly costly rushing tactics. In nearly every case the Russian troops were skilfully entrenched on a well-chosen line of positions of great natural strength; and instead of weakening under four months of incessant attack, they increased their force of resistance every week. In Galicia, Mackensen had progressed at the rate of three miles a day. But after the fall of Warsaw and Ivangorod his pace slackened to two miles a day, and ended at scarcely more than one mile a day. By the time he captured Brest Litovsk, and arrived on the edge of the Pripet Marsh, it was close on September, and wanted barely two weeks before the first fall of heavy autumn rain turned the earth-made roads into mud channels and the summer-dried surface of the marshes into yielding death-traps.

All this, of course, was not a happy accident of climate and soil which turned to the advantage of the Russians. Throughout the great retreat the Russian Staff had chiefly been fighting for time, with a view to using

the marshes in autumn as a defence against the enemy's heavy artillery. The first design of the Russian Staff was to

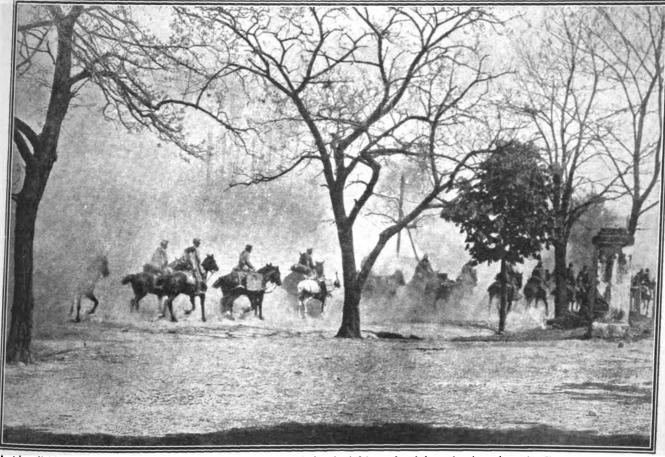
Russky firm at

employ the lakes and morasses round the Niemen against Hindenburg's howitzers, and place the Pripet Marsh in front of Mackensen's siege train, with the Bielovieska Forest as the central link between the two boggy fronts. But the unexpected suddenness of the fall of Kovno, the chief fortress of the Niemen, made the execution of this design impossible. In the north, the Petrograd army of defence under General Russky had to withdraw its left wing from Kovno, and make a fighting retreat to the intricate lake district between Vilna, Smorgon, and Dwinsk. Northward towards Riga, Russky's army still held to the riverline of the Dwina, with another immense stretch of lakeland behind it, which was being fortified by the peasantry of the Vitebsk and Pskov Governments, as the ultimate



Hungarian cavalrymen scouting near the river-bank beyond Warsaw. Unlike its infantry, the cavalry of the Austro-Hungarian Army proved extremely good, and maintained the reputation it had built up since

the wars with Louis XIV. The Austro-Hungarian Army first formed and developed light cavalry regiments of hussars. But its admittedly splendid horsemen were unable to save the arms of Austria-Hungary from defeat.



Austrian division advancing towards Novo Georgievsk along a typical Polish road. Partly owing to the vast extent of Poland and partly to the sparse population, the roads were very badly kept. In summer they were

AUSTRO-HUNGARIAN SOLDIERS IN POLAND ADVANCING AGAINST THE RUSSIANS.

buried in sand and dust; in winter, in mud. The armies that operated in Poland and Western Russia in 1915 had to contend with practically the same transport difficulties which beset Napoleon.



REMOVAL OF GUNS DURING THE RETREAT. Loading guns on the special trucks in which they were conveyed to Minsk after the final struggle which preceded the withdrawal from Warsaw.

line of defence for Petrograd. General Russky regarded his position as impregnable. Riga he was ready to lose in case of dire necessity, as his main scheme of defence was based upon the lake district, the rains of autumn, and the frosts of winter. Meanwhile, he held on to Riga in spite of the fact that on September 1st, 1915, one of Eichhorn's group of armies, consisting of a very strong force under General von Lauenstein, had approached within fifteen miles of the famous seaport.

All the principal Russian generals, except one, were beginning to feel confident. Russky was gathering increased strength in the north, owing to the progress of 50

munition making in the Petrograd region. On the southern wing General Ivanoff, with his brilliant army leaders, Brussiloff and Lechitsky and Cherbachoff, was growing stronger as the Russian factories increased their output, and products of the munition works of Japan reached his troops. The central Russian army, working north of the Pripet Marsh and defending the Moscow line, was also growing stronger, after escaping at last from the siege trains of both Mackensen and Hindenburg. Its fine commander, General Alexeieff, was taking over the grand position of Chief of Staff, while the Tsar in person prepared to lead all his armies in the critical

phase of the titanic struggle with the Hindenburg's leap invaders. General Alexeieff left a man of well-tried genius in command of

the central army group, whose escape from the salients of the Vistula, Narew, and Bug constituted the most masterly feat in modern strategy.

at Evert

But one principal Russian general still remained in a position of extreme difficulty. He was General Evert, the new commander of the Niemen army, which had been operating near the Prussian frontier, in the extension of the Masurian Lakes system, west of the Grodno fortress.

After the fall of Kovno and Brest Litovsk the lines held by General Evert's army formed another salient of great size on the Russian front. Hindenburg thereupon designed to concentrate in immense force against Evert with a view to retrieving his own mistakes and Mackensen's lack of decisive success. It was still the German aim to envelop and annihilate an entire Russian army, and thus force the Tsar to sue for peace. Hindenburg, however,

had become quite a megalomaniac; the destruction of one Russian army did not content him, and with his brilliant but overreaching Chief of Staff, Ludendorff, he made a grandiose plan for the destruction of both Evert's and Alexeieff's armies. The main feature of the scheme was a vast cavalry raid on the railway junction of Molodetchno, between Vina and Minsk, and the larger

Scheme for vast cavalry raid

part of the German and Austrian cavalry, numbering about 40,000 sabres, were collected for the purpose near Kovno, under General von Schmettau.

with 600,000 German infantry behind them. It was foreseen that the thrust against the new Russian centre would be answered with a fierce counter-thrust by the northern Russian army under General Russky. The northern German wing, therefore, en-trenched along a line of sandhills and stone-built farmhouses, turning the buildings into machinegun redoubts, and bringing up more guns and shells to strengthen the fortified line.

While this work was proceeding, the German Staff made two skilful moves to weaken the Russian centre. It was expected that the Russian Staff would be well acquainted with the fact that Mackensen's chief forces had been redistributed after the fall of Brest

on Petrograd, while Böhm Ermolli, Bothmer, and Pflanzer would be reinforced in Galicia, with the object of an attack on Kieff. The idea, of course, was to induce the Russian Commander-in-Chief to strengthen both his wings at the expense of his centre, so that the great German central thrust towards Minsk and Moscow would meet with less resistance.

Undoubtedly, the great project was as well designed as Hindenburg, Ludendorff, and Falkenhayn, with their Staffs, could elaborate it. And the Russian commanders all along the front were at a serious disadvantage in regard



RUSSIAN DESTROYER BOMBARDING A TURKISH POSITION.

The gun in action is a quick-firer, and the crew are seen about to place another shell in the breech.

to the modern method of reconnaissance, owing to the superior numbers and equipment of the hostile aircraft. The German aeroplane factories were as remarkable as the German ordnance works; in the matter of output and incessant technical improvements they were far superior to the Russian factories. Russia had some remarkable inventors such as Sykorsky, who built the famous gigantic aeroplane, but her manufacturing plant was very small compared with that of the Teutonic Empire. Everything the Germans learned on the western front by woeful experience, regarding the progress of aeroplane design in Britain and France, they rapidly applied in new machines used on the eastern front. The conse-

TURKISH CRAFT SET ON FIRE BY SHELLS FROM A RUSSIAN SQUADRON. The Russian Navy in the Black Sea proved itself a formidable menace to Turkish coast positions and shipping, in spite of the augmentation of the Ottoman Fleet by the elusive German ships, the Goeben and the Breslau.

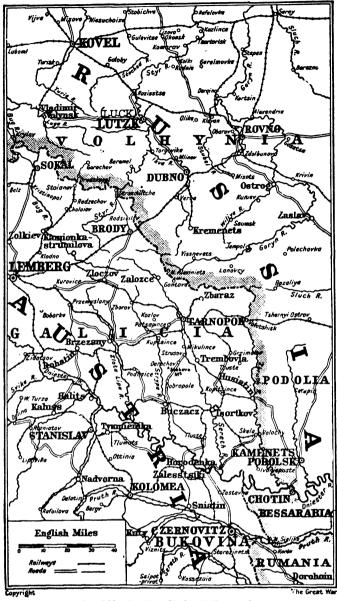
Litovsk, leaving the German centre weaker than the Russian. Naturally, the Russian Staff would want to know to what new use Mackensen's troops would be put. Hindenburg, therefore, arranged that it should seem as though the direct, straightforward method of reinforcing the two Austro-German wings was being followed. In other words, it was made to appear that General von Lauenstein and General von Morgon would be strengthened round Riga with the object of an attack

quence was that the Russian airmen were always outnumbered by the enemy, and generally outclassed in pace and climbing

the Germans seem to have temporarily won the mastery of the air during the great retreat, with the result that they could conduct in comparative secrecy their new concentrations of great striking forces.

They opened their misleading attack on the Russian

German mastery of the air power. For nearly all practical purposes



MAP OF THE GALICIAN AND VOLHYNIAN FIELD OF WAR.

Drawn to illustrate the victories of Ivanoff's generals, Brussiloff, Lechitsky, and Cherbachoff against the Austro-German forces under Linsingen.

wings by a fierce attack on the fords of the Dwina, below Riga, and by a sudden assault, at the end of August, on the southernmost Russian positions along the Zlota Lipa and the Dniester. The attacks on the Dwina fords, near Kreuzburg, were repulsed, but the armies of Pflanzer and Bothmer carried by storm the Zlota Lipa lines, and forced the passage of the river, throwing Brussiloff's forces eastward towards the Strypa River. At the same time the army under Böhm Ermolli advanced on Zloczow, and crossed the mountains where the Bug and Sereth Rivers rise on the road to Dubno and Rovno. Then at Lutzk, a few marches north of Dubno, Linsingen's army progressed

by fierce fighting along the southern edge of the Pripet Marsh, in order to connect with the Austrian armies and menace Kieff. This series of sudden converging strokes against Ivanoff's southern army was calculated

strokes against Ivanoff's southern army was calculated to perturb the Russian Staff. It was not effected by any abrupt accession of courage in the troops or skill in their commanders; the result was merely obtained by greatly reinforcing the Austrian lines with Skoda guns from Mackensen's command and reserve troops that were no longer needed by the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand. A division of the Prussian Guard was also railed up through Lemberg for the movement of assault with another German

division. Brussiloff's men, though strongly entrenched along a deep, winding river-course, were unexpectedly overwhelmed by a storm of shell fire from heavier artillery than that against which they had hitherto been contending. Their trenches were blown up by 8 in. and 12 in. shells, but though they were forced to retire, they made a desperate stand along a brook between the two rivers, and thus won time to strengthen their second line on the Strypa.

Again they were attacked all along the front from the Dneister to the southern fringe of the Pripet Marsh, during the last two days in August and the first two days in September. Lutzk was lost, and Brody and Dubno, and the line of the Strypa River, and the enemy began to press strongly against the Galician railway junction of Tarnopol and the main Russian southern fortress of Rovno. Had Tarnopol fallen, the Russians would have completely lost their footing in Eastern Galicia, and their chance of still connecting with Rumania along the Austro-Rumanian frontier. Had Rovno fallen, the road to Kieff and Odessa, the Black Sea, and Constan-

tinople would have been open. The menace was thus a very serious one, and it seems to have been backed by a large

part of the men and guns in Mackensen's group of armies, The railway from Brest Litovsk to Lemberg had enabled the central Austro-German forces to be rapidly moved

against Ivanoff's southern army group.

It is extremely probable that Mackensen delayed his Serbian adventure in order to direct in person, with the bulk of the new Danube army reinforcing Pflanzer's, Bothmer's, Böhm Ermolli's, and Linsingen's forces, the sudden and very violent movement against Ivanoff's armies; for if Mackensen had succeeded in this drive towards Kieff and Odessa, he would have been able to exert a pressure on Rumania, on both sides of her frontier, calculated to force King Ferdinand, the new Hohenzollern ruler of the Rumanian nation, to resume the alliance with the Central Empires into which his uncle, King Carol, had entered. Then, with both Rumania and Bulgaria fighting on the side of Germany and Austria, the pro-German King of Greece, and his pro-German General Staff and pro-German Government, would have been able to quell the Venizelos movement, and swing Greece also into the Teutonic camp.

Thus the violent attack on the southern Russian armies was a campaign of as high importance as the advance against the Serbians which followed it. The march towards Kieff and the Black Sea ports promised large results more speedily than the subsequent attempt to burst through the Serbian mountains. Indeed, Serbia was not seriously threatened until the greater movement was fought to a standstill. Meanwhile, General Ivanoff was not the kind of man to respond passively to hostile pressure. For some months his forces in Galicia and the Russian province of Volhynia had stood quietly on the defensive, guarding Southern Russia, and drawing on the local factories and troop depots for small quantities of ammunition and small drafts. After the fall of Brest Litovsk, the huge wedge of the Pripet Marsh practically transformed Ivanoff's command into the independent army of Southern Russia. Until the end of August Ivanoff's men lived on the resources of the Kieff and Odessa regions, with the Volhynian triangle of fortresses-Lutzk, Dubno, and Rovno—strengthening their flank near the Pripet Marsh. But when Mackensen's guns and men returned to Galicia and were allotted to the forces of Linsingen, Böhm Ermolli, Bothmer, and Pflanzer, General Ivanoff appealed to his Commander-in-Chief for heavy and more rides and menualized to heavy and more rides and menualized to heavy and more rides and more particles. artillery and more rifles and ammunition. A large part of the supplies of munitions obtained from Japan reached him by the beginning of September, 1915, soon after the southern Teutonic forces had revealed their full strength of attack strength of attack.

When Ivanoff was in a position to strike back, he had

to skilfully select the most telling point for his counterstroke. He chose Tarnopol. It was his railhead in Galicia, by which he was directly connected with Odessa and Kieff. Tarnopol was more important to him than Rovno. It was a source of political prestige, as it lay in Austrian territory, and it was a great military base, by reason of its direct railway communications with the chief cities of Southern Russia. There was also the advantage of quickness of movement from Tarnopol, as the fresh supply of munitions poured by railway directly into the town, and no delay in distribution was occasioned. So Ivanoff answered the unexpected, staggering blow by Mackensen, which had been delivered south-east of Lemberg at Brzezany, by an equally unexpected and still more staggering counter-blow delivered from the region of Tarnopol.

Tamopol.

For the first time on the eastern theatre of war the German and Austrian troops were forced to submit to the inhuman ordeal which they had been for many months imposing on the Russian infantry. A fierce, intense,

And the worst of it was that the Russian did not treat the German and Austrian as they had treated him. When the Russian gunner had obtained the famous hurricane fire effect, the Russian infantryman and Cossack horseman displayed a terrifying eagerness to use bayonet and sabre. They did not wait with Teutonic cautiousness to pick up the fragments of the front broken by the artillery. All they wanted was for their guns to break a path for their charge, and keep down the enemy's shrapnel fire, while they went to it with flashing steel and

hand-bombs. Since the Dunajec and San River battles, Ivanoff's men had spent five months in wild, desperate longing for

equal artillery conditions, enabling them to meet the enemy with bayoneted rifle, in a manly hand-to-hand struggle. Now they had their desire, and their furious joy of it was exalted to frenzy by the long, terrible ordeal of unequal combat with a decivilised foe.

To add to the difficulties of the enemy, the weather became very rainy at the beginning of September, with

annihilating Ivanoff turns storm of heavy high - explosive shell swept the the tables trenches and gun positions of the overconfident enemy. He was more than surprised; he was dumbfounded. His view of life was shattered, for he had come to regard it as the foundation of his national faith that only the countrymen of Krupp and Škoda were able to kill men in scores of thousands by using massed siegeguns in open field battles. Least of all did he dream of the unprogressive Slav soldiers dealing with him as he had dealt with them.





WITH RUSSIAN AND ENEMY SUPPLY COLUMNS ON THE EASTERN FRONT.

Russian waggons, typical of those used by peasantry, which were requisitioned for military service, passing through a village to a new position. Above: A German supply column grinding along a road which had been reduced by heavy rains and much war traffic to a quagmire.



THE WARFARE ON THE RIVERS.

Russian military cutter used for patrol work on the Vistula and armed with a quick-firing gun.

the result that the rough country roads in Eastern Galicia were churned by the motor traffic into bottomless swamps.

All the mechanical means of transport, on which the Germans relied for quickness of manœuvre, were put out of action. It needed six horses to drag one motorvehicle, and the labour knocked up the ordinary army horses in a few days. Everywhere supply columns were stuck in hopeless mire, and the task of providing the troops with food and munitions was terribly difficult. The condition of the ground grew worse on the north of General Ivanoff's front, which extended into the Pripet Marsh along the lines of the Styr and Goryn Rivers, guarding the railway embankment running across the swamps and linking Pinsk with Rovno. There were many morasses

between the Styr and the Goryn, and the swamps were overtopped by hills, on which the Russian forces entrenched with field-guns. General Ivanoff did not rely upon the Volhynian triangle of fortresses—Lutzk, Dubno, and Rovno—but based his northern wing on the more northerly village of Derajno, from which branched three small lines of light railways, connecting with the munitioning centre of Rovno. With the light railways he was able to waste Linsingen's forces by constantly moving to and fro between the Styr and the Goryn; for with his three light railways he could concentrate

rapidly on a wide marshy front, and destroy the German troops mired between the rivers. In their attacks the Russians

seldom went in pursuit farther than Kolki on the Styr, which was about twelve miles from the central light railway-head. It was by this method that Rovno was defended and Lutzk for a time recaptured.

Tarnopol, in Galicia, however, remained the grand striking point for the southern Russian army, and it was against Tarnopol that Mackensen directed his main effort. In the first week of September the German commander brought up hundreds of his heaviest siege-guns by the railway running from Lemberg to Zloczov, and thence to



THE ENEMY ADVANCE IN RUSSIAN POLAND.

Kalisz, Russian Poland, after its bombardment by the Austro-German forces; scarcely a building remained intact.

RUSSIA'S DEFENSIVE DESTRUCTION.

Entrance hall of the Kovno railway-station as the enemy troops found it on entering the town.

Zborov towards Tarnopol. A division of the Prussian Guard—the 3rd Division—with the 48th Reserve Division, and an Austrian brigade, advanced from Zborov on the night of September 7th, for an assault on Tarnopol. Then, eighteen miles farther south, near the little riverside town of Trembovla, an Austrian army, with Skoda siege-guns, also advanced to break the Russian line on the Sereth, hoping thus to destroy entirely Ivanoff's forces in Galicia.

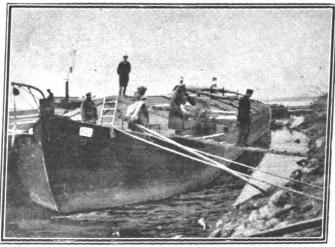
However, Ivanoff was not only a great general, but he had in his lieutenants, Brussiloff, Lechitsky, and Cherbachoff, three

of the most skilful and deadly fighters in the modern world. These three local commanders observed the enemy's preparations for an attack in the Grand Phalanx style, and having fought the Grand Phalanx when it was at its full strength between the Dunajec and the Bug, Generals Lechitsky and Cherbachoff knew how to deal with it in its decline.

The two Russian armies moved out from their trenches in the darkness of the September night, followed by a strong force of Cossack cavalry, and the famous "Rushing Victories." The latter were merely a

Victories." The latter were merely a squadron of armoured motor-cars carrying Maxim guns; but they were used along the road from Tarnopol to Zloczov in a very adventurous and daring manner. When the German

very adventurous and daring manner. When the German and Austrian siege-guns began the usual hurricane fire on the Russian trenches, these were empty. The troops were already breaking through the German and Austrian lines of advanced infantry, and groping for the columns behind the skirmishing screens, and massing machine-guns on their flanks. As soon as the infantry struggle so mixed the troops up that the artillery on either side could not fire into the field of carnage, the new heavy Russian guns, lifted on the enemy's arc of siege artillery, producing one



WOUNDED ON A RUSSIAN WATERWAY. Removing wounded from a hospital barge at a Russian Red Cross base.

flight; but the arc of siege-guns was not reached by the Cossack cavalry until daylight on September 8th.

Then, by massed shrapnel fire, the great guns and howitzers broke up the first charging squadrons of cavalry. The Cossacks, nevertheless, captured 14 siege-guns and 16 field-guns, with 200 officers and 8,000 men. At Trembovla, 3 guns and 36 machine-guns were taken, with 150 officers and 7,000 men. The enemy fled in a panic haste to the Strypa River. The Russians followed them up, and by September 12th the prisoners numbered 40,000 and the spoil included 14 siege-guns, 35 field-guns, and 70 machine-guns. In the following week 40,000 more prisoners, with 2 guns and 79 Maxims, were taken in the more northerly sector round Ltuzk,



WAIFS OF THE WAR.
Scene on a Russian railway siding, where
peasant children, separated from their
parents during the general hurried exodus
before the German invader, were being
cared for.

of the grand surprises of the war. The Russian infantry and cavalry, with their daring motor-car crews, then gave both the German army and the Austrian amy a lesson in attacking tactics. The Austrian and Hungarian troops in the Tarnopol section surrendered; the German Reserve Division was half destroyed, and twenty thousand of the Prussian Guard, after trying to maintain their traditions by making a stand, were outflanked, ridden down, bayoneted, and knocked over in hundreds by the machineguns. The German line was broken, and the troops put to



TSAR'S SOLDIERS AS GOOD SAMARITANS.

Women refugees of the Polish peasantry entertained by the good-natured soldiers of the Tsar at a military camp near to the zone of operations.

The total losses of the enemy, including prisoners, could not have been less than a quarter of a million, and were probably more—for 80,000 prisoners usually means 80,000 dead and 160,000 wounded. In other words, the Russian armies on the Sereth line, when supplied with all the shell they needed, were able to put out of action fully half the effectives opposed to them. So shattering was their double blow that when Mackensen, in consequence of it, decided it would be easier to pierce through Serbia than to get round to the Black Sea, he had to delay his Danube adventure in order to obtain fresh forces therefor.

A considerable body of Austrian troops was available, as it was possible to detach Woyrsch's army from Prince Leopold of Bavaria's group, north of the Pripet Marsh. But the German Staff pointed out with extraordinary insolence, in an official communiqué relating to the actions at Tarnopol and Trembovla, that the enormous number of prisoners taken by the Russians were all Austrians and Hungarians, and the guns lost were also Austro-Hungarian. In an answering communiqué, the Russian Staff maliciously pretended to agree with the untrue German statement, for General Alexeieff, the new Chief of Staff to the Tsar, was not unwilling to accentuate the bitter feeling between the Teutonic allies. The plain meaning of the German communiqué was that it publicly condemned the Austrians as cowards, in spite of the probability that the large number of Austrians taken was due to the fact that the angry victorious Russian troops slew their cruellest foes out of hand, but spared Austrian and Hungarian regiments likely to contain Galician Poles and Russians, Catholic Serbs and Bohemians. Many of the guns, such as those taken from the Prussian Guard and Linsingen's troops, were clearly German.

In any case, Mackensen, after the Battle of the Sereth River, would not conduct a campaign against Serbia unless he

adventure

had at least one army of German troops. Mackensen's Danube As things stood on the eastern and western fronts, no German army was immediately available; and Mackensen had to wait

until Hindenburg had completed his great coup against General Evert, which was expected to release one or two German armies. It seems to have been calculated in advance that fully two German armies would be released by the decisive victory near Vilna; and the Bulgars were therefore promised a co-operating force of about 400,000 troops for the combined attack against the Serbians. In the event, however, only General von Gallwitz's army was detached from Hindenburg's command; and for reasons that will soon be apparent to the reader, this

solitary German force which was given to Mackensen arrived on the Danube in a sad condition of wastage. Meanwhile, the fact that Mackensen was left in the middle of September with no troops of his own is a telling instance of the grim expenditure of life during the five months' campaign of the Grand Phalanx and its supporting forces.

Even allowing for the fact that some divisions were at last sent, with a thousand heavy guns, to the western front, to prepare against the Franco-British

offensive movement, the dissolution of Mackensen's huge army group was of grave significance. Something like a

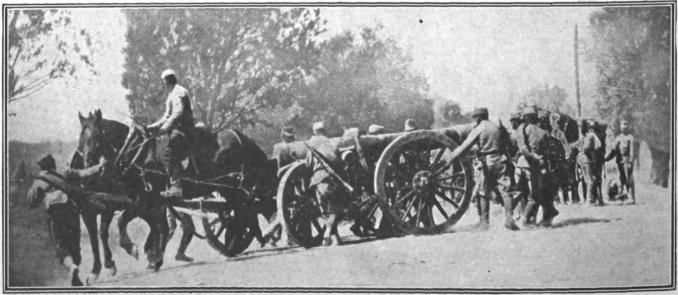
Recapture of Grodno

million, men had been put out of action, and, after this fearful drain upon the resources of the Teutonic Empires, the armies of the Tsar, though severely shaken, were now beginning to increase in power as their supplies of munitions augmented. Never in his wildest and most sanguinary period had Napoleon I. expended the lives of trained men so recklessly as Mackensen and Hindenburg had done. All the military caste could show the populace, in return for a gigantic sacrifice of life without parallel in history, was a line of fallen Russian frontier fortresses and the occupation of Russian Poland.

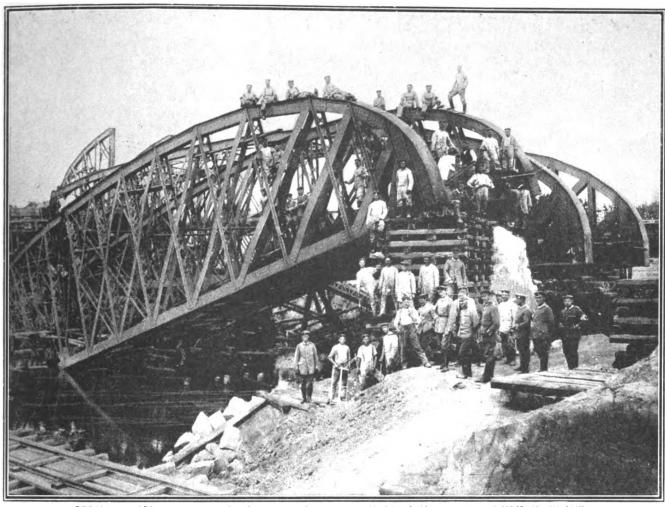
After the comparative failure of Mackensen, who was undoubtedly the best of its commanders, the German Staff had one source of hope left; for Hindenburg promised at last to make good. The new Russian Army general, Evert, had hung too long on to the last great frontier fortress of Grodno. Grodno did not fall until the afternoon of September 3rd, 1915, when an amazing Russian rearguard recaptured the town, and then retired with a bundred and fifty German prisoners and eight machine gues rearguard recaptured the town, and then retired with a hundred and fifty German prisoners and eight machine-guns. General Evert stayed in Grodno till he had cleared it of everything and blown up all the works, bridges, railways, and buildings useful' for military purposes. While he did so, the Vilna army with General Russky's southern wing held up a great German turning movement along the Vilia River, at a distance of nearly a hundred miles northwest of Grodno. But this far-stretched Russian operation of retirement was in the circumstances daring to the point of retirement was in the circumstances daring to the point of national peril. Had General Evert been fully aware that Hindenburg was holding in reserve for a terrible lightning stroke a force of 40,000 cavalry with a hundred and forty pieces of horse artillery, and a large supporting army of infantry, he would not have waited to strip

Grodno of every gun and shell.

Evert's army was not harried in the first days of its retreat. A little pressure was exerted against it at Orany, where the great Trans-European railway line passed through the Grodno-Vilna section, on the route to Petrograd.



BOUND FOR THE POLISH FRONT: ONE OF HER BIG GUNS ON WHICH AUSTRIA PLACED SO MUCH RELIANCE.



GERMAN ENGINEERS REBUILDING A BRIDGE Interesting camera picture of a German engineer corps engaged in reconstructing a bridge blown up by the Russians on the eastern front. With the powerful mechanical accessories of modern warfare, the strategic

COMMUNICATION ON THE RUSSIAN FRONT. destruction of a bridge involved at the most only a temporary delay to an advancing army. The Germans soon repaired even the imposing bridges across the Vistula

It was, however, not at Evert's army that Hindenburg was immediately striking. For, as we have seen, the envelopment of the forces of a single Russian command did not content the old Field-Marshal. This was merely the sort of thing he had accomplished the year before at Tannenberg. What he now aimed at was a tremendous stroke, crashing right through Russia, the success of which would exalt him above the older Moltke and Napoleon I. and the strategists in the grand style. He designed to capture Evert's army by the way, making a double turning movement against the northern army under Russky and against the central army under Alexeieff's successor. His point of attack was an extraordinary one. It was the railway junction at Molodetchno, nearly one hundred and fifty miles in the rear of Grodno. He intended to reach it by breaking through Russky's southern wing in a hurricane of shell fire followed by the greatest cavalry charge in modern history. All this part of the work was to be done by Litzmann's army with Kovno as its base

and Schmettau's cavalry as its advanced Hindenburg's point guard. On the Niemen front, facing the of attack rearguards of Evert's army, was the army of Scholtz, whose southern wing curled round Grodno and linked with the army of Gallwitz, which

was advancing north of the Bielovieska Forest towards the Still farther south, on the road to Slonim, was the army of Prince Leopold of Bavaria, connecting in turn southward with a large mixed force of Landsturm and Landwehr troops, operating very slowly along the Pripet Marsh. The southernmost inferior force did little more than hold the Russians by marsh entrenchments bristling with machine-guns. The hammer blow against Alexeieff's old army and the former Lublin and Cholm army was designed to fall on their northern flank, when Prince Leopold

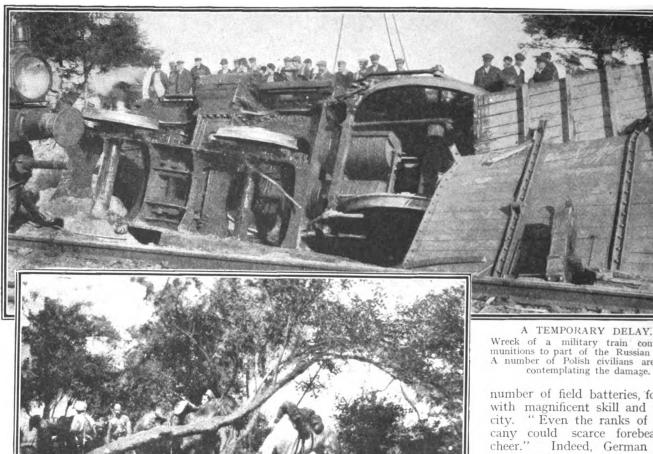
reached the railway junction of Baranovitschi. But all this part of the front was, for the time, of little importance.

The critical sector was that between Sventsiany, on the Petrograd railway, half-way from Vilna and Dvinsk, and Baranovitschi, the railway junction between Minsk and Pinsk. It was Russky who foresaw the

extreme peril of the situation. He came Russky foresees down from the Riga-Dvinsk sector on the peril September 1st, and hurried Evert out of

Grodno. Evert worked downwards in a north-easternly direction towards Baranovitschi and Pinsk, to counter the upward thrust of Gallwitz's and Prince Leopold's armies. part of the operation was just straightforward hard fighting and incessant manœuvring all along the northern curve of the huge salient, from Skidel, near Grodno, and thence along the Upper Niemen, past the towns of Lida. Slonim, and Novo Grodek to the critical railway junction at Baranovitschi. The northern wing of Alexeieff's former army group co-operated with Evert's retreating forces and greatly assisted in the defence of the southern dent in the salient. There was never any immediate danger at this point, for the German troops were held and violently punished.

All the desperate difficulties of the great Russian retreat from the last and most dangerous salient fell upon General Russky. Coming down from the north, with part of the Petrograd army of defence, he boldly threw a considerable portion of his forces into the salient, bringing up the number of troops enclosed in it to about 400,000. He reckoned that he would be half-encircled by 600,000 German troops, and his estimate was correct. But he does not seem to have been fully aware of the existence of the 40,000 horsemen, with 140 guns, under Schmettau, who



REDOUBTABLE COSSACKS IN A Reserves of Russian cavalry resting awhile in a wood, in anticipation of a call to action.

moved his men by night northward towards Sventsiany, as Russky pushed his men northwards towards Vilna.

There was a curious beginning to the grand German attempt to obtain a smashing decision against Russia by the envelopment of two or three army groups, followed by an advance to Smolensk. A throng of refugee farmers from the Niemen region came into Orany, on the Warsaw-Petrograd railway line, between Grodno and Vilna. had their cattle, sheep, horses, and waggons piled with household stuff. But the Russian troops in the town remarked the absence of children in the procession of fugitives, and some of their officers stopped the carts. A fierce street fight at once broke out, for beneath a covering of ordinary articles, the farm waggons were filled with machine-guns and ammunition, and the peasants and their wives were all German soldiers. But the absence of children, who were the most characteristic feature of a genuine stream of fugitive farming folk, had made the Russians suspicious, and they were prepared for the fight that ensued. The Germans were badly beaten, and the survivors fled from Orany.

Discovery of This episode did not lead General bogus "refugees" Russky to alter his plan of operations. He fixed on the angle between the Sventa and Vilia Rivers, between Kovno and Vilna, as the

region of the German turning movement.
On September 1st he placed two divisions of the Russian Imperial Guard on a hill, some seven hundred feet high. by the village of Meiszagola. The position was eighteen miles north-west of Vilna, on the road to Vilkomir. It completely barred the turning movement with infantry forces which General Litzmann, the conqueror of Kovno, had been ordered to carry out, for the famous Imperial Guard, a body of 24,000 bayonets, with a considerable

Wreck of a military train conveying munitions to part of the Russian front. A number of Polish civilians are seen contemplating the damage.

number of field batteries, fought with magnificent skill and tena-"Even the ranks of Tuscany could scarce forebear to cheer." Indeed, German war Indeed, German war correspondents, basing their remarks on the testimony of German officers, were eloquent in praise of the army corps of Russian Guardsmen.

Day and night the battle went on, and the assailing German forces, as the Germans themselves related, "melted away as in a

September storm. Regiments dwindled into companies, and companies vanished." For ten days and ten nights the battle lasted in a narrow valley at the foot of the hill,

below the trenches of the Guardsmen, whose well-designed earthworks became Russian Guards'

afterwards the object of admiration of great stand
German soldiers. "They learned something in trench-making from the Japanese," said the
hostile officers. "The position, even when we stormed
the hill above, remained almost impregnable." Three
times the Guards retook the hill. The Germans had at last to haul up their siege-guns from Kovno, and after the trenches were flattened out by a storm of big shells on September 12th, the Guardsmen, reduced to the number of a single division, made a slow rearguard fight across the low, rolling hill country, trenching on every line of crests. Their machine-guns were terrible, and six days' more fighting had to be done before the enemy got into Vilna, on September 18th, and found the city emptied.

As a matter of fact, Litzmann's army was practically defeated. Unaided, it could not have entered Vilna, even with the aid of its siege ordnance. The Imperial Guard at last retired before the shattered German army, because of a startling event that happened some fifty miles farther north. Here, near the town of Sventsiany, on the night of September 14th, the great hostile cavalry force under General Schmettau found a gap in the overstretched line of Russky's armies.

It would be rash to say that Russky had been overconfident and negligent, for Russky was a man with a quiet, subtle, and far-reaching mind. The German cavalry had been seriously menacing him in the Riga region. It inconvenienced him there, and it was like him to have left a gap at the spot where he wanted to deal with it. He did

somewhat the same thing with two army corps under Mackensen, near the Piontek Marshes, by Lodz, in the previous autumn. He left a gate open, let the enemy penetrate far towards his rear, and then pushed the gate to, and sent for Rennenkampf to close down behind the too adventurous German force. With anybody except Russky one would decide that he made a mistake of omission at Sventsiany and atterwards nobly retrieved it. But with Russky it is hazardous to make such a statement, unless and until the Russian Staff history of the war confirms it.

For Russky, the conqueror of Galicia and the destroyer of the first-line Austrian army, under General Auffenberg,

in Poland, had become a passionate be-The open gate at liever in the war of attrition. He was in a salient enclosing 400,000 men at the most, with the odds of three to two against him Sventsiany

in men, and the odds of three or four to one against him in guns and shell supplies. His immediate problem was to reduce rapidly a force of 640,000 Germans to 300,000 effectives, or less. After that, he would rely on autumnal rains and winter frosts—the first frost being due in a month's time in the northern Russian climate—to accelerate further the exhaustion of the human material of Germany and Austria. It was more than two hundred miles to Smolensk, and even Smolensk was not Petrograd or Moscow. Therefore, with winter approaching and the Russian roads sticky with deep mud, he could afford to give ground to the enemy east of Vilna, if the enemy would pay his price. Hindenburg and

and Leopold of Bavaria-were ready to risk anything for a fighting chance of a great decisive victory. Russky had only to leave the gate open at Sventsiany, in order to get a vast, furious medley of battles between the Vilia and Upper Niemen Rivers and along the lake district from Dvinsk to Smorgon.

The mighty German cavalry raid through Sventsiany on to the Russian rear at Smorgon was marked by characteristic episodes. At a village near Sventsiany the German horsemen burnt a church and hanged the priest, because he would not—or could not—inform them the position of the Russian troops. The country people, taken by surprise were terribly treated in places, but happily at the beginning of the eruptive movement the raiders were in a great They wanted to drive down strongly and swiftly hurry.



Russian soldiers, prior to relieving their comrades in the firing-line, snatch a few hours' repose in the open.

Russian soldiers, prior to relieving their comrades in the firing-line, snatch a few hours' repose in the open.

Using their baggage as pillows and their pleak Polish environment.

Above is seen a type of Russian armoured train halting at a wayside station. WELCOME RESPITE BEFORE GOING INTO ACTION.



"FLOWERS OF THE FOREST."
Russian Red Cross nurse in a woodland cemetery in Poland, where rough carven wooden crosses marked the resting-places of her country's dead.

to Smorgon, along the river line of the Vilia, entrench there, advance, with Smorgon as their base of operations, and cut the railways to Minsk and to Polozk and Petrograd at the junction of Molodetchno.

This they accomplished, in a movement of magnificent speed and force, by September 17th. They broke apart Russky's Dvinsk and Vilna wings and penetrated his centre at Molodetchno, which is sixty miles southeastwards of Vilna. And Vilna at the time had not been evacuated. The Imperial Guard was still defending the city, the

earthwork defences of which were being bombarded uninterruptedly day and night. Meanwhile, south of the Vilia, a large German army was fighting on the Merechanka River, while still stronger hostile

Fear of a

Russian Sedan

To all appearance, the Russians had not been in so perilous a position since Radko Dimitrieff was broken between Tarnov and Gorlice, near the Carpathian line. Indeed, with 40,000 German horsemen sixty miles behind him, with one hundred and forty guns, and huge infantry supports coming to reinforce them, the situation of Russky seemed darkened by the shadow of impending doom.

There were few critics in the Quadruple Entente who were not anxious as to the position if Russky were shattered. If Russky's side of the salient were suddenly driven in near the base, Evert's side of the salient would be quickly subjected to a similar cutting thrust. Then, with both Russky and Evert's forces partly enveloped and partly outflanked, the position of the central Russian armies round Pinsk and the Pripet Marsh would also be disastrous. Russia would be in the same tragic situation as France was after the encircling operation at Sedan.

There was an incontestable majesty of design about Hindenburg's project. In Imperial manœuvres it might have won the author the rank of Chief of Staff.

Weather-lore in German strategy

Doubtless Falkenhayn had something to do with it. But its defect was that it had been prepared with Germanic thoroughness. For many years the aspirants to positions on the German General Staff and the Staff officers themselves had elaborated plans for a campaign against Russia. Both novices and masters in strategy began with the determination to avoid Napoleon's capital mistake in regard to the Russian weather. Never did meteorologists go into the problems of weather-lore with the energy of the German Russian campaign planners. They tabulated all the data concerning rainfall, frost, and thaw, and the effects thereof on the muddy Russian roads and swamps, and after the most scientific study arrived at the correct conclusion that September was the best month for operations in the Russian marsh regions. The full drying effect of the



GERMAN AIR-RAIDERS' RECKLESS WORK NEAR THE RUSSIAN FRONT.

Russian motor-ambulance outside a temporary hospital, near which a bomb had been dropped from a German Taube. The hole in the earth near the front wheel of the ambulance indicates how nearly the airman's fell purpose achieved its object.

August sun was necessary to make the lake morasses and the immense river swamps passable.

All this, however, was but a sound deduction from the law of averages. The summer of 1915 had been an exception to the general rule; for it was a wet summer, and instead of drying the Russian roads and bogs, it soaked them. But the Germans, with their reliance upon the knowledge they had patiently organised, did not allow fully for the new facts beneath their eyes. They used knowledge instead of thought. The result was that the raid of Schmettau's cavalry horde failed for want of infantry support. It was possible, in spite of the adverse weather conditions, for the raiders to operate according to the time-table, and by riding their horses to exhaustion they





The Tsar Commander-in-Chief and his heir, in Caucasian uniforms, posing before the camera with a group of Cossack officers.





TSAR NICHOLAS II. DIRECTS THE FORTUNES OF THE HOUSE OF ROMANOFF IN THE FIELD OF WAR. This photograph of a divine service, showing the two great Romanoffs, bareheaded before an improvised altar erected in a wood on the eastern front, is indicative of the simplicity with which the Tsar carried out the work of Generalissimo of the Russian Army. The Emperor of All the HE HOUSE OF ROMANOFF IN THE FIELD OF WAR.
Russias, in taking over supreme command, stimulated the spirit of his soldiers, and his presence among them went far to stop the German invasion of Russia and hold the enemy in check. The third snapshot on this page shows the Russian ruler conversing with an officer of his Staff.

Digitized by



FINDING THE RANGE.
Russian artillery officer, concealed by foliage, finding the range for his gun.

reached the railway junction, and tore up the line to Minsk and the line to Moscow. But the huge force of infantry, with many guns, limbers, and ammunition waggons, which was to follow the cavalry with the aim of occupying in great strength the line the horsemen won, was held up by mud and morass. Some 20,000 cavalry of the reserve were hurried forth to support Schmettau's raiders, bringing his forces up to 60,000 men. But these men were ex-tended along a front of eighty miles, from Sventsiany to Molo-

detchno Junction, and many of them were needed to form a powerful advance guard at Widsy, below Dvinsk, to stave off a possible flank attack from Russky's Dwina troops. The raiding cavalry, therefore, had scarcely seven bundred men to the mile along the great line of their thrust. Owing to this weakness, which continually increased through the delay in the advance of the German infantry and artillery, Schmettau's menace to Russky was nothing so great as Russky's menace to Schmettau.

For the Russian Imperial Guard, with the sharpshooters of Pskov and other famous fighting corps, were retreating

alongside the line of the Vilia River, which
the German cavalry had crossed. Instead
of the cavalry raiders getting a driving
blow against the rear of the retreating

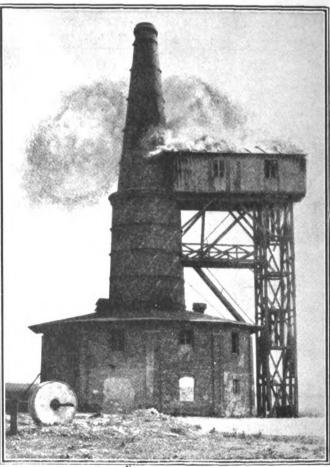
Russian armies, the overstretched string of horsemen was half enveloped. The Russian troops, retreating from Vilna, held them firmly south of the Vilia River, while a sudden irruption of Russian cavalry forces, coming down the Polozk-Molodetchno railway line, struck them on the head and began to smash in their northern flank. There was a long and extremely violent struggle at the little town of Vileika on the railway line, and at Widsy, farther north. Both battles ended in a Russian victory and a German

rout, in which the enemy lost several batteries of light guns and field-howitzers, showing that his line had been completely penetrated. Nearly half the huge Teutonic cavalry force was destroyed before the German infantry succeeded in getting to Smorgon two weeks after the retreat from Vilna began.

After fighting for fourteen days in the salient, Russky preserved in his rear a passage eighty miles wide, from Molodetchno Junction to the Lebeda River between Grodno and Lida.

Lit was a wide enough gate for the

It was a wide enough gate for the largest army to pass through; it had two main roads and two lines of railway. It was indeed so broad and secure that, instead of rapidly retreating through it, General Russky entrenched on a line of hills and streams from Lida to Molodetchno, with a little cross-country railway running immediately behind his line, and provisioning and



HANDIWORK OF THE INCENDIARY. Russian mill on fire—the work of the Germans in their advance.

munitioning his army. The Germans in front of him had no railway communications, therefore they could not bring up their siege-guns, and even their light artillery was badly supplied, owing to the roads being waist-deep in mud. Yet the German commanders had to attack incessantly and with the utmost possible driving power.

For, according to their own plan, they were engaged in the greatest enveloping movement in history, and the desired decision was only to be obtained by speedy progress. As soon as the marchworn German infantry arrived near



EMERGENCY ENGINEERING ON THE EASTERN FRONT.

Bridge over a railway track in course of temporary reconstruction. The supports of the bridge were formed of rectangular piles of sleepers.

the Russian lines, it was flung forth in wide waves and packed columns, through the Russian curtains of shrapnel fire, against the Russian hill-trenches.

It is impossible to describe in detail the battles that went on, day and night, till the end of September on the gradually flattening curve of flame, thunder, and slaughter, stretching from a point near Slonim in the south to the lake region above Sventsiany in the north. The description will run into volumes in the great scientific Staff histories, and the pages will be full of long, outlandish names of Lithuanian hamlets which cannot be traced on any ordinary map. Russky's men were, like Ivanoff's, well provided with munitions, and the Russian machine-guns, hundreds of them captured from the enemy with cartridge supplies, were used with murderous effect. The Russian cannon, with few German siegeguns to beat them down, were able to open a way for those fierce

bayonet charges, in which the slow, sombre passion of the Russian peasant flames into terrible fury. Here and there a Russian regiment got into a tight corner. Some Cossacks were surrounded, but escaped by a stratagem, while another battalion cut its way out with the loss of half its men. But the act of heroism that most pleased the Russians themselves was that of an Army nurse, Myra Ivanova, who was attending to the wounded in the fighting-line on September 22nd. Her brother was the surgeon of the regiment, and she was serving as a Red Cross sister with his men. The battalion was suffering terribly from rifle and Maxim fire, and all the company officers were either killed or wounded, and the men began to retire. But Sister Ivanova saw that they would all be slaughtered if they tried to flee, and she collected them together and led the charge against the hostile trench, falling mortally wounded just as her men broke the defence of the German force.

By September 28th General Russky was still holding out, well inside the salient on the Smorgoni line, having fought Hindenburg to a standstill. The movement of envelopment had entirely failed after four weeks' fighting and a German loss of half a million men.

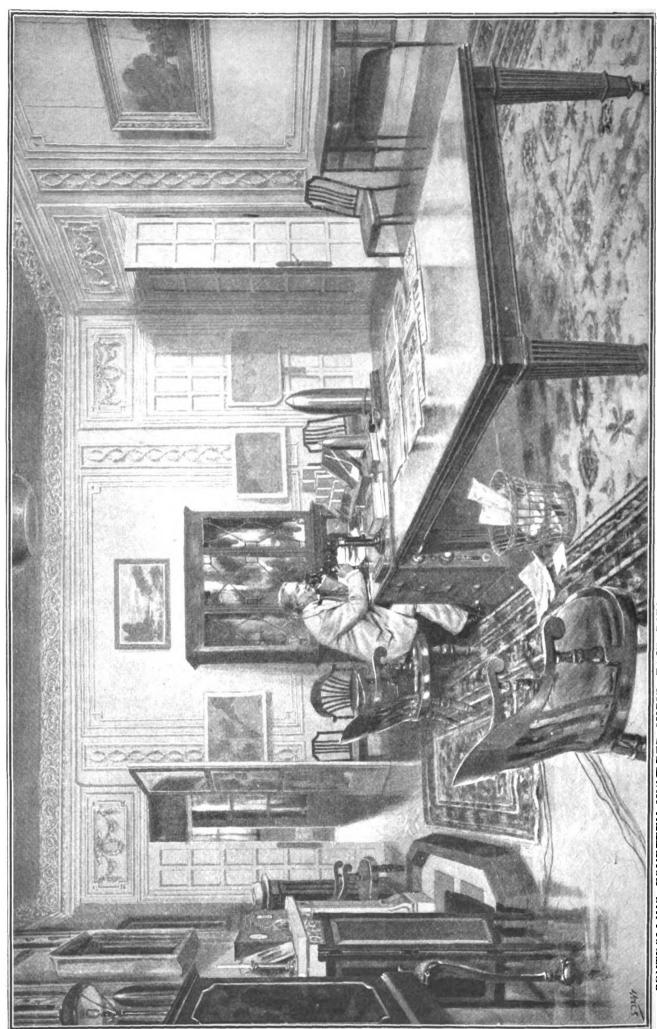


THE MEN WITH THE ROUBLES.
Russian paymaster and his assistants ready to distribute the soldiers' wages.





Russian soldiers, including a number of wounded, about to retreat by rail from a shell-wrecked station on the eastern front. In circle: Scene at a junction on the eastern front. Wounded Russian and German soldiers were being hastily treated by the surgeons and sent to the rear.



in order, to use Mr. Lloyd George's own phrase, "to crash through to victory." Though the enemy started with a colossal advantage in respect of gans and shells, the tables were slowly but surely turned as the war, again to quote Mr. Lloyd George, "resolved itself into a conflict between the mechanics of Gennany and Austria on the one hand, and the mechanics of Great Britain and France on the other." CONTROLLING FOURTEEN HUNDRED SHELL FACTORIES: MR. LLOYD GEORGE, MINISTER OF MUNITIONS, AT WORK IN HIS OFFICE.

From the control of silver bullets to the supervision of the steel harbingers of triumph was a momentous in order, to use Mr. Lloyd George's own phrase, "to crash through to victory." Though the enemy star change is temporary organiser and with a colossal advantage in respect of guns and shells, that as many as 1,400 establish, war, again to quote Mr. Lloyd George's own phrase, "to crash through to victory." Though the enemy star did not suit to the supervision of the

Digitized by Google



## THE NEW CABINET AND ITS WORK: POLITICS & MUNITIONS.

Lord Fisher Visits Mr. Asquith—Civilians and the War—Distrust of Experts—Trouble at the Admiralty—A National Government Arranged—Asquith Tells the Commons—Members of the New Cabinet—The Shuffling of Portfolios—Mr. Redmond and the George and Kitchener Speak Out—New Powers for the Government—Lloyd George and Trade Union Restrictions—The Lure —Fresh Restrictions on Drinking—Our Losses on the Aubers Ridge—A Ministry of Munitions Formed—Lloyd George Gets to Work—His Munitions Bill.

O

Mr. Asquith's motor-car was standing in front of 10, Downing Street, ready to take the Prime Minister into the country for the week-end. About 3.30 that statesman came out of his front door, entered the car,

and was just about to give the word to the chauffeur when Lord Fisher walked across the street and spoke to him. Mr. Asquith alighted, and the two stood together for some time talking; then the car was sent away and they entered the house. About an hour later

the house. About an hour later Lord Fisher walked away, and after that the Prime Minister was driven off in his car.

At this time the Great War had been waged for nine and a half months, and no decisive success had been attained. The worst fears—the interruption of the British food supply and a German invasion—had. happily, not been realised; but, on the other hand, the Germans were still in France and Belgium, and the campaign in Gallipoli was proving a very costly operation. There was nothing approaching panic among the people, but there was a feeling that the situation was graver, far graver, than had been hitherto believed.

During these nine months, the war—at least, as far as Great Britain was concerned—had been conducted, with one distinguished exception, by civilians and politicians, and worse than that, by politicians representing only one, and that the smaller, of the two great historic parties in the State. By concessions to two smaller groups these men

had secured control of the House of Commons in 1910, and they still held it when the Great War broke out. In France, at the beginning of September, 1914, a Committee of National Safety, representing all parties, took over the conduct of the war; but for one reason or other Great Britain did not then follow this good example.

The fact that, with the exception of Lord Kitchener, these man were similared did not matter much if only they

The fact that, with the exception of Lord Kitchener, these men were civilians did not matter much if only they were wise civilians. The best expert advice was at their disposal, and if they only followed this all would be well.

But, unfortunately, the nation, or a considerable part of it, had got into the way of dis-

had got into the way of distrusting the experts, and of thinking that because all men were equal in votes they were equal in wisdom; and politicians had shared and encouraged this delusion. The nation had been told quite coolly that Lord Roberts, one of the greatest soldiers of all time, and the man who saved the Empire after the dark December of 1899, knew little or nothing about strategy; while Lord Rothschild and other banking authorities were jeered at when, in 1910, they said that certain taxation proposals would injure our national credit. This spirit, a most astounding monument to the size of human folly, was certainly sobered by the outbreak of the Great War, but it was not destroyed, and we fear that it was not unrepresented in Mr. Asquith's Cabinet. It may perhaps have been possible to take risks when fighting the Boers, or tampering with a tried financial system. and yet to escape serious



THE SHELL MINISTERS.

Mr. Lloyd George and M. Thomas, the British and French
Ministers of Munitions, photographed together on the occasion
of the latter's visit to London in October, 1915.

disaster, but it was suicidal to do so when Germany was on the warpath.

The members of Mr. Asquith's Cabinet, Lord Kitchener excepted, were not only civilians, they were politicians.

Mr. Asquith had shown himself loyal to the Empire by the firm stand which he took during the Boer War. He realised the gravity of the nation's task, and his quiet and authoritative manner, added to his luminous speech, was a useful asset; but the fact cannot be disguised that his lack of power or inclination to control his headstrong colleagues might easily become a serious danger. But several members of his Cabinet deserved no word of praise whatever. They were party politicians of the narrowest kind, men whose highest ideal in life was a cheap score off a political opponent, and who could not wholly rid themselves of this spirit even in the presence of our greatest war. In August, 1914, they had it in their power to do their country one service, but they forbore. They could have retired into private life.

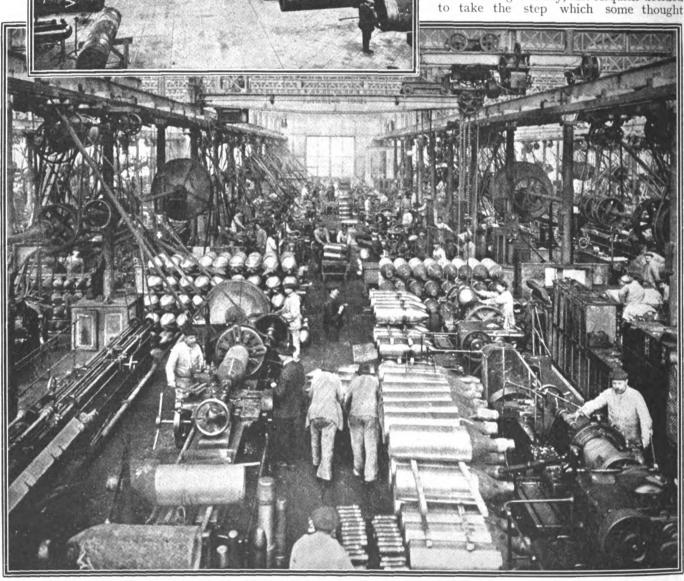
time previous to the For some

Trouble at the Admiralty

interview between Mr. Asquith and Lord

Fisher it had been rumoured that Mr. Winston Churchill, the First Lord of the Admiralty, and Lord Fisher, the First Sea Lord, were not working very harmoniously together, and some went as far as to say that the former had arranged the expedition to the Dardanelles against the desire of the latter. Whatever the truth was, there was certainly trouble at the Admiralty, and it did not need a seer to guess that Lord Fisher's visit to the Prime Minister had something to do with this.

On the Saturday of this interview, or the following Sunday, Mr. Asquith decided



CAMERA VIEWS OF THE GREAT SCHNEIDER WORKSHOPS AT LE CREUSOT, THE FRENCH WOOLWICH. The town of Le Creusot, in the Department of Saone-et-Loire, is situated at the foot of lofty hills, in a district rich in coal and iron. Here, in 1837, were established the ironworks of Adolphe and Eugène Schneider, which developed into one of the greatest enterprises of the kind in the world.

From the Schneider factories huge quantities of war material were supplied to the French armies during the Crimean and the Franco-Prussian Wars. In the present war the guns and munitions of this great firm proved no mean rivals to the productions of Krupp and Skoda.



BRANCH WORKSHOPS, CHALON-SUR-SAONE

he should have taken on the outbreak of war. He decided to ask the leaders of the other political parties to unite with him in forming a Coalition Government to carry on the war. He did this, as by our unwritten Constitution he was entitled to do, without consulting his colleagues as a whole, although he may have talked the matter over with one or two of his more intimate friends among them, and to clear the way he asked them to place their resignations in his hands. They did so, and the Liberal Government, which had been in office since December, 1905, came to an end.

Mr. Asquith then wrote to Mr. Bonar Law, the Unionist leader in the House of Commons, asking him and those associated with him, "to join forces with us in a combined administration," and telling him that he intended also to ask the leaders of the Irish and Labour parties to par-

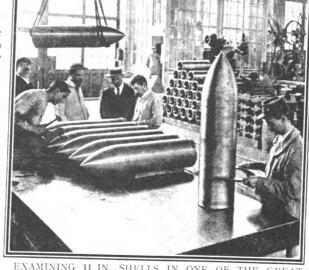
ticipate. The Prime Minister gave his The non-party reasons for taking this step in the following Cabinet words: "After long and careful consideration, I have definitely come to the con-

clusion that the conduct of the war to a successful and decisive issue cannot be effectively carried on except by a Cabinet which represents all parties of the State." Their common action, he added, "should be exclusively directed to the issues of the war."

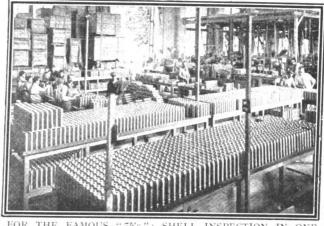
Mr. Bonar Law accepted the invitation in the following sentences: "The considerations to which you refer have for some time been present to the mind of Lord Lansdowne and myself. We have now communicated your views and your invitation to our colleagues, and we shall be glad to co-operate with you in your endeavour to form a National Government."

While these letters were passing, and the preliminaries of the Coalition were being arranged, the public was speculating, knowing little more than the stories of trouble at the Admiralty. On Tuesday morning, May 18th, "The Times" stated that Lord Fisher insisted on resigning his post on account of his differences with Mr. Churchill, and on the evening of that day "The Pall Mall Gazette said that a Coalition Government was being formed.

On the following day, Wednesday, May 19th, Mr.



11 IN. SHELLS IN ONE OF THE GREAT SCHNEIDER FACTORIES.



FAMOUS "75's": SHELL INSPECTION IN OF THE SCHNEIDER WORKSHOPS.

Asquith set all doubts at rest. Speaking in the House of Commons, he said:

I think it right, at the earliest possible moment, to say two or three words to the House in regard to the matters which have been the subject of public report and rumour. I cannot say more at the moment than that steps are in contemplation which involve the reconstruction of the Government on a broader personal and political basis. Nothing is yet definitely arranged, but to avoid any possible misapprehension, and as the House is about to adjourn, I wish here and now to make clear to everybody three things. The first is that any change which takes place will not affect the offices of the head of the Government, or of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. They will continue to be held as 'they are now. The second is that there is absolutely no

for Foreign Affairs. They will continue to be held as they are now. The second is that there is absolutely no change of any kind in contemplation in the policy of the country with regard to the continued prosecution of the war with every possible energy, and by means of every available

The third and last point, one of great importance to my hon. friends behind me, and I have no doubt also to hon. gentlemen who sit behind the Leader of the Opposition, is this: Any reconstruction that will be made will be for the purposes of the war alone, and is not to be taken in any quarter as any reason for



THE TSAR IN A MUNITION FACTORY.

Photograph, taken by His Majesty's command, of the Tsar's visit to the Putiloff works at Petrograd.

indicating anything in the nature of surrender or compromise on the part of any person or body of persons of their several political purposes and ideals.

For a week the newspapers and the public were busy guessing at the names of the members of the new Government. One or two were certain, and several others practically so. Mr. Asquith, Lord Kitchener, and Sir Edward Grey would stay at their posts, and room would be found for Mr. Bonar Law, Mr. Balfour, Mr. Austen Chamberlain, and possibly Lords Lansdowne and Curzon. Mr. Lloyd George would remain a member of the Cabinet, and Mr. Arthur Henderson, the Leader of the Labour Party, would join it, but there was more uncertainty about the position of Mr. Winston Churchill and the attitude of Mr. John Redmond.

On May 26th the newspapers contained the names of the members of the new Cabinet. There were one or two surprises, but on the whole the forecasts had been tolerably accurate. The late Cabinet had consisted of twenty members-nineteen Liberals and Lord Kitchener-but the new one contained twenty-two. Twelve of these were

members of the retiring Cabinet-Mr. Asquith, Sir Edward Grey, Lord Kitchener, Lord Crewe, Mr. Lloyd George, Mr. McKenna, Mr. Harcourt, Mr. Birrell, Sir John Simon, Mr. Runciman, Mr. McKinnon Wood, and Mr. Winston Churchill. The eight who retired were Viscount Haldane, Lords Beauchamp, Lucas, and Emmott, Mr. Herbert Samuel, Mr. Hobhouse, Mr. J. A. Pease, and Mr. Montagu. Of these, two—Mr. Samuel and Mr. Montagu—received positions in the new Government, but outside the Cabinet. Mr. Samuel returned to his former position of Postmaster-General, and Mr. Montagu became again Financial Secretary to the Treasury.

Of the ten new-comers eight were Unionists, one was a Liberal, and one the Leader of the Labour Party. The Unionists were Lord Lansdowne, Mr. Bonar Law, Lord Curzon, Mr. Balfour, Mr. Austen Chamberlain, Mr. Walter Long, Lord Selborne, and Sir Edward Carson. The Liberal was Sir Stanley Buckmaster, afterwards Lord Buckmaster, who succeeded Viscount Haldane as Lord Chancellor.

There was a good deal of shuffling of positions to find suitable places for these gentlemen. Mr. Asquith, Sir Edward Grey, Lord Kitchener, Mr. Runciman (President of the Board of Trade), Mr. Birrell (Chief Secretary for Ireland), and Mr. McKinnon Wood (Secretary for Scotland) remained at their posts, but all the others were moved. Mr. Balfour took Mr. Churchill's place as First Lord of the Admiralty, but this did not surprise people so much as the appointment of Mr. McKenna to succeed Mr. Lloyd George as Chancellor of the Euchequer. Mr. Churchill become Chancellor of Exchequer. Mr. Churchill became Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, and Mr. Lloyd George Minister of Munitions, a new office which we shall deal with in a moment.

> Important positions were reserved for Mr. Bonar Law and Mr. Austen Chamberlain, who became Secretary for the Colonies and Secretary for India respectively. Mr. Walter Long was made President of the Local Government Board, Lord Selborne President of the Board of Agriculture, while Lord Curzon succeeded Lord Crewe in the sinecure office of Lord Privy Seal. Sir John Simon became Home Secretary in place of Mr. McKenna, and Sir Edward Carson took the former's place as Attorney. Edward Carson took the former's place as Attorney-General. Lord Crewe became Lord President of the Council instead of Secretary for India, and Mr. Harcourt First Commissioner of Works, a position he had formerly filled, instead of Colonial Secretary.

> Lord Lansdowne entered the Cabinet without any particular office, a member "without portfolio," as he was styled. In the eighteenth and as he was styled. In the eighteenth and earlier part of the nineteenth centuries it was not

unusual to have members of this kind in the Cabinet, but since then the custom had been dropped. Curiously enough, the last Minister previously to hold a position of this kind in this country was Lord Lansdowne's grandfather, in 1855. It remains to be said that Mr. Arthur Henderson, Labour's representative in the new Cabinet. became President of the Board of Education.

Little need be said about the appointments to offices outside the Cabinet. They were divided fairly evenly between

Offices outside

the Cabinet

Liberals and Unionists, with two representatives of Labour—Mr. William Brace, the Under-Secretary for Home Affairs, and Mr. G. H. Roberts, a Junior Lord of the

Treasury. Of the other appointments, perhaps the most interesting were those of Lord Robert Cecil to be Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, and of Mr. (now Sir) F. E. Smith to be Solicitor-General. Mr. John Redmond declined Mr. Asquith's invitation, and consequently the Irish Nationalists were unrepresented in the Collision Comment. The were unrepresented in the Coalition Government. The party, at a meeting held in Dublin on May 25th, supported Mr. Redmond in his refusal, but decided to give to the new

Munitions in the making: Oil=hardening a 12 in. gun tube.



The King in France, with President Poincaré and General Joffre on his left.



French infantry passing in review order before his Majesty and President Poincaré.

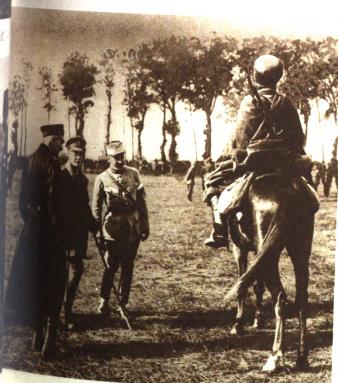


King George with the French troops: An earnest talk with General Joffre.



The King at the front: Greeting Canadian General Officers.





The Prince of Wales admires the Spahis.



Symbol of "La Belle Alliance," 1915.



In one of Britain's new munitions factories: Alloys being shot into molten steel to strengthen it.

Government the support they had hitherto accorded to the old one.

The change was for the better, but in certain important respects the new Cabinet was as unsatisfactory as the old one had been. It was all to the good that the leaders of the Unionist Party and the official head of the Labour Party should take a share of the responsibility of the war; but two main objections to the old Cabinet had not been removed by the advent of the new one.

As before, the Cabinet was too big and too civilian. Its membership, originally far too large, had actually been increased from twenty

to twenty-two, and a body of this size cannot, in the very nature of things, conduct a war efficiently. Decisions cannot be taken promptly when twenty-two persons have to weigh and discuss the pros and cons, and much valuable time is lost in talking.

Again, with the solitary exception of Lord Kitchener, the Cabinet was still exclusively civilian,



SIR FREDERICK DONALDSON, K.C.B.,
Chief Superintendent of Ordnance Factories. He acted as technical adviser to the Ministry of Munitions.

and several of these civilians were, by training and inclination, the last men in the world to take prompt action on any question whatsoever. They were essentially men of inaction, men of the "wait and see" type. Possibly they could, after long and anxious consideration, put in force a muzzling order for dogs, but to decide in five minutes what to do in a sudden emergency with the lives of thousands and perhaps the fate of the nation hanging in the balance, was altogether too much for them.

In those critical days the nation really needed a Committee of Public Safety, small in number and of extraordinary efficiency, in constant session and with absolute confidence in each other. For this ten men would have been ample, five or six probably sufficient. They should have consisted of a soldier, a sailor, a financier, a Foreign Minister, and one or two others, and armed with full powers they could have saved Britain millions of money and thousands of lives.

One rather curious matter may be mentioned here. As is known, the salaries of Cabinet Ministers vary very much, from the £10,000 a year paid to the Lord Chancellor to the £2,000 a year paid to the Presidents of the Boards of



COLONEL F. F. MINCHIN, [Elliott & Fry. Military adviser to the Ministry of Munitions.

Agriculture, Education, and one or two others. The members of the Coalition Cabinet, however, decided to equalise their salaries by pooling them, and this action was defended by Mr. Asquith in the House of Commons. The matter was arranged quite privately, and the exact details were not made known, but it was generally understood that each Cabinet Minister received something over £4,000 a year. This meant that the Lord Chancellor surrendered nearly £6,000 a year, the Attorney-General, the five principal Secretaries of State, the Presidents of the Board of Trade and the Local Government Board, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer, some hundreds a year each, while the salaries of the less important Ministers were about doubled.

In this arrangement two Ministers, Mr. Asquith and Lord Lansdowne, took no part. The former, as head of the Government, retained his full salary

the Government, retained his full salary of £5,000 a year, while the latter had no salary to put into the pool. On the other hand, it was believed that Sir F. E. Smith brought the £6,000 a year which he received as Solicitor-General into the common stock.

Such, in brief, is the story of the formation of a National Government, "exclusively directed to the issues of the war," in May, 1915. What was the real reason of it all? The quarrel between Mr. Churchill and Lord Fisher was not the whole story. If this had been all it could have been arranged by the retirement of one or both of them, without involving the rest of their colleagues. There was more in it than met the eye, and an inkling of the truth was already getting about. The Army was short of the munitions of war. This was a simple fact, and the real reason for the crisis. As one writer has said: "Ministers are human, and so long as things seem to be going well they are anxious to keep the credit for themselves. It is only responsibility, when it looks as if it may be heavy, that they are ready to share."

It was one of Napoleon's maxims that victory goes to the big battalions, but the experience of the Great War has been that it goes rather to the big batteries. The need of all the armies was for an enormous supply of guns and ammunition, especially perhaps of machine-guns and

SMALL BRITISH AIR BOMB. Small air bomb used by the British, containing a safety-bolt, drawn prior to dropping, by which the propeller was started.

expected offensive in the west and the Russian retreat in the east.

In October, 1914, France grappled seriously with this question, but not so Great Britain. In September Mr. Asquith had appointed a Committee of the Cabinet, which included Lord Haldane and Mr. Lloyd George, to look into the matter, but in general everyone was content to leave it in the hands of Lord Kitchener, forgetting the gigantic tasks to which he was already committed.

So matters continued until well into 1915, when

one or two hesitating steps were taken. On February oth, for instance, it was announced that the President of the



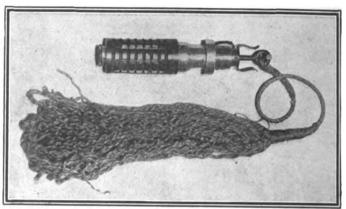
GERMAN INCENDIARY BOMB DROPPED ON LONDON.
Burnt-out shell of a Zeppelin bomb dropped on London.
Bound round with tarred rope, it contained a charge which developed terrific heat.

high-explosive shells; an amount far greater than anyone had previously thought possible was required, and the Germans were the first to realise this new and pregnant fact in the art of war. They were first in the field with an overwhelming supply of munitions, as they had been, in August, 1914. with an overwhelming supply of men, and the result was the stoppage of the



RIFLE-GRENADE IN POSITION.

Miniature shrapnel shell fitted to a rod, and fired from a rifle a distance of about three hundred yards.



THE ROPE-HANDLE GRENADE.

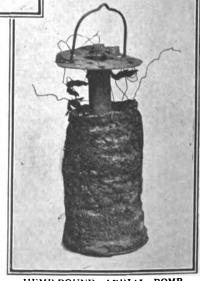
Steel hand-grenade fastened to a rope handle, by which it was swung and thrown. Its weight was about twenty-three ounces; and it could be thrown about fifty yards.

Board of Trade had appointed Sir George Askwith, Sir Francis Hopwood, and Sir George Gibb to inquire into and report upon the best steps to secure that all the available productive power of the employees engaged in the engineering and shipbuilding establishments of the country should be utilised in the present emergency.

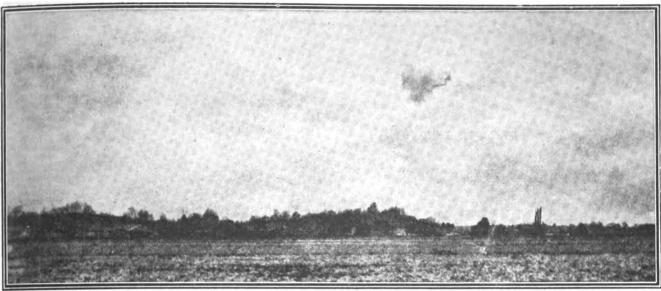
HAND-GRENADE ON STICK. Another type of handgrenade used for short-range trench warfare,

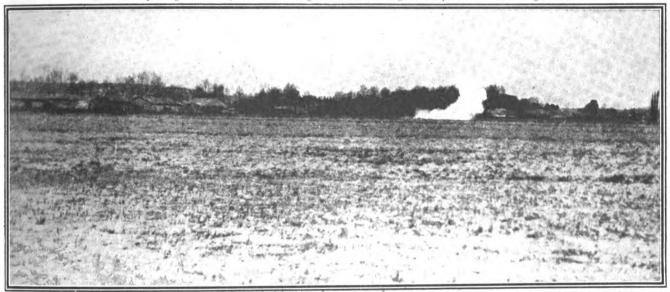
intolerable that the life of Britain should be imperilled for the matter of a farthing an hour." He spoke equally strongly about the lure of the drink, as he called it: "Drink is doing us more damage in the war than all the German submarines put together." Lord Kitchener mentioned the restrictions imposed by the trade unions as another

About this time, reasons for the shortage were being discussed. The failure to produce more munitions was ascribed to the prevalence of strikes and the temptations of drink. In a speech delivered at Bangor on February 28th, Mr. George referred to both of these, and Lord Kitchener did the same on March 15th in the House of Lords. Mr. Lloyd George said that "For one reason or another we are not getting all the assistance we have a right to expect from our works," and added: "I say here solemnly that it is



HEMP-BOUND AERIAL BOMB. German incendiary bomb dropped in England, but extinguished with water.







Preceded by a curtain of shrapnel shells, the French infantrymen, after their artillery had bombarded the German trenches, began their advance.

The men had left their trenches, and were seeking scanty cover behind rising ground, awaiting the order to charge.

FRENCH ARTILLERY BOMBARDMENT AS PRELUDE TO INFANTRY ATTACK.

78

reason for the inadequate output of munitions. In this matter of munitions Mr. Lloyd George was rapidly taking the leading place. On March 9th he introduced into Parliament a Bill, called the Defence of the Realm Amendment (No. 2) Bill, which gave the Government the power to take over the control of all works capable of being used for the production of the munitions of war.

Ministers and munitions

This meant that at any time a manufac-turer might be told that his works were required and he must turn out—a drastic,

but in the circumstances a necessary proceeding. In his speech, Mr. Lloyd George said: "It is vitally important that we should increase the output, and every facility for the output of munitions of war," and he remarked that he was arranging for a central committee to take charge of the scheme and was looking out for "a good, strong business man with some 'go' in him, who will be able to push the thing through."

Six days later Lord Kitchener referred to the same subject. He mentioned the excellent response of the

armament trades to the nation's need and the loyalty of the great majority of the employees, but added: "Not-

withstanding these efforts to meet our requirements, we have unfortunately found that the output is not only not equal to our necessities, but does not fulfil our expectations. for a very large number of our orders have not been completed by the dates on which they were promised."

It was on this occasion that he said that "the supply of war material at the present moment and for the next two or three months is causing me very serious anxiety."

On March 17th Mr. George met the representatives of

the trade unions and suggested to them that during the war all their rules and regulations restricting output should be suspended and that labour disputes should be arranged without any stoppage of work. The result was that a memorandum containing certain recommendations to workmen was signed by Mr. George and Mr. Runciman on behalf of the Government, and by Mr. Arthur Henderson and Mr. William Mosses on behalf of the workmen. Its chief points were as follows:

During the war period there shall in no case be any stoppage of work upon munitions and equipments of war.

All differences on wages or conditions of employment shall be the subject of conferences between the parties. In all cases of failure to reach a settlement of disputes by the parties directly concerned or their representatives, or under existing agreements, the matter in dispute shall be dealt with under any one of three alternatives as may be mutually agreed, or

alternatives as may be mutually agreed, or, in default of agreement, settled by the

Board of Trade.

An Advisory Committee representative of the workers engaged in production for Government requirements shall be appointed

Government requirements shall be appointed by the Government.

During the war period, the relaxation of the present trade practices is imperative. Any departure from the practice ruling shall only be for the period of the war.

The relaxation of existing demarcation restrictions or admission of semi-skilled or female labour shall not affect adversely the rates customarily paid for the job.

On March 29th the Shipbuilding Employers' Federation sent a deputation to Mr. Lloyd George to advocate the closing of public-houses and clubs in areas where munitions of war were produced. They brought forward evidence that much of the increased wages earned by the workmen was spent in drink, and pointed out the obvious fact that this drinking was detrimental to good and regular work and had already caused serious delays. Mr. Lloyd George's reply should be given in some detail. Mr. George said:

Mr. George said:

Having gone into this matter a great deal more closely during the last few weeks, I must say that I have a growing conviction, based on accumulating evidence, that nothing but root and branch methods will be of the slightest avail in dealing with this evil. I believe that to be the general feeling. The feeling is that if we are to settle with German militarism we must first of all settle with drink. We are fighting Germany, Austria, and Drink; and as far as I can see, the greatest of these three deadly foes is Drink. Success in the war is now purely a question of munitions; three deadly foes is Drink. Success in the war is now purely a question of munitions; I say that not on my own authority, but on the authority of our great General, Sir John French. He has made it quite clear what his conviction is on the subject. I think I can venture to say that that is also the conviction of the Secretary of State for War, and it is the conviction of all those who know anything about the military who know anything about the military problem—that in order to enable us to win all we require is an increase, and an enormous increase, in the shells, rifles, and all the other munitions and equipment which are necessary to carry through a



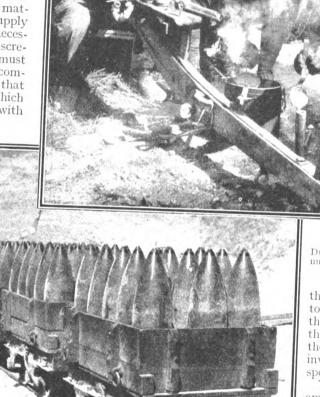
FRENCHWOMEN'S SHARE IN MAKING MUNITIONS.

Frenchwomen testing shells in a French munitions factory. The women of France played a great part in providing our ally's soldiers with ammunition, being largely employed in the manufacture of shells.

great war. You have proved to us to-day quite clearly that the excessive drinking in the works connected with these operations is interfering seriously with that output. I can only promise you this at the present moment, that the words you have addressed to my colleagues and myself will be taken into the most careful consideration by my the most careful consideration by my colleagues when we come to our final decision on this question.

In this speech Mr. George referred to the opinion of Sir John French, Sir John French's and in his despatch of April opinion 5th the Field-Marshal again mentioned this matter. "An almost unlimited supply of ammunition," he said, "is necessary, and a most liberal discretionary power as to its use must be given to the artillery commanders. I am confident that this is the only means by which great results can be obtained with

a minimum of loss."



FRENCH SHELLS FOR THE "TERRIBLE TURK." Truckloads of 92 in. shells, before they were sent to a French battery on Gallipoli, being guarded by a French Colonial sentry.

Early in April Mr. George found his "good, strong business man" in Mr. G. M. Booth, of Liverpool, who became secretary of a new departmental committee of the War Office. Of this Lord Kitchener was chairman, and its business was "to give assistance in expediting and if possible accelerating the supply of munitions of and, if possible, accelerating the supply of munitions of war." In addition a larger committee was appointed to work with this War Office one. This was called the Munitions of War Committee, and its duties were "to ensure the proportion of all ensure the promptest and most efficient application of all the available productive resources of the country to the manufacture and supply of munitions of war for the Army and Navy." Its chairman was Mr. Lloyd George, and among its members was Mr. Balfour.

Franching and Army and Property and Property

Everything seemed going well when a bomb fell from a very unexpected quarter. The trade unionists of Newcastle-on-Tyne welcomed the new departure, which included the contribution of the cluded the establishment of local committees for increasing

"PIOU-PIOUS'" PROFITABLE HOBBY.

During their hours of surcease from fighting, numbers of French soldiers made rings from aluminium taken from spent shells.

the output of munitions, promised to "deliver the goods," and "do their bit," and ended by inviting the Prime Minister to address them. Mr. Asquith accepted the invitation, and on April 20th spoke at Newcastle.

The speech was a cause of amazement. Mr. Asquith said: "I saw a statement the other day that the operations of war, not only of our Army but of our Allies, were being crippled, or, at any rate, hampered, by our failure to provide the necessary ammunition. There is not

a word of truth in that state-ment." He declared that it was neither true nor fair to

suggest that there had been anything in the nature of general slackness in The Government's the armaments industry on the part of either employers or employed, and throughout took an entirely opposite line from that followed by Mr. George and, to a less extent, by Lord Kitchener.

If Mr. Asquith was right, then these two gentlemen had been unduly alarming the nation. The speech aroused a general sense of perplexity, which was the reverse of reassuring. It should be said, however, that the Prime Minister laid great stress upon the need for a large and rapid increase in the output of munitions, this being "one of the first processities of the State" of the first necessities of the State."

On the following day Mr. George spoke on the question in the House of Commons. He gave some account of the work done in providing more munitions, being on the whole optimistic, but he said nothing by way of modifying his earlier warnings. He stated that the output of munitions had grown from 20, an arbitrary figure taken to represent the output in the month of September, to 90 for October and November, 156 for December, 186 for January, 256 for February, and 388 for March. In other words, the factories in March had turned out more than nineteen times the amount they produced in September. He added that the production of high explosives had been placed on a footing which relieved us of all anxiety and enabled us to supply our Allies.

On the liquor question Mr. George experienced a rebuff. In order to deal with "the lure of the drink," he brought in on April 20th a Bill giving the Government power, during the period of the war, to control or close all publichouses in areas where munitions were produced or transport was carried on, or troops were quartered, if they thought such action was desirable. Moreover, he proposed to double the tax on spirits and to put a heavy tax on beer and wine. There was a good deal of opposition to the new duties, and they were abandoned, for many, reassured by Mr. Asquith's speech, considered that such drastic remedies were hardly called for. However, as a substitute, the sale of spirits under three years of age was entirely prohibited. This, it was hoped, would put an end to the drinking of raw and fiery spirits. Shorn of these taxation proposals, the Bill became law, and the Government appointed a Central Control Board to deal with the drink

problem in the munitions, transport, and camp areas. This set to work, its chairman being Lord

Peril of the D'Abernon, better known as Sir Edgar Vincent, and in a short time it had issued regulations closing public-houses earlier drink lure

in certain industrial areas, notably those around Glasgow and Newcastle, and in general making it more difficult for workmen to procure drink.

On Sunday, May 9th, the British troops made an attack upon the Aubers Ridge which resulted in failure and heavy losses, revealed piecemeal in the long lists of casualties published in the papers. On May 14th "The Times" printed a telegram from its correspondent in Northern France, who said that the attack failed because of "the want of an unlimited supply of high explosive." Our men were unable to level the German parapets to the ground after the French practice, and, consequently, they came up

against unbroken wire and undestroyed parapets. Five days later, "The Times," in a leading article, said: "Men died in heaps upon the Aubers Ridge ten days ago because the field-guns were short, and gravely short, of highexplosive shells.

A yell of anger broke from that section of the Press which had consistently opposed all measures for the defence of the country, whether on sea or on land; but the statements in "The Times" were true, and Mr. Asquith had been misinformed when he spoke on April 20th. Such was the position when the quarrel at the Admiralty became serious, and the Prime Minister sought a way out of his difficulties by forming "a National Government.

The munitions crisis had an immediate effect on the formation of the new administration. When the arrangements for the new Coalition Government were being

discussed, there was much talk about the need for a Minister to devote his whole time to the organisation of the supply

A Ministry of Munitions

of munitions, and so to relieve Lord Kitchener and the War Office, who were clearly over-burdened with work. In this connection the name of Mr. Lloyd George was freely mentioned, and when the members of the new Cabinet were announced, it was seen that that energetic gentleman had become Minister of Munitions. A Bill establishing the new Ministry became law on June 9th.

The new Minister had not waited for the passing of the Bill before getting to work. He took the first steps towards forming his Department, and then went on tour round the country. At Manchester, Liverpool, Bristol, and elsewhere he preached from the same text. The war was a war of munitions. We were short of munitions, and we could only hope for victory by turning out more, much more, of them. For this we required "all the industry, all the labour, and all the strength, power, and resource of everyone to the utmost."

On May 23rd Mr. George was back in Parliament, introducing his Bill for increasing the output of munitions. This, called the Munitions of War Act, provided "for furthering the efficient manufacture, transport, and supply of munitions for the present war and for purposes incidental thereto." The task involved was a big one.



HOW FRANCE MET THE DEMAND FOR MUNITIONS.

Pointing "75" shells in a French munitions factory. Our Allies divided their country into industrial districts and groups, each under a

responsible metallurgist. To the left of the illustration an engineer officer is watching a shell being tested; to the right is a hammer stamper.



Lieut: General Sir William R. Birdwood: W. C.S.J., K. C.M.G., D.S. C.



## THE CONQUEST OF TOGOLAND AND CAMEROON.

Togoland Described—Its Products—Preparations for War—The Fighting—Surrender of the Germans—The German Acquisition of Cameroon—Its Boundaries, Size, and Population—A British Reverse—Naval Successes—Duala Captured—The Advance Into the Interior—A Fight for Jabassi—French Victory at Japona—The German Capital Taken—Assistance of the Belgians—Further Allied Successes—The Fight at Edea—Duala Open to Trade—The French in the Hinterland—Heroic Defence of Gurin—Garua Captured—Strength of the Place—Garua Fables—Climatic and Other Difficulties.



a famous passage in "The Decline and Fall," Gibbon remarks that a certain statement made by Seneca is a very just observation, and one "confirmed by history and experience." The statement is that "wheresoever the Roman conquers

he inhabits."

This is undoubtedly a right principle for colonising nations, and, in general, Great Britain has followed it. Germany, on the other hand, has not. In this, as in other matters, she has forgotten or flouted lessons "confirmed by history and experience," and

by history and experience," and this is one reason why she has not ranked as a colonising nation. It also helps to explain the ease with which most of her colonies fell into British hands, although it is not the only, or even the main, reason for this. Germany's colonies fell mainly because the Navy of her foe swept the seas, because amid the northern mists Sir John Jellicoe and his men kept ceaseless watch and ward.

In West Africa, Germany, at the outbreak of the Great War, had two colonies, Togoland and Cameroon. Togoland is a country 33,700 square miles in extent, or about the size of Ireland, and it lies between Dahomey, belonging to France, and the Gold Coast Colony, a British possession. It became German in 1884, thirty years before the war, when the traveller Gustav Nachtigal landed at Lome from a gunboat, and by an arrangement with the local chiefs declared the land to be a German Protectorate. shape it is not unlike a pyramid, tapering down to its coastline

on the Gulf of Guinea, where it is only thirty-two miles from end to end.

The capital of the colony is Lome, on the coast. Other stations are Bagida, also on the coast; Togo on Lake Togo, Misahöhe about a hundred miles inland, and Bismarckburg on the high lands at the back of the country. The population consists of about a million Hausas, and before the war there were less than four hundred white folk there. A railway runs along the coast from Little Popo to Lome and thence inland to Misahöhe, and there are about eight hundred miles of good roads.

Being a tropical country, Togoland produces palms, cocoa, rubber, and cotton, as well as maize, bananas, ginger, and a little tobacco. The products of the palm—oil and kernels—are the chief exports, others being rubber, cotton, and cocoa. In some parts the inhabitants rear horses, sheep, goats, pigs, and poultry, while others work at native industries, such as weaving, pottery-making, straw-plaiting, and wood-cutting.

On the evening of August 4th, 1914, war was declared by Great Britain on Germany, and in a few minutes the fateful news had been flashed across the ocean to the Acting-Governor of the Gold Coast and the French Governor of Dahomey. At once they arranged a joint plan of campaign, while British cruisers were ready with their assistance. In two or three days one of these appeared before Lome, and with its guns trained on the town, politely asked the Germans to surrender. They did so, but before the British came on shore their little army, consisting of about sixty



SIR FREDERICK DEALTRY LUGARD, G.C.M.G., C.B., D.S.O. Governor-General of Nigeria.

Europeans and four hundred natives, had retired inland towards Atakpame.

In the Gold Coast British officials were preparing to send a small expeditionary force against the Germans. This was composed of men of the Gold Coast Regiment, officered by Britons and commanded by Captain F. C. Bryant, R.A. On August 8th or 9th it crossed the frontier in motor-cars, and at the same time a French force entered Togoland from the other side. The German Governor made the naïve suggestion that the colony should remain neutral, but of this Bryant would not hear, and he pressed on with his troops. By the 10th the southern part of Togoland was in the hands of the Allies, and the united force then advanced towards Atakpame, near which, at Kamina, was one of Germany's chief wireless stations.

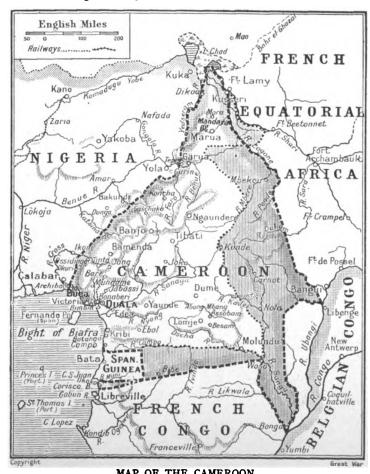
On the 25th, Bryant and his men crossed the River Monu, and there the only fighting of the campaign took place. The Allies had seventy-three

Surrender of place. The Allies had seventy-three casualties, two officers and twenty-one men being killed, but they drove the enemy from his entrenchments, occupied

Atakpame, and seized the wireless station.

The Germans then offered to surrender, and on the 26th it was announced that they had done so unconditionally. When they did this they had an ample supply of arms and ammunition, and they handed over to Captain Bryant three Maxim guns, 1,000 rifles, and 320,000 rounds of ammunition. A reason for their feeble resistance was that many natives refused to take up arms against the British. Secret agents brought word that the sympathies of the natives were with us, though in some cases they had been forced to take up arms against us on penalty of instant death. The number of prisoners taken at this time was two hundred and six.

In this way Togoland fell to the Allies. Great Britain and France agreed to govern it between them, and officials



MAP OF THE CAMEROON.

Drawn to illustrate the account of the Allies' operations. The ruled portions indicate the territory ceded to Germany by France in 1911.



MAP OF TOGOLAND. Showing the coast line and the boundaries of the Gold Coast Colony on the left and Dahomey on the right.

of each nationality were appointed to look after the part adjacent to their own possessions. Trade was resumed, private property was not interfered with, and there is no reason to suppose that the natives had any reason to regret the change of rulers.

Cameroon is a larger country than Togoland, from which it is separated by French Dahomey and British Nigeria, and its conquest was a bigger proposition. The name comes from a Portuguese word meaning prawns, and its coast was discovered by Fernando Po towards 1500. Either he or some other Portuguese navigator gave the name Rio dos Camaroes, or River of Prawns, to the big estuary there; and later, the interior was called Cameroon.

It was in 1884 that Germany, represented again by Nachtigal, took possession of the colony, calling it Kamerun, but it was

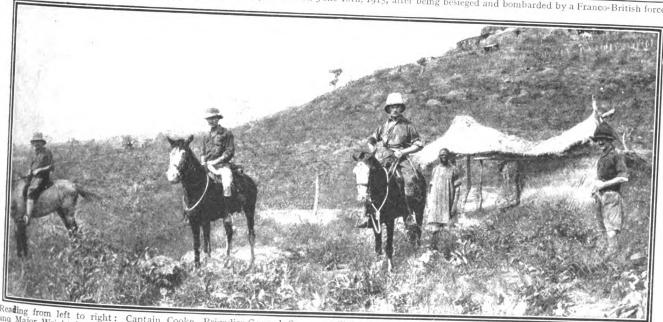
not then as large as it is now. In 1911, after the trouble in Morocco, France and Germany made a new colonial agreement, and one of the clauses of this said that France should hand over to Germany about 100,000 square miles of land on the south and east of Cameroon, a piece taken from her Congo territories. This was accordingly done.

and east of Cameroon, a piece taken from her Congo territories. This was accordingly done. It is desirable to say something about the boundaries and nature of the country before attempting to describe the military operations therein. Cameroon has a sea coast of about two hundred miles on what is called the Bight of Biafra. To the north-east an arbitrary line divides it from the British Protectorate of Nigeria, and this stretches up to Lake Chad; part of the southern shore of this lake is in Cameroon. From Lake Chad southwards, another arbitrary line divides the colony from French Equatorial Africa, although in two places



To render Garua, an important position in the interior of the German Cameroon, difficult of assault, barbed-wire and sand-bag defences were utilised to an extraordinary extent, and pits were dug round the forts to further strengthen them.



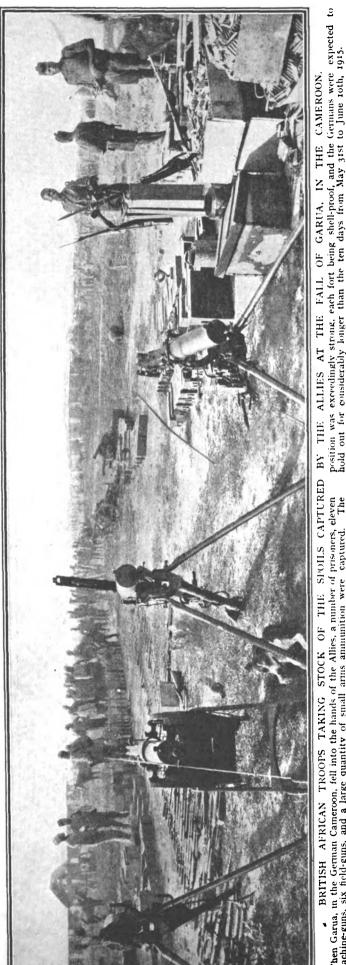


will be recalled that after the Agadir crisis an agreement was entered into between France and Germany, whereby the latter extended her Cameroon borders at the expense of French territory, on the understanding that our ally's supremacy in Morocco should go unchallenged by the Pan-Germanists.

Reading from left to right: Captain Cooke, Brigadier-General C—, and Major Wright in line before a fallen German fort at Garua. The on June 10th, 1915, where the bulk of the enemy forces and ammunition was concentrated, their resistance proved comparatively weak. It LEADERS WHO DIRECTED THE OPERATIONS

will be recalled that after the Agadir crisis an agreement was entered that our ally's supremacy and Germany, whereby the latter extended Cameroon borders at the expense of French territory, on the understand that our ally's supremacy in Morocco should go unchallenged by Pan-Germanists.

AGAINST THE HUN IN EQUATORIAL AFRICA.



spurs of land jut out and touch the Belgian Congo. On the south a straight line separates it from more French

The transfer of 1911 had one curious result. It left, surrounded by German territory, a little Spanish colony called Rio Muni, or Spanish Guinea, a square of land which Bernhardi in his notorious book claimed for Germany.

The size of Cameroon is about 290,000 square miles, or about five times the size of England and Wales. Much of it is mountainous, and sloping down to the sea is the magnificent Cameroon Mountain, called by the natives the Mountain of Greatness. It is over 13,000 feet high, and is

the highest point on the western side of Africa. It is a volcano, and not an extinct one, and from top to bottom The transfer of 1911

it is covered with dense forests. On the rest of the coast there is a level strip of land, and at the back of the colony there is a good deal of low-lying country.

Cameroon has many rivers and several good harbours. Into the great Cameroon estuary, which is twenty miles across, flow the Rivers Wuri and Mungo, and through the centre of the colony the Sanaga runs to the sea. The hinterland is watered by the Logone and the Shari, which unite before they fall into Lake Chad, and the Sanga, a

tributary of the Congo.

The population consists of about 2,500,000 negroes, mostly of the Bantu race, but some belonging to the Fula and the Hausa tribes live in the north. Before the war there were less than 2,000 whites in the colony. Buea, on the slopes of the Cameroon Mountain, is the official capital, but Duala on the Cameroon Estuary is the largest place, and a trading centre of some importance. Other considerable towns are Victoria, Batanga, and Campo on the coast, Garua on the Benue River, and near the Nigerian frontier, Ngaundere, the largest town in the interior, and Yaunde, about a hundred miles from the sea.

The soil is fertile, and produces rubber, cotton, cocoa, and coffee, as well as a great number of palms, the oil and kernels of which are exported in large quantities. Ivory and copra are also exported, and the land grows much excellent timber, notably ebony. Many cattle are raised, and in some parts the natives grow corn, maize, and rice. The Germans had built about one hundred and fifty miles of railway connecting the towns near the coast, and had made a certain number of good roads.

Such was the German colony which the British in Nigeria and the French on the Congo prepared to invade in August, 1914. For this purpose the British had the West African Regiment, stationed at Sierra Leone, and the West Atrican Frontier Force, consisting of the several battalions of the Northern Nigeria and the Southern Nigeria Regiments. The French had their troops in Equatorial Africa, the whole being composed of natives officered by white men.

The first attempts were not conspicuously successful, doubtless because they were undertaken in the rainy season. On August 25th some mounted infantry belonging to the West African Frontier Force left Yola, in Nigeria, crossed the frontier and, after a fight in which two British officers

were killed, seized Tepe, a German post on the Benue River. Lieut.-Colonel P. R. Maclear commanded the detachment, and on the 20th he led it against the bigger

A British disaster

station of Garua. One fort was captured, but on the 30th the Germans brought up a big force and totally defeated the British. Lieut.-Colonel Maclear and four other white officers were killed, while nearly half the native force was destroyed. The excellent work of the German Maxims was mainly responsible for this disaster, which ended in the retreat of the remainder of the Frontier Force to Nigeria.

Two more expeditionary forces, meanwhile, had entered Cameroon from Nigeria. One marched from Ikom to Nsanakong, a few miles from the border, which was occupied without trouble, and the other from Calabar seized

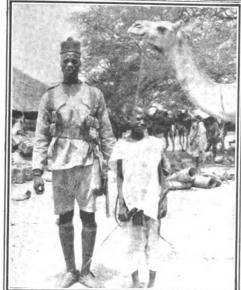
Digitized by Google

fell

Archibong with equal ease. A week later, at the beginning of September, came the German counter-stroke. A large force marched against Nsanakong, where the British resisted until all their ammunition had gone, and then cut their way out with the bayonet. Three British officers and many native soldiers were killed, while a large number of the latter became prisoners of war; but the remainder, like those from Garua, managed, after some hard-

ships in the bush, to get back to Nigeria. The force at Archibong did not give much trouble, and in return the Germans crossed the border and seized the Nigerian station of Okuri, not far from Calabar

As happens always when matters are not very prosperous with them, Britons turned to the Navy, and the Navy did not fail. Several German ships were in the Cameroon Estuary, and outside watching them were H.M.S. Cumberland and H.M.S. Dwarf, the former a cruiser and the latter a gunboat. On September 14th an attempt was made to wreck the Dwarf, which had made her way into the estuary, a missionary and an infernal machine



wreck the Dwarf, which had made her way into the estuary, a missionary and an infernal machine had made her way into the Cameroon Campaign.

A CONQUEROR OF THE CAMEROON.

Typical soldier of the Nigerian Regiment. These coloured patriots fought splendidly for the Empire in the Cameroon Campaign.

playing the leading parts in this abortive enterprise, and a little later a merchantman, the Nachtigal, tried to ram



NIGERIAN MACHINE-GUN IN ACTION.

the same vessel. On this occasion the Nachtigal was wrecked, and a further attempt, made by launches and spar-torpedoes, to destroy the Dwarf also failed. One report spoke of an attempt to wreck the Cumberland.

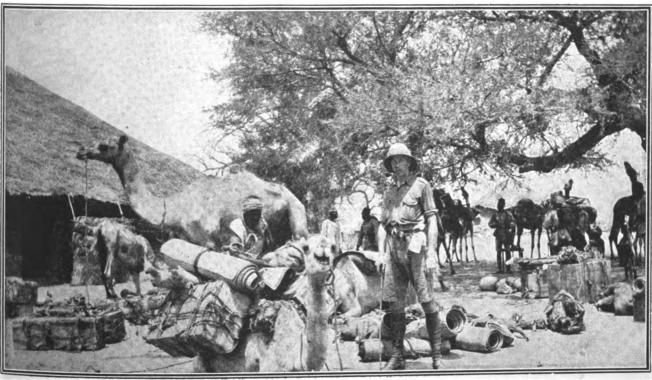
It was now the turn of the Allies to take the offensive. The Germans had sunk ten or twelve steamers in order to block up the channel leading to Duala, but the British

cleared away some of the obstructions and swept up the mines for about three miles. Soon

H.M.S. Challenger, escorting five troopships, arrived to join the Cumberland and the Dwarf, and on September 26th Duala was approached and bombarded. An attempt to get a small landing-party on shore was abandoned, but on

the 27th the Germans intimated their wish to surrender the town. Brigadier-General C. M. Dobell, D.S.O., who was in command of the expedition, landed on the 30th and took it

over, the surrender being unconditional, and at the same time a battalion was landed at Bonaberi, on the other side



A CORNER OF THE CAMEROON, NOW A BRITISH "PLACE IN THE SUN."

As in South-West Africa, the transport of stores, guns, and equipment was one of the chief difficulties of the Cameroon campaign. Camels were utilised as being the most reliable beasts of burden in this tropical

region. This photograph shows a heap of officers' baggage about to be put aboard the "ship of the desert." Native soldiers are seen at work in the background, while in front is a typical British officer.

of the river from Duala, which also capitulated after a little firing by both parties. The Germans had destroyed their wireless station at Duala and had withdrawn most of their troops, but several hundred prisoners were taken by the British. About the same time a French force, having come by sea from Libreville, in French Congo, under the escort of their warship Surpris, attacked Ukoko on Corisco Bay, in the south of Cameroon, while the Surpris sank two armed vessels, the Khios and the Itolo.

two armed vessels, the Khios and the Itolo.

Lying in the river above Bonaberi, the British found nine merchant steamers belonging to the Woermann Line, of Hamburg, and the Hamburg-Amerika Line, which had, presumably, taken refuge there on the outbreak of war. A small party was sent to take possession of them, and in one of them were found about thirty British prisoners. All the ships were in good order, most of them containing general outward and homeward cargoes and considerable quantities of coal. The German gunboat Soden was also seized and commissioned for the British Navy, and attempts were made to raise the Herzogin Elisabeth and a floating dock which the Germans had sunk.

The Allies now controlled the coast, and the first stage of the campaign was over. The second, however, was still before them, and this was by far the more difficult of the two, for it meant warfare in a mountainous and almost roadless country, and under climatic conditions which are

French victory at Japona

very unfavourable to white men.
With Duala and Bonaberi as bases,
a start was made. The Germans had
retreated, as far as could be ascertained,

by three routes—along the valley of the Wuri and by the two railways which run from Duala and Bonaberi inland, one, the shorter, towards the north, and the other towards the south-east. Along the southern railway a French column took its way, and on October 6th there was a fight at Japona, where the Germans had found a suitable defensive position on a river. However, the bridge was forced and they were compelled to continue their retreat.

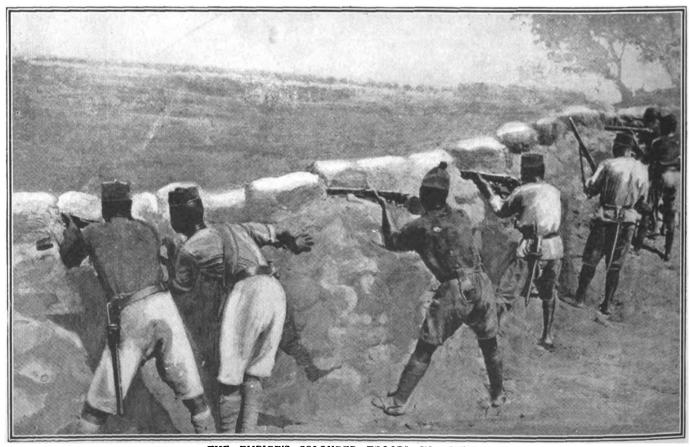
Another party of Germans was followed by a British force, containing both naval and military contingents, under Colonel E. H. Gorges, D.S.O. With four field-guns this sailed up the Wuri in launches, and landed about four miles from Jabassi, where the enemy was entrenched. An accurate fire met our men as they advanced, and they did not get very far. A flank attack was equally unsuccessful, and the order was given to retire. This was on October 8th, and after a day's rest the force returned to Duala, the general having come up in person to arrange this.

On the 14th the Allies returned to the attack. Additional troops were employed, and lighters, specially constructed,

carried two 6 in. guns, which soon silenced the German batteries. Then the infantry made for Jabassi, and this time they got there. After a sharp engagement the place

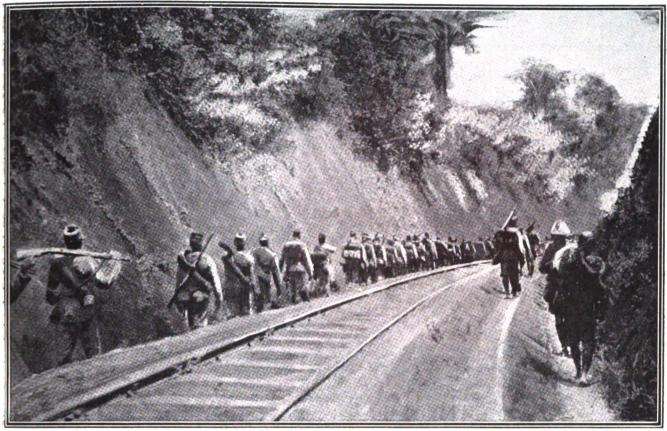
was occupied, and ten Europeans were made prisoners. A few days later, the column under Lieut.-Colonel A. H. W. Haywood, R.A., which was pursuing the enemy along the northern railway, came up with him at Susa, and inflicted a defeat upon him. Far away, in the north-east, a detachment of the Nigerian Regiment entered the colony, and proceeded to occupy the region around Mora, in the neighbourhood of Lake Chad.

All the columns were pressing on the heels of the retiring Germans, and soon two further successes were announced. Aided by some British soldiers and sailors, the French detachment under Colonel Mayer, after its success at Japona, marched towards Edea; this is an important place, fifty-six miles from the coast, for it stands on the Sanaga River and also on the Duala railway. The road thereto led through dense forest, wherein snipers were cleverly concealed, and they paid special attention to officers. However, the force pressed on, as did another detachment which sailed up the Sanaga, and on October 26th Edea was occupied without resistance. About a fortnight later, Haywood's column, following up its success at Susa, took Mujuka, a station about fifty miles from Duala.



THE EMPIRE'S COLOURED TROOPS IN ACTION.

Men of the Nigerian Regiment fighting for the Empire behind stone barricades near Garua, in the German Cameroon.



AFRICAN NATIVE TROOPS ADVANCING THROUGH A RAILWAY CUTTING IN THE CAMEROON.

The difficulties of transport in Equatorial Africa were mainly responsible in prolonging the Cameroon Campaign. Two hundred miles of railways were commandeered by our troops. This photograph shows a body of native soldiers patrolling a section of cutting. Immediately after it was taken a severe fight took place in the vicinity.

By this time General Dobell was prepared with a plan for attacking the German capital Buea and its seaport Victoria. The French cruiser Bruix and the yacht Ivy, belonging to the Nigerian Government, bombarded the latter place, and then some Marines were landed. In a very short time it was in their possession, and on November 14th detachments advanced from different points up the hills which lead to Buea. Here the enemy, unable to offer any very serious resistance, was soon scattered in all directions.

The German offensive—for it must be said that wherever Germans were found they acted on the offensive—was directed against Nigeria. At various points small parties crossed the border line, and at Danare, twenty five miles from Ikom, there was a skirmish on November 8th, when the British leader, a colour-sergeant of the Royal Sussex, was killed. A little later, three hundred natives, led by eight Germans, made two additional attacks on a station in the same district, but were repulsed with some loss.

Meanwhile, the French were winning a very gratifying success in the hinterland. The authorities of the Belgian Congo lent them a steamer and one hundred and thirty men, and under General Aymerich the united force soon drove the Germans from the greater part of the territory given up to

them in 1911, the so-called Congo-Ubanghi region. At the end of October, after fierce fighting, which lasted for two days, the German post at Numen was captured, and so was the post at Nola, where several officers, some guns, and ammunition were taken.

To return to the campaigns near the coast. In December the greatest success was the capture of the whole line of the northern railway. From Mujuka, Haywood's column marched to Lum, about twenty miles farther north, meeting

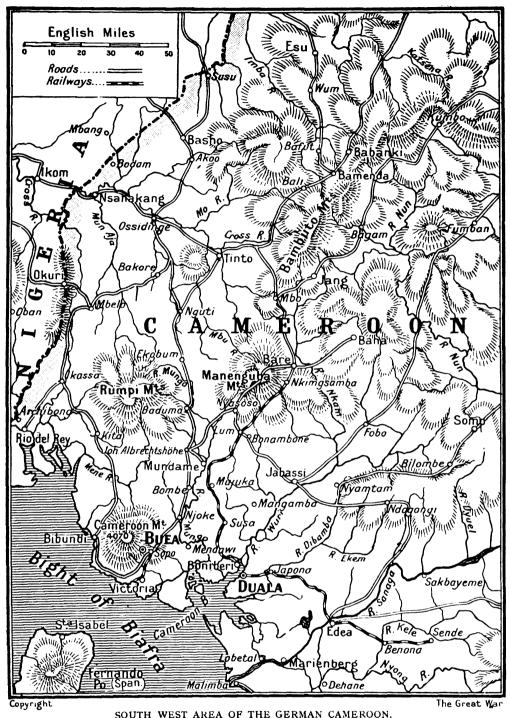
with opposition almost at every step. At Lum there was a sharp skirmish, but on the 10th, Nkimgsamba. the railway terminus, was seized. There five locomotives, some rolling-stock, and two aeroplanes were captured, as well as about sixty white men. An advance was at once made to Bare, about six miles from the railhead; but beyond this point progress was not easy, owing to the rocky and mountainous nature of the country. Haywood's task had been helped by the operations of another force, moving along the valley of the Mungo, which had seized Mendawi, an important post, on November 21st.

Another little expeditionary force was also "doing its bit." This left Lagos on November 22nd, and sailed up the Cross River to Ikom. It marched to Nkami, on the boundary between Nigeria



COLONEL EDMUND HOWARD GORGES, D.S.O.

Commandant of the West African Regiment. He was in charge of the naval and military force which successfully occupied Jabassi.



Map showing part of the German territory in West Africa, and the three rivers—Mungo, Wuri, and Sanaga—which were utilised to a great extent in the Allied campaign against the German Cameroon. The landing bases were at Duala and Victoria, the seaport of Buea.

and Cameroon, crossing no less than twenty-three rivers, and then made its way towards Ossidinge, or Mamfe, a German post. When that place was reached, it was found that the Germans had evacuated it, but there was a little skirmishing with parties of them in the neighbourhood before its possession was quite assured.

At Edea the French were attacked on October 26th, when there was a somewhat sanguinary engagement. The Germans, having lost twenty whites and fifty-four natives, were repulsed; the victors had two officers and twenty-nine native soldiers killed. In the north an er.counter was reported on November 17th between a British and a German patrol. The Germans continued their raids into Nigeria, but all these were repulsed, the skirmish near Bakundi being perhaps the most serious.

At the end of the year Cameroon was not conquered,

but the work was well forward and the position of the Germans therein was not pleasant. Nothing whatever could reach them from the outside, and slowly, but surely, they were being driven off the railways and into the interior, while in the more inhospitable northern and eastern parts of the colony they were also being harried and chased. Their surrender or extermination was only a matter of time.

From the British point of

view the position was so satisfactory that on December 21st the port of Duala was opened to trade, this being allowed only with those parts of the colony which were in the occupation of the Allies. For the time being the German tariff on imports was kept in force.

During the hot season little was done, but soon the allied columns were again on the move. Leaving Edea, Colonel Mayer and his troops fought two engagements and seized the post of Bersona. Following the railway, they forced their way across the River Kele in April, while a British force, marching somewhat to the north, seized with equal ease the bridge across the Ngwa. Their objective was Yaunde, which the Germans had made their headquarters. On May 11th the station of Escha was captured, and on the 29th the enemy was driven from a strong position at Njoke.

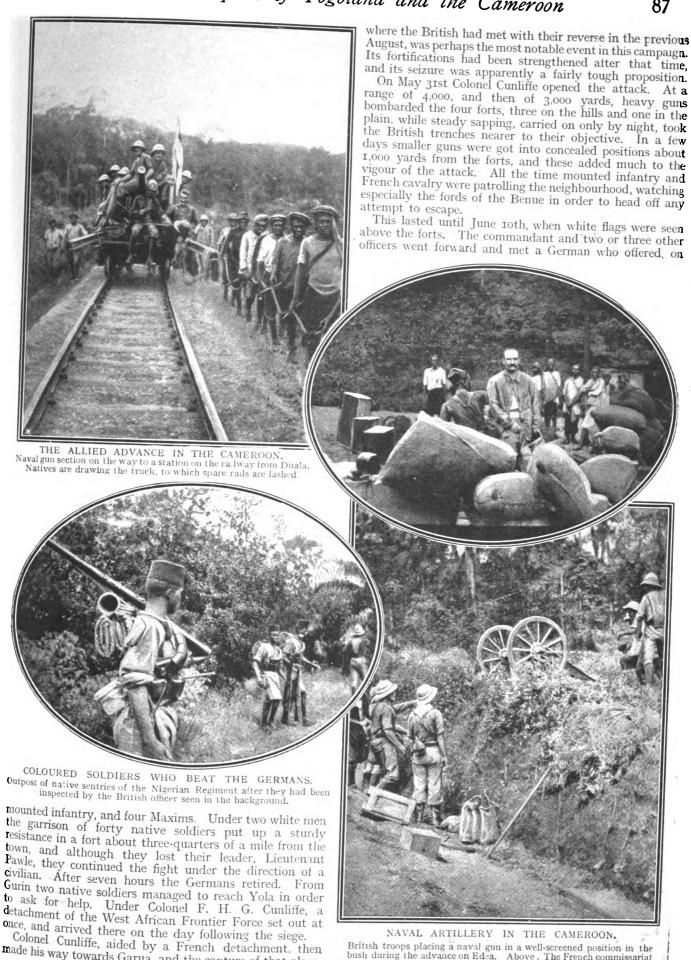
In the hinterland French columns were hard at work. On the Sanga they drove the enemy from place to place until he fell back on Monso, a fortified position. There, after a stiff struggle, the Germans were obliged to Germans were obliged to capitulate, and their guns and ammunition were captured. Besam and Assobam fell quickly to the French,

and on June 25th they were in possession of the important post of Lomje.

Their task was made easier by the against Germans conduct of the Germans in burning

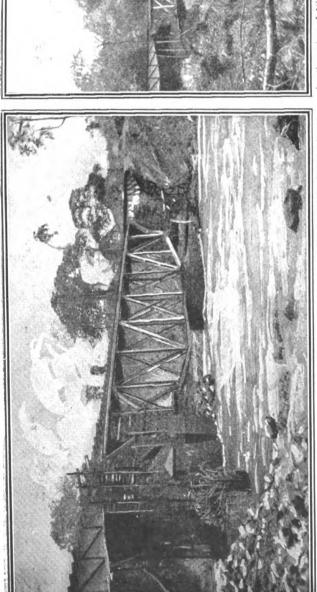
villages in their retreat and so exasperating the native population, and by a mutiny among the native troops in the German service. In these operations the Belgians gave some useful assistance. Their original contingent of one hundred and thirty men was increased to five hundred and eighty, and they took part in all the engagements just mentioned.

On the Nigerian frontier there was some sharp fighting in April and May. Just inside British territory is Gurin, a large native town on the River Faro, and this was attacked in April by Germans from Garua, who brought against it sixteen Europeans, three hundred and fitty natives, some

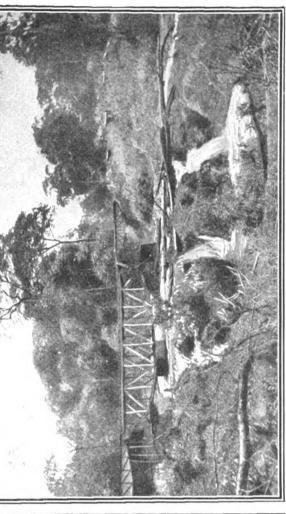


made his way towards Garua, and the capture of that place,

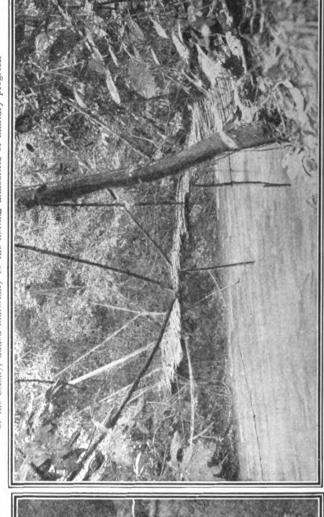
British troops placing a naval gun in a well-screened position in the bush during the advance on Edga. Above. The French commissariat at the station of Piti.



Nlohe Bridge, Cameroon, the original structure of which was destroyed by the retreating German forces. After a short delay the communication was re-established, as seen above, the three piers in the centre being additional to the original German ones at each end.

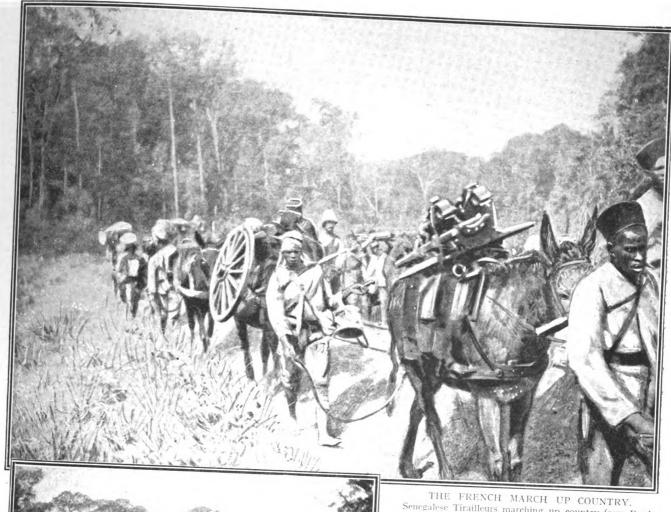


Another view of Nlohe Bridge, giving an idea of the wild Cameroon scenery. When the water is high the rocks seen in this photograph are completely covered. The tropical vegetation, so profuse in this part of the colony, added materially to the normal difficulties of military progress.





Digitized by Google



THE FRENCH MARCH UP COUNTRY.
Senegalese Tirailleurs marching up country from Duala
to Edea, Cameroon. Their light field-pieces are packed
on mules.

FRENCH AND BRITISH OFFICERS IN THE CAMEROON.
A French doctor and a British officer, attached to the French service, on the rail-way between Duala and Edea.

the part of the governor, to surrender the place. He asked, however, that the Germans should be allowed to march out with the honours of war and to join their comrades in the other parts of the colony. This was refused, unconditional surrender being requested, and the Germans were given two hours—they asked for two days—in which to decide. Within this time the envoys returned saying that the terms had been

accepted. On the next day (the 11th) the Allies entered Garua, hoisted the Union Jack and the Tricolour, and took over thirty-seven German and two hundred and seventy native prisoners. The booty included several field-guns and Maxims, many rifles, much ammunition, and a great quantity of stores of all kinds.

kinds.

In a report on this siege forwarded to England by Sir Frederick Lugard, the Governor General of Nigeria, it was mentioned that the melinite and lyddite shells completely destroyed the nerve of the defenders, and on the 9th they began to mutiny and desert. Those who got away were vigorously pursued by the mounted men, but not a single European escaped. The strength of the fortifications amazed those who inspected them,

and they were told by the Germans that 2,000 men had been working on them How Garua was

for six months. The most extraordinary fact about this siege, however, is still to be told. The Allies did not lose a single man.

The Allies did not lose a single man.

From Garua the force moved along the benue towards Ngaundere, an important town on the route between Duala and Lake Chad, and the capital of the Adamawa district.

Lake Chad, and the capital of the Adamawa district. This was seized with very slight loss on June 20th, when the Germans there, followed by the Allies, retired in a south-westernly direction to Tibati, and then turning northwards reached Tingere, nearly 4,000 feet upon the plateau. This was captured by the Allies on July 12th, and a German attempt to retake it was repulsed eleven days later. Koncha and Gaschaka, sixty-five miles apart,

fell to the British in August, and then the rains put a stop for a time to active operations.

Before this, however, the French had got still nearer Yaunde. After two small encounters they occupied the station of Dume, and so surprised the Germans that they quickly abandoned several fortified places and

threw their transport into the river.

Fables for They continued to hold the hill above native consumption the town of Dume, but this was soon captured, and a light column was sent forward to Abong-Mbong, which was seized on August 20th.

In this campaign the Germans, it must be admitted, put up a good fight, employing also those weapons of craft in which they so excel. Their appeals to the Mohammedans and their stories of British and French reverses in Europe were the most fantastic nonsense. One spoke of the capture of four English and three French towns, 10,000 English being killed in one of the former of these. Another told of Paris taken and Versailles in flames, and a third that the English wanted Constantinople to give it to the pagans. The feats of their Zeppelins were thus rendered into pidgin-English for the benefit of the natives:

The white men under the earth (i.e., the Germans) are fit to send plenty ships to fly for air over all English country. Each ship fit to throw down one "tiger" for chop every white man, and one gun as "dash" for every black man.

However, the Allies overcame these and other difficulties, the most serious being the climate and the country. A letter from an officer there gives a good description of the latter. He says:

It is very trying and difficult country to negotiate. The climate (with its intense heat, tropical downpours, and violent tornados), mangrove swamps, thick, dense jungle, transport, carriers, etc., etc., all combine to make progress anything but rapid. At M—— is a large palm-kernel factory, and soon after leaving this the character of the country changes completely, and one enters thick bush (so

close and dense is it that it brushes against the trunks) varied by luxuriant palm groves and acres of flourishing bananas. Sometimes it is the low, thick bush of the Sierra Leone Protectorate, more often of the wild West African forest. There are great trees hung and festooned with creepers, lianes, and tendrils—a perfect orgy of luxuriant vegetation—but always with man-high undergrowth, varied by mauve convolvuli and large ferns. Birds of every hue, from brilliant blue and purple to shimmering yellow, apricot, and orange, fly from tree to tree and branch to branch, while insects of every description, from huge butterflies to "stinging-mangos," abound.

Equally graphic is an extract from another account:

We think out here that the fighting in Belgium must be an absolute picnic compared with our scrap here. In this country it is nearly impossible to march more than twenty or twenty-five miles per day, starting at 5.30 a.m. (dark), and going on until 6.30 in the evening (darkness). Most of the paths are only bush tracks in the everlasting forest. You go marching along in single file, never knowing when you are going to be shot at. The enemy may be only a few yards away, but you cannot see him—the bush is so thick. It is a bit nerve-racking when suddenly a shot rings out in the wonderful stillness—very often a signal for all your carriers (500 or more) to stampede with their loads. There is an eternal twilight in these thick forests, the trees meeting overhead and interlaced by creepers. It is a fine sight to see the column on the march; it covers two or three miles of road, taking nearly an hour to pass a given spot, of course, in single file; and it is a very serious matter to defend this long line. And the heat! Another chief difficulty is the transport, and the line of communication has to be guarded (one hundred and fifty miles).

Yet once again man prevailed over Nature, a more terrible foe—at least, in West Africa—than the German. At the end

of August the enemy was hemmed in on all sides, and although he still held Yaunde and a certain district in the centre of the country, Cameroon was in no sense a Ger-

The enemy hemmed in

man possession. He had still some British prisoners, taken during the earlier stages of the war, who were interned in a camp between Yaunde and Dume, but happily in September these were reported to be in good health and spirits. Their captivity was clearly nearing its end.



NIGERIAN ARTILLERY'S NIGHT ATTACK ON MOUNTAIN HILL CAMP, CAMEROON.

Coming unexpectedly upon the German camp in the Bare-Jang district at night-time, the British force was subjected to a fierce fire But after three hours of strenuous fighting, the enemy being aided by flare rockets, the Nigerian artillery drove the Germans from their camp.



## THE GREAT DRIVE IN THE WEST AND THE BATTLE OF LOOS.

Fall of Russian Fortresses Upsets Franco-British Plan—Germans Rail a Thousand Heavy Guns to Western Front—Race Between French and German Railways with Shell Supplies for the Great Bombardment—Lord Kitchener and Admiral Bacon Threaten a Landing Buttle on the Belgian Coast—General Joffre Makes a Strong Demonstration Against the Alsatian German Wing—The Alsace Potash Mine and the Part it Played in the War—After Threatening Both Wings, the French and British Mass their Guns in Champagne and Artois—An Army of 600,000 Men Drives In at Lens—How a German Engineer Upset General Foch's Plan of Attack—The Creation of a New River-Swamp at Souchez Forces the French to Swerve Southward—A Dangerous Gap is Left Between the French and British Armies—Sir John French has to Hold Back His Reserve to Protect the Gap—The Artois Armies Fail to Get a Good Wind for their Clouds of Intoxicating Gas—General Foch Delays His Attack while the British Commander Launches Both His Armies—The Second Army Wins One of the Ridges East of Ypres and Captures the German First Line Round the Lille Plateau—The Heroism of the Berkshires, Lincolns, and Rifle Brigade—By Using Up His Local Reserves, the German Commander Throws Our Second Army Back—Great Difficulties of Our Generals and Staff Officers Due to the Blindness of the British People—Like the Ancient Romans, We Have to Learn by Hard Knocks How to Wear Down the Better-Trained Enemy—The Plan of Attack on Loos—Why Kitchener's Men and the London Territorials were Placed in the Van—The Magnificent Heroism of the Londoners and Highlanders—The Charge of the Guards and the Smashing of the German Counter-Attack.

A

FTER the fall of Warsaw it was almost a french army corps, and the railway organisation of matter of necessity for the western Allies supplying the French guns remained an enormous affair.

to make a powerful movement against the German lines in

France and Flanders. According to rumour, Sir John French, having obtained large supplies of munitions and an army of 600,000 men, was ready to attack and draw off pressure from the Russians in the middle August, 1915. But the French armies were then only just completing their new armament of monster Creusot howitzers, which were named "The Con-querors." Many of these great querors." Many of these great pieces of siege artillery had been placed in position, but the labour of bringing up three or four million of shells, and transforming the larger part of the French railway system into a gun-feeding machine, required a long time. The British armies were readier to act by reason of the smallness of their front and the facility of their short sea-based lines of communications. The British front had been extended from the village of Boesinghe, north of Ypres, to the hamlet of Noeux les Mines, near Carency. But even this extension only set free two



MAJOR-GENERAL MICHAEL F. RIMINGTON, C.V.O., C.B. Commanded the Indian Cavalry Corps at Doullens. In October, 1915, he was awarded the Cross of a Commander of the Legion of Honour.

No surprise attack on a grand scale was possible during the critical month of August when the principal forces of German artillery were completely occupied at Novo Georgievsk, Kovno, and Brest Litovsk. The German Staff was well aware of the danger it was running; but by its secret service men, it carefully watched the progress of French munitions, and the transport of shell supplies, and, meanwhile, urged Hindenburg and Mackensen to use up men in order to release quickly the heavy guns for service on the western front. This was the real reason why Hindenburg, for example, sacrificed a hundred thousand men for a rapid success at Kovno. The German Staff was afraid that the new Creusot howitzers would come fully into action before a considerable portion of its own new siege trains, with the larger part of the output of the German shell factories, was railed to the French front. One of the One of the grounds why General Grigoreff, the Russian defender of Kovno, fell into disgrace and was court-martialled by General Russky was that he had enabled the

Germans to release one of their most important siege trains, through not making a more desperately stubborn defence of the entrenched camp at Kovno.

By the middle of September, 1915, the eastern German armies were able to send a thousand heavy howitzers through Berlin and Cologne to strengthen their lines in Flanders, France, and Alsace, and the factories which fed with shells this multitude of great pieces despatched their trucks westward instead of eastward. Thus the fall of Kovno was a blow to the French and British as well as to the Russians; and in conjunction with the

unexpectedly rapid destruction of Novo Georgievsk it added to the difficulties of Joffre and Sir John French, besides endangering the armies of Generals Russky and Evert. It is not extravagant to say that had the Russian line of fortresses held out a month, or even a fortnight, longer the German line in the west would have been broken by the new heavy ordnance of the French and British armies.

As it was, the result of the long-prepared campaign in France became largely dependent upon the race between the French and German railway organisations. We have seen that the heavy German batteries passed through

the Friedrichstrasse Station in Berlin on September 15th. It was on this day that General Joffre issued the Army Order for a grand offensive, but though by this time the new Creusot guns were placed in position, the organisation of the French railways was not completed.

Shells by the million were about to be employed. The local underground magazines near the batteries were utterly inadequate as store places.



BRITISH SOLDIERS CONSOLIDATING A NEWLY-WON POSITION ON THE WESTERN FRONT. No sooner had the merest fraction of ground been gained on the western front than the work of defence went on in feverish haste. Barbed-wire entanglements were fixed up and trenches dug and consolidated. The

above photograph shows some British outposts placing wire obstacles in advance of a new position. The smaller view is of a 155 mm. shell which fell into a British trench without exploding.



Dead German soldiers in front of the British trenches just before the great advance on Loos and Hulluch. They remained thus for some days before our soldiers could commit their bodies to Mother Earth.

goods traffic had to be stopped. It was a railway war The troops were ready, the guns and the shells were ready, and the event depended on whether the German railway managers could get their guns and shells into France in time to cope with a hostile bombardment

of incomparable length and intensity.

Had the German airmen been as bold, strong, and adventurous as the German Staff constantly pretended they were, the railway organisation of the Franco-British offensive might have been very seriously disturbed by dashing and deadly bombing squadrons. But though the Germans had fine machines, and in some individual cases displayed a vehement lust for battle, the general spirit of their Flying Corps was not such as to make for victory. British and French airmen maintained that ascendancy in the air which the enemy tried to win by increasing his engine power, armour, and firing power. Not only did the Germans attempt with success no important attack

on the French railway junctions, but Franco-British aerial the ordinary raids of reconnoitring aerial observers were severely checked all along the allied lines. Throughout the daylight

hours there was a very efficient aerial patrol system from the North Sea to the Alps, and when a German airman was seen coming over the allied front a squadron of battle-planes rose to meet him. Over the British lines alone there were more than a hundred combats in the air during the period of preparation, and in nearly every case our pilots had to seek the enemy behind his own lines, where he was assisted by the fire of his mobile anti-aircraft guns. The German pilot had to be outmanœuvred and, by continual threats, shepherded over our lines before the machine could be captured. This result, therefore, was achieved in only a few cases, and, as a rule, the wreckage tumbled into the German lines.

No matter, however, where the wreckage fell, the general command of the air along the front resided with the Allies; and, as the fruit of this command, their power of attack was greatly increased. When the bombardment began in the middle of September the German Staff had no definite knowledge of the section in which the great drive would take place; for the French train service by which the shell supplies were brought up was handled by General Joffre and his Staff in rapier-like fashion. Day after day the trucks moved to different parts of the line, producing



THE INVISIBLE EYE AT WORK. Indian observer keeping watch on the enemy trenches with the aid of a periscope, which had been covered with twigs to give it the appearance of a small tree-trunk.

an intense bombardment from the batteries they served. Violent demonstrations were thus made at every point at which an important result might be achieved. The only light which the German Staff could obtain on the intentions of the Allies was derived from the study of the strategical situation, as viewed from a Franco-British standpoint. It was well known on both sides that the vast German salient, stretching from Ypres towards Noyon, and continuing along the Aisne and the Suippes Rivers to the Forest of the Argonne, would be best attacked at its bases. These A Belgian landing

bases were — first, the Champagne sector, between the Argonne Ridge

and Rheims; and, secondly, the Lille sector between Ypres and Arras. The fact that 600,000 Britons and half a million Frenchmen were massed against the Lille sector was known to the German Staff; and the guns from the Russian front were, therefore, hurried towards this line of danger. The German Staff was also well aware that the most powerful French army, under General de Castenau, was collected in the Champagne sector, and was preparing to strike.

But these two main elements of the situation did not constitute a sufficient basis for the enemy's final dispositions of his defences. The German Staff had to reckon with



HOODED BRITISH TERRITORIALS CHARGING THE Territorials on the German trenches during the whole of the war was that made by the London Territorials on the German trenches between the "Tower Bridge" of Loos and the great double slagheap opposite Grenay, known as the Double Crassier. The first line having been cleared, a number of forthing houses were rushed, and finally Loos Cemetery was taken. Under gover of gas, the Territorials, wearing their respirators, dashed forward with irresistible clan, and eventually emerged on to the front

three other elements of at least equal importance. Working in direct collaboration with General Joffre, Lord Kitchener had assembled an army of great strength at Dover with sufficient troopships within call to transport half the force at least to the Belgian coast. A squadron of battleships and monitors, some of which mounted 14 in. weapons, bombarded the Belgian coast under the direction of Admiral Bacon, doing great damage to Zeebrugge and to the German howitzer batteries along the sand-dunes. By way of giving a lead to the German spies in our country, a popular rumour spread that our Dover army was preparing to fight a landing battle on the Belgian coast, and take in the rear all the enemy forces between Ostend and Lille. The Germans were kept on tenter-hooks by the threatened attack of a landing force of a hundred thousand men, ready in transports for rapid disembarkation. This demonstration against the right flank of the German line is a classic example of the disconcerting scope of seapower.

It disquieted the German commanders. All through the critical period of Prussian history the Prussian strategists had had no occasion to study the possibilities of sea-power; they had taken the work of our admirals as a matter of course, and Disconcerting scope had attributed to their own armies the

land victories that were in some degree of sea-power derived from the British mastery of the The French Fleet had not seriously troubled the

sea. Germans in 1870.

So when this direct, immediate, and violent threat was exerted against the German right flank, the two com-manders immediately endangered thereby were seriously

The Duke of Würtemberg held the line from the sea to Ypres, and the Crown Prince of Bavaria connected with him and covered Lille. Left to themselves, the Würtemberger and the Bavarian might have defeated our move by ignoring it. That is to say, they might, notwithstanding their anxiety, have blindly trusted in their coast batteries and covering troops, and have allowed our demonstration to proceed. Happily for us, there was a German admiral in command at Zeebrugge, and, like all German admirals, he had studied Mahan with Teutonic thoroughness, until he was inclined rather to exaggerate than minimise the reach of British sea-power. His judgment was furthermore strongly supported by the German Marine Staff, who, being professional, felt an intense admiration for the part played by the British Navy in the Gallipoli landing actions. In its view the British admiral was reckoned to be, like Voltaire's Habbakuk, capable of everything.

And it is not unlikely that the reports of the carefully spoon-fed German spics in our country helped to

deepen its perturbation.

The upshot was a marked triumph for the British Navy. Two German army corps, badly needed in the fighting-line, were collected at Antwerp and other Flemish towns for use as a reserve against the Dover army. A considerable number of Mackensen's guns, which were urgently needed in both Galicia and France, were railed from Cologne to the Flemish coast in order to increase the resistance to our bombarding squadron and shrapnel our phantom troops while they were landing. Altogether, Admiral Bacon, in conjunction with Admiral Hood, who conducted the earlier bombardment, must have diverted the artillery force of a modern siege train and the infantry force of a very respectable army. All these guns and men were acting on the defensive; the most they could do was to try to strike back if and when they were struck.

They had to remain on the spot for fear of a surprise assault. All through the war our Navy had made the German Army pay a heavy price for the occupation of the Belgian coast, and the little additional

submarine activity which the enemy displayed from Zeebrugge still left a large margin of wasted, inactive military force in the general balance against him. By reason of British sea-power the right flank of the German army was at a permanent disadvantage, and this disadvantage culminated in the effect which our bombarding squadron produced in September, 1915, on the dispositions made by the German Staff to meet the Franco-British offensive movement.

From the military point of view, the important fact about the naval demonstration against the enemy's right

wing was that our feint there did not clog the action of our army; for no roads or railways immediately behind the front were occupied in bringing up munitions

The threat against Alsace

for a mere demonstration. It was otherwise in regard to the similar threat against the German left wing, which General Joffre directed while Admiral Bacon was menacing the right.



ONE OF THE HIDEOUS EFFECTS PRODUCED BY THE GERMAN POISON-GAS ATTACKS.

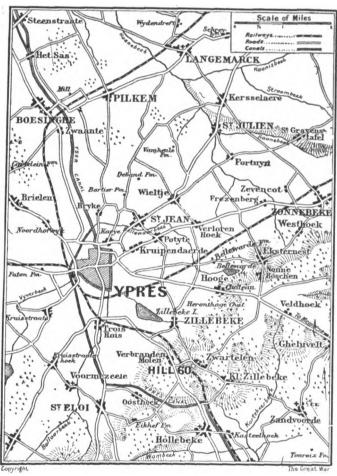
A close view of a British "trench helmet." Provided with respirators and protection for the eyes, these hideous but beneficent anti-gas masks recall old-world pictures of the Vehmgericht and the weird garb of the Ku-Klux-Klan which figured so prominently in the Southern States at the close of the American Civil War.

A large number of the new Creusot guns, with hundreds of thousands of shells, had to be withdrawn from the decisive fields of action and used to bombard the German forces in Alsace, in order to produce the impression that the Allies intended to drive in both enemy wings. There was a special reason for threatening Alsace. In the past all the potash resources in the world lay in Stassfurt, not far from Berlin.

Control of the Stassfurt mines enabled the Germans to withhold from the rest of mankind the chemicals and fertilisers worked up from crude potash. But it had

recently been found that a much larger potash mine lay in Alsace, and German experts calculated that the wealth of it was so enormous as to be sufficient to pay the German expenses of the war. Being fully acquainted with all these facts, and knowing with what a reckless expense of life the German Government would defend the Alsace mine, General Joffre brought up his new Creusot guns towards the Vosges Heights, and kept his lines in a state of bustle, to make it appear that a grand attack was being prepared there: A large force of the new guns was also massed against the mountain route towards Strassburg, indicating that the attack on Alsace would be launched north and south, with a view to driving wedges between all the enemy's forces in the Mulhouse region.

A regular, intense, and dominating bombardment was



THE BRITISH FEINT AT YPRES.

Map showing the scene of the great Ypres demonstration which drew the enemy's reserves towards the ridges at Hooge and the wood south of Menin Road, and facilitated the capture of Loos.

thus directed upon four principal sections of the enemy's front—the right wing, the left wing, the Lille sector, and the Champagne sector. The tremendous gun fire went on day and night, forcing the Germans to engage in a heavy artillery duel against their wishes. The effect upon the hostile infantry may be judged from an order by a divisional commander, General von

Ditfurth, which was afterwards picked Forcing the German up on the field of battle. Ditfurth stated that he had observed that his infantry limited its action simply to artillery

defensive firing, and even then fired little in order not to provoke a reply. When the allied bombardment opened on the German positions, the infantry officers in the trenches immediately called for artillery support, and their men manifested great satisfaction when the hostile attacks ceased.

General von Ditfurth emphatically condemned such conduct, as tending to kill the spirit of the offensive among German troops, and to convince the Allies of their superiority. Commanders of brigades and regiments were urged to make a great effort to maintain at the highest pitch an offensive activity all along the front. It was stated in the order that the artillery could only intervene in proportion to the quantity of munitions at its disposal. and that the infantry would very often Five weeks' notice have to work alone.

In regard to the Ditfurth Division, of attack there was also obtained from officer prisoners an order showing that the German troops were fully prepared for the allied attack. The order ran as follows:

Ditfurth Division. I 221. Secret

For Officers Only. Divisional Headquarters August 15th, 1015.

Divisional Order.

According to the general situation, it is necessary to prepare for the possibility of a great French offensive. We do not yet know exactly in what sector it will come. But having regard to the prospect of a hostile offensive, it is indispensable that everyone should once more make sure that all positions have been placed in a perfect state of defence. Any observed points of weakness should be strengthened, and the greatest vigilance is recommended to the entire service of observation. Measures are being taken to bring back to the front without delay the officers and men who have been granted leave. granted leave.

The enemy thus had more than five weeks' notice of the Franco-British attack, and knowing the excellent organisation of the German command, we cannot doubt that all possible measures were taken to strengthen the German lines in men, ammunition, and heavy artillery. And the remarkable thing was that General Joffre was well content that the enemy should be aware of the coming attack, for the principal object of this attack was to relieve the pressure on Russia and hamper as much as possible the intended Austro-German invasion of Serbia. Had it been possible to start the offensive on a date when General von Ditfurth expected it, the result would have been more decisive than it was later; but as General Joffre could not at the time attack with the advantage of all his heavy guns behind him, he contented himself with keeping the German Staff anxiously alert for a movement against the western

Little or nothing was lost by giving the enemy notice in the middle of August that an attack was preparing. This may have been accomplished by letting a few men be captured with a false order upon them. Feints of this sort, with a show of bustle behind them, formed one of the specialities of General Joffre. When his veritable attack began, there was no possible mistake as to his real intention.

The artillery duel had gone on along the Belgian coast and along the land front from the Yser to Delle from the second to the third week in September. Then abruptly on Thursday, September 23rd, 1915, the French Commander-in-Chief massed his guns and his trains near Arras, in Champagne, and in Lorraine and Alsace. Day and night the extraordinary hurricane of shell swept the German centre and the German left wing. The German commander moved guns and troops into the Strassburg sector, till, in many of the villages in the plain of Alsace, there were more troops than civilians.

About twenty hours after the French scheme of bombardment was being put violently into operation, General Foch and Sir John French opened fire along the Arras-Ypres sector, while Admiral Bacon increased the fury of his attack on the Belgian coast. The length of the bombardment seems to have been about seventy hours in the Champagne sector, and just a little less in the Strassburg sector, and about fifty hours on the Arras-Ypres front.



The gas cloud is seen starting from the left. Shells are bursting on the right. The British trenches and approaches can be traced by the chalk which has been excavated. Fosse 8 and Hohenzollern Redoubt are hidden by smoke and gas.



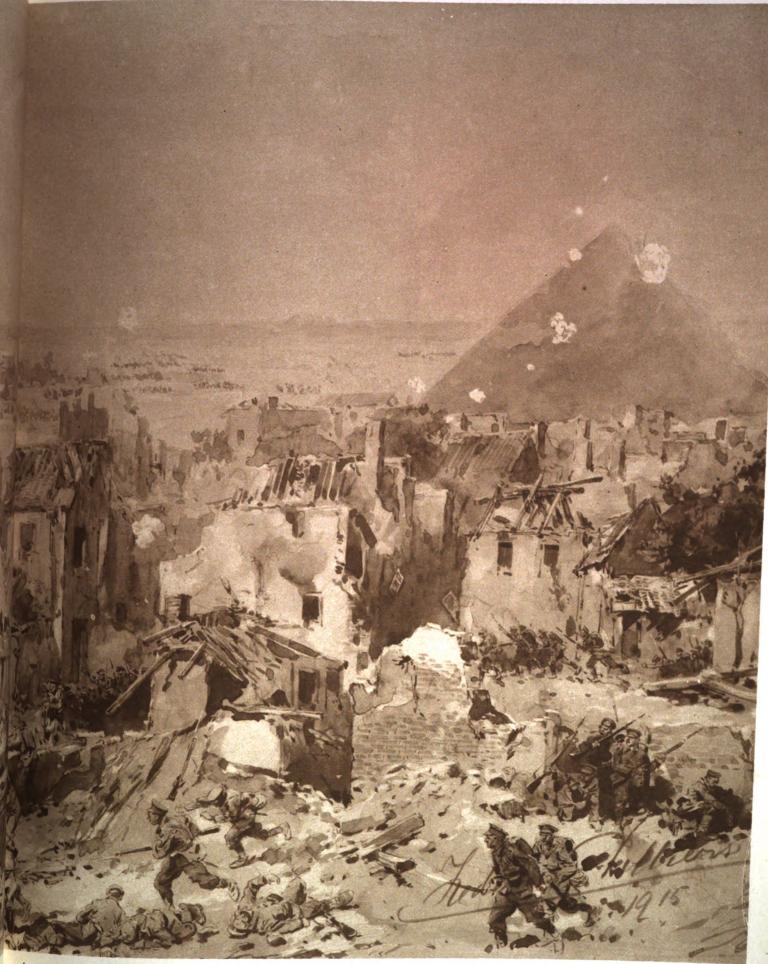
The British are out of their trenches, and are racing towards the Hohenzollern Redoubt on this side of Fosse 8, which can just be made out behind the cloud of smoke to the right.

British gas attack on the Hohenzollern Redoubt, captured October 13th, 1915.

M 97

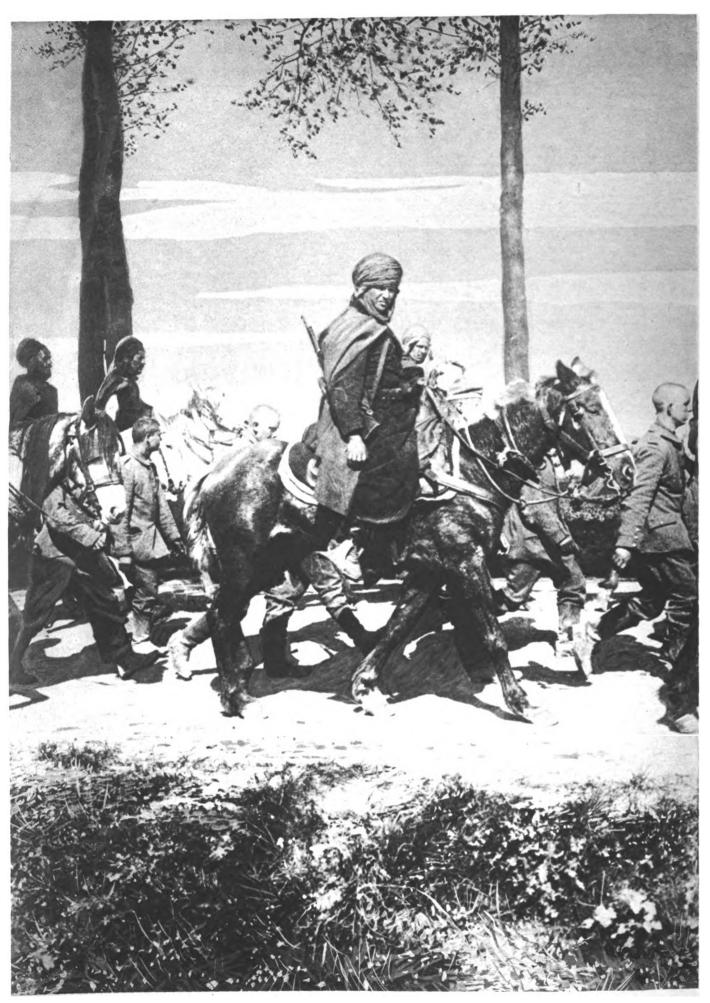


New Army's first great success: The taking of the village of



pos by one of the new British Divisions, September 25th, 1915.

Digitized by Google



German prisoners captured during the fighting in South-West Flanders being marched from Furnes to Ypres, thence to be transferred to an interment camp.

German prisoners in the hands of French Algerian troops.

Digitized by Google

Tens of thousands of German wounded soldiers were observed in Belgium, and the German Commander-in-Chief decided that infantry battles were about to follow along the four sectors where the bombardment was being conducted with increasing intensity. In this manner General Joffre, with the aid of Admiral Bacon, produced on both the hostile wings an important distraction of the enemy's forces at scarcely any expense in life to the allied troops. By some millions of pounds' expenditure in shell, artillery, and new model warships, the Allies produced as effectual

and new model warships, the Ames produced as effectual defens

WHERE THE CRICKETER-SOLDIER SCORED.

British soldiers practising bomb-throwing at a base in Northern France.

a double containing movement as though they had launched two great armies at both the German wings. The way was then left open for a plain, straightforward renewal of that attempt to break through in Artois and in Champagne, which had been checked in February, March, May, and June of the same year.

For practical purposes the armies under Sir John French and General Foch formed one vast force of over a million men attacking the flank of the central German salient. Against the German front in the critical sector of the twenty-mile stretch between the Argonne Forest and the Rheims hills was the largest

French army, under General de Castelnau. Though in the event Castelnau's army achieved the more important result, the greater force under French and Foch was originally expected to drive in with a more immediately decisive effect.

According to the statement of a Swiss military writer, Colonel Feyler, the Crown Prince of Bavaria seems to have had only about thirty-six regiments at the beginning of the Artois battles. The troops chiefly belonged to the first-line 4th, 6th, 7th, and 19th Army Corps, the 2nd Bavarian

Army Corps, and the 10th Bavarian Division. There were elements of the 111th, 117th, and 123rd Divisions, the 1st Bavarian Corps, the 6th Bavarian Reserve Division, and the 2nd Reserve Division of the Prussian Guard. None of the army corps seems to have been up to establishment, and in some cases there was quite a medley of units working loosely in the old army corps framework. It is doubtful if the infantry holding the three German lines north of Arras consisted of more than 120,000 bayonets, the principal defensive strength of the enemy residing in the remarkable

number and efficiency of his machine-guns. His artillery also was extremely powerful in comparison with his wasted infantry force. The German human power on the western front was at a low ebb. In soldiers the Allies had generally the

odds of at least two to one in their favour. In the matter of heavy armament the attackers also had a superiority, which,

however, was slight in regard to the actual number of pieces of ordnance. It was in the accumulation of high-explosive shells and in the remarkable organisation of the French train service that the allied ascendancy in gun fire resided.

During the attack on Russia the German Staff had overtaxed its munition factories, so that it could not keep its western front as well supplied with shell as the French and British batteries. The German Staff, as we have seen from Ditfurth's order to his troops, had come to rely in the western front on its extraordinary system of earthwork defences, magnificently designed and laboriously executed, strengthened by innumerable machine-gun redoubts and sunken steel-domed forts containing quick-firing guns. The dug-outs were thirty feet below the surface of the



ONE OF THE WEAPONS THAT HELD BATTALIONS AT BAY.
British officers at machine-gun practice.

ground, and in many places there were tunnels through which the troops could move without danger from the heaviest high-explosive shell. In the rear of all the redoubts were great stores of hand-bombs, and for months the chief recreation of the troops seemed to have been matches between battalion and battalion, brigade and brigade, in the game of throwing dummy bombs of the proper weight the longest possible distance. According to the reports of some matches, found afterwards in the

captured trenches, the Germans had eagerly taken to this useful kind of weight-putting contest, and had acquired at it a skill equal to that of our best men. Moreover, their machine-gun corps remained incomparable, and by working with the aerial torpedo-throwers and the small trench mortars, the machine-gun corps more than doubled the fire-power along the German front.

The German idea was to remain passive during an attack, and almost invite the French and British

attack, and almost invite the French and British troops to take the first line. During the preliminary bombardment the defending troops scampered like rabbits into their gigantic warrens, where many of the underground chambers were

Traps for attacking forces lighted with electricity, boarded, and made remarkably comfortable. Their observing officers had only to watch through peri-

scopes for the infantry advance, and then decide whether to evacuate the trench or beat back the attack with machine-gun fire. When the trench was deliberately evacuated, it was turned into a trap for the attacking forces. At an order through a telephone, the German batteries were carefully laid on it, and when it was filled with hostile troops, a storm of shells fell and battered it down, and the German troops advanced along

their communicating saps, and, drawing on their great store of hand-bombs, smashed out the remaining attackers.

It was impossible for attacking troops to bring up large quantities of hand-bombs, as the road between the opposing trenches was swept with shrapnel from the German batteries. And by reason also of this shrapnel curtain, it was impossible for the charging lines of infantry to bring



THE MARK OF THE MODERN VANDAL.

Beautiful carvings in a church near the British front shattered by German shell fire.

up with them a quarter, or even an eighth, of the number of machine-guns the defending troops possessed.

So heavy were the disadvantages of the Allies in attacking against hidden machine-guns and deeply-entrenched troops, provided with huge magazines of bombs, that there was only one means of overcoming the difficulties in the way of an infantry attack. This means was a gas cloud. If the Germans had not stooped to chemical weapons of torture during their second thrust at Ypres, their own position in the west would have remained stronger. But from April, 1915, they had continued to use asphyxiating and poison gases in so general a way that the Allies were at last compelled in self-defence to adopt a similar method. Nevertheless,

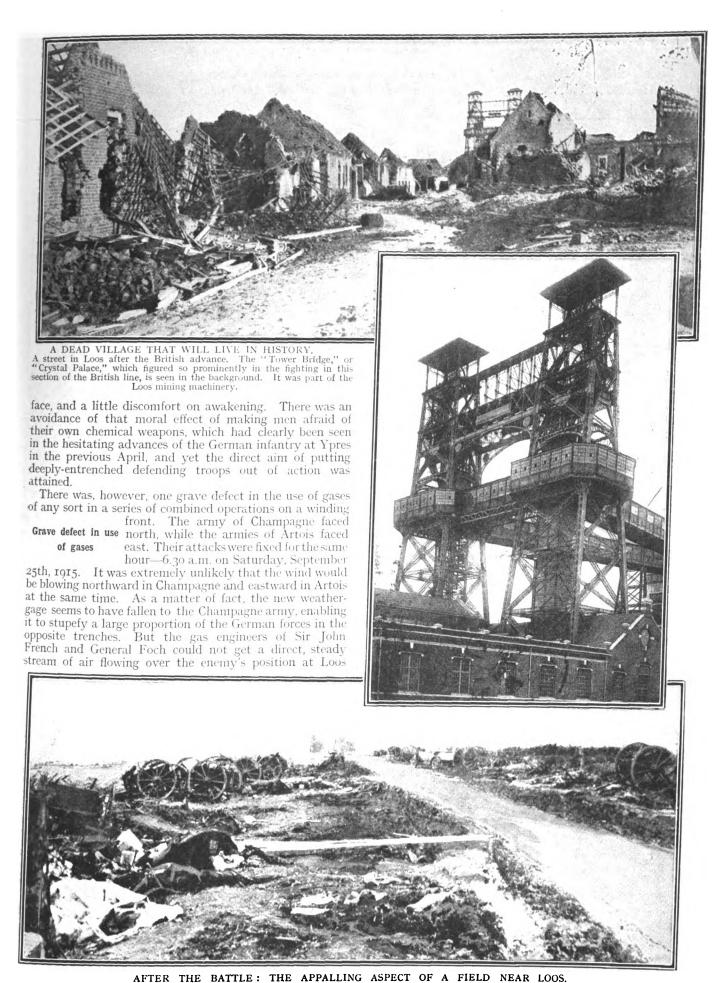
the British and French commanders were even then able to show the difference between

the methods of neo-barbarism and those of the warlike forces of civilisation. The enemy at the time was using the deadliest poison that could be manufactured on a large scale—prussic-acid gas. But the French and the British chemists provided their armies with merely an intoxicating, stupefying mixture of heavy gases, which put the Germans out of action, and did not kill our own troops if the wind suddenly changed. As a matter of fact, there were cases of British soldiers being suddenly overcome by their own fumes. The result was only long sleep, an orange-coloured



A MISS-FIRE.

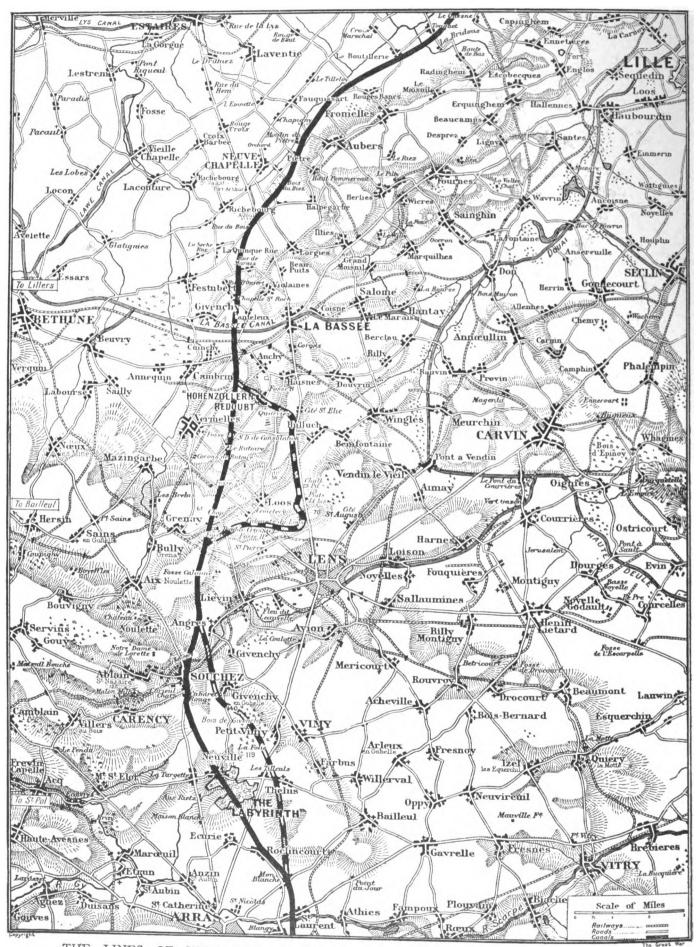
An unexploded German shell, obviously intended for the church in the background, discovered by British soldiers in a meadow.



Impression of the German trench road to Loos. On either side, as far as eye could see, were shattered guns, limbers, automobiles, dead horses, etc.

Nothing could live in the hurricane of fire to which this German position was subjected.

The second photograph on this page is a near view of the memorable "Tower Bridge."



THE LINES OF VICTORY IN THE BRITISH AND FRENCH ARTOIS BATTLES.

The solid black line shows the position of the First British Army under Sir Douglas Haig and the Tenth French Army under General Foch at dawn on September 25th, 1915. The two great gains of ground north and south of Lens are shown by black and white lines.

and Souchez. This appears to have led to a serious disturbance in the combined operations of the Artois armies. The British troops did what they could by means of sidewaftings of gas; and though, as has been remarked, they caught some of their own men, the grand infantry charges were punctually made with notable success. But the Tenth French Army delayed for some four hours to advance, waiting, perhaps, for a change of wind to enable them to bring their gas apparatus fully into action.

As misfortunes never come singly, General Foch suddenly found another difficulty in the way of his advance. Since the battles in the Carency region in May and June, 1915,

Feat of German engineering

there had been an important alteration in the geography of the country. With fine ingenuity the German engineers had turned the stream that used to flow

turned the stream that used to flow through Carency, and had directed most of the water into a valley near Souchez, forming there a new and difficult bog. The existence of this bog was unknown to the French Staff, as the Germans held a line of posts in front of it, covering their main position of defence and protecting the new marsh-trap from reconnaissance by the French patrols working in the darkness of night. Even observing officers of the French Flying Corps could see nothing about the well-known patch of their own country calculated to arouse suspicion. The grass in the valley was very green, but there had been a good deal of rain all the summer, and hay crops everywhere were remarkably good. The stratagem therefore remained undiscovered until the French infantry forces attempted to advance and reach the new swamp. The German engineer who planned and carried out the diversion of the stream was then fully rewarded. It is scarcely too much to say that he saved the German armies on the western front, for not only did he check in a decisive manner the attack of the Tenth French Army, but he indirectly held up the more successful British advance on the north of Lens by robbing the British troops in the critical hour of the battle of the French support on which they were relying.

The swamp at Souchez, indeed, proved to be the key position in the Artois operations. According to the original plan of attack drawn up by Sir John French and General Foch, in consultation with General Joffre, General de Castelnau, and the French Staff, all the movements of the attacking armies of the Allies were arranged in clockwork order. In particular, the Artois operations, which were more vital than those of Champagne, were centred against the mining town of Lens, with the more easterly historic city of Douai as the great objective. The scheme was for Sir John to feint at Ypres and Lille, while driving in on Lens from the north, and for Foch to feint at the ridges looking over towards Cambrai, while closing in with his main force on Lens from the south. From the hills north and south of Lens all the Douai plain could be dominated, and the German troops defending the small mining town were known to be so inferior in number to the forces French and Foch intended to mass against them that the smashing, violent, encircling movement seemed in plan to be as perfect as man could make it. But the trouble with intricate clockwork schemes of converging attack of this sort is that if half the machinery is suddenly put out of order the other half usually fails of full effect.

This is what happened at Loos. The British force carried out its part of the combined operations with perfect punctuality. In fact, our troops reached Lens by a charging movement of such force and speed that the result was achieved an hour or more in front of the time-table. They were fighting in the outskirts of Lens while Foch's troops were still waiting in their own trenches for the order to advance. But our thrust at Lens was not completed by the French forces. What was still worse was that Sir John French was unable to support his own men with the great mass of reserve troops he had brought up for the Purpose; for, owing to the skill of the Germans in turning

the Carency stream and making a marsh south of Lens, General Foch had to swerve away from Lens and concentrate against a ridge north-west of Arras. This swerving of the French forces away from the marsh left a gap between the French and British wings through which a very enterprising hostile commander would have struck. Sir John French was afraid that such a stroke would come. The peril was great and immediate, and it compelled him during the critical hours of the Loos conflict to refrain from reinforcing his thin, heroic line of attacking troops, and to hold his reserve divisions near his right flank, in case the enemy should thrust fiercely through the gap existing to the west of Lens.

All this, of course, throws no reflection whatever upon the genius of General Foch and the fighting power of his



"VIVE LE PRINCE DE GALLES!"

An unconventional snapshot of the Prince of Wales conversing with a Staff officer. The two French children, judging by their obvious interest, had apparently discovered the identity of his Royal Highness.

men. Had geographical conditions allowed it, the swamp-trap might have been formed in the line of the British advance, and have made it impossible for us to co-operate with our French comrades. In the former battle for Lille, on May 9th, 1915, it was the British part of the scheme that went awry on the Fromelles Ridge, and General Foch and his troops had to struggle on unaided

in the Carency region. In the later battle "Foch's troubles, it was the unlucky turn of the French army to be checked. In quality of genius

Foch and French were so equally matched that accident alone could make one seem greater than the other. The two men were strangely similar, even in the character of the temperament which animated the workings of their intellect—passionate feeling, impulse, and intuition, combined with much experience, wide study, and profound military learning, marked both the Irishman and the Lorrainer. Hard



QUIET MOMENTS IN A BRITISH TRENCH NEAR YPRES.
British soldiers at rest in a first-line trench during a brief lull in the fighting. With their loaded rifles ready to hand, they were smoking, and about to play cards, while one was preparing food at a trench brazier.

would it be to find in history two men of different countries, thrown by eventful chance side by side on the battlefield, so united by mutual admiration and sympathy of temperament as Sir John French and General Foch; and the fact that the Souchez swamp prevented Foch from carrying out his part of the operations round Lens was an inevitable misfortune which only served to increase and strengthen the genial bond connecting the two commanders—for in quite a literal manner Foch's troubles were French's troubles.

All this framework of preliminary matter is necessary to the proper appreciation of the study of the most splendid failure in British military history. For the Battle of Hulluch and Loos cannot be understood if it is treated as a mere conflict between the First British Army and part of

British transport column driving through a shell-shattered village near Ypres. The streets were deserted, and scarce a house stood intact.

the German forces under the Crown Prince of Bavaria. The British soldiers who took the chief part in the action were not in a position to understand why their magnificent effort had failed of full effect. And when the British public in October, 1915, began to learn the broader details of the great fight, they, too, were commonly misled into a wrong idea of the British achievement, through not understanding fully that the British plan of battle was only one part of a larger scheme of attack which had failed through geographical difficulties.

Fate was dead against the Allies on Saturday morning September 25th, 1915. They might have said, like Cato:

Tis not in mortals to command success, But we'll do more, Sempronius, we'll deserve it!

By a long, careful, and well-designed national effort, they had

brought into the field more troops, more guns, and more shells than the enemy had at hand. They had distracted him by successful feints at both his wings, and had

then overwhelmed him on two critical sectors by the most terrific bombardment in mortal history. The bombardment exceeded by a million shells at least the extraordinary hurricane fire with which Mackensen and his Grand Phalanx had broken the Russian line in Galicia. When the decisive artillery action opened, on September 23rd, the autumnal air was clear and bright, enabling the aerial observers and the gunners to make the fullest use of their

superiority in artillery. But on September 25th, when the work of the guns was achieved and a path was cleared for the infantry advance, the weather changed to the advantage of the enemy. In Champagne there was a heavy fall of rain which made the chalky clay ground a thing to slip and slither and stick in. It was such heavy going that General de Castelnau reckoned that, in an attack in which speed was essential to victory, his troops were

robbed by the rain and the mud of

Fighting against fifty per cent. of the results

they deserved. In the Artois sector the rain at first was not a source of difficulty, but the artillery, the Staff officers, and airmen were perplexed by a heavy mist that blanketed the scene of operations. The aerial observers and the artillery could not trace the movements of their own troops and watch the enemy reserves mass against them, and then drop tens of thousands of shells in front of the advanced British positions. The Staff officers, working between beiggade and briggade and

division and division, could not always quickly judge against what point the enemy was concentrating his main forces of resistance. Altogether the mist was disastrous to the classic conduct of the battle as arranged by Sir Douglas Haig, the commander of the First Army, and controlled by Sir John French. And when in addition to the difficulty of the haze and the storm of rain that followed, the British reserves had to be held back to guard the gap left by the swerving movement of the French Army,



THE HUN IN ENGLAND: SOME OF THE ELEVEN HUNDRED GERMAN PRISONERS TAKEN AT LOOS.

A number of the enemy who were captured during the great Battle of Loos, round which centred the fierce fighting leading to the British and French advance of September, 1915, on the front from La Bassée to Lens. The captured Germans are seen marching through the streets of Southampton.



GERMAN NAVAL GUNNERS DEFENDING THE BELGIAN COAST AGAINST THE BRITISH MONITORS. Although during the whole of 1915 the German Navy's part in the war was practically negligible, enemy sailors were employed in various maritime duties. For instance, a large number were installed on the Belgian coast to reply to any British naval attack. This camera study shows a large German gun in action against British monitors.

the struggle degenerated into an old-fashioned soldiers' battle, in which our men were left to slog against an enemy who was able to manœuvre freely and secretly under cover of a vast system of trenches.

The main attack was made by the First Corps and the Fourth Corps between the La Bassée Canal on the north and the German trenches opposite the village of Grenay, on the south. There were thus only 48,000 British bayonets engaged in the principal operation. The first brunt of the fighting fell on a London Territorial Division (the 47th), and on a Scottish Division of the New Army (the 15th). Acting with these two divisions was the Immortal Division

the 7th—and the 9th Division. Sir John French, however, did not expect Kitchener's men and the London Territorials to perform miracles. He reckoned they would take the first or second German lines, but when this part of their work was done, he arranged to launch another large force forward to continue the breaking movement and complete the decisive attack.

With this object he held in reserve the 21st and 24th Divisions, and the flower of all his infantry—the Guards It is easy to see what was in the mind of Sir Douglas Haig and his Commander-in-Chief. They were pleased with the appearance of the men of the New Army and of the London Territorials. But they could not feel the same

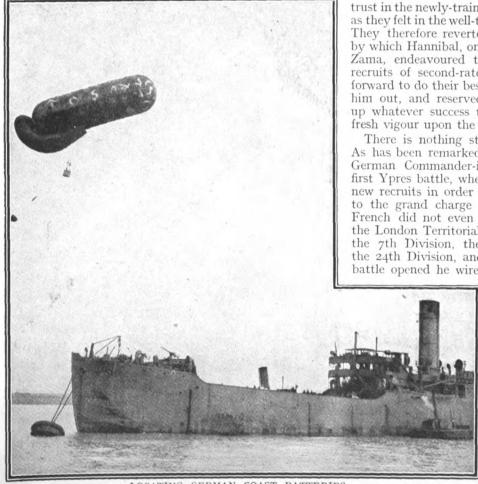
trust in the newly-trained national troops as they felt in the well-tried regular corps. They therefore reverted to the method by which Hannibal, on the battlefield of

The New Army in action

Zama, endeavoured to use with safety a mass of new recruits of second-rate quality. They sent the new men forward to do their best in weakening the enemy and tiring him out, and reserved their veteran regiments to follow up whatever success the recruits obtained, and fall with fresh vigour upon the more fatigued Germans.

There is nothing striking in this disposition of forces. As has been remarked, it is as old as Hannibal, and the German Commander-in-Chief himself adopted it in the first Ypres battle, when he used up a quarter of a million new recruits in order to wear our men down preparatory to the grand charge of the Prussian Guard. French did not even feel secure when he had supported the London Territorials and the New Army Division with the 7th Division, the 9th Division, the 21st Division, the 24th Division, and the Guards. But just before the battle opened he wired to the commander of the Second

Army to draw the 28th Division to the town of Bailleul, from which it could move to reinforce the Loos front. In all, therefore, eight British Divisions were to co-operate in the attack upon two weak German army corps entrenched between La Bassée In actual numbers, and Lens. the odds in men against the Germans must have been more than three to one; and in artillery, if we reckon not in guns but in the amount of shell actually fired, the odds against the enemy must have been still heavier. In some places our batteries were massed so densely that there was scarcely



LOCATING GERMAN COAST BATTERIES.

An artillery-spotting balloon used in co-operation with British monitors bombarding the Belgian coast.

The gas-bag was a special type of stationary observation craft in use by all belligerents.

more than ten yards between gun and gun. And the gunners worked with intense energy in an effort prolonged beyond anything known to our forefathers. Many of them were stripped to the waist like the gunners at Trafalgar; for, despite the chillness of the early autumn morning, they sweated like lascars in a stokehold by reason of their violent labours. For fifty hours and more they worked their guns, and it is difficult to see how the men who took a spell of rest managed to get any sleep. The use of ear-shields and a change from the acrid air round the batteries to the more pleasant atmosphere of a deep dug-out could scarcely have soothed the battered senses of the men who worked the guns.

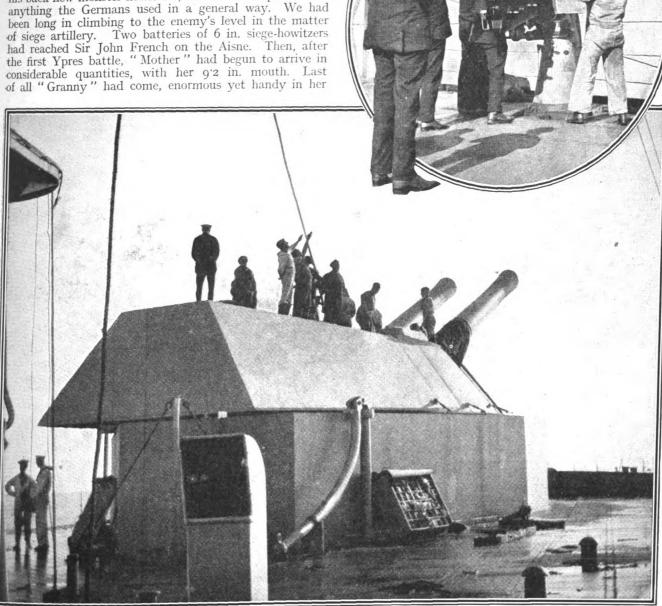
From Ypres to Lens the iron mouths of a mightier Britain roared at the enemy day and night. In daylight and darkness there were thirty miles of flame

and thunder from the British lines, and Britain's new monster howitzers thirty miles of earthquake and explosion

along the German trenches. Neuve Chapelle was nothing to it. The number of heavy highexplosive shells pitched into the German lines in autumn must have been a hundred times greater than the number used in the previous spring, for the British soldier now had at his back new monster howitzers, which were as powerful as anything the Germans used in a general way. We had

work, numerous and well-provided with an inexhaustible progeny of huge shells, as befitted the grandmother of a million soldiers drawn from the race which had created the modern industrial movement and had invented the principal sources of mechanical power on which our civilisation rests.

The expansion of our comparatively small regular Army into a force of over two million men was largely a matter of patriotism, good drill, and the careful selection of instructors. But the arming of the new troops, the re-arming and the strengthening of the artillery in the old formations, and the equipment of factories for an increasing



BRITISH NAVAL BOMBARDMENT OF THE BELGIAN COAST-LINE. British monitor in action off the Belgian coast. The men are watching a German aeroplane which was the target of an anti-aircrast gun aboard a sister ship. In circle: Machine-gun in operation. A petty-omcer is seen finding the range.

supply of all kinds of ammunition, were tasks which taxed Great Britain's plant and energy to the utmost; and while they were being accomplished, our steel-making works and ammunition works were also employed in augmenting our naval power, inventing new kinds of warships, and giving us a Fleet with which, had we had so mad an ambition, we might even have stood out on the seas against the world.

Our artillery fire at first swept the whole German front with equal intensity. The Lille ridges were very heavily shelled from end to end in order to induce the enemy to believe that we intended to renew our attack on the portance. In any case it was necessary to hold the enemy all along the line while making the great thrust. So all our army rose and charged, as the guns suddenly lifted soon after daybreak on Saturday morning. At Ypres the 3rd and 14th Divisions of the Fifth Corps attacked at 6 a.m., and by a magnificent effort stormed the great part of the enemy's front line. The German commander, Duke Albrecht of Würtemberg, was alarmed both by the violence of our artillery fire on the Ypres section and by the force of our infantry advance. He possessed a large part of the heavy pieces hurriedly **Duke of Wurtemberg** 

a large part of the heavy pieces hurriedly **Duke of Wurtemberg**transported from the eastern front, and alarmed
these, with the

siege ordnance he already employed, enabled him to develop a shell fire almost as destructive as ours had been. He might have checked our advance with his artillery and infantry, and at least have prevented his front from being completely broken. But his infantry was terribly shaken by our preliminary bombardment, and it had been, moreover, severely handled in the previous actions at Hooge, the last of which occurred on August 9th, 1915. The upshot was that the Duke of Würtemberg made an urgent request for reinforcements about the time when our principal attack was developing thirty miles to the south. Most of the German reserves immediately



HANDYMEN OF THE AIR SERVICE.
In addition to flying and armoured-car fighting, the
Royal Naval Air Service undertook engineering
work at the front, and were able to build their
own bridges for transport operations

Rouges Bancs-Aubers line. The object, of course, was to induce the Crown Prince of Bavaria to put most of his men in a position in which they would not be wanted urgently. It was only with the closing burst of fire at dawn on Saturday morning that the direction of the coming British infantry thrusts could be discerned; for the Germans could then tell by their sufferings that most of our batteries were collected on our wings at Ypres and in front of Loos and Hulluch. Sir John French seems to have had two plans of attack. He intended first to attempt to break the German line in two places—in the north at Menin, and in the

south at Lens. He

British commander's would then be able to destroy the entire

two plans

Bavarian army by thrusting around its
right flank at Menin and its left flank

at Lens. The result would be a gap of thirty miles in the German front, through which forces could be poured which would probably free Belgium and Northern France.

But while preparing this grand scheme, with Sir Herbert Plumer at Ypres and Sir Douglas Haig at Lens working together, the British Commander-in-Chief contemplated the failure of the movement from Ypres, and devoted most of his energy to assuring the success of the smaller scheme of the Lens attack which, in co-operation with the advance of General Foch's armies, would still be of decisive im-



AN ACTIVE SERVICE PICNIC.

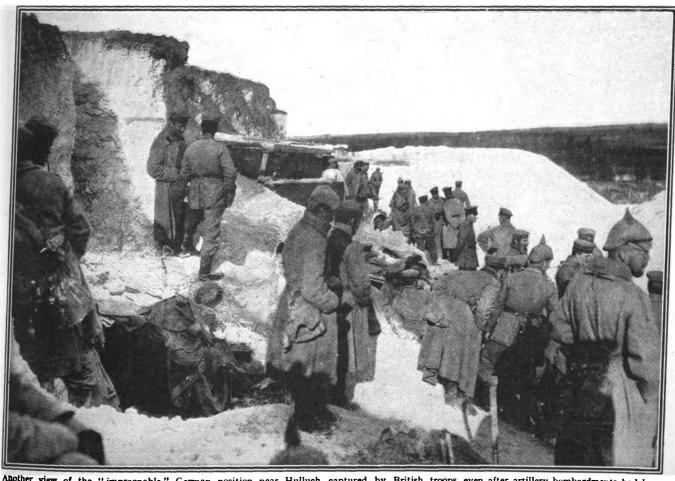
Members of the Royal Naval Air Service enjoying a rough-and-ready meal at their camp behind the firing-line in France.

available round Lille were sent towards Ypres, where a fierce bombing battle raged all day long round the enemy's first line.

Our advance on August 6th had given us the mine crater north of the Menin Road, but the Germans still held part of the Hooge manor-house and the Bellewaarde Lake. Then south of the Menin Road they had a deadly redoubt in the corner of Sanctuary Wood, from which they had directed an enfilading fire against our right wing in the August action. We opened the new battle by exploding a mine south of the Menin Road, while our infantrymen were crawling forward with fixed bayonets towards the hillside under cover of our last intense bombardment. The men



One of the stone quarries near Hulluch which, by reason of its strong natural fortifications, the Germans imagined to be an impregnable position. However, in the memorable allied advance of September, 1915, our troops stormed the quarry and captured it at the point of the bayonet.



Another view of the "impregnable" German position near Hulluch, captured by British troops even after artillery bombardments had been practically ineffective, and in face of the enemy machine-guns which lined the quarry. The Germans recaptured the quarries, but the British won them again on the following day.

GERMAN STRONGHOLD WHICH FELL BEFORE THE BRITISH WAVE OF STEEL.

Digitized by Google

rose to charge at six o'clock on Saturday morning. Our artillery had worked havoc in the German trenches; and when our men sprang out in the pouring rain many of the defending troops fled helter-skelter to the second line, some three hundred yards to the rear. The remaining Germans were cleared out in a few minutes by hand-to-hand fighting.

The first German reinforcements came up at seven o'clock, and in some places our men retired, while the enemy bombarded his own trenches, and then charged and took them. In turn the new garrison of German reserves was being battered by our artillery and charged by our infantry, who again stormed the first enemy line. Both sides then settled down to a steady, fierce struggle, with all the guns curtaining off the scene of combat, and hammering at the supporting troops and the reinforcements. But our men not only regained the first German trench before the morning was out, but drove farther into the German position, and captured one of the ridges and some one hundred and forty prisoners. The great arc of heavy German artillery round Ypres was, however, exceptionally well provided with ammunition; and as the Fifth Army Corps had fulfilled the main part of its work in drawing the enemy's reserves, Sir John French was disinclined to pursue further a secondary line of attack that could not be quickly pushed to a decision. So at nightfall our troops in the Ypres sector returned to their own trenches, giving up all the ground they had won, with the exception of a few hundred yards of hostile trench by the Menin Road which had a high tactical value.

A chain of similar events marked the movements of the Second Army along its southern front. All the German trenches between Armentières and La Bassée were assailed. The right wing of our First Army took a notable part in

this forceful demonstration. Our Third Army Corps resumed the attack on the Lille ridges at the hamlet of Le Bridoux, a little to the north of Rouges

Bancs and Fromelles. The Indian Army Corps, co-operating in the Neuve Chapelle region, assailed Pietre Mill and the Aubers section of the great low horse-shoe plateau, while a part of the First Army Corps charged the German trenches at Givenchy, immediately in front of La Bassée. These attacks were at first successful all along the line, and it looked as if our heavy failure against the Lille Plateau in May would at last be redeemed by a victory. The fighting power shown by our men was magnificent. The Lincolns' attack on Bridoux Fort, a very strong point in the German system of defence, was an heroic affair. The Lincolns took eighty

Lincolns took eighty prisoners, after killing hundreds of foes in the fighting round the stronghold. A middle-aged company cook, whose proper place was far in the rear, became so excited by the din of battle that he left his work and ran into the captured German trench. There he seized a rifle and sniped every German who came across his line of sight, crying as he did so, "There's another of the devils!"

The Berkshires had a still more difficult task before them, as they had to carry a formidable work known as the Lozenge. After storming it, they found that it was

lined with deep dug-outs in which the garrison could safely shelter from everything but the heaviest howitzer fire. The Lozenge protected the main German first line, and its machine-guns did terrible work among the gallant Berkshires. But the Englishmen fought on with wonderful bravery. One private, noticing that the Germans were collecting behind a traverse, waited at the bend of the trench with a bayonet, and drove it in turn into seven of the enemy, while a comrade behind him hurled bombs into the mass of grey figures beyond. The Rifle Brigade also finely distinguished itself, by both its skill and its tenacity, in the holding battle of the ridges. The riflemen rushed to the assault, headed by a strong force of bombers. The bombers at once began to extend to the right and left, and in less than an hour and a half both the first and the second German lines were captured,

and our gunners lifted on the third line, north-west of Lille and close to the suburbs of the city.

Rifle Brigade's fine work

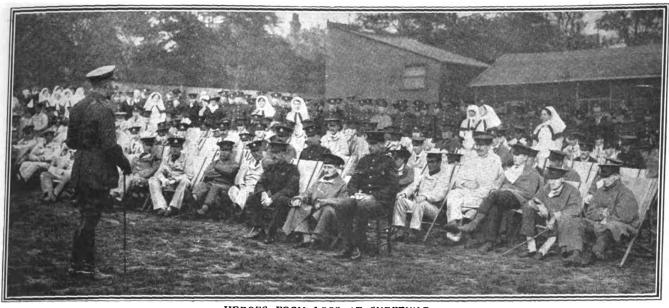
The Germans, however, retained a wedge in the centre that checked connection with the battalion on the left of the Rifle Brigade. Both ends of the position captured by the riflemen were blocked with earth and sandbags. The enemy thus had time to recover from the first shock, and his reserves came up with a large supply of bombs; and by ten o'clock in the morning the men of the Rifle Brigade were compelled to abandon their conquest of the second line. But they held on to the first German line, and there repulsed with heavy losses another strong hostile attack. One officer, suddenly meeting a German bomber, and having no weapon with which to defend himself, knocked his enemy over with a blow on the chin. The same officer had previously shot two Germans at point-blank range, and knocked out two others.

In the afternoon, however, all the captured positions had to be abandoned along the curve of the Lille Plateau, owing to the fact that the German commander hurried up powerful reinforcements, who were able to draw upon their main bomb magazines and move up their supplies under cover of deep communicating trenches and tunnels. The enemy's first line had been deliberately held with comparatively weak forces, in order to escape huge losses from our prolonged and terrible artillery fire. The German machine-guns had largely been withdrawn to the second line, while the bomb magazines had been removed still farther back. The feeble front line was rather in the nature of a trap, in which it was hoped our men would mass, so that the German batteries could bombard them at an exactly known range, and prepare the way for

the bombing parties advancing down the communication gaps. organisation of the ridge defences had been much improved since the Neuve Chapelle and Rouges Bancs battles. The enemy had used the whole resources of the mining district south of Lille to establish large electric generating stations from which power was transmitted to the front. This immediate, handy, and flexible supply of motive power had enabled the German engineers to tunnel, excavate, and generally fortify in a marvellous way the German positions on the plateau.



BRITISH OFFICER'S QUARTERS IN THE ATTIC OF A FRENCH FARM-HOUSE BEHIND THE FIRING-LINE



HEROES FROM LOOS AT SHEFFIELD.

The King telling the wounded of their country's pride and gratitude. Corporal Fuller, V.C., is seen at the right of the front row.

With men like Rathenau, the chief electrical magnate of the world, in a position of authority at the German War Office, we can be sure that all the fine young brains of the inventive nation which had produced the gas-engine and the Diesel engine were completely at the service of the German Army. The result was such a display of solid, ant-like industry, directed by widely-trained and versatile intellects, as had never before been seen in war. When Germany stood on the defensive, with her vast machinery of industrial expansion at her back, the

spectacle was more impressive than the first great German offensive movement, which had been engineered only by the German armament firms and the German Staff. Between Ypres and La Bassée we lost about 20,000 men, without obtaining more than a slight transient grip on part of the enemy's second line. The demonstration, of course, had to be made, or the resistance to our main thrust towards Lens would have been greatly strengthened. But the fact that our movement from our centre and our right wing absolutely failed, though we had used hundreds of thousands of high-explosive shells and had occupied two German army corps by a feint at the German coast, may be taken as a triumph for the German business man.

It was his brain, his experience, his technical knowledge, that were mainly responsible for the incomparable system of defensive work which held up our Second Army and part of our First Army. It must be remembered that the young German business man was, as a rule, also a conscript soldier, who even in peace time possessed sufficient practical knowledge as an officer of the reserve to enable him quickly to combine his industrial and military ideas.

When the first-line German Army, with its professional

officers, was half shattered at the end of October, 1914, and the young German business man, of a type similar to our Territorial lieutenant, was largely employed to fill the gaps in the officering of the battalions, the extra-ordinary ingenuity of the German defensive system became marked. There was then little need for an Office Military Inventions in Berlin of the red-tape kind that too often worked so indifferently in London. The greater part of the inventive intellect of Germany was already in the trenches. The ideas of the inventors

were submitted by one man on the spot to another man on the authority at the front. The inventor was asked first to manufacture some specimen bombs, and, in the case which we have in mind, his free gift of the design was rejected, and he was informed that if the bomb were found to be what was needed he would receive the usual royalty. Months passed before the bombs were at last made by the inventor himself, who had grown weary of the whole business. Yet he was a man who had already made a name and a fortune by his improve-

VICE-ADMIRAL R. H. S. BACON, C.V.O., D.S.O., or rendered valuable service in the bombardment of Zeebrugge and Ostend. He is seen in a captain's uniform.

spot, and put into practice with no delay. In London, on the other hand, inventions were at first sifted by men without firsthand knowledge of the latest forms of trench warfare-men with no experience later than that of the South African War. It was not, for instance, sufficient for an inventor, in the winter of 1914, to submit to our War Office the design of a handy, cheap bomb, capable of being quickly manufactured by the million, and to offer his design, for what it was worth, as a free gift to the country. The examiners of inventions would not send the design to Woolwich for approval, or better still, forward it to some ordnance ments in one of the most ingenious pieces of mechanism



MAJOR-GEN. G. H. THESIGER, C.B., C.M.G., A.D.C.
Killed in action in France while gallantly endeavouring to consolidate gained ground, on September 27th, 1915.

ï

in the modern industrial world. It is not likely that Germany treated her inventors in this manner. Whether the design were good or bad, it would have been tried and accepted or rejected in a week or two, especially in a critical stage of the war, when the bomb was coming into general use.

By nature nearly all firstrate fighting men are inveterate conservatives. They have a passionate dislike for new weapons, for the reason that untried methods may lead

to unforeseen disasters. In the eighteenth century the British Navy was at first far behind its principal rival in regard to scientific ship construction. Our sailors had to supply by their surprising prowess and their skill as fighting gunners the deficiencies of our unprogressive, uninventive warship designers, and capture superb examples of enemy ships of the line to serve as models in our building yards.

Even in recent years our extraordinary pre-eminence in every important branch of naval construction was due to this accident—that a man of unusual inven-

tive genius, Lord Fisher, the first designer of armoured trains, had created our modern Navy on lines heartily disapproved of by almost every admiral of the old school. The work of Lord Fisher was furthermore facilitated by the existence of several important private warship building firms in our country, who had been induced by the force of international competition in armament design to develop the inventive talents of their principal men.

It was due to no general virtue residing in our democratic institutions that our Navy of the Dreadnought era was created. Manhood suffrage had as little to do with it as votes for women. Indeed, the chief representatives of our democracy, the leaders of the Liberal Government, who came into power soon after the close of the South

African War, were rather hostile than favourable to Lord Fisher's programme of naval construction, and at times interfered with it mischievously. King Edward VII., representing merely the old-fashioned monarchical principle, was the principal supporter of Lord Fisher. Mainly through the happy accident that King Edward discovered in Lord Fisher a greater and more inventive mind than Kaiser Wilhelm found in Grand Admiral von Tirpitz, Britain had surpassed Germany in the race for sea-power and in the development of naval weapons.

In regard to our military preparations, Lord Roberts was ready to give us an Army adequate to our political

us an Army adequate to our political scope, in order to form the needed powerful adjunct to our Navy. But the British democracy would not submit to the sacrifice necessary to obtain a military force capable of assuring the safety of Belgium and the peace of the world. Mr. Balfour, while he was leader of the Unionist party, in every way discountenanced Lord Roberts's programme. We had created in our new Navy a force capable of prevailing against Germany in a purely naval duel between Britain and Germany. Therewith, all our politicians of

every school rested content. They would not create such an Army as our policy required -the military force needed to help in keeping the Germans out of Antwerp and out of France, in accordance with our vital interests as expressed in our guarantee of Belgian independence, and understanding with ce and Russia. There-France and Russia. Therefore the German Emperor, believing that we were too weak and distracted to fight on land, turned on Russia, France, and Belgium in order to isolate us for a later conflict in which we were to be destroyed, and for which our democracy and its elected



TWO DISTINGUISHED LEADERS WHO FELL NEAR LOOS.
The centre portrait: Major-General F. D. V. Wing, C.B. Above: Major-General Sir Thompson Capper, K.C.M.G., C.B., D.S.O., who was severely wounded on September 26th, 1915, and succumbed to his wounds the following day.

leaders had lacked the courage, as he supposed, to

prepare.

This was the reason why our soldiers were unable to display little or none of the alert, inventive force that distinguished the work of our sailors. Sailor and soldier were fellow-countrymen of equal gifts, starting from the same level of intellect and character. But circumstances favoured the sailor and made his mind more progressive and wider in scope than that of the soldier. All that our best generals could do was to elaborate little plans for handling some 150,000 British soldiers, forming a small part of the wing of great French national armies, during a fierce and probably short campaign either in Belgium or France. The grand modern military problems, arising from the presence of all the fighting strength of the Empire on a Continental field of battle, were matters of idle speculation to British generals. They were not allowed to take practical steps to study the instruments and methods of gigantic national warfare, in which men clashed in millions together.

Our Staff officers were utterly unexercised in manœuvres on a grand scale. They had no opportunity of learning to overcome the intricate difficulties of team work between half

Difficulties of our staff

a million men in furious, confused conflict along an immense front. The British commanders and their Staff had to learn in quick, decisive, actual experience the

grand technique of modern national warfare which German, French, and Russian generals and Staff officers had been practising for forty years. It was as though a small band of sailors, used only to handling a destroyer flotilla with a couple of light cruisers, were given in the heat of battle the command of an armada of several battleship squadrons and battle-cruiser squadrons, with a swarm of smaller

vessels. To add to the difficulties of Sir John French and his Army, army corps, divisional, and brigade generals, they were forced by the enemy to undertake constantly the most delicate and hazardous operation—the offensive—against positions of immense strength. Their new-made machinery of control of their new-made armies was put to the

severest test; for it is in movements of advance against highly developed defensive works, backed by heavy artillery, that the efficiency of the finer

The test of control

artillery, that the efficiency of the finer organisation of an army is manifest. For several months the jibing criticism of the German generals on the western front was that, though the British forces had such strength of character and such good marksmanship as to make them terrible in defensive actions, their Staff work was too slow, clumsy, and unalert to achieve a victorious attack on a

large, decisive scale.

Probably the explanation was that, having to undertake a vaster work than they were accustomed to, our military men had to learn by experience. After all, the ancient Romans were faced by a similar problem when Hannibal swept through Italy; they won through by a force of character which enabled them to survive blow after blow, and learn to win from each stroke that failed to fell them. Neuve Chapelle and Rouges Bancs had been severe checks to our armies. And as our French comrades in Champagne and Artois in February, May, and June were equally unsuccessful in their attempts to shatter and pierce the hostile front, the Germans had concluded that their own lines were impregnable.

As a matter of fact, the prophecies of M. Bloch, the brilliant, thoughtful Jewish banker, had been realised to a considerable extent. Owing to the introduction of siege artillery in the heaviest form and in large quantities into



BRITISH STORMING A GERMAN TRENCH NEAR LOOS.

Between September 25th and 27th, 1915, the Allies made a combined advance in Artois, in the course of which there was some exceptionally heavy fighting, resulting in tremendous loss to the enemy and the capture of the important village of Loos. After a terrific preliminary bombard-

ment by our artillery, the infantry rushed the trenches, racing their officers, one of whom was heard to call out: "Faster, boys! Give them hell!"

There was some rapid bayonet work, which brought the Germans to their knees screaming for mercy, and an immense number were taken prisoners.

open field warfare, and to the development of deep-dug earthwork defences, with numerous machine-gun redoubts and hand-bomb depots, the power of defending troops had become greater than the power of attacking troops. Even the poorly munitioned Russian armies, when nearly overwhelmed by a great hostile force possessing a gigantic artillery and shell supply, succeeded in retiring in order and remaining intact, by entrenching every three or five miles in their retreat and smiting from cover the attacking

infantry advancing across the open field.

According to Bloch, this condition of things would lead

to aggressive warfare becoming so costly in life as to be impracticable. The Germans endeavoured to recover the advantage of the offensive by employing immense clouds of poison gas. But our men at Ypres learnt to

gas. But our men at Ypres learnt to avoid being asphyxiated. The German chemist then invented a less deadly but distressing weapon in the form of a weeping gas, which temporarily blinded soldiers by irritating their eyes and producing tears. The French troops in the fire trenches were transformed into monstrous apparitions by the masks with goggles and respirators, which protected



WOUNDED AND MUD-STAINED, BUT HAPPY. Some of our men who took part in the advance of Loos photographed at a railway-station where a halt was made for refreshments during their journey home.

their faces from chlorine, ammonia, and other fumes. But the indefatigable Germans again changed their methods of gassing their opponents, and filled the air with a curious almond-like scent. This odour indicated prussic-acid gas. The contest between the gas-maker and the mask-maker resembled the older struggle between the gun-maker and the armour-plate maker. But up to the autumn of 1915 victory rested with the instrument of defence.

Judging from the number of prisoners taken in the British advance on Loos, our long-delayed gas attack was not a very decisive success. Apparently it had taken our chemists nearly five months to provide our Army with a weapon similar in operation to that employed by the enemy in April, 1915. No doubt, the new intoxicating fumes were reserved as an element of surprise for the great general offensive by the allied forces; but, as we have suggested, the wind, which had been blowing from a favourable quarter when the bombardment opened on September 23rd, appears to have veered at the critical moment on the morning of September 25th. A gas attack is a wind attack; it requires not only a current of air

flowing in a regular movement from the advancing force to the defending force, but the current must be of a nice quality, neither too strong, or it will disperse the gas before the effect is obtained, nor too gentle, or it may not carry the

cloud of heavy fumes quickly and far enough.

Our available wind at daybreak on Saturday seemed to have been too gentle and too aslant of the enemy's main positions. Our infantry had chiefly to rely upon the terrifying destructive work of their massed batteries and the swiftness of their own charge. It is, however, cheering to find that our commanders had worked out in practice an old English idea to facilitate infantry attacks. Towards the end of the nineteenth century, Mr. Sutherland had pointed out in his work, "Twentieth Century Inventions," that the terrible defensive power of troops armed with rapid-fire rifles and guns might be overcome by blanketing their field of fire with vast thick smokeclouds, through which the attacking infantry could advance with comparative safety, and drive in with the bayonet. Some brilliant officer or military chemist had given effect to Mr. Sutherland's smoke-screen form of bayonet attack, and it was by means of it that Loos, Hulluch, Hill 70, and the outskirts of Lens were captured.

Just before the guns lifted and the smoke clouds were formed, our expectant men could safely catch through the haze glimpses of the bleak, ugly stretch of country which they were set to win. It was a poor, chalky ground, overgrown with long grass and rolling in two low, rounded swells of chalk towards Hill 70 near Lens. Hill 70 was more than two hundred and ten feet above sea-level; but as all the land was a low chalk plateau, the summit of the hill was barely thirty feet above the neighbouring hollow in which Loos village spread in desolation. There was coal under the plateau, and what had been a hundred years ago as pleasant, lonely, and rural a countryside as the chalk edge of the Weald of Kent, had been transformed into a hideous tract of Black Country. Rows of mean miners' cottages extended near the gear of the pit-heads: there were great dark pyramids of slag, a church-tower or two, and crowning the open dismal scene were two high pit-shafts connected into a massive construction by a framework of girders. In shape it resembled the Tower Bridge, which was the name our soldiers gave it. Being some three hundred feet high, it formed an incomparable fire-control station for the enemy; and, by reason of its strong steel open-work construction, our heaviest artillery could not seriously damage it, even by a prolonged bombard-

ment. For tactical reasons, the possession of "Tower Bridge" was a matter of high Importance of the importance to both contending armies. It formed one of the most perfect of "Tower Bridge"

observing stations, with a field of vision of forty miles in clear weather, and artillery officers working on it, in telephonic communication with their batteries, had the whip-hand of all enemy guns and howitzers in this sector of the front.

On Loos and its "Tower Bridge," therefore, Sir Douglas Haig concentrated his forces of attack. The "Tower Bridge" was only about two and a half miles north-west of Lens, so that by the capture of it all our guns would be able to mass against the mining city and its important railway junction. Our artillery observers would also be able to reach the enemy batteries at Angers and Lievin, lying to the south-east and impeding the French advance on Souchez and the Vimy Ridge.

Our trenches, when the struggle opened, ran from a point near Cuinchy on the La Bassée Canal, and curved round the formidable enemy position of Auchy-La Bassée to the village of Vermelles, continuing south, past mine-pits, with a railway line and blocks of miners' cottages, to the villages of Grenay and Bully les Mines, which were opposite to Lens. There was about one to five hundred yards of No Man's Land between our brown parapets and the wall of dull grey sand-bags that formed the first German lines.



Another official photograph of wounded on their way to receive treatment. In the smaller view are shown some virile types of the young men who fought so grandly at Loos and Hulluch.

NOTABLE CAMERA RECORDS OF SCENES BEHIND THE FIRING-LINE AT LOOS AND HULLUCH.

117

On the first crest of the low downs rose a great German fortification some five hundred yards in diameter, built around the path from Vermelles to Loos, and dominating with its machine-guns and its sunken quick-firing turrets of steel armour the bare, grassy hollows through which our men had to advance. There were three lines of barbedwire to get through, machine-gun positions sheltering behind slag-heaps to storm, and rows and large blocks of colliers' cottages—called, in French, corons—to master by desperate hand-to-hand fighting. Great redoubts also extended along the second low swell of chalk, such as the Hohenzollern Redoubt and the Kaiser Wilhelm Redoubt, which defended

smashed by a sudden drive that should take effect before the two German army corps in Belgium could arrive to save the situation.

After the failure of some of the men of the New Army in Suvla Bay, Sir John French and Sir Douglas Haig might have been anxious about the driving power of their new formations. But the event at Loos was to show that the new citizen armies of Britain, when well directed, were a striking force of the highest quality. The attack was made by the Scotsmen of the 15th Division in the centre, the Londoners of the 47th Territorial Division on the right wing, and the veterans and new drafts of the famous 1st Division on the left wing. The

1st Division was held up on the enemy's second line, and the check enabled the Germans

to collect local reserves along the rampart of chalk. The 1st Brigade, however, found a gap, and its gallant brigadier showed extraordinary courage. Leaving his flank dangerously exposed, he pushed his troops ahead, and after capturing some gun positions and taking five hundred prisoners, he won the outskirts of the village of Hulluch.

The achievement of the London Territorials was of even greater importance. Swinging out from Bully and Grenay, the Londoners were met by wild artillery fire which did but little damage, and they steadily advanced over the shrapnelswept fields to the immense slag-heaps known as the Double Crassier. Here they stormed the



HOLIDAY TASK IN FLANDERS. Canadians sent back from the front-line trenches employing their time of rest by filling sand-bags for the construction of other trenches.

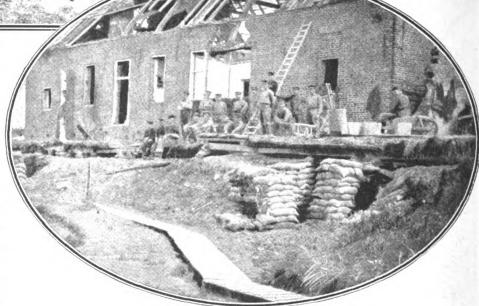
the southern approaches to La Bassée and enfiladed any body of troops advancing on Hulluch. Then, like two deadly horns tipping this triple crescent of fortified swells of chalk, were the batteries of La Bassée and Auchy in the north, and the batteries of Angres, Lievin, and the Lens suburbs in the south. The main German batteries were ranged behind the centre of the triple crescent, with the heaviest and longest range ordnance in a stretch of woodland near Pont-à-Pont-à-Vendin was a Vendin. vital railway junction from which

All this land was less a countryside than one vast, straggling, grimed, and miserable city of industry. The

open spaces, blistered with slag-heaps and sprinkled with hovels, were uglier than the patches of building land Swiftness the essence of victory

in the lowest suburbs of London.

The general result was that all the fighting between the fortified chalk swells, the corons, and villages was practically street fighting combined with the most difficult kind of trench warfare. There was no room for a battle of manœuvres of the open field order, and the advance had to be made by the sheer weight and swiftness of the thrusting force. Swiftness, indeed, was the essence of victory, for the enemy's front could only be



four tracks radiated, and through
it the defending troops were canadians at the front taking cover behind a ruined house. They would appear to be less interested in the approaching shells than in the attentions of the photographer.

German machine-gun positions which had been sheltered from our artillery fire by the mounds of rubbish. Pushing on from the Double Crassier, the Londoners reached the western cemetery at Loos, where the fighting became terrific. The Germans had specialised in cemetery fighting at Souchez and Neuve Chapelle, and among the lowly tombs at Loos their machine-gun parties had constructed a formidable fortress. They dug a trench at the upper end of the cemetery, and placed their machine-guns behind the burial mounds, using the tombstones as additional cover, and raising parapets are the graves. cover, and raising parapets among the graves. The Londoners who flung themselves on this disturbed restingplace of the dead rapidly added to the number of corpses in the cemetery. Leaping from one parapet to the other

bombing and bayoneting as they went, they lost many men, but the Germans lost more. Yet so furious was the struggle that it was fifty minutes before the cemetery was cleared of living Germans. By that time the number of bodies outstretched among the fallen crosses and trampled wreaths greatly exceeded the number of coffined figures lying below the ground.

But the hand-to-hand fighting round the slag-heaps and colliers' cottages and cemetery was almost a pleasure for fighting men compared with other features of the advance. It was the enemy's artillery that made the charging movements so costly of life. As soon as our batteries, at 6.30 in the morning, lifted over the gas and smoke screens on to the

Furious German
cannonade
enemy's reserve positions, every German
gunner worked with furious intensity to
maintain a curtain of fire between the
British and German lines. A combination

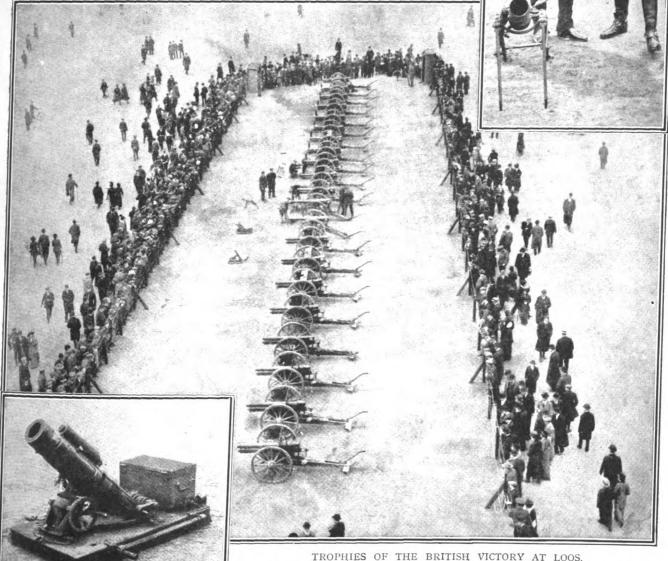
of high-explosive and shrapnel shell was principally used. It burst in thick black eddies of smoke over the advancing lines, and our men fell in thousands before they came into action. The enemy really possessed, in conjunction with his great number of machine-guns, sufficient artillery power to annihilate our infantry while it moved for two to three miles on a wide front, stopping on the way in order to clear the slag-heaps and trenches from the gas in its path.

It is quite likely that the low-hanging mist was not wholly a misfortune for the First British Army. No

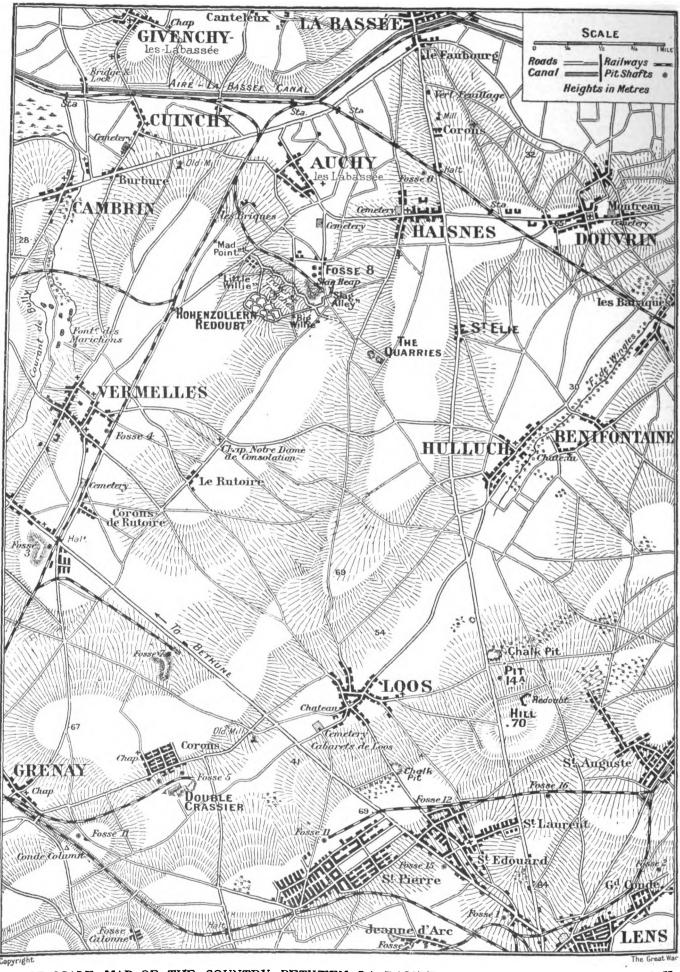
doubt it checked the work of our gunners and airmen, but after all they had carried out the principal part of their task by the great bombardment. By way of ample compensation, the hostile artillery observers could not mark through the haze the general movement of our troops. In the mist the German gunners had only local telephone reports to guide them, and the number of these reports diminished as trench after trench was taken. The best that the commanders of the German batteries could do was to maintain walls of fire all along the broken

front lines, with a view to interrupting the movement of our reinforcements and punishing the men engaged in bringing up ammunition. Our smoke-screen, with the mist and the curtains of rain, gave us most of the advantages of a night attack with the bayonet. A veil was thrown over the general operations, which no searchlights, flares, and star-shells





General view of the Horse Guards Parade, London, with some of the guns taken from the Germans at Loos on exhibition. Below A trench mortar captured by the Somerset Light Infantry. Above. Viscount Churchill examining a trench mortar.



LARGE SCALE MAP OF THE COUNTRY BETWEEN LA BASSEE AND LENS, SHOWING IN DETAIL THE GROUND COVERED BY THE BATTLES OF LOOS AND HULLUCH.

could pierce. In these circumstances, which made Staff work difficult, not only did the London Territorial troops show great personal fighting power, but their officers displayed a skill in leading that provoked the admiration of Sir John French. In addition to getting hold of the cemetery, John French. In addition to getting hold of the cemetery, the division seized the chalk-pits south of Loos, and, by strongly linking these gains with their conquest of the Double Crassier, they formed a firm defensive flank running from Loos to Bully and Grenay. In this manner they repaired the gap which had suddenly been produced between the French and British lines, when the marsh at Souther caused General Fock's men to swerve southward. Souchez caused General Foch's men to swerve southward. Sir John French in his despatch states that the success of the London Territorial Division removed his fear of a German thrust from Lens, and enabled him at last to release his reserve and throw it into the fighting-line. Every Territorial soldier must take a high pride in this

glorious achievement of the London Divi-Glorious sion of former amateur volunteer soldiers. In the greatest of all ordeals, with a weak-Territorials ! ened flank through which the enemy might have divided the allied armies, they exhibited the most valuable kind of fighting talent. Theirs was a great strategical victory, and not merely an admirable tactical They enabled their Commander-in-Chief to bring into action at the critical point four more Divisions of

Meanwhile, the Highlanders of the New Army, the glorious 15th Division, were making their wonderful charge through Loos and over Hill 70 to the Cité St. Auguste, a northern suburb of Lens. This fierce and rapid spring, across four miles of fortified ground, is probably the finest thing the Highlanders of Scotland have probably the finest thing the Highlanders of Scotland have probably the finest thing the Highlanders of Scotland have done throughout their splendid history. The thing was accomplished, moreover, by men who knew little or nothing of warfare till the fateful month of August, 1914. They had volunteered for service and had begun their training when our little Regular Army was tramping from Mons to the Marne, and from the Marne to the Aisne. It was searchy to be expected that Lord Kitchener could It was scarcely to be expected that Lord Kitchener could, in a single year, turn civilians into soldiers of the very Yet such were the Highlanders.

finest class.

We have already observed that the British commander used his new recruits in the Hannibal manner, by placing them in the forefront of battle and relying on the strong reserve of veterans to maintain the attack and guard his own lines against any unexpected disaster. As a matter of fact, this arrangement of our freshly-trained troops brought out all that was best in the men of the New Army, as well as conformed with the sound old rule of war. The new men were impassioned volunteers who had worked with a will for a year, in stern, yet quiet desire to meet the German conscript on something like equal terms. They had trenched like navvies; they had tramped like athletes; and, though they were willing to settle down to the wearing monotony of a parallel siege battle, their minds were filled with a lust for the heroic ardour of the charge. The tall sinewy Highlanders especially, with their kindling Celtic temperament, had the instinct of the charge in their blood-something that came down to them from the days of Finn and Ossian, and survives, with a quality of flame, in our ancient Gaelic poetry. A very imaginative man with Celtic sympathies might have foreseen what would happen; but though Sir Douglas Haig was a Scotsman, it is clear that he did not expect from his newly-trained Highlanders a stroke so swift and violent as they gave. The new Division outraced, when they were released for the charge, all the elaborately timed battle plans of their commanders.

Many of the new soldiers have told us in letters what they felt. Like all sound, healthy men they had no love of death and little passion for the terrible scientific warfare of our times. Many of them wondered how they would behave, when their comrades began to drop around



MORE NERVE-RACKING THAN THE MAINMAST.

An incident, popularly called "treeing a linesman," somewhere behind the western front. Three members of the Signal Service were detailed off to repair an old "civil," not "military" wire. While one was up aloft a shell came straight at the pole. His two comrades, hearing the shriek of the projectile, took cover in a ditch. When the danger had passed, they looked up to see if the linesman was intact, but he had disappeared. "Poor fellow, he's gone," said one; but a grunt drew their attention to the foot of the pole, where the climber had subsided, regardless of consequences, which were a few bruises.

them, and were detachedly curious about themselves. The modern introspective mind does not, at first analysis, seem to make for a heroic strength of spirit. We rather like to turn our feelings inside out, and rely less on instinct than an intellectualised emotion. Shakespeare began this strange game in "Hamlet," and in the course of three centuries this apparent malady of the mind had spread deep into the nation. Everything that

increased the power of education among Introspection and the people increased the introspective habit. We inclined, in moods of frank Heroism

self-judgment, to regard ourselves as inferior in downright courage to our fighting forefathers. They were Fortinbras, we were Hamlet; and, meanwhile, all the machinery for human slaughter had been developed in a terrifying manner.

It was no wonder, therefore, that the men of the New Army were rather apprehensive; but the event proved that the men of the Highland Division, in circumstances which would have dazed and staggered the clansmen of Bannockburn, were inspired, rather than daunted, by their introspective study of themselves. Almost to the last minute, the anxious subalterns were lecturing their platoons—a thing they had been doing at nearly every



ACT.-SERGT. J. C. RAYNES, V.C., "A" Battery, 71st Brigade R.F.A. Under intense fire from gas-shells carried Grat. Ayres to shelter, gave him his own gas-helinet and returned, though gassed, to his gun.



LT. G. A. MALING, V.C., M.B., R.A.M.C. Treated three hundred men under heavy fire near Fauquissart; was twice flung down by shells, but continued his work.



PTE. A. VICKERS, V.C., PTE. A. value of the company at Hulluch under heavy fire and cut the wires holding up the battalion.



CAPT. A. M. READ, V.C., rst Northamptonshires, Killed near Hulluch. Though partially gassed, he rallied disorganised units, and was mortally wounded while encouraging them under a withering fire.

opportunity since the day for action had been fixed. But the men needed no haranguing, and though they did not take the battle as light-heartedly as the London Irish on their left, who played a football into the German trenches under a hurricane of shrapnel, the Gaels of Scotland

Scotland and charged with extraordinary pace, strength, and judgment. Ireland

At ten minutes to six on the historic Saturday morning the heavy cloud of white-yellowish gas slowly rolled from our trenches, and still more slowly floated onward. The launchers of a battleship could not be more anxious than were the British troops over the result of on Hill 70. His untiring energy and their first important gas attack. But leadership checked the enemy's advance at this point.



at this point.

unfortunately, the great cloud was carried too far northward, with the result that the enemy's second line was not overpowered by the stupefying fumes. At half-past six two brigades of the Highland Division swept out towards the "Tower Bridge." It was arranged that one brigade should make a direct attack on the Loos achievement front while the second

front, while the second

brigade executed an enveloping movement to the north, bending round towards Loos and Hill 70. The third brigade was held in reserve, to be used as occasion required in either direction. There were thus only two bodies of newly trained troops, numbering each under four thousand bayonets, engaged in the



SECOND-LIEUT. A. J. T. FLEMING-SANDES, V.C.,
and East Surreys. Seeing his men wavering at Hohenzollern Redoubt, he sprang to the parapet and, flinging bombs at twenty yards range, saved the situation.



SEC.-LIEUT. (TEMP. CAPT.)
C. G. VICKERS, V.C.,
1/7th Sherwood Foresters.
Though wounded and almost
alone, held a barrier for some
hours until a second barrier
could be completed.





SECOND-LIEUTENANT
A. B. TURNER, V.C.,
3rd Royal Berkshires. At
Vermelles, practically singlehanded, drove the enemy back
with bombs till reserves came
up. Died of wounds since.

TEMP. SECOND LIEUTENANT
R. P. HALLOWES, V.C.,
4th Middlesex. At Hooge set a magnificent example, throwing bombs and
making daring reconnaissances. When
mortally wounded, continued to cheer
his men.

SOME OF THE V.C.'s WON IN THE BRITISH ADVANCE AT LOOS.



A CASE OF INSTRUMENTS. Canadian officer within reach of the enemy, with his bombs and hand-grenades ready for instant use.

smashed their way along the communicating trenches, or advanced in open order through the long grass, and quickly won a series of footholds in the German second line in front of Loos. Spreading out in furious fighting from each breach they had made, the Highlanders conquered the advanced defences of Loos as easily as they had stormed the first swell of chalk. The enemy was surprised by the speed and violence of the assault, and in less than an hour after the two brigades left their trenches they were fighting round the "Tower Bridge

and the outskirts of Loos. The fleeing Germans had crowded towards the village, where their officers got them well in hand and put up a stern rearguard fight.

But owing to the Scotsmen's plan of attack, which then came fully into operation, the enemy's stand at Loos did not greatly benefit him; for the brigade on the right began to work well north of Loos, where the enemy's resistance had weakened, and after getting without much difficulty

Under the lash of death

Of death

Of death

Of death

Well behind the village, the advanced brigade suddenly turned and stormed through some fir plantations to the summit of Hill 70. As the men charged

they came under a terrible fire from a strong German position on their left flank at Pit 14-A, just between the chalk quarries and the hill. At the same time their right flank, as they climbed the down, was swept by German machine-gun fire from the eastern houses at Loos. But instead of stopping and seeking for cover, the furious Highlanders, under the lash of death, increased their pace till their brigadiergeneral lost control of them. He was a youngish man, with an agile habit of body, but when he arrived near Loos all that he could see was his men vanishing in the distance over

main attack on Lens. The achievement of this small force was marvellous. The first two brigades advanced in line against the first German position on the low downs. Going forward by short, swift rushes through a perfect tempest of shrapnel in-tensified by streams of bullets from machine - guns and rifles, the Highlanders took the whole of the first line in about half an hour. Then leavsome of their bombers to clear out

the dug - outs, they

the hill. The brigade crossed the road from La Bassée to Lens, captured the German third line on the opposite slope; and at twenty minutes past nine the survivors of the four battalions stormed Cité St. Auguste, a pitmen's village forming the north-western suburb of Lens.

Four thousand Scotsmen had broken clean through the German front—through three fortified lines placed on dominating heights, and strengthened by strong redoubts, containing cannon as well as machine-guns. It was a finer feat than even the first tremendous drive by the men of

Anzac in the landing battle beneath Sari Bair. In both cases fresh, untried troops displayed a vehemence of attack unparalleled elsewhere along the front. It is

The Anzacs eclipsed

doubtful if the men of our Regular Army would have gone so fast and so far; for the regular soldier fought with more caution. The brigade of Highlanders was too impetuous, and, owing to the extraordinary speed of its advance, no other body of troops was able to co-operate with it. By half-past nine the brigade had turned at right angles, and had got into the suburbs of Lens. It seemed as though the base of the northern plain were about to be opened. The

left flank of the Scotsmen was exposed to a counterattack, but the German commander had no men left to make the movement. On the other hand, the brigade had lost touch on the north with the 1st Division, which had been badly checked near Vermelles. The converging advances of the French Army in the south of Lens and the British forces at Loos either did not take place, or were slow in progress. But the French troops had scarcely moved, and when they did they swerved away from Lens. Only the London Territorial Division, battling



THE BOMBER'S CORNER.
Canadian grenade company's lieutenant sitting beside his varied stock of missiles.

in Loos Cemetery, and the other two brigades of the Highland Division, engaged in fighting desperately in Loos, were within call.

Meanwhile, the Germans hastily brought up machine-guns along the railway embankment north-east of Lens, and continued to concentrate on the adventurous brigade a wasting fire from all points of the compass. There was machinegun and musketry fire from Cité St. Auguste

from Cité St. Auguste in the north, from the outskirts of Loos in the west, from Lens



THROWING IT IN.

A Canadian officer in the act of hurling a hand-grenade. The broad streamers attached to the bombs in his belt served to steady their course through the air.



ATTENDING TO THE NERVES OF THE ARMY. French telephone men linking up the trenches in Artois and testing the wires.

in the south, and from Pit 14-A and a row of pitmen's cottages in the east. In this circle of death the unsupported, half-shattered brigade checked its headlong charge, and, sowing the ground with dead and wounded, withdrew in good order on Hill 70, and there entrenched just below the crest to get cover from the enemy's eastern line of fire. The Germans reoccupied the redoubt they had abandoned on the summit, but the Highlanders held on to the hill. After four hours of wonderful fighting the brigade, in spite of its check at Lens, had achieved one of the great things of the war. It held most of the hill which dominated the country. With the help of two more battalions it could have retaken the redoubt on the summit, and with proper ordinary support it could have got back into Lens by noon, and have opened that gate into the plain which was the objective of all the million men under Foch and French. As a French observer remarked: "The Highland Division was by this time exhausted, but if fresh

Deficiency of reserves

troops had come up and a fresh attack had been delivered upon the Germans, who were gathering all their men in the Douai region, the enemy's front would have been

region, the enemy's front would have been pierced as though it were of cardboard. The brigade had made a path. Had reinforcements arrived without delay, the path would have become a high-road leading to the entire Douai Plain. But the day wore on and behind us there were no signs of reserves. It was only at nightfall that they were reported. It is plain that, on this first day of achieved."

Meanwhile, the Division which had attacked Loos in front received the support of its 3rd Brigade. The village was partly surrounded by two battalions, while the rest

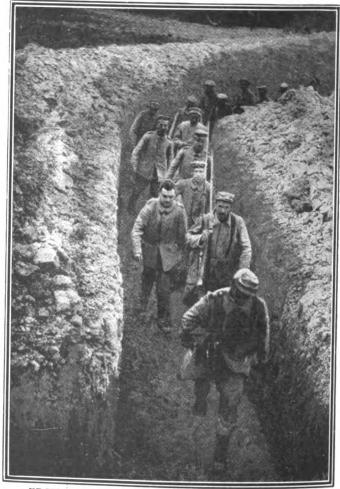
of the men undertook the difficult job of capturing the place by house-to-house fighting, with machine-guns playing on them from the first-story windows, and splutters of musketry fire from the doors. By this time the Germans were squeezed badly on both sides of the village, with the London Territorials hammering them at the western cemetery, and the Highland Brigade working round from the north and driving through the High Street. This street cuts the village in half from east to west, being lined with poor shops and cafés, and leading to the cemetery.

In the centre of Loos stands the ancient parish church, with the core of a once pleasant, old-fashioned village around it, from which spread rows of two-story

The village of Loos

pitmen's cottages of a cheap and shabby quality. The cellars were packed with field-grey figures, and our bombing parties went down the side streets searching for these underground shelters, and marking their progress by explosions.

There were trenches in the street, showing that the enemy had intended to fight for every house, and as the Scotsmen and Londoners worked forward, there was a good deal of sniping from the broken windows of the cafes and cottages. Some of the Germans had a strange notion of the conventions of modern warfare. They would fire away furiously, killing and wounding our men in considerable numbers, and then when they were caught at a disadvantage by a bomber or a bayoneter, they would throw up their hands and cry "Kamerad!" The Bavarians especially seemed to think that their surrender would be accepted after they had gone on slaying till the last possible moment. The Briton may be chivalrous, but he is not an utter fool. One man was deliberately sniping from a window as our troops passed. He held up his hands in



FROM ONE FORM OF CAPTIVITY TO ANOTHER.

German prisoners being escorted to the rear along their own communication trenches by their French captors.



Mediæval aspect of modern French infantrymen wearing the invaluable steel casque.
P 125



French bomber leaving his shelter fully equipped for action. Off on his perilous errand.



French soldier loading trench cannon with bombs.

Arimitive but practical.



German trench in Champagne which was captured by the French. The position was Inside a well-arranged German n



In the background is seen a cavalry patrol of command A column of the splendid Free



trongly fortified, even to the steel revolving gun-turret seen in the photograph. anch when the Huns had gone.



The knife and revolver as substitutes for the bayonet and rifle. French soldier ready for the charge.

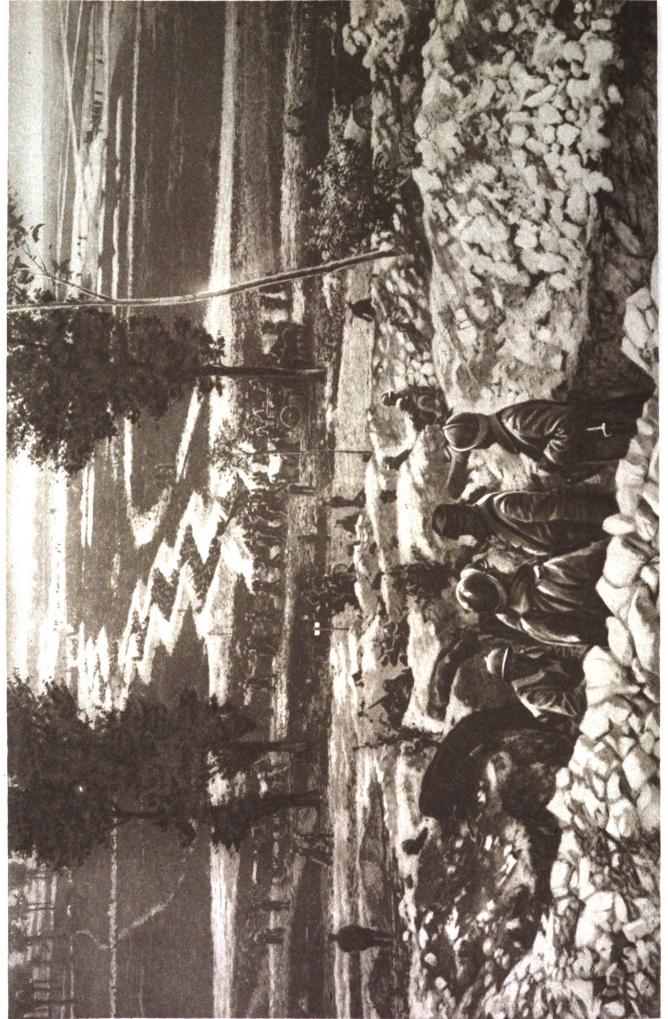


infantry moving into action.



Heavy ordnance being drawn on to "caterpillar" tyre.

With the Belgian artillery. 127



Great French attack in Champagne: Reserves waiting in the trenches while their comrades advance.



FORTS ON WHEELS.

A German mobile steel-turret gun captured by the French

token of surrender, but as a British soldier walked towards him, he again raised his rifle and fired. His cartridge did not explode. So down went his rifle and up went his hands once more, and he cried "Kamerad!" He got comradeship at the point of the bayonet.

There was, however, one German hero in Loos. While the street fighting was raging furiously, a battalion commander found a fairly intact house near the centre of the village, and decided to fix his headquarters there. The signallers came up with their flags, the sappers followed. and started their business of unpacking field telephones and laying wires. Amid all this work of preparation there

One German hero Amid all this work of preparation there fell a thunderbolt. For no apparent reason, the house became the target for great German howitzer shells. The first exploded near the doorstep, the second

burst in the back garden. Colonel, signallers, and engineers scattered in search of cover; and some of the men who went to the cellar found a German officer there seated by an underground telephone, directing the German battery to fire upon himself and his foes. The German knew his shelter had become the battalion headquarters, and, in Samson-like fashion, he desired to bury himself with his enemies.

Loos had suffered severely from our bombardment. The village church was almost levelled to the ground, not even the shell remaining. Of the 12,000 inhabitants only about three hundred men, women, and children remained. Six women and a child came out amid our troops, but most of the unhappy people took refuge in their cellars. Yet in Loos there was one girl of extraordinary courage—a pretty maid of seventeen, named Emilienne Moreau. She left the shelter of the house and began to pick up and tend wounded Highlanders, though the battle was raging round

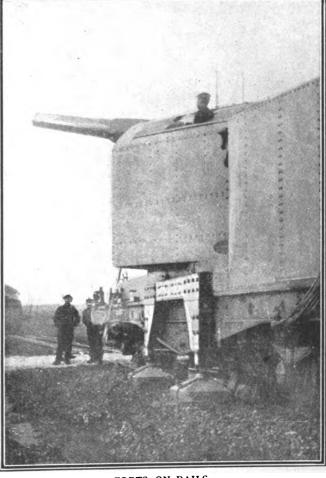
her. Then, when some Germans came up from their cellars to assail the Scotsmen, beautiful Emilienne acted like a countrywoman of Jeanne d'Arc. Seizing the grenades of the wounded men and taking a revolver, she attacked the brutal oppressors of her people and killed five of them.

Two or three snipers were brought down from the "Tower Bridge," and some of the London Territorials, who had worked round to a chalk-pit, south-west of Loos, climbed a slag-heap commanding a sunken road running to Hill 70. The Territorials brought up machine-guns and linked forces with the Highlanders who had cleared the village, and when the Germans tried to return down the sunken road they were shattered by machine-gun fire and shells from a trench mortar which the "Terriers" had also brought

forward. The London Irish, who had led the Territorial Division which closed the gap west of Lens, seem to have had a good share in the taking of Loos. After these

share in the taking of Loos. After these extraordinary footballers had kicked their leather into the German trenches, crying "Goal!" and had captured three German lines, another regiment came up to relieve them. The Irishmen of London had done their work, and the taking of Loos was not their job; but, swept on by the enthusiasm of battle, they worked away all the rest of the day, clearing house after house, or rather, what was left of the houses after the bombardment, and stabbing, shooting, and bombing until they felt ready to drop dead themselves. The 23rd Silesian Regiment was wiped out by them in a scene of horrible slaughter.

All this was only the preliminary work of the London Irish and the splendid Territorial Division to which they belonged. The far-extended and exhausted Highland



FORTS ON RAILS.

French armoured train which could be moved on light railways laid to any point with great rapidity.

Division, which had pierced to Lens and then held on to Hill 70, was relieved on Saturday night. But the bayonets of London, whose losses were not so heavy, were set to hold the line they had won against the enemy's grand counter-attack. The Germans began by a bombardment, lasting 'days and nights, and of extraordinary intensity.

The factor of from their army for three days by a wall of mingled shrapnel and high-explosive fire.

Even water could not be brought up to

tnem, and as most of their water-bottles were smashed in the fighting, the men learned what thirst was. The weather was very bad, raining on and off for the four days they held the line. Some of the troops hung out their muddy ground-sheets, and drank the water which collected in the waterproofs. Happily the new trenches, constituting the third German line, with the sand-bag parapets moved sack by sack to the other side, had been fairly well consolidated after the first victory, and by admirable fore-sight large quantities of supplies had been moved up. The men had food and ammunition, though they lacked water

from the packs of the Germans they had slain in front of the hard-fought line. In spite of the absence of wire entanglements, none of the German charges got nearer than a dozen yards of the "Terriers'" trenches. This was the distance at which the strongest German wave of infantry broke round the wedge of Londoners.

Sunday passed in a tumult of bombardments and broken bayonet attacks, and no relief came. Monday went by like a nightmare. Yet on this day, when things were at their worst, the marvellous "Terriers" not only threw back the enemy, but bombed their way into the vital German position in the wood south of the chalk-pit. This extraordinary advance against the German reinforcements saved the situation. Then at daybreak on Tuesday our guns were again so strongly massed and so well supplied with shells as to overpower the reinforced German batteries. Under cover of another great British bombardment, which broke down the German wall of fire, new troops were pushed forward, and the London Division was relieved.

It is said that some of the men were so overwrought that when they went back to their billets they cried like

children. It was the effect of absolute physical fatigue, combined with the long nerve-racking strain of the continual hostile bombardment. Other men wildly sought for pencils and postcards to let their relatives know that they had done something fine, and had returned unhurt from one of the fiercest furnaces of the war. The Territorials were much cheered, their fresher comrades running to carry their kit and rifles, knowing how tired out they must be. The men were afterwards addressed by the general. "Not only am I proud to have had the honour of being in command of such a regiment as yours, lads," he said to one, "but the whole Empire will be proud whenever in after years the story of the Battle of Loos comes to be written. For I can tell you that it was the London Irish who helped to save a whole British army corps. You have done one of the greatest acts of the war." And these remarks may be applied to every battalion of the London Terri-First of all, it



THE EFFECT OF SHELL FIRE ON LANDSCAPE.

A wood in Champagne, the scene of a French success, reduced to a collection of charred stumps, with a huge crater in the foreground caused by a mine explosion.

and sleep. For the rest, the strength of the resisting line was a matter of racial character and individual power of endurance.

The troops holding the advanced trenches, which ran almost into the enemy's position, were continually attacked on both sides. When the German infantry held off, the German guns played on them in an almost incessant sweep of fire. All the ground held by the Division was plastered with shells, and the men wondered whether they would be blown to atoms or buried in one of the human waves that kept surging against them. The strain on the nerves of these new soldiers was terrible. The soaked, miserable figures could at last hardly stand from fatigue, but still they fought on almost blindly. It was an incessant "Stand to arms!" for the entire Division. The men could not afterwards tell how they kept themselves up. The dawn broke on Sunday in a green, hazy atmosphere, pierced with flashes of light from rifles and machine-guns. The men battled all day, and went out in shifts at night to the shell-holes to act as listening patrols. It was most necessary to guard against surprise in this way, as there was no barbed-wire available for putting up until the third night. In the darkness, some of our men obtained fresh bread

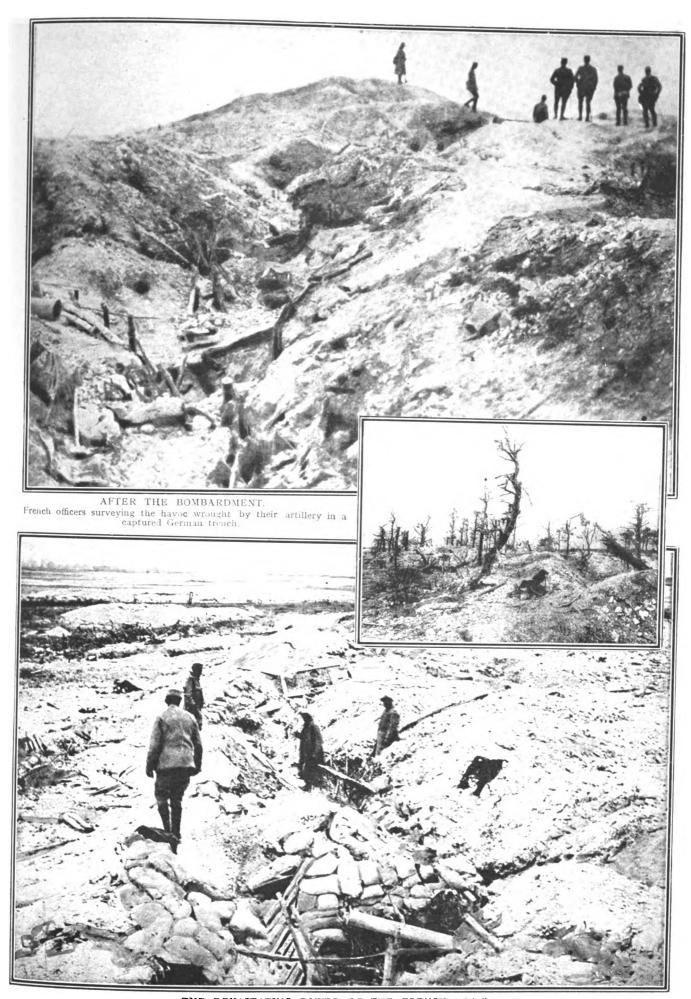
torial Division. First of all, it closed the gap between the French and British armies. Then, after helping to clear Loos, it protected the right flank of the British force, and enabled the Guards Division to force back the German line and assure our hold on the new position. The new Highland Division and the Territorial Division fairly won the chief honour of the war.

We have seen that the veterans of the 1st Division were held up, near Vermelles, in their advance between Loos and Hulluch. And, unfortunately, the check occurred

to the brigade on the right, which should have connected with the Highland Brigade that took Hill 70. Had our connecting Staffs been more expert, the vehe-

An unfortunate check

ment movement of the Highland Division might have been controlled and arrested at Hill 70, and touch maintained with the wing of the 1st Division which had been thrown back at Hill 69. The Scotsmen should not have been allowed to drive into the suburbs of Lens; they could have done more important work by stopping at Hill 70, and using what surplus energy they possessed in an advance along the German trenches northward, and thus weakening the resistance to the right brigade of the 1st Division



THE DEVASTATING POWER OF THE FRENCH "75's."

A first-line German trench in Champagne captured by the French after a preliminary bombardment which almost obliterated it. In centre: View of the Sabot Woods, with every tree destroyed and the ground rent and torn.



QUAINT HABITATIONS OF MEN ON ACTIVE SERVICE. Bungalows, lean-tos and dug-outs made by German soldiers in the chalk district of Champagne.

The left brigade of this Division, as has already been described, had made a daring advance to the outskirts of Hulluch, and at ten o'clock on the morning of September 25th there was only a narrow wedge of German forces dividing the advancing British Divisions between Loos and Hulluch.

And immediately north of the 1st Division there was another scene of victory. The 7th Division, reduced to little more than 2,000 strong in the first Ypres battle, then filled out with drafts from the New Army, and again wasted by ten months of trench warfare, and brought up to establishment by more of the new men, went forward to another great triumph. The Immortal Division combined the inspiration of a glorious tradition with the impetuosity of attack of the New Army. It was directed against the quarries, lying north of the road between Vermelles and Hulluch and defending the mining hamlet of Cité St. Elie, that straggled down the highway from La Bassée to Lens. St. Elie was practically the centre of

Perfect entrenchments at St. Elle the German position. The pitmen's houses had been transformed into a modern forteress by increasing the protection afforded by the cellars and placing the machine-

guns and quick-firers behind slag-heaps where only a howitzer shell, falling almost vertically, could strike them. The quarries were furnished with deep, narrow trenches, profound dug-outs, easily excavated from the chalk, and barbed cable entanglements. Further westward, on the line of low downs between the Quarries and the Vermelles Road, another network of underground ways was dug in the chalk, forming in the dry porous ground the most perfect form of entrenchments of the modern kind. For the chalk, with its covering of loose earth and its tendency

to break easily, was better shelter than hard rock in a modern artillery battle, and the ease with which the chalk could be cut and tunnelled gave the German engineers full opportunity of showing their skill.

full opportunity of showing their skill.

But the men of the 7th Division took the ridge and all its machine-gun redoubts with terrible swiftness; and, after trying to help the 1st Division, they swerved away

from Hulluch, and, storming the western edge of the quarries reaching the La

Bassée Road, broke into Cité St. Elie
in fierce house-to-house fighting. Then
from this pitmen's hamlet the leading brigade, headed by the 8th Gordon Highlanders, turned northward and

from this pitmen's hamlet the leading brigade, headed by the 8th Gordon Highlanders, turned northward and smashed its way through a great German earthwork fortress to the village of Haisnes. At Haisnes, where a company of the Gordons, under Lieutenant Adamson, broke through three lines of wire and held on from 8 a.m. to 5 p.m., fighting in the village, the enveloping movement of the 7th Division should have been supported by the 9th Division in a frontal attack. But this latter Division, with its two leading brigades—the 26th and the 28th—was checked by one of the most formidable fortresses in the world. On the first swell of chalk, running alongside the Vermelles-La Bassée Road, the German sappers had constructed northward, between the coal-mine Fosse 8 and the artillery position at Auchy, a masterpiece of fortification known as the Hohenzollern Redoubt.

This strong work was thrust out nearly five hundred yards in front of the German lines, so that its fire-trench was close to our parapets. The work was shaped like a bean, with its broadest end pointing north-west. The whole position was on a gentle rise, giving a wide field of fire, and was defended by an inordinate number of

machine-guns. They were so placed as to be almost safe from shell fire, and so arranged that their streams of bullets could converge all along the front and sweep their own fire-trenches. The dug-outs in which the garrison sheltered were thirty feet underground—the depth of a three-story house—and, being so massively roofed with chalk, they were beyond the power of penetration of the heaviest shell. No steel cupolas and slabs of concrete were employed; these mechanical aids to defensive strength

The Hohenzollern Redoubt would only have weakened the work. The more yielding chalk, used in sufficient thickness, was the best resisting material; and, as constructed, the

Hohenzollern Redoubt was comparable in strength with the terrible Labyrinth against which General Foch's army

had broken in the spring of the year.

Only a direct gas attack, carried out with a fair wind and maintained with full intensity for an hour, could have incapacitated the defenders of the Hohenzollern work. But, as we have observed in the Loos advance, on the morning of September 25th the wind was too southerly for a successful attack of this kind. When the cloud of smoke and fumes rolled from our position near Vermelles, it did not spread and thicken eastward, but floated rather towards the north, interfering in places with the movement of our own infantry. The troops garrisoning the Hohenzollern Redoubt were able to resist the attack upon them; for, though they lost some of their trenches in the fierce charge by the British troops, they won part of the position back by Saturday evening by means of their bomb magazine and machine-guns. Mean-

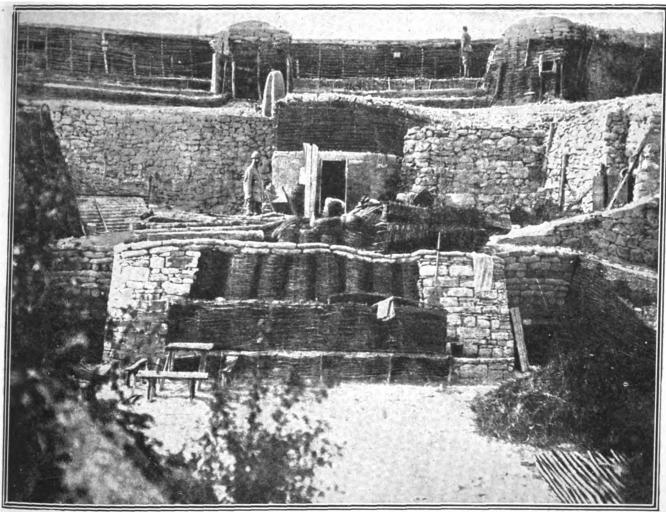
while, the gallant 26th Brigade managed, by terrific fighting around the big slag-heap and pithead buildings of Fosse 8, to capture this mine from which three communicating trenches ran into the Hohenzollern Redoubt. Our hold on the mine, however, remained weak, as the position was dominated by the guns and strong defences of the German troops at Auchy, on the west. The 26th Brigade, struggling with desperate courage against an enemy possessing larger and more accessible supplies of grenades, and having a cross-fire of artillery from the north-west at Auchy, the north-east at La Bassée, and the east at Douvrin, stood against continual counter-attacks on Saturday night, Sunday, and Sunday night. But when day broke on Monday the 4,000 British infantrymen, weakened by heavy losses and worn out by attacks delivered from three sides, slowly gave ground and fell back to the eastern part of the Hohenzollern Redoubt. They seem to have needed more bombthrowers and a larger supply of bombs,

but as the enemy's batteries flung a terrible curtain of shell fire between the newly-won ground and our bomb depots,

Why bombs ran short

it was practically impossible to bring forward abundant quantities of the special ammunition needed for the hand-to-hand struggle in the eight-foot-deep trenches. All the open field between the chalk rise and our original position was swept clean by the Hohenzollern machine-guns, and rows of miners' cottages ran along the neighbouring roads, affording excellent observation posts for the German artillery officers and emplacements for the lighter guns.

Using the heavy, wooden-handled grenades that can rip the sides out of a chalk trench, and cause blindness by



ELABORATION OF TRENCH CONSTRUCTION NECESSITATED BY MODERN ARTILLERY.

A corner in one of the first-line French trenches in Champagne massively constructed of blocks of stone and heavy timbers, and made in three tiers or storys.



OPEN-AIR WORKSHOP IN FRANCE. French soldiers making barbed - wire entanglements for the defence of the trenches.

their mere concussion, the Germans bombed us out of the trenches connecting with Fosse 8, and it was with marvellous heroism that the half-shattered brigade managed to stick to some part of the redoubt until fresh troops arrived. But as will afterwards be seen, the Hohenzollern work was to remain a place of contention between Briton and German for some considerable time, even as the Labyrinth for months was a scene of struggle between the French and the German. It was in the Hohenzollern trenches that our tacticians clearly learnt the lesson that all modern infan-trymen needed to be as highly

musketry; the hand-bomb was

more important than the bayonet, in a Every infantryman parallel trench battle, at least. It was wasting a decisive force at the critical a grenadier moment to have it divided into bayonets

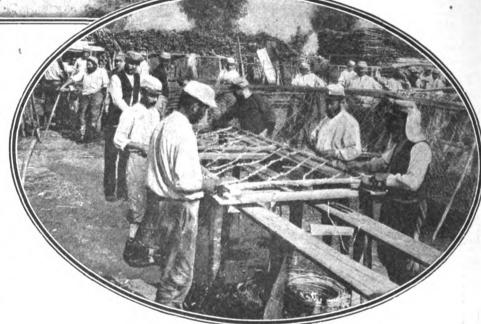
and bombers. Every man was needed in grenade work, and grenades were required by tens of thousands when a combat went on for forty-eight hours in deep, narrow, underground passages, with sand-bag barricades separating the groups in every trench, and protecting them from practically everything but hand-bombs and aerial torpedoes.

The Hohenzollern position might have been turned by a combined attack north and south. This, indeed, had been planned, our northern advance coming from Givenchy. But the troops at Givenchy—the 2nd South Staffs, 1st Liverpool Regiment, 1st King's Royal Rifles, and 1st Berkshires—were held up by unbroken wire and terribly smitten from the strongly fortified German work thrusting into our lines. The complete failures of the Givenchy attack and the Vermelles attack seriously limited our advance.

When night fell on Saturday evening, September 25th, and all the advantages of our long prepared attack were

exhausted, our new line between Cuinchy and Hill 70 was an intricate affair. The enemy retained a wedge in it between Loos and Hulluch, and the position round Fosse 8 and Haisnes was a maze of battle. The London Territorial Division, the Highland Division, and the 7th Division had made three piercing thrusts that each reached to the third German line. The 1st Division had also touched the enemy's final position of defence at Hulluch.

All these great results, however, had practically been achieved by eleven o'clock in the morning. The German commander did not bring up his principal reserves until two hours later—at I p.m. on Saturday. In the Loos and



trymen needed to be as highly MAKING NETS TO CATCH THE HUNS. trained in bomb-throwing as in Another open-air industrial centre, somewhere in France, where men were actively engaged in the musketry: the hand-homb was

Lens sector especially, where the enemy was thrown out of his third line by 9.30 a.m., and in the Fosse 8 and Haisnes sector, where the 8th Gordons reached the village by 8 a.m., there was ample time for British supports to advance; for the 24th Division was waiting close at hand at Noeux-les-Mines, and the 21st Division at Beuvry, east of Bethune. The Guards Division was preparing to march from Lillers to Noeux-les-Mines, and the 28th Division was advancing south from Bailleul.

The delay in bringing this powerful additional force into action against the retreating and badly shaken Germans was,

of course, partly due to the check to the Tenth French Army. The French were Fateful slowness not able to move until one o'clock on of reserves Saturday afternoon, and then, as pre-

viously mentioned, they swerved away from the prearranged Franco-British direction of attack. Nevertheless, this grave accident to the allied plan of operation does not fully explain the fateful slowness in the movement of the British reserves. Sir John French states in his despatch that the success of the London Territorial Division convinced him at 9.30 a.m. that there was no danger of a German rush between the

A day of

misfortune

British and French forces. He at once placed the 21st and 24th Divisions at the disposal of Sir Douglas Haig. Some of the brigades marched past the British commander at Noeux-les-Mines and Bethune. At 11.30 the heads of the two columns of 24,000 bayonets were both within three miles of our original trench-line. There were barely more than five miles to the decisive new positions which the Highlanders were holding at Hill 70, the men of the 1st Division at Hulluch, and the troops of the 7th Division at the quarries and along the La Bassée-Lens road. Twenty-

four thousand fresh British infantrymen, Something like a with their artillery and bomb supplies, thrown at once into the struggle against local disaster a half-beaten, outnumbered enemy. should have won a decision before the hostile reserve

forces came fully into action.

At half-past eleven on Saturday the distance between the leading troops of the 24th Division and the sorely-pressed brigade of Highlanders holding the western slope of Hill 70 was scarcely more than four and a half miles. Allowing for the mist and the rain and disorder of the newly-won ground, a couple of brigades could have come up with ammunition in two hours, arriving at 1.30 p.m. But no reserves arrived at the critical spot until nightfall, by which time the enemy had grown too strong to be broken. Sir John French gave all these details, adding that the Guards Division reached Noeux-les-Mines by 6 p.m. on Saturday. He does not state why the 40,000 men he sent forward to strengthen the attack and deal the great sledge-hammer stroke did not arrive in time in the firing-line.

After the long delay, the men were at last launched on

Sunday, September 26th, along the line between Hulluch and Hill 70 won by the Fourth Corps. But the German

commander, after more than twenty-four hours' grace, had been able to gather large forces, and by organising a strong offensive east of the La Bassée-Lens road, he anticipated the British advance and threw back the foremost brigades of the 21st and 24th Divisions. Something like a local disaster seemed to have taken place, but Sir John French remarked in his despatch that "reports regarding this portion of the action are very conflicting, and it is not possible to form an entirely just appreciation of what occurred in this part of the field." At the time of writing the affair is in process of field." At the time of writing the affair is in process of being thoroughly examined at the War Office, so it would be premature to attempt to pass judgment upon it. But it may be said the rumour runs that the troops were overmarched and unfed.

Sunday, September 26th, was a day of misfortune. One of the very finest of our younger generals, Sir Thompson Capper, who had commanded the 7th Division at the time of its great retreat from Ghent to Ypres, in October, 1914, was wounded during a terrific fight round the quarries, and died of his wounds. He was one of the greatest fighting men of Britain, adventurous and yet wary, magnificent in resistance, and also a grand thruster. The 9th Division, which was fighting near the 7th, round Fosse 8, at the eastern end of the Hohenzollern Redoubt, also lost its commander,

Major-General G. H. Thesiger, on the day Sir Thompson Capper died; and a third most able and distinguished general of division, Major-General F. D.

V. Wing, commanding the 12th Division, fell soon afterwards by the Hohenzollern Redoubt.

By Sunday evening the enemy's pressure against our new line became very severe. The Germans continually counter-attacked, and the German gunners, using shells

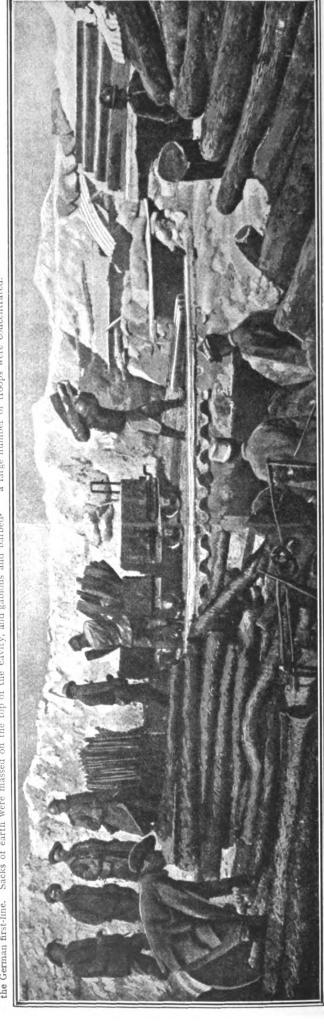


AFTER THE VICTORY: RETURN TO QUARTERS OF A FRENCH REGIMENT SPECIALLY MENTIONED IN ARMY ORDERS FOR ITS HEROISM AT THE TAKING OF SOUCHEZ.



Preparatory to a great offensive, a mine-crater was converted into a strong French position close to the German first-line. Sacks of earth were massed on the top of the cavity, and gabions and barbed-

Behind this rude but ingenious and effective stronghold wire were erected in lavish profusion. Be a large number of troops were concentrated.



Apart from a continuous bombardment of the German positions, our ally resorted to an elaborate after the explosions in order to turn them into ministure forts, or magazine and artillery storehouses.

System of mining the enemy trenches, and making strenuous efforts to capture the mine-craters. This photograph shows the interior of one of these captured mine-craters. A light railway for the tree-trunks shelters are being built.

FRENCH SOLDIERS TURNING A MINE-CRATER IN CHAMPAGNE INTO A MINIATURE FORT,

containing torture gas and prussic-acid gas, tried to fill their lost trenches with poison fumes. But our men held on to the western slope of Hill 70, and the road from Loos to La Bassée as far as the western cottages of Hulluch. By dawn on Monday morning our hold on Fosse 8 was lost, and the enemy prepared to make a grand attempt to win back all his lost positions. It was then that the Guards Division, under Lord Cavan, made one of the most famous charges in the history of the Guards.

The men were at last fully representative of the Motherland of the British Isles. The ancient Coldstreams were the sole inheritors of the traditions of the new model army of Oliver Cromwell; their comrades the Grenadiers dated from the former age of hand-bomb warfare, and were first formed of exiled Royalists who returned when Cromwell died; the Scots Guards were raised soon after the Restoration; their organisation was at last completed by the Irish Guards, formed after the South African War, and the

New glory of the Guards

Welsh Guards, created during the present conflict. Their numbers had increased from a Brigade to a Division of 12,000 bayonets; and by a happy chance there

was a Division of the Prussian Guard fighting in the Loos salient. It is only fair to our county regiments to state that though our Guards were a splendid body of fighting men, they were not unequalled in valour and skill. The Worcesters, the West Kents, and a number of other regiments in France, Flanders, Gallipoli, and Mesopotamia, had proved themselves peers of the victors of Landrecies. Our Guards were fine representatives of Anglo-Celtic races; they did not pretend, like the Prussian Guard, to

stand on a pedestal above the other troops. The Division had only been formed in August, 1915, when the Guards Brigade separated from the 2nd Division, and began to train as a complete divisional unit. The new Division came into the Battle of Loos with a high resolve to make a name for itself, so that it combined the vehement spirit of a new formation with the hard-earned experience of war and noble traditions of veterans. On the morning of September 27th the Guardsmen held the captured German trenches from the north end of Loos to a point five hundred yards south of Hulluch. The 1st Brigade stretched towards Hulluch, the 2nd Brigade extended from Loos, and the 3rd Brigade was held in reserve. The general scheme of Lord Cavan's attack was for the 1st Brigade to hold on to their trenches and form a pivot for the movement, while the 2nd Brigade attacked the chalk-pit near the La Bassée-Lens road, and stormed the Mine-pit 14-A, south of the chalk-pit. Then it was arranged that the 3rd Brigade should march through Loos, and attack Hill 70 when the more northerly positions had been

From their trenches the Guards could clearly see across the valley the points they were about to attack. There was the white gash of the chalk-pit, with two ruined red cottages beside it, and a long narrow spinney running in a south-westerly direction in front of the pit. Southward, a little distance from the spinney, was the coal-mine Pit 14-A, crowned by a tall chimney rising from a large ugly building. Close to this building and between it and the Lens Road, were a small red house and a German machinegun redoubt, with a sand-bagged house and a network of deep trenches. This was known as the Keep, and eastward of it across the Lens road, near the north-eastern slope of Hill 70, was a wood—Bois Hugo—full of entrenched machine-gun parties, whose terrible enfilading field of fire greatly strengthened the defences of the mine and the

At four o'clock in the afternoon of September 27th the Irish Guards, the leaders of the 2nd Brigade, leapt from their trenches and advanced in open order from the spinney. Capturing the lower part of this wood, they rapidly extended southward. This was done in order to help the Scots Guards in their attack on the mine-pit. The Scotsmen

doubled down the hill, and with the German batteries raking them with heavy shrapnel fire, they went on swiftly, and reached the road running from Loos to Hulluch. Then, climbing up the next rise, they linked on with the right flank of the Irish Guards, and the Gaels of Erin and Caledonia then swept down together towards the mine-pit and the Keep. A London regiment, holding the flankline south of Loos, watched this extraordinary charge with deep admiration. One non-commissioned officer wrote: "While we sat and dodged the shells and bullets, the grandest scene I have ever seen in my life occurredthe Guards advancing in artillery formation over about three-quarters of a mile, completely in the open in broad daylight. At last the German gunners got news of it, and the shells they sent over came in a stream. The whistles and explosions were incessant, and the air must have been black with flying shells, if they had been visible through the thick smoke. Only half a dozen were touched. How we cheered them when they slowly, and in perfect order, crossed over us, and passed on! They were the grand



WHERE SHATTERED TREE-TRUNKS MARKED THE PASSAGE OF THE STORM.

Corner of a battlefield over which the French advanced. The limbs of the tree in the foreground bear witness to the effect of the German shells.

fellows who were in reserve to us at Givenchy, and now we were in reserve to them. Can you imagine the ordinary battle-pictures of troops advancing under hell's own shell fire? I thought such a thing was impossible. Now I not only know it is true, but saw it all."

The losses of the Guards from artillery fire were fairly light. Apparently the charge was made so swiftly and unexpectedly that the German gunners did not get on the target, and, misjudging the operation, made a curtain of fire along the Lens road, while our men were massing against the mine-pit and Keep at a point a quarter of a mile away from the road. But the German machine-

guns in Bois Hugo were terribly effective. Enfiladed from When the Scots Guards charged south-Bois Hugo ward from the spinney their lines were

riddled by fire from the mine-pit buildings and the Keep redoubt, and mowed down by sidelong streams of bullets from Bois Hugo. The colonel was wounded, and eleven other officers were killed or disabled; but the Scots Guards, though reduced to a remnant, charged onward. One party under Captain Cuthbert fought into the houses round the mine, while a platoon under Lieutenant Ayres reached the mine and the Keep. Lieutenant Ritchie was a

Digitized by Google

subaltern of the Grenadier Guards, who had come up two companies strong to support the Scotsmen. The enemy's enfilading machine-gun fire from the wood swept most of the Grenadiers away, and prevented any further support from arriving. Lieutenant Ritchie was severely wounded in the right arm, but when his captain fell, and his company

was checked, he reorganised the men and led them again to the assault. With the help of a corporal he bombed and destroyed a German machine-gun and its

team on the second floor of the Keep; and with Captain Cuthbert gallantly held on to the mine until the two of them were almost the only survivors. When the position became untenable, Lieutenant Ritchie told his men to withdraw, but he went forward under heavy fire and reconnoitred the enemy's defences, making some valuable discoveries. For six hours the young officer worked in great pain before

he retired to a dressing station. Meanwhile the Scots and Grenadier Guards had dug themselves in on a line running from the south end of the spinney towards Loos. The Irish Guards were on the east side of the spinney, and the Coldstream Guards, supporting the Irishmen on the left, had seized the north-east outskirts of the chalk-pit. The general result of the first charge by the 2nd Brigade was a failure; but the way in which two companies of the Scots and one company of the Grenadiers retired under a cross-fire from the wood was magnificent. The men marched as coolly and steadily as if it were a movement on parade.

On the following day the attack on the mine-pit was resumed by the Coldstream Guards, who advanced from the south of the chalk-pit, while the Irish Guards tried to keep down the enfilading fire from Bois Hugo. Lieutenant Riley, by a superb effort, managed to reach the works around the mine; but again the enemy's cross-fire prevented supports being moved up, and after heavy losses

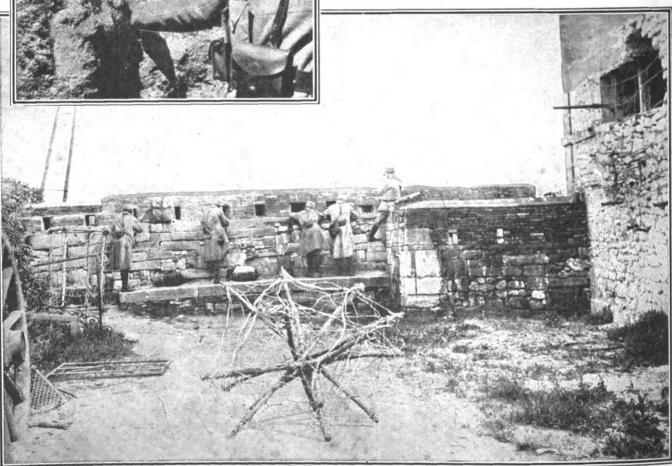
the Coldstreams fell back. It was while the attack on the mine was proceeding that Lord Cavan brought up his reserve —the 3rd Brigade—for a stroke against

Welsh Guards.

baptism of fire

Hill 70. As the 2nd Brigade could not hold the mine, they were used to protect the flank of the charging troops. There was a gap left in our line between the spinney and the hill, but machine-guns were arranged to sweep the open space, should the enemy attempt to thrust through it. The 3rd Brigade was made up of battalions of the Grenadier, Scots, and Welsh Guards, the last of whom received their baptism of fire in this famous action. As the brigade reached the crest of the ridge running north-west of Loos, their silhouetted figures were perceived by the enemy and swept by a tornado of shrapnel fire. But the men went steadily on; the leading battalion of the Grenadier Guards entered Loos on the north-west, a Welsh battalion





EXAMPLES OF FRENCH INGENUITY IN TRENCH WORK AND PLAY.

French soldiers at a barricade at Craonnelle at the moment of an alarm; in the foreground a "spider," a portable wire entanglement which, being light, could be thrown in any direction whence attack might come. Above: A mechanical toy made in the trenches.



ROOMY, BUT WELL PROTECTED: OFFICIAL FRENCH CAMERA PICTURE OF A NOVEL FORM OF FIRST-LINE TRENCH IN CHAMPAGNE.

entered on the west, and the Scots Guards followed the Grenadiers on the north-west. As they came out of the communication trenches the German batteries rained so tremendous a fire of gas-shells upon them that they had to halt and put on smoke-helmets. The colonel of the Grenadiers was badly gassed, and had to leave the command to Major Ponsonby. The main work of the attack was entrusted to the Welsh Guards with part of the Grenadier Guards in support. The charging lines were first met with a comparatively slight rifle fire as they moved over the dead ground. But when they reached the crest of Hill 70, and their figures were thrown out against the sky-line, the short-range fire of the enemy caused heavy losses.

It had been thought, from information given by the troops who had fought on the hill, that the German trenches and machine-gun redoubts were constructed on the north slope of the rise. The rushing attack of the Guards had been designed to storm such a position. But

On the crest of
Hill 70
Night was falling as the terrible struggle
on the crest began, and the Welshmen

held on for a time with grim courage. Captain Rhys Williams, commanding the machine-guns, was wounded; but after having his wound dressed he returned to his guns, and controlled them till midnight, having all the time to lie on his back by reason of his severe injuries. Private Grant, of the Welsh Guards, also distinguished himself by making two attempts to bring forward ammunition to the firing-line under heavy and continuous shelling. By his success in his second attempt he enabled his comrades, fighting close to the German trenches, to keep off their enemies. Private Grant also made two

endeavours to carry in a wounded officer, and after having one helper shot by his side, he rescued his countryman. He carried messages under a heavy artillery bombardment, and at last was himself badly wounded while taking a wounded man on his back towards the dressing station. Under cover of darkness the Welsh Guards were relieved by the Scots; and as the relieving troops found they could not hope to cling to the farthest line reached by the Welsh,

they withdrew behind the crest of the hill, and there firmly established their position. Then under a continuous bombardment the Brigades held on to the

Every man a hero

western slope of Hill 70, the spinney, and the chalk-pit. At the pit the 1st Coldstream Guards had essayed to work round to Bois Hugo. But the whole ground in front of the chalk-pit was covered by the enemy's machine-guns, and in trying to rescue our wounded near the wood, Sergeant Hopkins was sniped, and had in turn to be rescued by Lance-Corporal Printer, who had brought in the first wounded man.

The charges of the Guards Division almost restored the line we had lost on September 26th, when the 21st and 24th Divisions fell back. Moreover, the London Territorial Division, after capturing a wood on the right of the Guards, on September 27th, made another gallant advance from our southern flank the next day, and gained more ground, taking a field-gun and several machine-guns. By this time however, the enemy had fully recovered from our first onrush, and the difficulties in the way of any immediate farther British advance were enormous. Loos was a smoke-pit, smothered in poison gases from the enemy's shells, and excavated by great howitzer projectiles. The Germans had placed mines under the church-tower, and wished to reach them with high-

explosive shells and wreck the town. But Captain Edward Blogg, a London Territorial engineer, found and unloaded the mines, and, working under a terrific shell fire, saved

the position.

Sir John French again became anxious about his right flank, for the salient he had made in the enemy's line from the Double Crassier to Hill 70 and Hulluch, and back to the Hohenzollern Redoubt, necessitated a great extension of his forces. The Tenth French Army south of Lens had been so strongly opposed that its movement did not assist and support our main line of thrust, still held by the Territorials of London. In these circumstances, the British commander put the matter before General Joffre, who asked General Foch, commanding the northern group of French armies, to render assistance. The upshot was that the Ninth French Army Corps arranged to take over the ground extending from the French left through the village of Loos to the western slope of Hill 70. The relief was begun on September 30th and completed on the two following nights. There was after wards considerable dispute over our position on Hill 70. The facts appear to be that after the Highland brigade was bombed from the crest on September 25th the hill was lost, and partly recovered by the Welsh and Grenadier Guards on September 27th, and our new position on the western slope was taken over by the Ninth French Army Corps and afterwards lost by them. Our military authorities hesitated to explain the situation for the sound reason that Hill 70 had ceased to be their affair, and it would not have become them to discuss a matter of purely French interest. There was, moreover, an objection to giving the enemy information about the part played by the Ninth French Army in taking over part of the Loos salient,

and enabling our troops to concentrate in greater strength for the defence of the line running from the spinney and the chalk-pit and along the Lens-La Bassée

road towards Hulluch, and there turning eastward to the Hohenzollern Redoubt, and thence back towards Vermelles.

During the last days of September the Hohenzollern Redoubt was the scene of fierce and continuous fighting. The enemy, indeed, attacked all along the salient. But the loss of part of the redoubt galled him most, and his efforts to recover it were of extraordinary violence and persistence. Among the British troops that greatly distinguished themselves in the Hohenzollern work were the 7th Seaforths, the 8th Gordon Highlanders, and the 8th Royal Highlanders, who fought from September 25th

to September 27th. Towards the end of September and the beginning of October the 2nd East Surreys, the 1st Welsh Regiment, and the Yorkshire Light Infantry gallantly maintained the defence of the main work and of the trench known as "Little Willie."

Here and there the hostile bombers gained a little ground, but every German attack in force broke down

Here and there the hostile bombers gained a little ground, but every German attack in force broke down with heavy loss under the fire of our guns, Maxims, and rifles. All along the front our troops laboured with sustained energy to consolidate and strengthen the ground they had conquered. It was known that the German commander was gathering troops in great numbers for a supreme counter-attack. Five army corps were being moved from the Russian front for an effort to retrieve the defeats at Loos and in Champagne; Belgium was being almost stripped of its garrisons in order to get overwhelming concentrations of infantry against the

two new salients made by the British and French armies. More artillery from the siege-trains brought from Russia was got

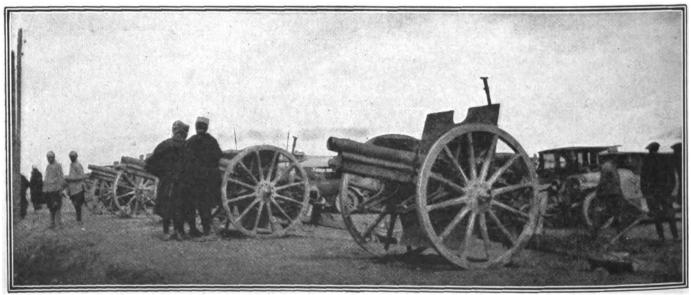
into position, and some hundreds of trainloads of large

shells were brought behind the western front.

The German Staff had three courses open—first, to attack the new British salient; second, to attack the new French salient in Champagne; and third, to make strong simultaneous attacks against both of the new allied positions. The first course was adopted. It was resolved to attack only the First British Army and the French corps reinforcing it on the Loos-Hulluch-Hohenzollern front. By selecting only one objective, the German Staff was able to strike with all possible energy at the nation which was most to be feared; for Britain was still engaged in organising her armies, and the military result of a severe set-back to Sir John French's men was, so the enemy calculated, likely to have moral and perhaps political consequences. 'So General de Castelnau's army in Champagne was only held by a reinforced line of bombers, while the great new German mass of infantry was brought up to Lens, Hill 70, the eastern part of Hulluch, and the northern part of the Hohenzollern Redoubt.

Happily, the great movement of German troops was observed by our airmen, who were at last able to discover that the concentration was taking place close to our lines. One of our scouting patrols also heard in the darkness the click of weapons, and the distant tramp of feet. It was therefore clear that the enemy intended to deliver an overwhelming frontal attack in an endeavour to break

through by sheer weight of numbers.



A FEW OF THE MANY FRENCH TROPHIES WON IN CHAMPAGNE.

A group of the formidable German "77's" outclassed by the still more formidable French "75's." These guns were taken by the French after heavy fighting in Champagne.



FRENCH WOMEN IN THE LINE OF FIRE.

Quite one of the most remarkable features of the war was the apathy of civilians caught in the zone of operations. Many preferred to remain in their homes to swelling the bands of refugees. This photograph shows two French women running for shelter during a violent bombardment

In the patches of woods east of the Lens-LaBassée road, beginning with the Bois Hugo and continuing along the spinneys extending towards Hulluch, our airmen reckoned that there were four German Divisions massed against the trenches held by our troops.

The battle that followed was really a triumph for our airmen; for it was won decisively and with exceeding little cost on the information they had obtained by their daring reconnoitring swoops through the mist and rain. From their information Sir Douglas Haig, commanding our First Army, prepared to surprise the men who were

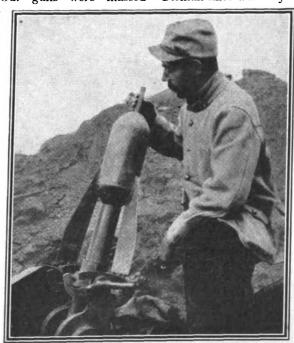
preparing to surprise him. Our guns were massed less than ten yards apart, as though we intended another intense bombardment to clear the way for another great infantry attack. The French Army assisted us with many of their wonderful 3 in. quick-firers, capable of breaking up advancing infantry attack by a semi-auto-matic movement. But our own infantry, instead of getting their ladders ready and packing their ammunition for quick transport, deepened their bomb-proof shelters, strengthened their parapets, put networks of wire over weak parts of their trenches to keep out hand-bombs, and extended their magazines of hand-grenades. Our observing artillery officers carefully studied all objects by which the ranges of every enemy movement could instantly be calculated, and then very quietly, on the morning of October 8th, the First British Army calmly awaited the grand German counter-stroke.

But the German plan went

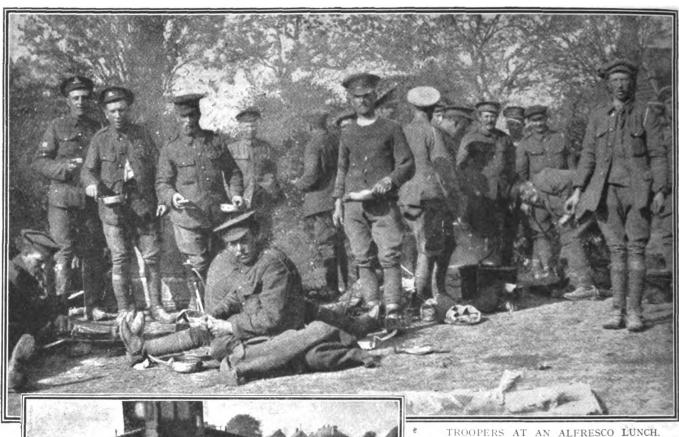
wrong; for it was our guns that suddenly opened the hurricane fire. In the afternoon a ranging shot from behind our lines went over the wood beyond the Lens-La Bassée road. A branch rose in the air, showing the range had been found. Then gun after gun, battery after battery, opened fire and began to smash up the trenches in which some eighty thousand grey figures were expectantly packed. The wood was destroyed by our fire, and the surrounding German trenches, clear white streaks and glittering zigzags shining from the green slopes, were marks that no gunner could miss; for the distance from the British to the German lines was only three to four hundred yards.

The German batteries tried to assist the plan of attack by beating down our terrific fire and breaking up our front trenches. But the difference between the effect of our shells on the tightly-packed German lines and the effect of the German shells on our lightly-manned ditches told on the mind of the hostile commander.

The Germans were suffering horribly. There was no time to withdraw them; they had to be launched with the utmost speed to prevent them perishing where they stood. They came out in four thick lines, shoulder to shoulder - the old massed formation of the German infantry attack. Through our batteries rang the order "Gunfire!"—meaning that every piece of artillery was to fire as it liked at the utmost possible speed. In the trenches our officers did not try to direct their men; they each took a rifle and pelted lead into the nearest grey multitude.



WINGED INSTRUMENT OF DEATH. Type of aerial torpedo used with deadly effect by the men in the French trenches.



NOW SILENT IN THE CAUSE OF THE FATHERLAND.

Captured Krupp gun which excited the interest of British and French soldiers at a railway-siding in Northern France

No leadership was necessary; the targets were so immense and so near that the soldiers of the New Army were loosened for the first time for the "mad minute" of rapid fire. Almost a year had passed since the new German formations at Ypres had given the men of the Regular Army an opportunity of showing what could be done with the Lee-Enfield rifle, with one cartridge in the breech and ten cartridges in the magazine. Since then the "mad minute" had faded into the legend of the British Army, and though all the new recruits had been carefully trained in rapid fire tactics, it was scarcely expected that a large occasion for this kind of musketry would arise

Inspiration of the again. In fact it was commonly thought the German commanders had fully learnt the lesson that the British soldier could

stop a mass infantry attack at fifty yards from his trenches. Field-Marshal von Heeringen had observed to a neutral war correspondent that this was the great new fact in the war.

Apparently the German Staff underestimated the marksmanship of our New Army. While allowing that

TROOPERS AT AN ALFRESCO LUNCH.

Members of a cavalry regiment enjoying a hurried meal behind the lines prior to going into action in the neighbourhood of Ypres.

the long-service men of the regular British battalions could break, by rapid musketry fire, any frontal attack, the German leaders fancied that the new British troops would not stand so steady and shoot so straight and quick as the "Old Contemptibles" had done. Herein the German Staff made a great mistake. To all our new troops, entering on their musketry course, the tradition of the "mad minute" had been a fierce inspiration. They had striven their utmost to work up to the proper number of aimed rounds a minute, and had nursed their rifles in barracks, practising the famous trigger play that makes a musket almost equal to a machine-gun.

Some connoisseurs of German mass infantry tactics did not think much

of the Loos affair; even the Guards, who lost for a minute a part of their Mass tactics at Loos

trenches, did not praise their enemies. The general opinion of the "Old Contemptibles" was that the German had lost pace and power since his charges at Mons and round the Marne and above the Aisne. He came on slower, and did not get so near our trenches as a rule. When struck down he took longer to rally, and in his second assault he was easier to hammer to a standstill. But it must be remembered that our troops in the old days had always had the odds in artillery power heavy against them. Never before had we been able to hound the enemy into desperate battle by means of our gun fire. The counter-attack at Loos was the first occasion in which a German commander used mass infantry tactics against a British line backed by an artillery power equal to his.

It is very unlikely that a German commander will use again such tactics in similar circumstances. Our men hitched themselves on the parapets to get a good field of fire, and they flung out lead until their rifles grew almost too hot to hold. The machine-gunners had as targets solid blocks at three hundred yards and less distance. The



THE MILITARY KITCHEN: A POPULAR RENDEZVOUS.

British soldiers lining up for their rations. The neighbourhood of the camp was turned into a quagmire through inclement weather.

gunners of the light field artillery made the paint on their pieces bubble, blister, and flake off by their rate of fire, and the men were half deaf for days after. The four Divisions charged in four lines—south-west, south-east, and north-east of Loos.

Before the eyes of our men was a long smoke cloud from our bombardment which had broken the enemy up in the woods. Then, emerging from the fog was a grey wall of men, looming onward, falling back, coming forward again, and finally melting into blotches on the grass. "This

Getting their
own back

ing into blotches on the grass. "This pays for the ninth of May," said one British soldier, in an interval between the ebb and resurgence of the gray masses.

ebb and resurgence of the grey masses. "Getting a bit of our own back at last," remarked another. As a matter of fact, we had had altogether some 50,000 casualties in our advance on Loos and Hulluch and in our checks at Vermelles, Cuinchy, Fosse 8, and the upper part of the Hohenzollern Redoubt. We captured at this time 26 guns, 3 mine-throwers, 40 machine-guns, and 3,000 men and officers. In an ordinary way, 3,000 prisoners would





Jolly Britons working a light railway which they constructed in connection with their camp to facilitate transport. In circle: Two British officers in an observation pit.

mean in add.tion 3,000 dead Germans and 9,000 wounded, making the enemy's total casualties 15,000. But the house-to-house fighting was very fierce, and the combats round the slag-heaps and in the deep mazes of trenches were extremely violent. In many places the Germans fought on to the last moment, and only offered to surrender when they had done all the killing they possibly could. Therefore their dead probably much outnumbered their surrendering men, and their casualties were heavily increased by the terrific preliminary bombardment, in which something like a million shells were flung from our guns. It is likely that the total German losses in the first week of the battle were at least half ours. Ours were 20,000 for the Ypres-Givenchy front, and 50,000 for the Cuinchy-Loos front. So we can provisionally put the German losses in the first phase of the battle at 35,000.

But in the great, vain counter-attack of October 8th there were left before the British and French trenches from nine to ten thousand dead Germans. There were probably two thousand more German dead in the woods, and of wounded men there were over twenty-five thousand. The

the First British Army, in the battle in which Kitchener's men were for the first time fully engaged, showed itself animated by the qualities that make for final victory. Having regard to the fact that we had suddenly to improvise our military power on a modern Continental scale, and build up a framework for two million men at a time when our regular forces were wasted by thirteen months' conflict, we could not expect to manifest at once the

perfection of movement attained in huge national armies with a generation or more of training. We had to learn on the battlefield, and, like the Romans of

Our school the battlefield

old, look forward to purchasing by hard experience the means of winning the final victory.

During the repulse of the German counter-attack, which was especially fierce round the chalk-pit north of Hill 70, our troops, after throwing the enemy back, captured a German trench between the quarries and the hamlet of Cité St. Elie. The enemy only succeeded in penetrating our front line at one point in the southern communicating trench of the Hohenzollern Redoubt, and here he was

promptly driven out by bombers. The 2nd and 3rd Battalions of the Coldstream Guards had an exciting time of it. Some men of the 2nd Battalion held a sap-head in St. Elie Avenue, and practically the whole of this sap-head was smashed up by the German guns, leaving only the barricade standing Then when the German infantry attacked and reached the barricade and got on our parapet, our supply of hand-grenades ran out. Private J. W. Chisholm, Private F. Moore, and Sergeant R. J. Vale obtained more bombs, and, charging over the open ground, where the enemy bombed them as they ran, the three heroic Guardsmen smashed the Germans from the sap-head, and held the position under heavy bomb and rifle fire, while their officer, Lieutenant Henry C. Loyd, directed them with great skill and courage. Private Chisholm was wounded, but he fought on, and by his bravery and resource helped to save what might have been a very critical situation.

These three Guardsmen were awarded the Distinguished

Conduct Medal, which was also won by six privates of the 3rd Battalion of the Coldstreams—E. Anderson, A. Chillingworth, H. Londesbrough, H. A. Teesdale, H. Smith, and W. White. The enemy took the trench on the left of that occupied by the six Guardsmen, and some sixty German bombers came pouring into our position, smashing their way down our line by their rain of high-explosives. The condition of things was very dangerous, but the six Guardsmen rushed forward towards the enemy, and by the skill and the rapidity with which they used their hand-grenades they outfought at least ten times their number, and bombed the German bombers foot by foot down the trench, and then captured the whole of it.

It would be impossible in our space to describe all the

It would be impossible in our space to describe all the deeds of bravery of the First Army, in the conflicts on the Loos front; but we may attempt roughly to group some of the regiments that won marks of distinction in the long and furious battle. On Hill 70 the 7th Battalion of the King's Own Scottish Borderers produced an officer of great gallantry in Captain Dennis, who, though wounded in the trenches before the assault, led his men until, being



SUBLIME INDIFFERENCE TO DANGER.

To show so much as a finger above a trench was to invite death. Yet, in a spirit of superb self-sacrifice, soldiers were found, like the courageous Belgian in this photograph, who were not only willing but eager to crawl along the parapet to discover the meaning of any suspicious movement on the part of the enemy.

total enemy losses exceeded ours. Though the casualty lists on both sides were in the end about equal, the Germans had a larger proportion of dead, while we had a very remarkable multitude of men suffering only from slight shrapnel wounds. In other words, our men, who were mostly civilians when the war opened, and who later were checked in their musketry training by our lack of a large national magazine of rifles, took two or three of the most formidably entrenched lines in the world, and ultimately inflicted upon the enemy heavier losses than they themselves sustained. And only some defect in the handling of the

two reinforcing Divisions—the 21st and
British disadvantages 24th—saved the enemy's front from being
broken during the first phase of the
attack. Our Army, moreover, laboured
under the heavy disadvantages of being unsupported in the
drive on Lens by the Tenth French Army and of having a
dangerous gap to guard between Bully les Mines and Notre
Dame de Lorette.

It may fairly be said that, despite the mischances and mistakes which made a grand decisive success impossible,



WOUNDED FRIEND AND FOE FIND This little village church in Northern France was used by the French Red Cross workers to shelter wounded soldiers. Comrades and enemies—yet all of the tragic fraternity of suffering—lay in rows on piles of straw

SANCTUARY IN A FRENCH CHURCH.
down both sides of the church. Here, under the richly-carved pulpit and images of the saints and martyrs, they found sanctuary, though the danger zone of withering fire was only a few yards from the porch.



Some Belgian officers who faced the camera as cheerily as they faced the enemy attacks in their indomitably defended part of the line near the coast.

IN READINESS FOR THE ENEMY'S EXPECTED ATTACK. Machine-gun concealed behind a pile of earth sacks. Two Belgian soldiers are seen waiting for the enemy to attack. Sir John French reported that the part taken by the Belgian troops "was very effective in holding the enemy in front of them to his position."

again wounded, he was carried back to the dressingstation, from which he disappeared. He caught up with his company on the hill, and was wounded a third time when leading them on. The 8th Battalion Scaforth Highlanders, which took part in the first great charge on Hill 70, had a man of noble character—Private Holligan.

Some deeds of bravery

After having one arm shattered by a bullet, Holligan attended to other wounded men until, after refusing to leave his post, he at last collapsed, having both

his legs wounded as well as his arm.

The 10th Gordon Highlanders had a very remarkable officer in Temporary Second-Lieutenant John Bruce Wood. This hero began to attract attention in the attack on Loos, where he took the extraordinary number of two hundred and seventy-five prisoners. After marching them back under heavy fire, he returned with ammunition to the

men in the firing-line, and assisted in its distribution. He went forward with his company in the marvellous swoop on Lens, and when the check occurred he was the only officer left. He rallied the remnant of his company on the western slope of Hill 70, and by fine bravery and resourcefulness he held the position until relief came. The 13th Battalion of the Royal Scots also produced a very remarkable man in Temporary Second-Lieutenant Alexander Linton. This Second-Lieutenant Alexander Linton. This gallant subaltern, with only a few men, ganant subattern, with only a few men, held the hill at midnight on September 26th, when practically everyone else had withdrawn. The enemy's gun and machinegun fire was terrible, and the British position was Lothian subaltern's veiled in drifts of poison heroism gas, through which at inGerman infantry charged expecting to find

tervals the German infantry charged expecting to find the British position evacuated. But Lieutenant Linton continually rallied the handful of Lothians and held on to his ground.

Sergeant F. McAlear and Lance-Corporal G. McEvoy, also of the Lothian Regiment, showed great coolness and fearlessness at Hill 70 on September 26th, when our trenches had been abandoned owing to the violence of the German counter-attack. Another Scottish Battalion that won fame on Hill 70 was the 10th Cameronians. They also produced a hero in Temporary Second-Lieutenant Leonard Cecil Paton, who had done fine work in training the brigade bombers. On the night of September 25th, when other troops were compelled to withdraw from the enemy's redoubt on the eastern slopes of Hill 70, Lieutenant Paton remained at his post with five wounds, including one arm broken and a gunshot wound, inflicted at pointblank range (twenty yards), in his thigh. His superior officer had to order him to retire. Another Scotsman of the great Highland Division who was averse from retiring was Captain Walter William Macgregor, attached to the 9th Gordon Highlanders. During the action round Loos on September 26th, when the Germans were trying to turn our flank, Captain Macgregor received an order to retreat. He withdrew to the enemy's first line; but as this position did not seem to him right, he called on two companies and led them back through Loos, and

reached his advance defensive position, Gallant Gordon's close to the enemy. There he held on until reinforcements arrived; and refusal to retire throwing these into the fight, he beat off all the enemy's attempts to turn our flank, holding on to his line until

daylight.

Meanwhile, the famous 15th Highland Division, with its leading brigade at Hill 70, was reinforced by the 9th Battalion of the Yorkshire Light Infantry, the 10th Yorkshires, the 12th Northumberland Fusiliers, and the 8th Somerset Light Infantry. All four Battalions produced fighting men of distinction. Temporary-Lieutenant Arthur Beach Hatt, of the 8th Somerset Light Infantry, equalled the achievement of the Lothians' Lieutenant Linton, by

holding on to Hill 70 on the night of September 25th with only a sergeant and six men until he and his little handful were left alone against the enemy. Lance-Corporal McKelvey, of the 9th Yorks Light, Infantry, led his Yorks Light Infantry, men up the hill until he was wounded. He then went forward until he received a second wound. and again, with wonderful coolness and bravery he led his men and encouraged them until a third wound completely disabled him. Private H. Rendall, of the 12th Northumberland Fusiliers, remained on the hill during the terrible night of September 25th, when his comrades on either side of him were killed. Working at his machine-gun till daybreak, under heavy and continuous fire, he greatly helped our army to retain its hold on the important slope. Corporal G. Stubbs, of the 10th Yorkshires, also distinguished

himself by his utter contempt for death on the historic Saturday night on Hill 70 by conveying messages through the enemy's tornado of shell and shrapnel, thus main-



Formidable type of French mortar after being discharged, Centre : Gunner in charge testing the level. taining communications between our headquarters and the extreme point of the British wedge.

NEW TYPE OF FRENCH MORTAR.

Among the London Territorial Division holding the flank from Grenay to the wood and chalk-pit south of Loos, near Hill 70, Major Adrian Charles Gordon, of the 6th London Brigade of the Royal Field Artillery, was conspicuous. He reconnoitred the German lines

on September 25th, and although under a heavy fire, he captured twelve of the enemy at the point of his revolver, after shooting one man. Second-Lieutenant Carr, of the





APPALLING ENGINE OF DESTRUCTION USED IN A SEVENTY-HOUR BOMBARDMENT. This weapon had a calibre of 22 cm. (about 9 inches), and was an appalling engine of destruction. Mortars of this type were used in the terrific seventy-hour bombardment at the great Champagne battle. Left: Loading and fixing the range. Right: Firing the gun.



refused to retire, and continued his bombing work until the position was won. Another man of the same Battalion, Private C. H. I. Stewart, was wounded when carrying in a wounded man but he refused to go to the base hospital, and fought on for four more days with extreme gallantry. When the Division was most severely pressed, on September 27th, one of the subalterns of the St. Pancras Battalion, Second-Lieutenant Pusch, collected some of the Grenadier Guards, and launched them in a bomb attack from the chalk-pit against the wood, and brought about the capture of the position. Lieutenant Pusch may be regarded as the flower of London chivalry, for on September 25th he first showed

FEEDING DEATH IN CHAMPAGNE. Zouaves working a machine-gun during the great advance in Champagne made by the French Army, in which they more than maintained their fighting fame.

24th London Regiment, was the first of the London Territorial Division to win distinction. Before his Battalion moved out to attack from Les Brebis hamlet, he was directing the removal of the grenades of the division. Seeing that the fuse of a bomb had become ignited, he picked it up and carried it from the dug-

At the Double out; but before he could get cover, it exploded and

wounded him in the face. But he saved a great explosion which would have killed many men, and by destroying the divisional bomb reserve, would have seriously weakened the London Territorials.



FRENCH COLONIAL TROOPS AFTER THE VICTORY IN CHAMPAGNE. Moroccan troops returning after the fighting, tired but elated, and more formidable than ever.

At the slag-heap of the Double Crassier, the first important position captured by the "Terriers," Sergeant Christey, of the Civil Service Rifles, moved across the open with his battery of trench mortars, and with fine skill and imperturbable valour worked his gun in close support of the infantry brigade, smashing up the enemy's machine-guns, and then helping to make the captured position impregnable against all German counter-attacks. When the London "Terriers" entered Loos through the cemetery, Sergeant Taylor, of the 7th City of London Battalion, who with three men had beaten the Germans back with bombs at the Double Crassier, further displayed his genius for leadership by cutting off and capturing a troop of Germans. It was in the "Terrier" attack on the south-west of Loos that Private A. Gray, of the St. Pancras Battalion, carried his machine-gun forward under the enemy's fire to a position he selected with quick judgment. Then, with only two men of his team left, he brought such a sweeping fire against the enemy that he saved his Battalion from extremely heavy casualties. In the fight in the chalk-pit south of Loos, Private F. Hill, of the Blackheath and Woolwich Battalion, made a series of splendid attacks with hand-bombs. Though wounded several times, he

great ability and resource in the southern drive at Loos; then in the advance through the town he led a party of bombers, and going alone into a house, he was badly shot in the face by a German; but he fought on single-handed and captured seven of the enemy. It was two days afterwards, with his face half shattered, that he relieved the pressure on the British flank by thrusting into the enemy's lines and capturing the wood beyond the chalk-pit. Our readers will observe that this officer's name is of German origin. Lieutenant Pusch showed that

there were descendants of the men who fled to England from Prussian oppression who were eager to fight heroically for the land in which they had been Chivalry

for the land in which they had been born and bred in liberty. We may be sure that there are many men of the stamp of Lieutenant Pusch in the United States, and though their voices may at times be drowned in the clamour of plotters linked with Berlin, they will make a stand, if need be, for the cause of freedom for which their fathers endured exile.

Round Hulluch and the quarries, near the Lens-La Bassée road, Captain Hugh Alexander Ross, after his commanding officer had fallen, led the 2nd Gordon Highlanders against

the enemy's unbroken wire entanglements near Hulluch. The captain was himself badly gassed, and in great pain; but he held on all day to an advanced and exposed position, though his battalion was badly cut up. When relief arrived, he went back with his men into support, and had to be then ordered to go to hospital. Private C. Craig, of the

Invincible by by non-com's messa

2nd Gordons, also assisted Captain Ross by bringing up ammunition and taking messages. The London Scottish were also hung up by wire near Hulluch,

and the company under Captain Claud John Low was caught on both flanks by machine-guns. Nevertheless, Captain Low and his men hung on to the ground they had won, and it was largely due to them that the Germans were compelled to surrender. The London Scottish then advanced and occupied the German third line. One of their sergeants, K. S. Bowron, showed great skill and daring in leading his platoon towards Lone Tree. From this point the sergeant crawled out alone to reconnoitre, and was shot; but he went on with his work, and obtained

Berkshires was Temporary Second-Lieutenant T. B. Lawrence, who rallied the machine-gun teams near Hulluch, and bringing the guns into action, captured two German field-pieces. In the same scene of conflict, Captain James Dawson, 6th Territorial Battalion of the Gordon Highlanders, showed fine skill in organising the wedge his men had driven into the German lines, and when his commanding officer was killed, he took command of the battalion and hung on to the position all day and night. Captain F. R. Kearsley, commanding the 1st Welsh Fusiliers, in a similar position near Hulluch, was badly wounded during the assault; but it was not until he was knocked out by seven wounds that he relinquished his command. Before being totally disabled, he captured several lines of German trenches under a hail of musketry and Maxim fire.

The 8th Devonshires, who had very heavy losses, greatly distinguished themselves at Hulluch. By 7.15 a.m. all the officers of the battalion were killed or wounded except Temporary-Captain "No officers

and left"

Gwynne and one subaltern.

Captain Gwynne led his men on and captured four German guns, and held on to the ground he had won until he, too, was wounded. Sergeant-Major Bryant then assumed command, the subaltern having also been put out of action, and when the Germans, after dark, got round the flank of the position, the sergeant-major withdrew the remnant of the battalion to a trench two hundred yards away, and then drove forward again and smashed up the At last Sergeant-Major Bryant was stunned by a bomb while trying to save one of his sergeants. The battalion was nobly helped by another of its non-commissioned officers - Sergeant Holland. He was wounded



ON THE "QUI VIVE."
French soldiers at a listening-post, with rifles at the ready, and a few spare cartridges by their side.

information which led to important results.

The 8th Berkshires were gassed at the beginning of the assault; but Regimental Sergeant-Major Lainsbury, rallying about sixty men, fought his way through to Hulluch, organising as he advanced parties for the supply of ammunition. Then, on September 26th, when the supplies were running out, the invincible sergeant-major crawled out of the trenches under heavy fire, and collected ammunition from the dead and wounded. Captain Tosetti, after being badly wounded in the leg, led his Berkshire company close up to Hulluch, captured a trench there, and beat off all counter-attacks till compelled to seek medical Another hero of the 8th



PREPARING A SURPRISE FOR THE "BOCHES." section of a French trench taken from the Germans a group of infantrymen are seen crouching in anticipation of a counter-attack. Entrance to the bomb-proof dug-out in the background.

in the thigh in the first charge, but followed his Battalion, and ran out a telephone-wire five hundred yards forward to a position near the quarries, and so kept his front line in communication all day with brigade head-quarters. The 1st South Staffords produced a hero in Private Edwards, who walked in the open field near Hulluch, attending to the wounded when he himself had been badly hurt. In the frontal attack on Hulluch, Lieutenant Pringle, of the 1st Cameron Highlanders, was remarkable for his skill and determination. When all the company officers were slain or disabled, Lieutenant Pringle organised the shattered ranks of the Highlanders and carried on the attack, and it was largely due to his fine leadership that the advanced position by the village was taken and consolidated on September 25th. Then on September 27th the Territorial Battalion of the Camerons was sent forward to hold the Hulluch front. A British bombing-party was temporarily withdrawn from our barricade in the communication trench during a hurricane of shell fire, and by suddenly stopping the guns and launching an infantry attack, the German commander captured the barricade. Lance-Corporal McDonell, one of the Cameron "Terriers," collected a few men and bombed the enemy back to the barricade, and, there recapturing one of our bomb depots, he pursued the Germans farther and chased them over their own barricade, killing them as he went forward.

knocked out one of his guns, but he coolly remounted it, and kept it in action, steadying all the men around him by his marvellous fearlessness under a terrible tornado of high-explosive projectiles. The 2nd Royal Scots Fusiliers produced a great fighting man in Sergeant Hogg. In the action near Hulluch Sergeant Hogg took charge of the Battalion machine-guns after his officers had been wounded, and fought them for some days and nights with unusual ability. But on September 30th, as he was using a machinegun on the extreme left of the gun trench, the enemy attacked him in front from a communication trench, after breaking through our line on the left.

The sergeant was bombed front and back; but he killed ten of the enemy, and when he had thus won a little time, he dragged

The K.R.R.C. hard hit

his gun towards the right, and there he made a fierce and impregnable stand throughout the night operations.

impregnable stand throughout the night operations.

The 2nd King's Royal Rifle Corps lost most of their officers early in the attack on the German position near Hulluch on September 25th, when the battalion was somewhat severely gassed. Temporary-Captain Currie, though affected by the gas, reorganised the men and led them forward to the farthest line reached. Second-Lieutenant Reid, of the King's Royal Rifles, was also badly gassed with all his section at the beginning of the attack. Yet when the battalion was held up by the enemy's wire, he collected some troops, went torward with a machine-gun.



STEEL TUNNELS WHICH TOOK THE PLACE OF DUG-OUTS.

A distinct advance, in point of comfort, on the dug-out was the erection in part of the French lines of steel shelters, which served the double purpose of workshops and refuges from German grenades. The above shows some of our allies constructing barbed-wire defences in these steel huts.

On the front at Hulluch on September 30th the 2nd Bedfordshires produced a fine leader in Company Sergeant-Major Stringer, who handled a group of bomb-throwers with great skill, won back the famous gun trench, and broke up several violent counter-attacks.

In the earlier fighting near Hulluch and round the quarries, the 2nd Sussex did some fine work. There was, for instance, Corporal Tilling, who was wounded in the first assault and was stretched out all day close to the German wire. But when the last and successful charge was made, the badly injured corporal joined in it; and as most of the machine-gunners were killed, he took charge of an abandoned Maxim, dug an emplacement for it in the

second German line, and charged with the Battalion in the forest. He was a disobedient man, for he was ordered to the dressing-station when he was seen

the dressing-station when he was seen digging a hole for his machine-gun; but he would not leave the quarries until September 26th. The 2nd Sussex were among the Battalions badly gassed at the opening of the attack. but another gallant sergeant of theirs, W. R. Smethurst, got his men well in hand, and captured the position at Le Rutoire.

Corporal Walker, of the 1st Royal Highlanders, was another hero of Hulluch. He first brought in wounded under very heavy shell fire, then took charge of two machine-guns which the enemy was shelling. The Germans

and found a gap in the entanglements, through which he kept down the enemy's fire and helped the battalion out of a difficult situation. But all his own men were at last killed or wounded, and he then got all his injured men to the dressing-station, and came back himself with his machine-gun, and fought on until he was wounded.

The roth Gloucesters deserve a place of honour in the story of the frontal attack on Hulluch. The Battalion was held up by heavy uncut wire entanglements, but it produced in Private W. Ingles a man who could cope with the terrible situation. Ingles rushed alone to the German parapet, and by his swift and furious marksmanship as a bomb-thrower he kept the German troops well down in their chalk warren, and prevented them from bombing or firing upon the Gloucesters as they struggled through the uncut wire. Great was the saving of life among his comrades that Private Ingles effected.

But deeds of this sort in an army numbering six Divisions were too common to be fully told. At the beginning of the advance there were 72,000 British bayonets struggling to advance between Cuinchy and Grenay. Our tale of Loos is already very long, yet we have not related the details of the struggle in the Hohenzollern Redoubt, and around Fosse 8, and at Haisnes village, Cuinchy, and Vermelles. The fighting near Vermelles, where our men were held up and slaughtered from September 25th to October 1st, was a tragedy of heroism. Among the regiments near



Save for the bicycles, the above might almost be a picture of some scene in mediæval warfare. It is an official photograph of a stoutly-constructed rest camp behind the French lines, which was familiarly known as "The Place de l'Opéra." In oval: French soldiers illustrating the difficulty of passing through barbed-wire entanglements, even in the absence of enemy machine-guns.

Vermelles who won awards for their stubborn valour were the 2nd Warwicks, the 2nd Wiltshires, the 3rd Royal Fusiliers. the 3rd Berkshire Regiment, the 2nd East Kents, the 2nd East Yorkshires, the 2nd Worcesters, the 1st York and Lancasters (who lost all their company officers, had both their flanks endangered, and won out by superhuman courage), the 3rd York and Lancasters (who ran out of bombs and recovered a trench by bayonet work), the 3rd Middlesex, the 1st Suffolk, the 1st Welsh, and the 2nd Cheshires (one company of which fought until Private W. H. Nixon was the only man left of two hundred and fifty, after a bomb struggle of twenty-four hours).

In conclusion, we may remark that the twenty-six guns taken round Loos and exhibited in London, are marked as being captured by the 2nd Border Regiment, the 2nd Gordon Highlanders, a Territorial Battalion of the

Gordon Highlanders, the 8th Devonshires, the 9th Devonshires, the St. Pancras Battalion of the London Territorial Division, the 1st Welsh Guards, and the 46th Brigade. The remainder of the guns, with the exception of one taken by the 9th Division, are stated to have been captured by the Immortal Division—the 7th. But Mr. John Redmond, M.P., justly remarked that, of the Territorial Division, the London Irish should be credited with five captured guns. All were captured on September 25th, except that taken by the Welsh Guards on the 27th of that month. The 39th Garhwal Rifles took a trench mortar; another was taken by the 1st Somerset Light Infantry and the 1st Rifle Brigade.



FRENCH BATTERY AT WORK IN THE MASSIGES SECTOR OF THE CHAMPAGNE BATTLEFIELD. The guns, well screened save from enemy airmen, were trained on the second-line trenches of the Germans.



## THE GREAT FRENCH OFFENSIVE IN CHAMPAGNE AND ARTOIS.

The Extraordinary German Fortress in Champagne—Four Hundred Miles of Trenches, Caverns, and Tunnels Served by Two Light Railways on a Front of only Fifteen Miles—Seven German Army Corps Mass for Victory, and German War Correspondents are Invited to the Triumph—The Kettle-drums of Death Roll over the Germans—The Blue Waves of France Break upon the Five Great Fortressed Downs—One French Battalion Reaches the Last German Line—The Battle of the Hand of Massiges and the Struggle in Earhole Down—The Butte of Mesnil Resists and Breaks up the French Attack—But the Column Swerves Towards another Fortress and the Bretons and Arabs Win a Great Victory—Trou Bricot with its Chain of Redoubts and Ten Thousand Prisoners is Strangely Captured—How Marchand of Fashoda Led the French Colonials to Victory through the Punch-bowl of Souain—The Fortress of Bois Sabot and the Heroic Death of the Foreign Legion—The Terrible Struggle at L'Epine—Fog Falls on the Battlefield and Interrupts the Work of the French Gunners and Airmen—The Army of Champagne Breaks Through the Last German Line at Tahure Down, and is then Checked—The Germans Counter-Attack till their Losses Balance the French—General Foch Fails to Advance in Artois—A Footing is Gained on the Great Ridge, but the Main Operation does not Succeed—The Position of the Allies at the End of the Battles of Champagne and Artois.



HERE is an ancient Roman road running from Rheims to the Argonne Forest.

About twenty miles east of Rheims this Roman way crosses the Suippes River near the small town of Auberive; thence it runs for about fifteen miles to the outskirts of

the forest, some distance south of the hamlet of Massiges. The country through which the old road runs is a barren tableland of chalk, that continually swells into low, rounded hills, many of which have been planted with pine-trees. The land is part of the Champagne district, but to mark it from the fertile region of famous vineyards the French themselves call the unfruitful waste of chalk Lousy Champagne. This coarse term is indeed quite an official geographical expression

geographical expression among our frank-spoken allies. The small stream of La Tourbe flows in front of the old German position at Massiges. Then north of the hand-shaped down at Massiges is a nother stream, the Dormoise River. On the western side of this section of the front several streams flow into the Suippes River, the most important of these tributaries being the Py.

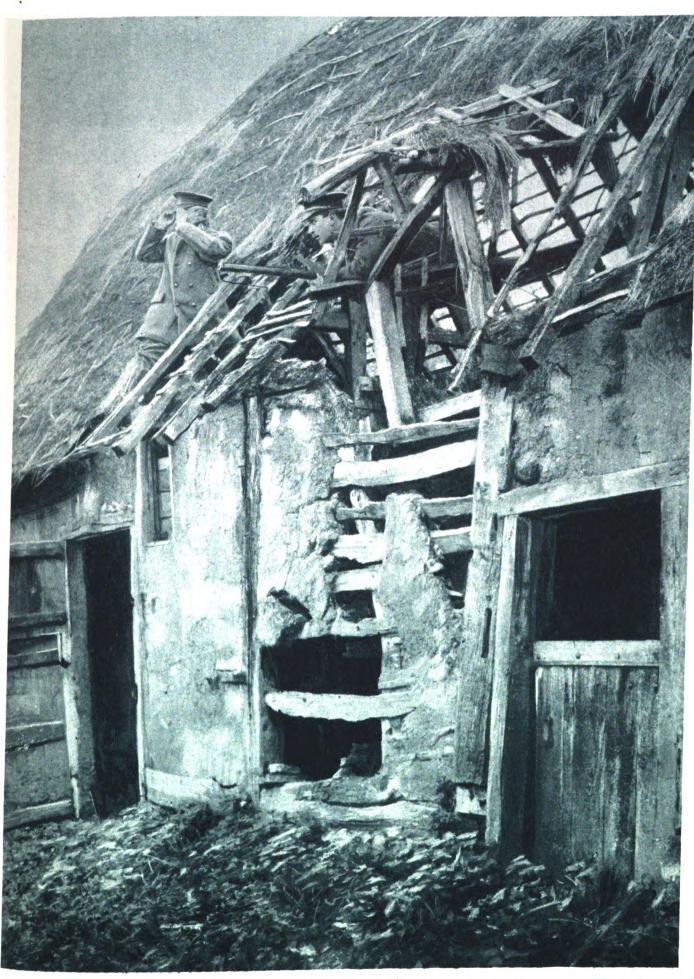
Immediately south of the Roman road is a vast circle of earthworks, known as the Camp de Chalons. Old tradition has it that the earthworks were made by Attila, king of the Huns, whose forces were for the first time broken in a great battle on the plateau. whereby Paris was saved and the Huns chased from France. A few miles due west of Attila's camp is the hamlet of Valmy, where the Army of the French Revolution won its first victory over the Royal forces of Prussia and Austria, and thereby founded the democratic movement in modern Europe. For these reasons all the poor, mean country was holy ground to the French soldier, and despite the previous checks to the Army of Champagne, the general opinion in France was that over the stretch of chalk between the Argonne and Rheims the decisive advance against the German host would at last take place; for it was at this position that the breaking of the German front would be most disastrous to the

enemy. All the invaders' lines, from Zeebrugge and the Yser to the northern heights of the and the hills Aisne. round Rheims would be taken in flank and the rear, and menaced by a cutting of all the lines of communication, if a French army crossed the Dormoise and Py streams. But the Germans proudly boasted that their lines in Champagne were absolutely impregnable, and General von Kluck remarked to a German-American war correspondent that the position was that if he could not take Paris, neither could the French capture Vouziers. The town of Vouziers on



AFTER THE KNOCK-OUT BLOW.

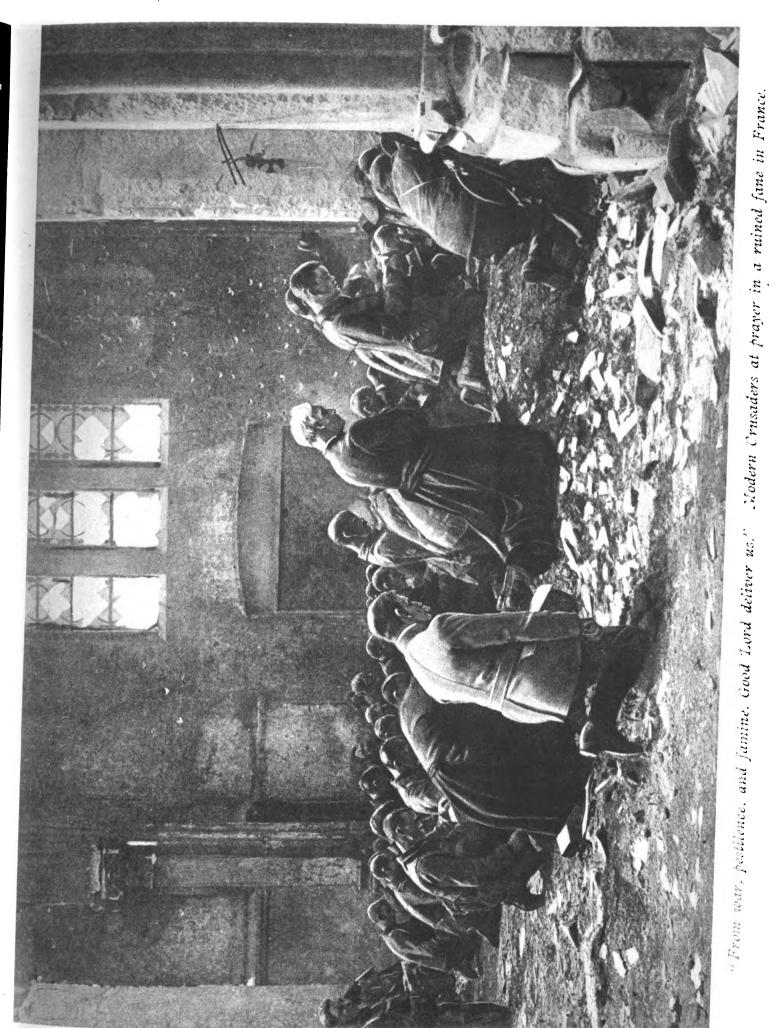
German 105 mm. gun shattered by accurate French fire. Shells and their cases were strewed around in wild confusion

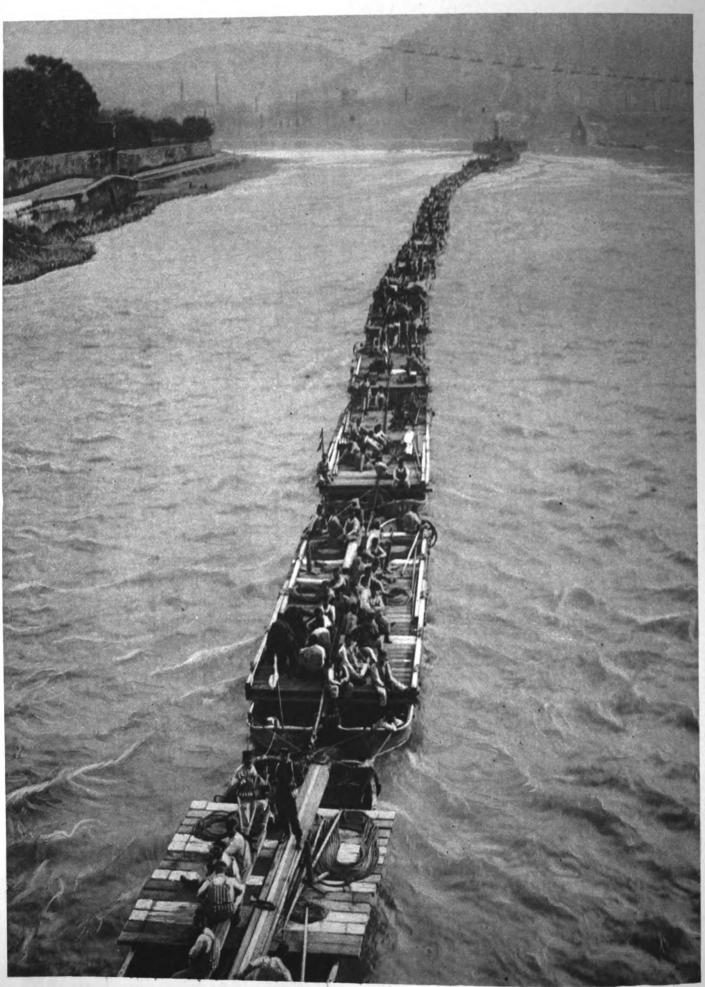


An eyrie in France: British observation officer and sniper overlooking enemy trenches.

T 153







French engineers towing a long pontoon bridge into position.

the northern edge of the Argonne Forest, and well to the north of the Py River, was one of the principal German

headquarters.

Between Vouziers and the French front there were four fortified lines, each a mile or more apart. All the downs, on and between these lines, were deeply excavated and transformed into underground fortresses, armed with quick-firing batteries, mortars for aerial torpedoes, piping for the emission of poison gas clouds, and thousands of michine-guns. Of all their military engineering works the Germans most prided themselves upon their Champagne defences. These defences had been greatly strengthened and extended since the French made their first great thrust in February, 1915. The French had then captured the first German line, running close to the Roman road by the hamlet of Perthes. But the loss of this line had put the German engineers on their mettle, and in the intervening months they had brought up hundreds more guns and thousands more Maxims; they had fitted many of the

sunken invisible forts with domes of armoured steel, and had driven a series of tunnels through the chalk, to allow of supports being moved to the fire trenches safely through the heaviest storm of shrapnel and melinite shell.

We have already seen that the allied offensive movement was expected in the middle of August, 1915. It was then that the Germans began to reinforce both the Champagne and the Lille-Lens sectors. The German Staff, after sectors. The German Staff, after the battle, had the lying impudence to state that their fifteenmile front between Auberive and Massiges had only been held by a single division of infantry. This would have given less than one man to every two yards, which is a disposition of troops so extremely feeble as to invite a shattering defeat. As a matter of fact, the German Staff was quite competent in its work, and was in possession of all the necessary resources in trained men. At least fifty-six regiments of infantry were placed in that section of the front which the

French attacked. Usually a German regiment consists of three battalions, so that at full strength the fifty-six regiments would have amounted to 168,000 bayonets, or seven army corps. The German formations, however, were much wasted by war, and many of the brigades were a medley

of broken units, newly and roughly soldered together.

The army corps most fully represented German were the Eighth, Twelfth, and Eighteenth

Reserve Corps, and the Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, and Seventh Reserve Corps.
Then there were fragments of the Third, Fifth, Ninth, Tenth, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, and Sixteenth Active Army Corps. This extraordinary mixture of units is interesting, not merely by its extent, but by the proof it furnishes of the hurry with which the German Staff was obliged to transport men from many other parts of the front in order to prepare against this urgent peril. The regiments of the Tenth Corps arrived in hot haste from the Russian front in an outworn and wretched condition, and these fatigued, ragged, ill-fed men were among those that did very badly.

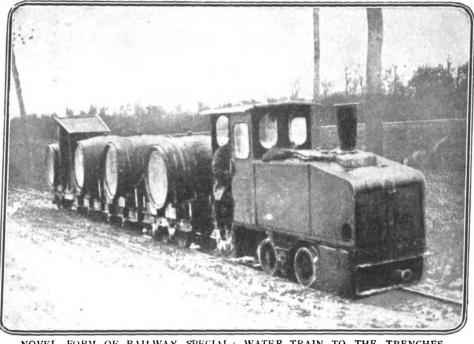
Yet, despite the confused haste with which this large medley of forces was assembled, the German commander on the Champagne front, General von Einem, had so

absolute an assurance of victory that on the eve of the struggle he invited German war correspondents to come and watch the spectacle of his triumph. It was from one of these correspondents, Dr. Max Osborn of the "Vossische Zeitung," that we obtained the best description of the French bombardment. After telling how the French heavy artillery swept the German rear, seeking to explode hand-

bomb depots and other magazines of ammunition, the German with the English name said: "The violence of the bombard-

Kettle-drums of Death

ment then reached its zenith. At first it had been a raging, searching fire; now it became a mad drumming, beyond all power of imagination. It is impossible to give any idea of the savagery of this hurricane of shells. Never has this old planet heard such an uproar. An officer who had witnessed in the summer the horrors of the Souchez and the Lorette heights, told me they could not in any way be compared with this inconceivably appalling artillery on-slaught. Night and day for fifty hours, and in some places



NOVEL FORM OF RAILWAY SPECIAL: WATER TRAIN TO THE TRENCHES Curious locomotive and trucks used in the French Army railways for the transport of water to the trenches. This service once again demonstrated the marvellous capacity of our ally to adapt herself to every condition of war.

for seventy hours, the French guns vomited death and destruction against the German troops and the German batteries. Our strongly-built trenches were filled in, and ground to powder; their parapets and fire platforms were razed and turned into dust-heaps; and the men in them were buried, crushed, and suffocated. One of our privates, a high-school young man who survived, amused himself by counting the shells that fell in his limited field of vision. He calculated that nearly a hundred thousand projectiles fell around him in fifty hours.'

Another German war correspondent says that from the height on which he stood the southern sky-line looked like a vast volcanic eruption, and the unending roll of the French artillery sounded like the kettle-drums of death. French artillery of every calibre was used, from the light mountain "75's" to the latest mammoth howitzers from the Creusot and Bourges foundries, named by the workmen who made them, "The Conquerors." For a full week the French troops in the trenches in Champagne had been expectantly awaiting the order to charge; for the bombardment opened on September 18th, and each night, as darkness fell, loads of strange, long steel cylinders were brought into the fire-trenches and placed in the underground store-chambers. Some of the African troops—Arabs, Moors,



EVENTIDE SOMEWHERE IN CHAMPAGNE, 1915. Part of the German first-line trenches in Champagne recaptured by the French. The natural scenery hereabouts is very beautiful. The autumnal calm of the countryside but tended to emphasise the frightfulness of war.

and negroes from Senegal—wondered what was in the steel tubes; but the men of the Foreign Legion and the Colonial and home regiments knew what the cylinders meant, and smiled grimly. After a long wait of six months, France had come to the conclusion that her brutal, decivilised enemy must be taught the lesson that two could play at the game of gas attacking. But for reasons of sound policy, which happily chimed with the desire not to degrade warfare to the conditions of the cannibal period of the old Stone Age, the French chemists had prepared a gas that stupefied instead of killed.

The stupefaction lasted long enough to enable the stricken men to be captured. Though no doubt it would have produced a more terrorising effect upon the German troops if they had been slain by poison fumes, and thus put

of death

permanently out of action whether the French infantry advance reached them or not, this method of frightfulness was not adopted. From some points of view it

would have been well worth while to use a gas of a deadly nature, such as the prussic-acid mixture which the Germans employed. The German had all the weakness of the born bully; and if men in his third line had been affected by poison gas those who remained unaffected would have fled. On the other hand, the advantage of the use of 158 it do not fear their own weapon when the wind seems about to change, and when it may be necessary to charge through the gas cloud. At Loos we might have killed a considerable part of our own army had we employed poison gas.

September 24th the bombardment reached its sustained level of intensity, and a trifling event that happened in the evening told the soldiers that the advance was about to be made. They were given an extra ration of wine. They tried to sleep, They were given an with the kettle-drums of death roaring close

behind them, and when réveillé sounded at half-past five on Saturday morning, September 25th, the men drank their coffee, and as the guns made talk impossible, they nother shelters as for out of the min as they

squatted in their shelters, as far out of the rain as they could get, and smoked their pipes.

Meanwhile the British advance on Loos was taking place and drawing off the northern reserves of the enemy. Just when our new Highland Brigade made its swoop into the suburbs of Lens, General Joffre's order was read for the last time before action. This order has been misrepresented in the British Press. As read to the soldiers by their battalion commanders, it ran as follows:

Soldiers of the Republic,—After months of waiting, which have enabled us to strengthen our forces and resources while our adversary has been wasting his, the hour has come to attack and conquer,

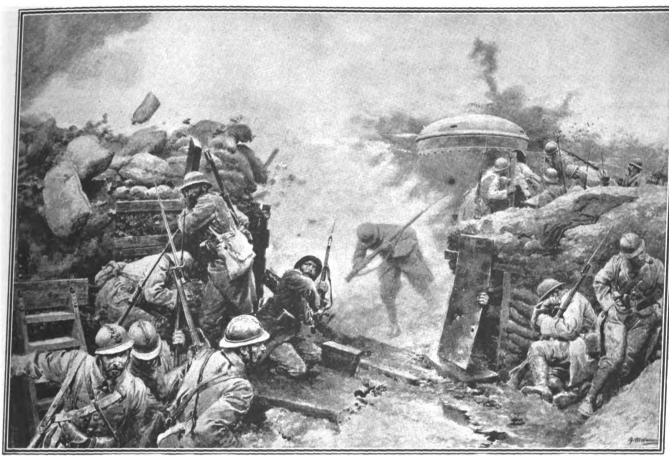
General Joffre's

and add fresh glories to those of the Marne and Flanders, the Vosges and Arras. Behind the

Flanders, the Vosges and Arras. Behind the tempest of iron fire, unloosened by the toil in all our workshops, where our brothers are labouring for us night and day, you will go to the assault all together, along the whole front, in close union with the armies of our allies. Your driving force will be irresistible. It will carry you, in one effort, as far as the adversary's batteries, beyond the fortified lines which face you. You will give him neither rest nor respite until victory is achieved. Go to it with all your heart, for the deliverance of our country, for the triumph of right and freedom.

JOFFRE.

The men answered this appeal with the battle cry of "Victory or Death!"; and at a quarter past nine, as the rain was falling more heavily, a long line of strange figures



STEEL-CAPPED SOLDIERS IN AN ARMOURED FRENCH TRENCH: SURPRISING DEVELOPMENTS OF SIEGE WARFARE. After about twelve months of siege warfare on the western front, the French provided their troops with steel helmets to protect them from head wounds, and, to a great extent, armoured their trenches, developing the old-style defences of heapped-up earth and sand-bags into steel-plated, metal-shielded redoubts, with heavy overhead works of timber

and earth. The revolving steel cupola shown in the above scene had been captured from the Germans, and was being used against them by the French who, in their armoured trench, were under a heavy artillery fire. One man is holding a metal shield in front of the entrance to his dug-out, while others are seeking shelter in the cupola.

leaped from the fire-trenches, and charged across the grassy slopes, over which the gas cloud had rolled. Clad in their new invisible blue uniforms, with steel helmets to protect them from shrapnel, the infantry looked more like mediæval warriors than like modern soldiers. Their bayoneted rifles resembled the ancient spears, and the most novel weapon they carried, the hand-bomb, was but a deadlier form of the old-fashioned grenade. Most of the battalions seem to have been divided into two sections, bombers and bayoneters. On reaching the first German trenches, the men with the bayonets crossed them and charged farther into the German lines, while the men with the bombs stayed in the captured position until they had smashed the Germans out of it.

The average distance an infantry attack can cover in the open against modern artillery is three hundred yards. This was the average distance that the French charge covered. Where the distance was greater, as in the Punchbowl of Souain, and where the gallant Colonial Division under General Marchand had to cross some 1,000 yards of open

grassland, the French sappers ran out Opening of a system of trenches close to the enemys the assault lines, from which the assault debouched. Near the French fire-trenches round

Souain there had been constructed very large earthworks, in some of which a battalion could stroll about as safely as in a barrack-square, yet within shouting distance of the enemy. These strongholds enabled the French generals to concentrate great numbers of men on a single point.

The first waves of the assault broke over the entire German front, from Auberive to the Argonne Forest, for a length of fifteen miles. But this was only meant to test the general strength of the enemy and pin his men down to every yard of the Champagne position. The main series of thrusts were then delivered at four points, the men education is a series of thrusts were then delivered at four points, the men advancing in narrow but very long and loose masses which spread out behind the first hostile line of downs. On the extreme left, at the village of Auberive,

where the Germans held most of the fortified houses and the French were deeply entrenched along the southern out-skirts, little progress could be made. Here the force of our allies' attack was skilfully directed north-westward up the long slopes leading to the hamlet of L'Epine de Vedegrange. Another strong attacking force was directed from Souain through the Punch-bowl northward and against a line of fortified heights known as Hill 185, on which Navarin Farm lay, the Butte of Souain, and Tree Hill. Eastward of Tree Hill was the formidable height of Tahure Butte, with the village of Tahure south of it, and in the triangle of Tahure, Souain, and

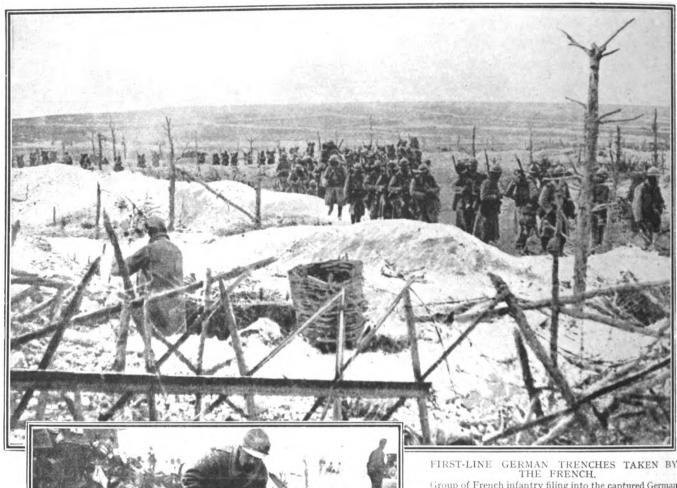
Perthes villages was the immense German fortress called the Trou Bricot, and nickdefensive system named the Hollow of Death. East of this

hollow was the fortressed escarpment of the Butte of Mesnil. Eastward of Mesnil was Bastion Crest, with the group of houses called Maisons de Champagne behind it, and still farther eastward, near the edge of the Argonne Forest, was a large, hand-shaped down, known as the Hand of Massiges, with south of it a quarried hill, called from its curious appearance the Earhole.

To sum up, the heights of (1) L'Epine, (2) Navarin Hill, Souain Butte, and Tree Hill, (3) Tahure Butte, (4) Mesnil Butte, and (5) Bastion Crest and the Hand of Massiges. formed five systems of defensive works against which the French Army of Champagne worked forward. It was expected that some of the positions would prove too strong to be carried by storm, and it was arranged that in this case the most formidable fortresses should be left awhile unattacked, and then approached by a double flanking movement from behind. This is how Mesnil Butte, a down with a high, steep face thrusting into the French line, was dealt with. It remained for some days a quiet salient in the French front, while the turnult of battle sounded on both sides of it.

General de Castelnau's main scheme was to penetrate between each principal German hill position, and then turn

Digitized by Google



Group of French infantry filing into the captured German first-line trenches in Champagne. The whole country-side was devastated by "75" shells. A casual observer might have imagined himself to be in desert territory; not a blade of grass was visible, and every tree was blasted.

downs on which the German sappers had been labouring for twelve months.

The German had first taught the Allies that no ordinary concrete and armour-plate fortress could resist his monster howitzers. Then, when forced himself to remain on the defensive, the German had invented a new kind of underground fortress, with mobile defence guns, against which monster howitzers were of little direct use. There were lines of railways of narrow gauge spreading through the German works and connecting with the French railway running from Challerange to St. Souplet. In the Trou Bricot there were even two railway tracks for bringing up supplies and moving heavy guns. Imagine

a system of sewers, half as large as those of London but more densely grouped, Underground fortress connected by tunnels of chalk as long of Champagne

as the London Tubes, served by light railways, screened by a line of downs nearly six hundred feet above sea-level, and lighted by electricity and comfortably furnished. Such was the German fortress of Champagne. No wonder General von Kluck proudly proclaimed it impregnable.

But the vehemence of attack of the French troops carried them in one hour through this fortress at two important points. At Massiges a Colonial Division, formed largely of Frenchmen born and bred in North Africa, reached in their first charge the Maisons de Champagne, a farm north of the Hand of Massiges Down. At Souain another French Colonial Division swept through the Punch bowl and captured Navarin Hill. Between these two Colonial Divisions a column of Bretons and Vendeans. advancing from Perthes, reached the western slopes of the Butte of Tahure, while on the other side of this Butte

A SOUVENIR OF VICTORY.

French infantryman choosing a "pickelhaube" from a motley collection of "Boche" helmets gathered together after a Champagne attack.

and encircle it with two flanking columns. But before this could be done, the first German line had to be captured, the strength of each hostile fortress tested, and then the columns had to advance along the valleys and the slopes with terrible enfilading fires sweeping them on both sides. It was afterwards calculated by observers of the conquered ground that along this front of fifteen miles, with a depth of two and a half miles, the German engineers had constructed nearly four hundred miles of trenches. And, despite the extraordinary duration and intensity of the

French bombardment, in which millions General de Castelnau's of shells were used, this enormous system scheme of human warrens was only damaged

badly on the front slopes and in the southernmost hollows between the downs. The high ramparts of chalk protected from destruction far the greater part of the vast earthworks. The new French howitzes threw to a height of 12 000 feet a year, beauty should be a height of 12 000 feet a year, beauty should be a height of 12 000 feet a year, beauty should be a second source of the second s threw to a height of 12,000 feet a very heavy shell that descended almost vertically. Yet this wonderful projectile could not destroy the sheltered caverns and trenches in the

an African Division of Arab, Berber, Moorish, and Senegal troops took the eastern slopes, and there connected with the men of Savoy and Dauphiné in a flanking movement between the Butte of Tahure and Tree Hill. From 10 to 10.30 o'clock on Saturday morning, September 25th, 1915, the situation on the battlefield of Champagne was similar to that obtaining at the same hour on the battlefield of Lens.

Both the French and British leading Divisions had made advances of a miraculous kind. In particular, the position of the Colonial troops at Maisons de Champagne resembled that of the Highland Brigade at the Cité St. Auguste at Lens. Pouring with sweat, the men had stormed through machine-gun fire, wire entanglements, rows of trenches, and gun positions, and after a rush of three miles they reached the last crest of chalk from which

Miraculous advances

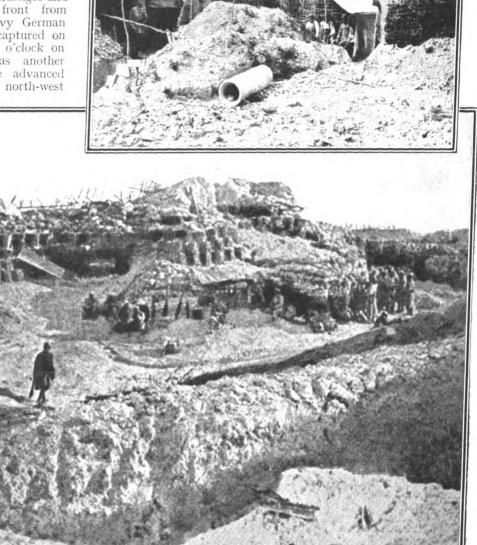
the valley of the Dormoise and the village of Ripont were dominated. Had sup-

ports quickly arrived, the road to Vouziers, Namur, and Liège would have been won. But, apparently, the single battalion that reached the Maisons, having lost all its officers and being commanded by a sergeant, had moved too quickly. The French Staff could not get more men up in time, and the half-shattered battalion, caught between two flanking fires from Massiges and Beauséjour, and attacked in front from Ripont, had to leave the heavy German and Austrian batteries it had captured on the crest, and fall back at two o'clock on Saturday afternoon. There was another battalion also in a still more advanced position at the entrenchments north-west

of the Maisons, known as the Work of the Defeat. The men had held the hill for three and a half hours, without help arriving, and it was only at the end of this time that the Germans at Ripont were able to re-form and return to the attack. As a matter of fact, the two wings at the height of the Hand of Massiges and at the Butte of Mesnil A check

could not get forward as quickly as the centre had done. There had been a complete check at Mesnil, and this had thrown the operation out

of gear. In the same way our check at Vermelles interfered with the success of our Highland Brigade beyond Hill 70. In both cases the local commanders, Sir Douglas Haig and General de Langle de Cary, seemed not to have cared for a Napoleonic gamble, such as General Foch risked near the Marne, when he instantly poured his reserves through



FRENCH STRONGHOLDS MADE BY GERMAN SHELLS.

Huge crater of a German mine in Champagne that was converted by the French into a strongly-defended position. Having captured the shell-torn ground, the French quickly built up the sides of the soldiers. The cellars were used as dug-outs for a commandant and his Staff.

Digitized by Google

a small breach by the marshes of St. Gond made between the Prussian Guard and Bülow's army. The commanders on either side had become very cautious, and wanted to feel that both their feet were firmly planted before making another step forward. The machine guns were the factor that made them anxious to consolidate their ground ere they thrust out on the decisive attack.

The Germans at Massiges had a saying that Earhole Down, or Hill 191, rising south of the Hand, could be held by two washerwomen with two machine-guns; for this trenched, caverned, wired, and tunnelled lump of chalk dominated the plain on which the French were camped. But in twenty-two minutes a Colonial Brigade, with the general charging, in the gallant fashion of the French, at the head of his men, reached the quarry that formed the Earhole. The German regiments holding the hill had been too confident in the mechanical strength of their fortress. Many of their machine-guns, being worked from bomb-proof shelters, had escaped the French howitzer fire, but the speed of the infantry attack disconcerted and surprised the garrison. Several of the running,

panting, roaring Frenchmen carried light telephones on their backs, and the result was that, when the German machine-guns lifted above the damaged parapets and began to fire, the French batteries of mountain artillery came again swiftly into action, and flung a storm of 3 in. melinite shells a few yards in front of the first wave of light-blue figures

The French mountain-gun, first issued in small numbers to the Chasseurs in the mountains had become the supreme weapon for nearly all battlefields. It was a variation of the "75," lighter and shorter of range, but with a higher angle of fire. It was used close behind the troops, almost like a machine-gun, but while a machine-gun could not hit men behind a hill, the mountaingun could shell or shrapnel enemy troops sheltering in a hollow or on the reverse slopes of a down. Under the cover of a bombardment of this kind the French bombers rushed to the German hill trenches, and flung in grenades,

forcing the Germans to retreat. The hill was close to the Argonne, where the Crown Prince was fighting with a newly-reinforced army, directed by General von Mudra. In

answer to telephone calls for help, Mudra sent some of his best troops to the Earhole, where they arrived quickly and safely by means of the deep communication trenches that ran from the sea to the Alps. of the Germans

The new German supports fought well, refusing to surrender. The colonel of a French Colonial regiment climbed with his grenadiers within thirty yards of a German position. "Surrender, you are surrounded!" he cried to them. A German lieutenant flung a bomb at the colonel, but missed, and the angry French privates then charged and killed the lieutenant and all his men. In the end there were so many field-grey figures piled in the trenches of Earhole Down that at some important points the conquered works were choked by them, and in order to get forward the victorious French troops had to climb out in the open ground of the hill, under a hail of shrapnel from the enemy's batteries. Fighting went on day and night till September 30th; for long after the original garrison was destroyed, fresh troops poured into the northern works from the village of Rouvroy, coming

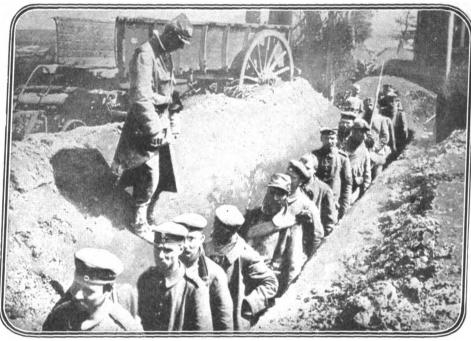
from the Crown Prince's army a few miles to the east. Towards the north the French Colonials reached Mont Tetu, overlooking the plateau; then, hour by hour, they pressed down eastward in the direction of the town of Ville-sur-Tourbe. The Germans were encircled in little groups in the trenches in the eastern valleys until a thousand prisoners were taken. The capture of a German bomb depot and three thousand grenades greatly facilitated the operations on the Hand of Massiges and the Earhole.

There seem to have been three Divisions employed round The first Division captured Earhole Down; the second Division stormed the middle finger and ringfinger of the Hand of Massiges; the third Division took the height known as Bastion Crest, between

the Hand of Massiges and the Butte of Mesnil. In all, five waves of French infantry swept up and over the heights and

French troops round Massiges

along the downland valley, which had been transformed into a maze of trenches and dug-outs. The enemy's gun-positions were reached and the French cavalry were thrown into the action. But the condition of the slippery, muddy ground



QUEUE OF GERMANS CAPTURED IN CHAMPAGNE.

Some of the German prisoners captured by the French during their advance in Champagne on September 25th, 1915. At this time the French held some sixteen thousand German prisoners in this district.

prevented the horsemen from charging up the slopes where the guns and machine-guns were sited; so most of the men dismounted and fought on foot as supports to the infantry. Had it only been dry weather, the cavalry would, in all probability, have reached the Dormoise River, and sabred the last line of German artillery there.

From September 25th to the 30th, the Germans round Massiges continually counter-attacked, with a view to winning back their lost line. It was then that they suffered quite as heavy losses as the French had done in their attacks. The last of the German counter-attacks came from Cernay, in the north-east. The troops deployed at the foot of the slopes of the little rounded down known as La Justice. But the French light guns shattered this counter-attack before it got under way, and the troops round La Justice broke and fled in a panic. This was quite an extraordinary feature of the conflict, for hitherto the German soldiers had fought with remarkable tenacity, and when defeated had either surrendered or been killed. The spectacle of a large body of veteran enemy troops breaking and fleeing in panic under shell fire was regarded by the French command as highly significant. Westward, beyond the Butte of Mesnil, the French



French soldiers resting awhile in the course of their strenuous offensive against the enemy positions in Champagne.

soldiers on one flank and another 12,000 on the other. When, as in the case of the Butte of Mesnil, the enemy's flank defences proved too strong to be stormed by a swift movement, the troops veered as much as possible to the north-east and north-west, with a view to cutting the rear communications of the fortress.

At Perthes the Germans had a salient in a wood west of the village, the position being known to the French as the Pocket. It was attacked on two sides by the regiments of Savoy and Dauphine, who captured it in seventeen minutes. The place was a labyrinth of trenches, caverns, and entanglements, but the Frenchmen went over it at the double,

and captured in the wood the Encircling the " Punch-bowl" guns that should have been playing on them as they

charged. Two German officers were caught Then north of Perthes there was a large punch-bowl between the downs, and across this hollow the Germans had driven two lines of trenches. The Rhine Trench was in front, and about five furlongs behind it was the support line known as the Yorck Trench. When the French column attacked the Punch-bowl, it skilfully threw out battalions along its wings to mask the wooded slopes on the right and left. The troops on the left wing had little to do but to dig themselves in, get good cover, and wait; for when the main Breton force of attack from Perthes linked up with the African troops coming from Souain, all the Germans in the western woods were completely encircled, driven in from the rear, and captured. East of the Punch-bowl, however, the process of encirclement was slower; for it was here that the great German fortress on the Butte of Mesnil dominated the field of conflict. There was an extraordinary series of redoubts on this long down. On its southern face was the Trapeze Works, and going northward toward Tahure was the Toothbrush Works, with a network of trenches and caverns connecting them.

From the Perthes side the Mesnil Butte seemed as

MOMENTS OF ANGUISH.

Wounded soldiers from a Champagne battlefield waiting their turn to be conveyed to a hospital. They were temporarily resting at a farm some distance behind the zone of operations. Some captured members of the German Red Cross are seen at work.

attack was directed on Perthes towards Tahure and the down north of the village known as the Butte of Tahure. The German guns and machine-guns on this butte crossed fires with the guns and Maxims on Tree Hill, lying to the south-west The road to the railway town of Somme Py ran in a long upward slope between the two fortified The road was a death-trap, even when the village of Tahure had been captured; and it was necessary first

to storm or mask one of the two heights French attack on before a decisive advance could be made. The French commander decided to attack Tree Hill Tree Hill, but instead of making a frontal

assault on this formidable position, he launched at it two flanking movements. The Breton and Vendean troops advanced towards Tahure from the east, while the African troops set out westward from Souain, and reached the junction of the roads from Souain to Tahure and Perthes to Somme Pv.

In practically every case the tactics of General de Castelnau consisted in bringing two French forces against a single German force. Nearly every German main position was assailed, on two or three sides, by some 12,000 French impregnable as Gibraltar; for all the slope was very steep, and the Germans in the trenches above swept the incline with machine-gun fire, or broke up every attacking line with hand-bombs. So skilfully were the works constructed that the long, intense, preliminary bombardment had not injured them; and though the French brought up their light guns, and, placing them in the opposite wood across the Punch-bowl, maintained a storm of shell a few yards in front of their charging infantry, the German garrisons above the steep survived the hurricane, and rose above their parapets in time to bomb back the wave of assault. It was not until October 6th that the Butte of Mesnil fell, after the Trapeze and the Toothbrush Redoubts had been slowly reduced.

Meanwhile the main Breton force pushed along over the Punch-bowl to the outskirts of the village of Tahure, and there a portion of them advanced with part of the African troops towards the two downs that crossed their fires over the road to Somme Py. All along this region, towards the Butte of Souain on the west and the Butte of Mesnil on the east, the third and last German line was approached. But progress was very slow in this decisive field of battle.

icted that the ment had not ch brought up in the opposite ained a storm heir charging ove the steep we their parave of assault. The Butte of a Toothbrush pushed along kirts of the ion of them tops towards res over the gion, towards d the Butte last German

PRIMITIVE WELL IN THE AISNE DISTRICT.

PRIMITIVE WELL IN THE AISNE DISTRICT.

As was to be expected in the circumstances, "bucket" and "pitcher" were more serviceable than ornamental.

towards last line reached by the French artillery, and behind the wire were numerous machine-gun positions which were but slightly injured by gun fire. The French gunners were pulling their pieces out of the pits which had been built in the spring, and their horses were being taken out of their underground stables and whipped across the holed and slippery slopes of chalk to positions between the first and second German lines. There, in the open field in the pouring rain, the Frenchmen worked their guns against the last chain of the Champagne downs. But in the thick weather their aerial observers could not mark the enemy batteries, especially those eastward, which enfiladed on the right flank the columns of attacking French infantry. The infantry were thus held up by three forces of the defence—wire entanglements, machine-guns, and artillery. Heavy, overwhelming, and exact howitzer fire was needed between the Butte of Tahure, Tree Hill, and the Butte of Souain. So the troops dug themselves in and waited for clearer weather.



CAMERA PICTURE OF A FRENCH FIRST-LINE TRENCH IN THE AISNE DISTRICT.

Another example of the elaboration of modern trench warfare. The trench shown in this official French photograph had the characteristics of a miniature fort. The stretcher seen on the right tells of the care taken for the prompt treatment of the wounded. In circle: Operating a land mine in Northern France. (A German photograph.)



PRUSSIAN TROPHY AT NAPOLEON'S SHRINE.

Captured German 155 mm. gun on view in the courtyard of the Invalides, Paris, taken from the Germans in Champagne.

Work of great importance, however, went on south of this last line of downs. North-west of Perthes was a farm known as Trou Bricot, connected with Souain by a rough country road. Here the enemy had built the most formidable of his underground fortresses. Two light railways ran through the position connecting with the main line near Somme There were four cross tracks between the two parallel lines of light railway in the Trou Bricot salient. Thus munitions and supporting troops could rapidly be circulated through the fortress, one of whose lines connected with the Toothbrush Redoubt on the wooded Butte de Mesnil, and with the fortifications in the Bois Sabot towards the north west. A fold of chalk ran from Trou Bricot to the Bois Sabot, passing by numerous systems of defence, some of whose picturesque names were—the Satyr's Trench, were—the Satyr's Trench, Gretchen Trench, Kiao-Chau Wood, Elberfeldt Camp, and Von der Goltz Works. The fold of chalk

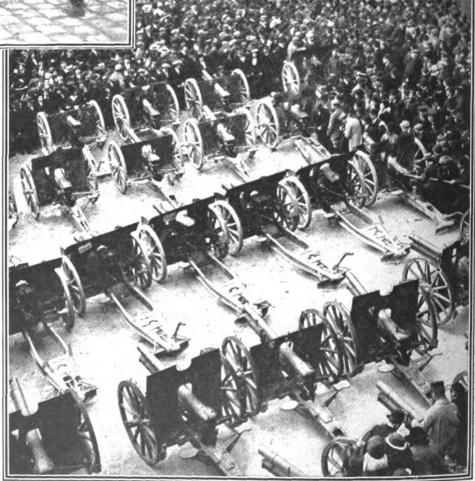
and some of the lines on the reverse slopes were entirely intact. Even the officers' log-houses had not been struck by a single shell. But fifty yards farther away, where the crest gave no protection, the work of destruction was terrible. Spandau Wood was not merely woodless, but transformed into a chalk quarry by some thousands of shells.

Trou Bricot, seen first on the photographs taken by the reconnoitring French airmen, formed three round, pale blots, connected by a long white streak—the communication trench. Then there were six more whitish rounds, strung along the white line like balls on a string.

It was on the white line that the French gunners began their work, and their heaviest shells fell in hundreds, at a range

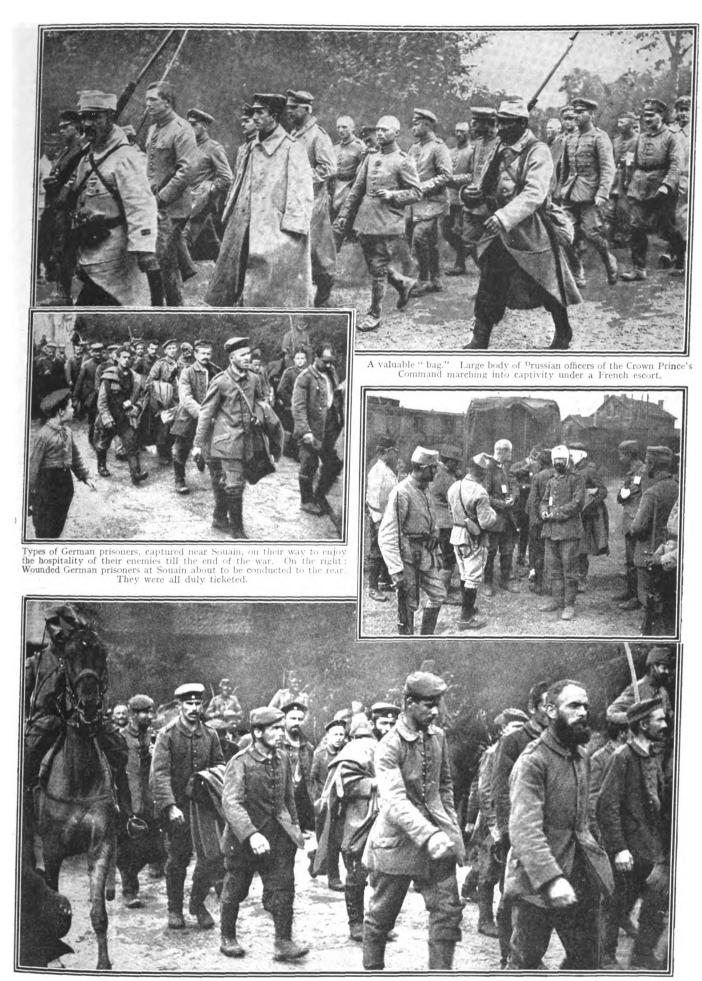
Awful slaughter at Trou Bricot

of five miles, on the main communication trench, cutting the telephone wires, destroying the shrapnel-proof passages, and choking the outlet. Then, at a signal from the watching airmen, a hurricane of shells fell on Trou Bricot and on the great Elberfeldt Camp behind it, and turned the gigantic fortress into a slaughter-house. The German divisions that garrisoned the extraordinary fortress were so staggered and dazed by the bombardment that a single division of French African troops sweeping up the road from Souain to Tahure cut them off in the rear from Tree Hill and the position of Baraque, where the Breton Division, advancing



JOY-DAY FOR PARIS: INSPECTING SPOILS OF WAR AT THE INVALIDES.

formed a magnificent protection against the heavy French guns, these weapons presented an inspiring sight, and paid a potent tribute to the skill of "Père Joffre."



Another batch of prisoners whose expressions bear unmistakable signs of modern German "Kultur."

ALL SORTS AND CONDITIONS OF THE UNSPEAKABLE HUN IN CAPTIVITY AFTER THE CHAMPAGNE ADVANCE, SEPTEMBER, 1915.

from the other side of the work, connected and formed a great net with the Savoy troops working forward from the Pocket in front.

The net of Arabs, negroes, Bretons, and Vendeans moved backward over Trou Bricot, and taking all the Germans in the rear, where only the low parados topped the trenches, they bombed and bayoneted the encircled enemy until the Germans surrendered in one great multitude of ten thousand prisoners. The taking of Trou Bricot, with its many guns and machine-guns and its great garrison, holding one of the most important subterranean fortresses in the world, may justly be ranked among the finest feats in the war. And it is worthy of note that the conquest was made more by generalship than by the courage of the troops; for brave as the African and Breton Divisions were, and magnificent as had been the work of their supporting artillery, the immense stronghold, with its underground railways and caverns, could not have been taken by a frontal attack. It was by demonstrating against the Butte de Mesnil, attacking the frontal Pocket, and throwing out a line of troops to keep the defenders of the eastward down occupied, that the French general, by a sudden swerve westward, linked with the African Division and gained the incomparable advantage of being able to attack the woodland fortress along its undefended rear.

While the African Division was slanting off eastward from Souain towards the pine-woods round Trou Bricot, a famous Colonial Division, commanded by the hero of Fashoda, General Marchand, made a straight, swift leap

## Navarin Farm

northward up the road to Somme Py, midway along which was the down on which rose Navarin Farm. According to a

French custom in war, which might well be changed in this era of scientific warfare, General Marchand did not remain behind his division and watch its movements, and reinforce the leading brigades when they were checked. Instead, he advanced at the head of his 12,000 bayonets and, pipe in mouth and cane in hand, led them to the attack. Marchand had already told his army commander, General de Langle de Cary: "Mon General, when the attack opens, we shall carry Navarin Farm in an hour." Though Marchand fell early in the attack, with a bad shell-wound in his spine just as his men reached the first German trench the fall of their leader only made the troops more resolute to reach their objective.

There were two miles of German trenches and fortifications between the town of Souain and the hill-farm of Navarin. In fierce, desperate spurts the Colonial Division, with the Foreign Legion in support and a Zouave Brigade and Moroccan Division acting with it, worked through the Punch-bowl of Souain, where the enemy had built underground fortresses known as the Palatinate and Magdeburg Works. The last trench before Navarin Farm was taken by the Colonial Division in the time stated. But then all progress eastward was stopped by the earthworks in Bois Sabot. The absence of the directing mind of General Marchand must have been sorely felt during this check.

The Bois Sabot was a horse-shoe shaped fortress, surrounding a pine-wood on the right of Navarin Farm. The work spread along the foot and sides of a gently-sloping

hill, and it was laid out with such skill by the German engineers that they regarded it as one of the strongest points in their

**Bois Sabot** 

entire line of defence. The heavy bombardment had done little damage to its network of wire entanglements and deep subterranean lines; and in the evening of September 25th the French troops could only lie flat on their stomachs near this work, with the rain pouring on them and asphyxiating shells from the German batteries along the Py River blinding and strangling them. It was then that the Foreign Legion advanced through a curtain of shrapnel and flung themselves down by the Colonials. The Colonials were relieved in the night by the Zouaves and Moroccan troops, and the Legion crawled the following day into a stretch of woods to prepare for an attack. But the weather was so foggy that the French guns on September 26th and September 27th could not do any useful work, and, much to the disadvantage of the Allies, the fighting had to be temporarily suspended, so that the enemy won forty-eight hours in which to rail down reinforcements, guns, and ammunition to the Champagne front.

At last, at half-past three in the afternoon of September 28th, the air cleared sufficiently for the attack to be launched. The Legion had lost more than half its force in the great drive on the Vimy Heights in Artois in the spring, when it penetrated farther than any French troops. But two thousand more foreign lovers of France had since joined the Legion, and brought it up to full strength.



GOING INTO ACTION: SCENE ON THE WAY TO THE FRENCH FIRST LINE.

French infantry filing down a road to the trenches, in open order and exposed to enemy fire, in the neighbourhood of Navarin. Each man is fully equipped for his duty in the first line, even to the steel helmet which was eventually generally used in the French Army as an effective protection from shrapnel.



GERMAN SOLDIERS SURRENDERING AT THE END OF THE BATTLE OF CHAMPAGNE

After the battle was over long files of German soldiers came in, holding up their hands in token of surrender to the grim figures that stood watching them in silence.

In the advance from Souain, in the pine-wood near Navarin Farm, the Legionaries had again lost nearly a quarter of their men from shell and shrapnel before firing a shot. This made them very angry. They always disliked being in reserve when a charge was made, and they asked their colonel, in the evening of September 27th, to beg the general at Souain to let the Legion, as a special favour, lead the grand charge against the enemy's last line.

The request was allowed, and the famous corps, which has figured in so many romantic novels since Ouida wrote "Under Two Flags," went out to die. Every Legionary knew that he was doomed; for the plan of attack was that the Legion should fling itself straight on the front of the fortress of Bois Sabot, and there engage the enemy with such fury that 12,000 other men-Zouaves, Moors, and Colonials—could make a surprise attack on both flanks. The Legion gathered in the wood in two columns, and then, amid the cheers of the French troops occupying the trenches in front of them, they leapt across these trenches, over the heads of their comrades, and charged across the zone of death into the mouth of the Horse-shoe. First a rain of shrapnel smote them: then

the stream of bullets from machine-guns and rifles caught them in the front and raked them on both sides. With a dense curtain of shrapnel behind it and torrents of lead pouring on its front and flanks, the Legion was mowed down as by a gigantic scythe. Platoons fell to a man, but the regiment went forward. At some points in the line the stream of lead was so thick that falling men were turned over and over, the dead bodies being rolled along the ground by more bullets, as withered leaves roll in the winds of autumn. Yet some men of the leading battalion lived through it, and, reaching

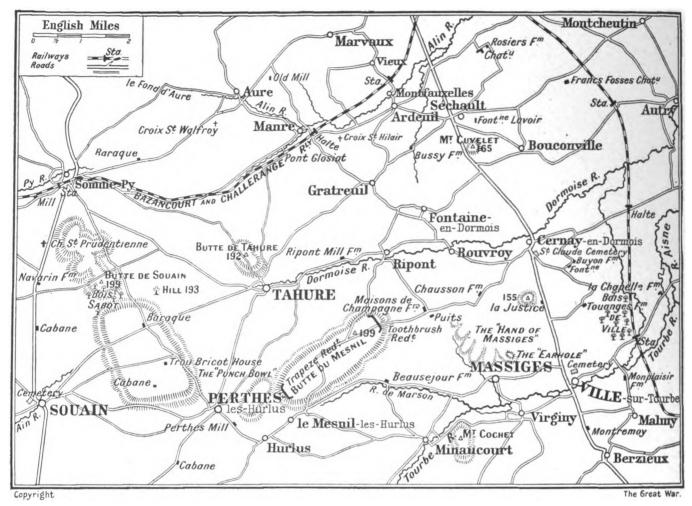
the wire entanglements, pounded them aside with the butts of their rifles. But of that battalion only one man got through the wires, and he fell headlong into the first German trench with a bullet through his knee. Then the second battalion followed, and a few men lived to get into the first trench and began to clear it out. But the last battalions of the Legion came forward in a tiger spring and bombed and bayoneted their way into the fortress.

There, in the maze of trenches, amid the shattered pine-wood, the Legion fought to the last man, and when the other troops closed on the flanks there were very few Germans alive in Bois Sabot. The Foreign Legion had also perished; only a small handful of its men remained. But in its great death-struggle the regiment had done one of the most amazing things in war. And when the noise of its achievement spread through France and echoed over the earth, thousands of volunteers from neutral countries came to Paris to enlist. Thus out of its glorious ashes the most famous of all corps in the modern ashes the most tamous of an corps in the inscrining world was born again from the inspiration given by the men who died on Vimy Ridge in Artois and the slopes of

Bois Sabot in Champagne. Such is the power of the heroism of the dead upon the minds of living men who have scarcely any call to fight; for it was the Swiss, the American, the Scandinavian, and the Spaniard and Portuguese who travelled at their own expense to France to join the new Foreign Legion. The heroism of the Legion firmly established the Army of Champagne in the region of Navarin Farm. Then west of the farm was a great stretch of downland, dappled with pinewoods, reaching to the town of Auberive. Midway between the farmand town a road cut



SOME OF THE TWENTY THOUSAND PRISONERS. When the Germans moved along their trenches for the last time, after their capture by the French, they did so with empty hands uplifted and anxious eyes fixed on their conquerors.



BATTLE-FRONT OF THE FRENCH ARMY IN CHAMPAGNE UNDER GENERAL DE CASTELNAU ON SEPTEMBER 25th, 1915. The main attack was delivered on the Hand of Massiges, but the French were held up by the Butte of Mesnil, to the north of which they advanced and captured Tahure. In the great fortress of Trou Bricot ten thousand German prisoners were taken.

across the down country, running from the village of St. Hilaire to the town of St. Souplet, on the Py River. Half-way along this road were the farm-buildings of Epnie de Vedegrange, close to Hill 150. In this part of the field General de Castelnau's design seems to have been to carry Auberive by storm, and then attack Epine and the hill by two flanking columns, which should go on with their supports and light artillery, and break the last German position at St. Souplet. But Auberive

Auberive
impregnable

position at St. Souplet. But Auberive
proved to be impregnable. In the previous Battle of Champagne the French
had reached the outskirts of the town,

and had afterwards sapped close up to the enemy's position. But later the ingenious German engineers had transformed

Auberive into a subterranean city.

Hundreds of thousands of shells fell on the buildings of the town during the great bombardment, but the groundfloors were heaped with sand-bags, and the cellars beneath were so strengthened with concrete that the troops in the chalk caverns beneath the cellars suffered little from the heaviest projectiles. A few observing officers sat among sand-bags in the attics, watching the French lines through periscopes and telephoning to their own batteries and to the various caverned headquarters. The only way in which Auberive could have been taken was by a grand attack in which a hundred thousand men would have been lost, or by a dense and immense gas-cloud, floating down gently on a steady, favourable wind. It needed, however, a direct south wind to carry the stupefying fumes over the town; but, as we have already seen at Loos, the wind on the morning of September 25th blew from the south-west. It enabled our allies to clear the entrance of some of the valleys in the Champagne region, but it did not affect the hill defences, and it slanted away from Auberive. The once became an affair of house-to-house fighting with consequence was that the frontal attack on this position at

hand-bombs against both bombs and machine-guns, in which the French troops made only very slow progress; for north of the town the Germans had powerful groups of artillery which formed a fire curtain along the front and rear trenches of our allies and checked the movement of their supporting troops.

In these circumstances, the principal French forces paused in the attack on Auberive, and swerved to the right towards the wooded slopes leading to Epine. At the same time the division operating from St. Hilaire, in a direct northward movement, also approached the crest. Only the first line of German defences in the Epine area had been destroyed by the French guns. The second line was erected on the northern slope of a ridge of chalk, and it was practically intact and defended by Würtemberg and There were eight lines of barbed-wire Hanoverian troops. bound to the trunks of the pine-trees, with old-fashioned rows of sharp wooden stakes strengthening the great obstacle. Behind the wire and the stakes were machineguns, so placed as to sweep with their fire all the slope fifty yards wide, running up to the crest.

When the French arrived their figures were thrown out against the grey sky above the ridge and the German riflemen and machine-gunners had targets they could not miss. All the first line went down, but with a

savage cry the blue-clad helmeted sons of France surged, wave after wave, up to the crest, and then charged down with such

Savage charge on German second line crest, and then charged down with such

speed that the Germans could not kill them quickly enough. How they got through the stakes and lines of barbed-wire no one remembered.

Some made a path with the butt-ends of their rifles, others crawled under or cut the steel cables, while their bombers stood upright and pelted every German head within sight. After the battle it was seen that large stretches of wire still remained intact before the chief

171

German machine-gun positions; but there were gaps through which the German parapet was reached by the grenadiers, and the infantrymen pulled down the sand-bags, and, jumping to the trench, worked along it with dagger and revolver.

Meanwhile, when a series of footings had been won in this line, the succeeding waves of French infantry, leaving their predecessors to finish cleaning out the works, dashed into the pine-wood behind it and descended into

Epine valley of death

the long chalky bottom. There, some five hundred yards from the line below the crest, was a third system of German works

with more unbroken wire entanglements, machine-guns, and light field-guns. Then on the opposite slope of the long valley was another pine-wood through which a road ran to Epine. Here there was a fourth German line with all the usual defences and a larger number of light field-guns, and the first heavy German howitzers which were placed in armoured casemates. The width of the valley was about a mile and a quarter, and when the French infantry appeared on the crest all the howitzers, guns, and machine-guns on both sides of the chalk hollow were worked at top speed against the charging blue lines. The German gunners had the range of every yard of the ground, and when the French were checked by the entanglements the storm of fire directed on them from the three German lines was of an appalling intensity.

The French won through chiefly by the skill and courage of their machine-gunners and their telephone signallers.

The men of both these sections followed close upon the first lines of attacking infantry, though the burden they had to carry was heavier than that of their comrades. The French machine-guns were placed close to the German trenches to keep down the enemy's fire while the wire was being cut. The field telephones were even more was being cut. The field telephones were even more quickly brought into action, and the French artillery officers worked out the ranges with great speed, and telephoned to their batteries far away over the ridge. The result was that, as soon as the German guns in the valley began to fire, a hurricane of shells in turn fell upon them. Never has the French artillery officer shone to better advantage than he did in this valley of death, with three strongly-fortified German lines blazing at him in a way calculated to shake the nerve of any man; for the instant precision of the answering French bombardment was of a terrifying kind. The French gunnery officers by their telephones made their calculations with a swiftness and an exactness that must be acclaimed incomparable. The third and fourth German lines were completely smashed; and it was only the second line, just below the crest

where the French soldiers were struggling within ten yards of the enemy, that gave very serious trouble. This barrier ex-

Incomparable French gunners

tended all below the crest of the long valley, and the fighting was so close that the distant French howitzer batteries could not safely intervene. But, as we have seen, the Frenchmen worked through, some crawling under the wires, some blanketing them with their coats and then rolling over,



WINTER FASHIONS IN A FRENCH FRONT-LINE TRENCH.

Warmth, and not smartness, was what the troops required in respect of their winter dress. Balaclava helmets worn under their service caps fur-lined, fur-trimmed overcoats, and blankets worn cloak-wise, protected them against the low temperature, and warming food kept them cheerful.



NO NEW THING UNDER THE SUN.

Modern warfare reintroduced many ancient military weapons and devices. The old grenade and the older catapult were combined, and the resultant hybrid engine bore a curious resemblance to the crossbow of our forefathers.

and others working away with wire-cutter and butt. A wounded Zouave, returning on September 27th by the Wacques Farm, from the Epine position, stared at the two and a half miles of casemated batteries, sunken mazes, and entanglements through which he had stormed. "However did we get through all this?" he said in wonder.

The main second line of the enemy extended tar along the crest eastwards, past Navarin Farm and Bois Sabot, to the fortresses of Tree Hill and Tahure Down; and after the troops on the Auberive-St. Hilaire section broke through the ridge entanglements, the general movement was still held up by the enemy's resistance at Bois Sabot. Spandau Wood, and Cameroon Trench, north of Souain. In the meantime, Tree Hill, which was the key to the central German position, was masked by some of the Africans and

Bretons who had met at La Baraque, Enemy resistance and the Bretons and Vendeans also hung on to the slopes near Tahure north of Souain Down.

The French position near Tahure rested on Hill 170, south-west of the village, along the road from Perthes. Immediately in front of the men from Normandy, Brittany, and Vendée was Tahure Down, which was some ninety-six feet higher than Hill 171. From the dominating height the German batteries and machine-guns poured so terrible a fire on the advanced French troops, in the afternoon of September 25th, that the position seemed hopeless. Happily, several French batteries galloped down the Perthes road, through the curtain of fire by which the Germans were trying to keep off the opposing reserves. The French gunners unlimbered and worked their pieces in the open, and at close range beat down the covered German guns and howitzers on the high down northward, and so slackened the enemy's fire that the French infantry were able to lie out all night on the ground they had won,

wet through with the rain, cheerless and hungry, and vet indomitable.

Throughout the night more guns and more supports were moved through the conquered German lines, and at dawn on September 26th the attack upon the works stretching from the Butte of Souain to the Butte of Tahure was begun. The resistance offered by the Germans, however, was very formidable. They had the French in a great horse-shoe of heights, of which Souain Butte, Tree Hill, and Tahure Butte formed the centre. The

attacking forces were overlapped by two unconquered downs, nicknamed the Deux
Mamelles, and by the long line of the
Mesnil Down. Most of the German trenches in this protected

The Horse-shoe

stretch of downland had escaped the devastating effects of the French bombardment. The ground had been divided into compartments by the German engineers, and the systems of wire-fenced earthworks were so arranged that enfilading fire could be used by the defending forces at every important point. In some places the French troops in their first vehement movement had captured parts of the fire-trenches around this great horse-shoe. Some troops were struggling to maintain a hold on the steep western side of Mesnil Down, but they had to be withdrawn in the night of September 25th, and some time passed before the



NERVES WERE HIGHLY STRUNG Waiting for the signal that the guns were about to lift and that the charge was to be made. This was the moment when every man was at tension, for British and French alike well knew how the Germans feared to meet them with the cold steel.

173

two points of the Horse-shoe, Deux Mamelles and Mesnil Down, were definitely conquered

The great Horse-shoe had originally formed the enemy's third and last line. But when his first line was captured in the spring of 1915, he not only strengthened his second line, which was lost on September 25th, but extended his third down-land line, of which the Horse-shoe formed part, and then built a fourth line on the heights beyond the Py River. There seems also to have been a fifth reserve line south of Vouziers. The immediate objective of General de Castelnau was the old cross-country railway, running along the Py River, and connecting the army of the Crown Prince and the army of Metz with the army of Field-Marshal von Heeringen, fighting in front of Rheims and along the Aisne. This railway was already under the fire of the heavy French howitzers, but the gunners could only work from wireless signals received from aerial observers.

Attack on the

Butte of Tahure

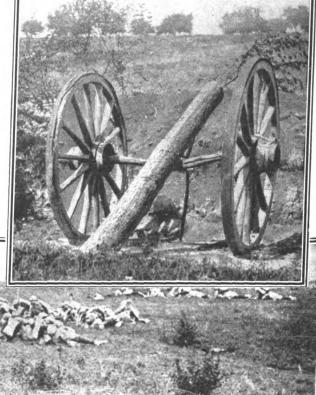
When the country was covered with fog, as happened on September 26th and September 27th, the heavy French batteries could merely fire at random at the

railway, hoping there would be something on the line worth hitting. What they needed was an artillery observation post on a down overlooking the railway. The Butte of Tahure, one hundred and ninety-nine metres high, with a summit only about a mile and a quarter from the railway line, overlooking some lower heights, was an admirable station for the French artillery officers. The Butte therefore became the chief object of the French attack.

But the trouble was that all the German positions on the heights of the Horse-shoe were situated on the northern slopes. There was nothing in view that could be attacked by direct fire. The systems of parallel trenches with their wire entanglements were hidden behind the ridges. Only a few observing officers, sheltered in dug-outs and using periscopes, faced the attacking French forces. A little way behind them were a few machine-gun posts,

widely spaced to escape destruction, and situated so as to command the slopes up which the French battalions must climb. Everything else was hidden below the crests. In these circumstances, General de Castelnau held back his troops for some days. He had some small successes on September 28th and September 29th, when a fine Norman regiment took part of the Vistula Trench, west of the Butte of Tahure, and part of the position west of Navarin Farm near Chevron Wood was captured. In the last place the breach made in the enemy's lines was four hundred yards wide; but the French commander would not attempt to push his troops through it, for he knew that the heavy German batteries would come into play all round the Horse shoe, and destroy his advanced battalions. So very little was done for eleven days.

In the meantime the French army was labouring with





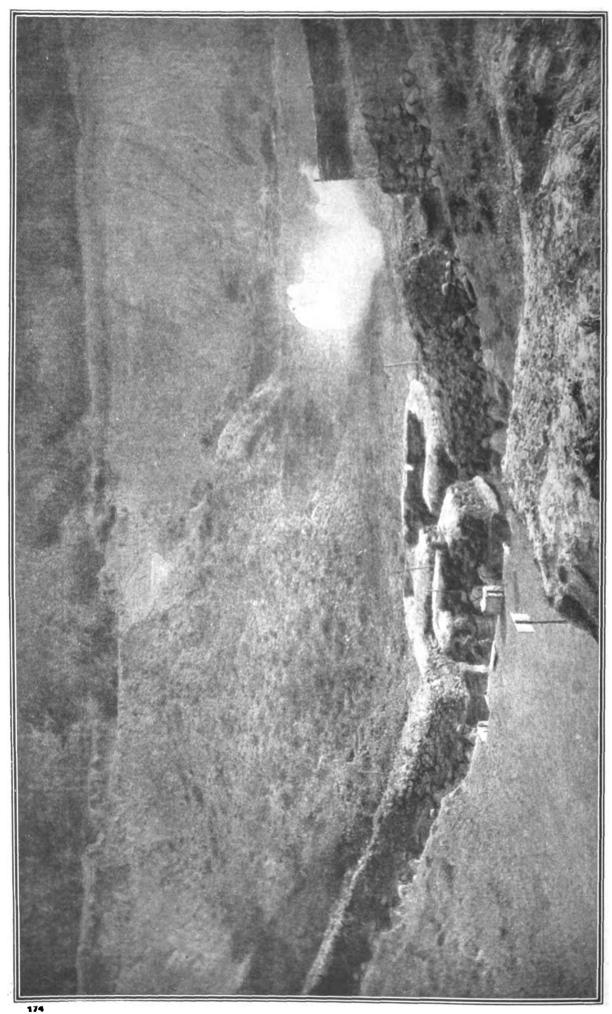
HOW GENERAL JOFFRE'S "NIBBLES" GREW INTO "BITES."

"Laissez-moi faire. Je les grignette." ("Leave me alone. I nibble them".) So said General Joffre when asked, early in the war, how things were going. In the great Champagne advance the "nibbles" grew into

"bites," and the above official photograph of French infantry advancing into action under cover of artillery fire was taken during one of the bites." Above: Dummy gun to deceive the hovering Taube.







A SCHOOL FOR GRENADE-THROWING AT THE FRONT: FRENCH GRENADIERS LEARNING THE ART.

The experiences of trench warfare proved the importance of bomb-throwing, and the British and passage-way with the trenches behind. In the event of a learner accidentally dropping a printed French Amies both established training schools for bombers. This photograph shows a specially.

Constructed French near the firing-line, used as a school for grenadiers. The soldier making a passage circled a shelter, behind which instructors stood, watching the results of the bomb-throwing practice throw stood in the farther rectangular trench surrounded with parapets and linked by a through periscopes.



TEST OF GERMAN TEAR-PROVOKING FUMES.

Explosion of a tin of German "weeping-gas." The dense, tear-provoking fumes had a smell of ether, and the cans containing the gas were exploded by being flung to the ground.

MASKED FRENCHMAN IN "WEEPING-GAS" CLOUD.

French soldier, wearing his anti-gas mask, amidst the fumes of German "weeping-gas." The cans containing the gas were exploded by the French as a test.

extraordinary energy. The French infantry turned to the navvy work of constructing a new front line on the ground they had conquered, driving communication saps down the valleys to connect with their old positions, while most of the French guns moved to new pits, new subterranean shelters, and stables close to the fortressed hills behind which the enemy was massing. The idea of General de Castelnau was

that he could afford to waste time in order to save the lives of his men. His great howitzers had rather a short range—five miles it is said—the length of their

throw having been deliberately lessened in order to get a heavier projectile and a more vertical fall. They could destroy anything if they were brought close enough, but on widely-spaced lines such as the German they made the advance something of a crawl.

But at last, on the night of October 6th, the great new

Creusot pieces were ready in their fresh positions, and all the smaller guns were thrown out well in front of them, close to the enemy's hill-line. A few days of clear weather had enabled the French airmen to photograph the wire entanglements and parallels behind the ridges; and all the French gunners used their pieces in howitzer fashion so as to get indirect fire effects. Even the ordinary light field-gun—the "75"—had a device which enabled it to be used somewhat in the fashion of a howitzer, so that it could throw shells high into the sky to an altitude at which they would fall behind an intervening hill-top. The arc of fire of a "75" was not as great as that of a howitzer; nevertheless, it was extremely useful in all this downland fighting. It was a great gun the "75."

The second great French bombardment shattered the German defences around Tahure, and the great down of Tahure commanding the railway was captured by a



TROPHIES OF GERMAN TRENCH WARFARE.

German trophies captured by the French in Champagne. Miscellaneous collection of hand-grenades, bombs, and gas-cans, with a trench-mortar shell and a land-mine.



FRENCH SOLDIER WITH GERMAN GAS-CANS.

French soldier posing with cans of poisonous and "weeping-gas," captured from the enemy. The Germans carried these cans attached to their belts in the manner illustrated in the above photograph.

175

Picardy Division, which took some hundreds of prisoners. There was also a very fierce struggle among the downs north of Navarin Farm, where the Moroccan troops tried to thrust into Somme Py town. They took some of the heights along the road to Souain and Somme Py, but could not reach the river line. Yet they broke up a regiment of the Tenth German Army, which had been brought from the Russian front. The French guns curtained this force off from the Py River, so that the men had no water for four days, and lived on their "iron ration." Then the Moors burst among them, and the survivors of the 4,000—four hundred and eighty-two men and ten officers—surrendered.

This attack by the Moorish troops was more in the nature of a strong demonstration, designed to weaken the defences around Tahure, and in this respect it succeeded; for at Tahure the French drove strongly within a mile and a quarter of the enemy's supply railway. Meanwhile the great German counter-attack had been launched on the British front at Loos, ending in one of the most complete disasters in the western theatre of war. The French army in Champagne profited by this weakening of the enemy, and the Breton and Vendean troops, having taken the Toothbrush Redoubt at Mesnil, closed round the Trapeze Redoubt on three sides, and blasted their way into it by aerial torpedoes and mines. In one of their mines they used more than twenty tons of high-explosive, which shattered two hundred and fifty feet of German trenches. Then day and night the French guns played on the position, until at last the surviving German garrison fled into their underground passages, and when the Breton infantry charged they met with scarcely any resistance.

In all some 26,000 German prisoners were taken in Champagne, besides three hundred and fifty officers and one hundred and fifty cannon. And as the enemy suffered

What the Allies achieved

terribly in his counter-attacks, the chief of which was launched on October 18th between Auberive and Rheims, the total French losses were at least balanced by

those of Einem's, Heeringen's, and the Crown Prince's troops. It is calculated that the killed, wounded, and captured among the Germans were equivalent to the infantry of six army corps, or about 150,000 men. Fully twelve German army corps were shattered, and had to withdraw for large drafts. The general result of the French thrust in Champagne and the British thrust in Artois was that the enemy's entire strength was so diminished that the pressure against the Russian armies was greatly relaxed. This was the principal achievement of the western Allies. They obtained breathing space for Russia.

The action of the Tenth French Army in Artois, under the command of General d'Urbal, with General Foch as director of all the north-western front, was not a marked success. As we have already related, the creation by German engineers of a great new valley marsh near Souchez checked at the outset the advance of the Tenth French Army, and prevented it from co-operating with the First British Army in the drive on Lens. Then on the reverse slope of the Vimy Ridge, protected from French shell fire, the enemy had built a vast underground system of enormous strength. It was not until September 26th that the French forces in Artois were able to find a weak place in the German lines, and they were then held up on the north at Angres and Lieven, as we had been at Auchy

and La Bassée, and the main strength of their movement was directed against in Artois

the Vimy Ridge.

On this occasion every yard of ground had to be won by desperate fighting; for on the south, above Arras, the Germans still held some communication trenches of the Labyrinth, and in the north they retained powerful gun positions from which the French troops were enfiladed. In all these adverse circumstances, and with the chalk country slippery with rain, and the air thick with mist, General d'Urbal's troops pressed on in an effort of magnificent endurance, and captured Souchez, La Folie, and a footing on Hill 140, the highest hump of Vimy Ridge. For the most part the fighting consisted of ferocious handbombing work, in which ground was slowly won, trench by trough until the openaries recovered where brought up in trench, until the enemy's reserves were brought up in sufficient force to immobilise the French army. What General d'Urbal aimed at was to facilitate the advance of the First British Army, immediately on his left, by pressing the common foe strongly and forcing him to spread his army in full strength southward. When the charge of our Guards' Division and the advance of our other reserve divisions did not produce any further marked deflection of the enemy's lines, the Tenth French Army relieved its British comrades in a more direct manner by taking over the Double Crassier, Loos, and Hill 70 trenches, and there beating back the left wing of the great German counter-attacking army on October 8th. It was just the fortunes of war that, on September 25th, 1915, Sir John French and Sir Douglas Haig should have achieved a considerable local success, while General Foch and General d'Urbal made no important advance. On May 9th of the same year the positions had been reversed. It is these accidents that test to the uttermost the loyalty of allied commanders, and if they meet the tests fully, their common trials deepen their bonds of comradeship and co-operation.



SMILING FRENCH SOLDIERS AT THE END OF THE BATTLE OF CHAMPAGNE.

Proudly and happily conscious of their splendid victory, the French soldiers piled their arms and flung themselves down to rest, or gathered in groups for animated conversation about the events of the great day.



#### WOMEN'S SUPREME WORK IN THE WAR.

Work of The Nursing Association: Women Doctors—Nurses Sent to Our Allies—Belgian Refugees—Socks and Mufflers—Families of Soldiers and Sailors—Care of Child Life—Substitution of Female for Male Labour—Royal Examples. Nursing the Wounded: Services of British Nurses—Death of Edith Cavell—Conditions of the Nursing Service—British Nurses to the Front—Their Work in Belgium—Last Days in Antwerp—British Nurses in Serbia—A Soldier's Egg—The Hospitals at Home—Japanese Nurses at Netley—Regular Army Nurses—Territorial Nurses—Red Cross Nurses—The French Red Cross—Les Dames Infirmières—A Heroine at Rheims—Russian Nurses. The V.A.D. at Work: Its War Organisation—Surplus Workers—Assistance Sent to the Front—A Personal Experience—A Storehouse of Gifts. Women Doctors in the Field: Demand for Their Services—Dr. Garrett Anderson's Hospitals—Dr. Alice Hutchison's Work—Notable Women Doctors. Work For Our Allies: Dr. Haden Guest's Hospital—The Gift of Anæsthetics—Work of Quaker Women—The Abbaye de Royaumont Described—Hospitals at Troyes and Salonika—Terrible Conditions in Serbia—This Fact Illustrated. Care of Belgian Refugees: The First Rush—Sorting Out the Arrivals—The Refugees from Antwerp—Varied Work Done—Some Figures and Facts. Comforts For the Soldiers: The Whole Country Divided into Districts—The Winter of 1914-15—A Badge of Membership—The New Scheme at Work—A Chance for Women. Wounded and Missing: An Inquiry Bureau—Prisoners and Dead Traced—Parcels for Prisoners. The S. and S. F. A.: Methods of Work—Liverpool Branch—Forms of Help—A Useful Society. The New Generation: Work Done by the French—Misery in Britain in August, 1914—League of Rights—Hospital at Bromley. Women and Industrial Life: In Munition Factories—Heavy Work Done by Women—Their Industrial Capacity Proved—Women in Agriculture—In Manufacturing Employments—In Railway Stations and on 'Buses—In Clerical Occupations and Shops—The War Register.

T

E statue of Florence Nightingale in women to the front for various purposes. This, however, Waterloo Place reminds the passer by of the is not all. Since the Crimean War women have become

supreme work which women, and women alone, can do in time of war. The care of

the wounded, who are brought back from our modern battlefields in unprecedented numbers, is the great war work of women, and happily they have proved themselves fully equal to the task. Their service is, although not in the sense that Cromwell used the words, "the crowning mercy."

The handful of nurses who constitute the Army Nursing Service and the Territorial Forces Nursing Association are far too few for times of war, but they form a nucleus round which an augmented service can gather. Their chief reinforcement comes from the great amalgamation of the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, which has sent thousands of trained volunteers to staff its hospitals in the war zone and elsewhere. Behind these are other thousands, the members of the Voluntary Aid Detachments, commonly called the V.A.D., who look after hundreds of hospitals scattered all over the country, and also send

LADY RALPH PAGET.

As a Red Cross nurse, Lady Paget worked incessantly for the Serbians. Refusing to leave her post, she was taken prisoner by the Bulgarians when Uskub fell, but was allowed to continue her noble calling.

emancipated, and have begun to enter professional life. Some of them have taken up the study of medicine, and women doctors are now among us everywhere. By the side of their male colleagues, some of these women have placed their skill and knowledge at the service of the wounded, and among the most successful and upto-date hospitals in France were several staffed entirely by women.

When ample provision had been made for the great work of tending the sick and wounded, there were a vast number of women left in this country who wanted to have some little share in beating back the new barbarism, for they realised, although perhaps unconsciously, that the Great War was not a struggle of soldiers only, or even of men only, but of whole nations, and that Britain's women were as surely pitted against Germany's women as their sons and brothers in the trenches were against each other. Fortunately there was plenty of useful work which they could do, and some prominence may be given to one or two of these spheres of activity.

Britain did not wage the Great War alone, and she had certain duties to her Allies, especially to the weaker among them. In succouring the wounded, British women know no distinctions of race, and their services were given as freely to the French, even to the enemy, as they were to their own countrymen. Some went to the aid of the Russians and the Serbians, who were specially in need of assistance of this kind.

With regard to one ally, there was a special problem. The invasion and devastation of Belgium had rendered thousands of women and children homeless, and the best, almost the only asylum for them, was the island home of their big ally. To Britain they came in

their big ally. To Britain they came in thousands, penniless, poor in every sense of the word, and the burden of finding for them food, shelter, and clothing for an

indefinite time taxed the industry and the resources of an army of voluntary women workers. However, they were equal to it, and soon every town and many villages had each its colony of Belgians, looked after by the women of the locality.

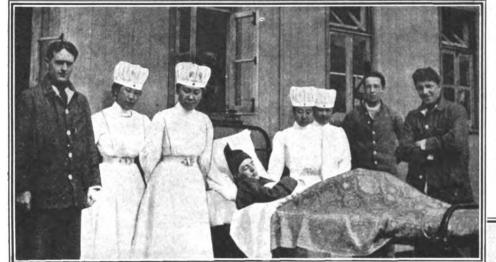
Again, our soldiers in the field were, on the whole, well-fed and well-clothed, it is true, but still they were on active service, and this meant at the best much hardship and privation. Private effort set to work to do something and by training and environment many of these women were unfitted to grapple with the difficulties of a novel situation. Happily there was little actual distress, so they needed, not charity, but a little advice given tactfully and in due season, and in certain cases temporary aid. Many capable women devoted their energies to this question, and much useful work was done by the Soldiers' and Sailors' Families Association.

Here may be mentioned a matter of the utmost importance to the nation, and one with which women alone can deal successfully. This is the care of child life. Even in times of peace this is most important and necessary work, but it is much more so in times of war, when thousands of our best and bravest are dying in the very prime of life. The nation must take thought for the citizens of to-morrow, and must make renewed efforts to reduce materially the rate of infant mortality. Women cannot do their country a greater service than this, and early in the war many of them were alive to its importance.

All these activities were left mainly and by common consent to women, but the Great War opened up an entirely new field for them, one of which no one even dreamed in the past.

As long as Britain only required for revolution

her wars an Army of, at the most, a few hundred thousand men, there was no need to replace male labour by female to any extent, but when millions were needed, the whole position was changed. To take them away from their regular employment would derange industry entirely, unless substitutes could be found, and apart from a small reserve of boys and older men, the only possible substitutes were women. This substitution may be called the industrial revolution of 1915, for it was nothing less. Not only did women swarm into



THE ALLIANCE OF EAST AND WEST.

Some of the Japanese Red Cross nurses with their wounded British charges.

to mitigate their sufferings, and by providing the troops with certain comforts, such as socks and mufflers, many valuable lives were probably saved. Everywhere —as the popular alliterative refrain about Sister Susie reminded us-women were knitting for the soldiers and huge parcels were sent to the front. At first some of this work was ill-directed, and not a little of it was wellnigh useless, but very soon there was a signal improvement, and under the able direction of Sir Edward Ward this particular form of war energy was turned to excellent account.

Another class, British prisoners in the hands of the enemy, was in direr need than even the combatants. A further useful channel for voluntary effort was not neglected. Our soldiers left behind them wives and children,



THE QUEEN-MOTHER INSPECTING THE JAPANESE RED CROSS CONTINGENT.

Queen Alexandra conversing with a member of the staff of our Far Eastern Allies' Ambulance at Netley, who came to England to assist in the care of British wounded.



NURSES FROM UNDER THE SOUTHERN CROSS WEARING THE RED CROSS OF COURAGE.

Group of Australian nurses in charge of a number of convalescent wounded Australians photographed at Hampton Court, prior to the former's departure to the Dardanelles.

commercial occupations into whic! they had begun to make their way before the war, but they took to novel employments, such as driving vans, punching tickets, delivering letters, and, above all, making munitions of war. In this way they made possible the addition of many thousands of men to our Army.

To these activities no one can place a limit, and certainly a single chapter of this history cannot indicate a tithe of them. A walk through a busy street, a glance at the daily life of friends and neighbours, revealed something of the nature and extent of the war work done by women. The example was set in high places. The Queen and Queen Alexandra were constantly employed in practical works of charity; the Queen of the Belgians was continually seen in the hospitals of Flanders; and the Tsaritza and her daughters wore the uniform and did the work of Sisters of Charity. The pages of this number give some slight indication of the extent to which British women of all classes took up their share of the burden of the war.

#### NURSING THE WOUNDED. By A. W. Holland.

Very little in the way of public honour falls to the lot of the nursing sisters, who fulfil the oldest and most honoured of the war activities of women. From time to time one and another is mentioned in despatches, or there is a separate para-

to nurses, but for the most part the service rendered by them is given silently and without recognition. Yet this work forms one of the noblest chapters of the war. British women, trained in the great London and provincial hospitals, have gone to the aid of the British wounded in France, in Malta, and in Egypt, and on the hospital ships;

they have gone, too, to Belgium, to France, to Serbia, to Montenegro, and to Russia, to the aid of our Allies, none of whom possessed an organised service such as ours.

The tale of the life and martyrdom of Edith Cavell stirred the deepest emotion in this country. She lived and died faithful to the ideals of her profession. It was fitting that in the memorial service held in her honour at St. Paul's, in October, 1915, the nursing services of the Regular Army, of the Territorial Force, of the Royal Navy, and of the Red

Cross should be officially represented. In the minds of many who listened to the solemn words of the service there were thoughts of friends and colleagues, sisters

Edith Cavell's martyrdom

in the same profession, who had laid down their lives in the execution of their duty since the war began. Many of those uniformed women who sat under the dome on that historic occasion had served their country and their fellow-men with a skill and devotion that is not yet adequately realised.

From the rank and file of the profession there are demanded endurance, submission to a necessarily strict discipline, and a conscientious observance of the details of highly complicated and skilled work. In the higher ranks there is necessary a business and organising ability that is rare in either sex. If one set out to prove that women may be great administrators, no better example could be found than in the ranks of the matrons who ruled in the nursing world under the stress and strain of the Great War.

In the first terrible days of August, 1914, contingents of British nurses left London in answer to the urgent call for help from Brussels, Antwerp, Charleroi, and elsewhere. Some of them had hardly reached Brussels before the German advance, rapid beyond all expectation, overwhelmed the city. Isolated parties of British nurses in different parts of Belgium continued to tend Belgian and French wounded until their patients were taken from them by the Germans.

Some found themselves impressed into the service of the enemy wounded. When they were required to serve the desperately wounded they made no complaint, for to the nurse every man in that case is a patient and no more, but when they were commanded to tend the feet of footsore Germans, so that they might the sooner be able to resume the field against the nurses' fellow-countrymen, it was a different matter.

Nurses in enemy hands

Yet the nurses who found themselves in the enemy's hands were able to render some service to our own soldiers.

They were only in a few cases permitted to nurse them, but they were able in the early days to attend at the railway-stations and to take the names and addresses of the wounded prisoners, so that they might send word of their condition to their friends at home. The British nurses stranded at Charleroi contrived, after some thrilling adventures, to escape over the frontier into Holland. Those in Brussels were eventually given passports, not,



HEROIC SCIONS OF A TRAGIC MONARCH.

Princess Helena, King Peter's only daughter, who worked as strenuously for her unhappy subjects in the ward as did her father on the field. Prince Alexander, her brother, is seen facing the camera.

however, by the direct route through Holland, but by a weary round-about journey through North Germany to Copenhagen. A small group of them made their way to Petrograd to join the Russian Red Cross when the rest of the party returned to England.

In Antwerp the British nurses remained to the last with their patients. When the bombardment began on October 7th a shell pitched into the garden of Mrs. St. Clair Stobart's hospital. Within twenty-five minutes the nurses, women orderlies, and doctors had got all their patients downstairs into the cellar. Next day, as the bombardment proceeded, they discharged those wounded men who were able to walk, and those who could not be otherwise provided for were put on a motor-lorry and taken to Ostend. The women orderlies deserve a share of the honours.

The tale of one young girl who accompanied a motor-ambulance into the Belgian firing-line in Flanders,

and helped to remove the wounded under heavy fire, has been made public. She was not the only one who rendered this dangerous service in the field.

Those who answered the call to Serbia in the New Year of 1915 had, perhaps, the hardest task of all. The earliest contingents had to cope with conditions which were indescribably bad. They went to hospitals where the wounded and the fever patients lay huddled together on filthy mattresses, or on the floor, swarming with vermin. Gradually, by dint of hard and ceaseless toil, they brought order and cleanliness out of chaos and filth. The fever patients were separated from the wounded, and the typhus epidemic was got under, but not before it had taken its toll of the nurses' lives.

The Red Cross nurse in Serbia found it necessary to adopt a novel costume to suit the conditions of her work. She wore a combination garment with the trousers tucked safely away into high boots, with an overall for appearance sake, a cap which entirely covered the hair, with anklets and wristlets soaked in camphor oil. Some of the nurses, in their anxiety to fit themselves for their task, even learned Serbian, and they accommodated themselves with extraordinary success to an environment which lay quite outside their experiences at home. There is a story of a Serbian patient who was invariably in possession of a newlaid egg. No one knew how this came about until it was discovered that the obedient hen laid it in the soldier's bed! The nurse who made this discovery had travelled a long way from the ordered cleanliness of a great London hospital. Adaptability was an essential for the volunteer for work in the Balkans, where comedy and tragedy were both found.

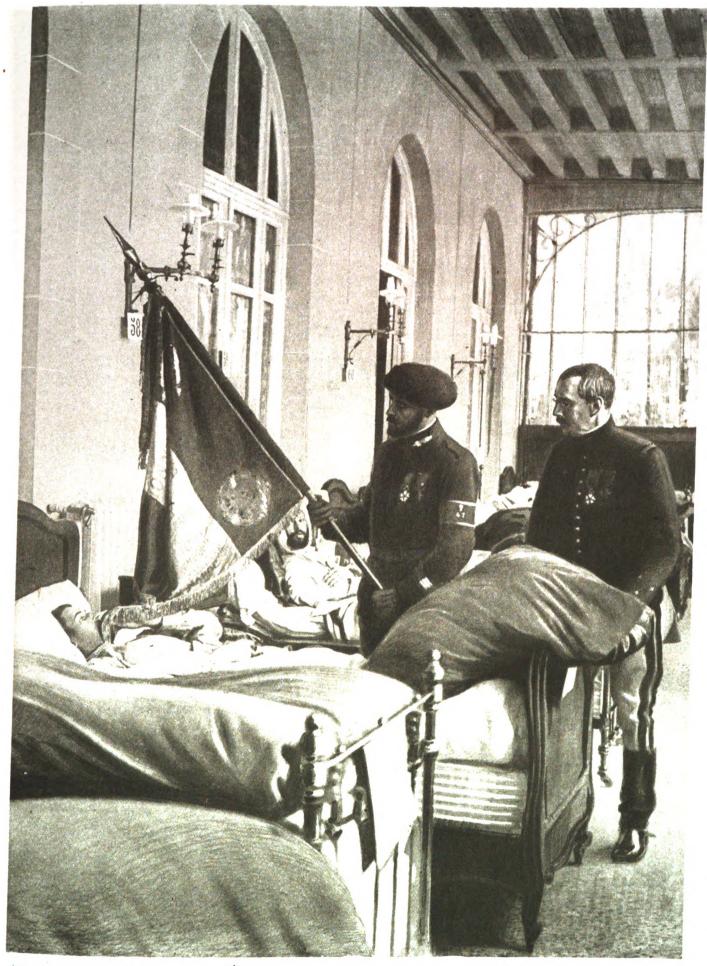
A less exciting lot fell to the share of the women who worked in the hospitals at home, out of sound of the guns and away from the more horrible sights of the war. The nurse serving in a military hospital in France had the interest that always attaches to foreign service. But the great majority of our nurses did their work in the great hospitals at home. These home-staying sisters deserve honour as high as that paid to the nurses whose fortune took them abroad. Their work was hard and unceasing, and the very large numbers of admissions (no civil hospital ever had so large a number of new cases at once as our military hospitals had when the Red Cross train came in) made great demands on the organising capacity of matrons and sisters.

The nurses serving in the hospitals belonged to nearly as many groups as the soldiers. The Army sister's grey cape with its scarlet band was to be seen with that of the Red Cross nurse with her distinctive badge. Then there was the St. John's, with the black cross on the white ground, the smart military dress of the Canadian, and now and again the Australian or the New Zealand uniform. At the British Red Cross Hospital at Netley there were some twenty or thirty Japanese sisters, and the white uniform with the little red cross on the cap was a picturesque feature of the place. The Japanese sisters came for six months, but their stay was extended for another half year. Most of them understood very little English, but they were most popular with their patients, and kept excellent discipline.

The terms of service of the nurses differ.
The Army nurses (Queen Alexandra's Imperial Nursing Service), who staff the regular military hospitals, are employed in

peace time at the large military establishments at Millbank, Woolwich, Netley, Aldershot, and on the foreign stations. They are on the Army List, and they are entitled to a pension when they retire at fifty-five. The service is under a Matron-in-Chief, who is a War Office official. After the outbreak of war the service was largely increased.

The Territorial Nursing Force is also directed from the War Office, the present Matron-in-Chief being Miss Sidney Browne. It is a comparatively new organisation, dating only from 1908. In peace time qualified nurses enrol themselves



Couching ceremony in a French hospital. Wounded Chasseur kisses the beloved Tricolour.

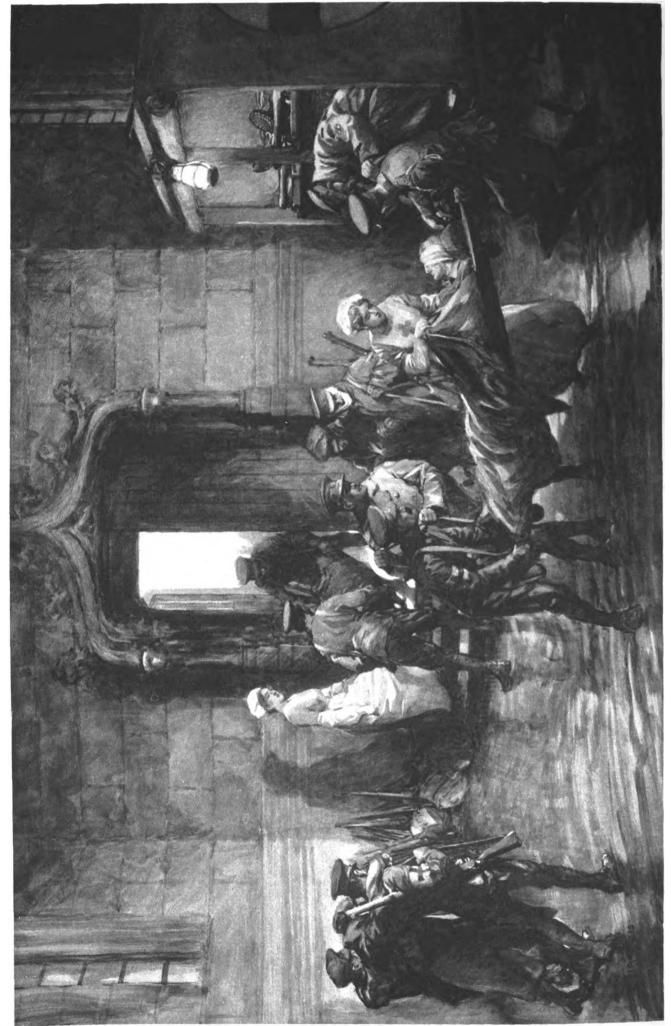


Her Majesty the Queen, who founded Queen Mary's Needlework Guild.



Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, President of the British Red Cross Society.

183



Missioners of mercy at the convent portico. Night scene at the R.A.M.C. headquarters behind the firing-line in Franci.



LADY RALPH PAGET BIDDING GOOD-BYE TO FRIENDS LEAVING USKUB, IN ANTICIPATION OF THE CITY'S FALL. When the Bulgarians captured Uskub, Lady Paget decided to remain behind with her wounded Serbian patients and staff of nurses. She is here seen, wearing the Serbian decorations conferred on her by King Peter, in front of General Popovitch and another Serbian officer.

in the Territorial Nursing Force, but like the Territorials themselves they pursue their ordinary civil duties. As they are, however, nurses in full practice, they are ready when the call of mobilisation comes. The Territorial hospitals do not exist in peace time, but the buildings are earmarked, and at the outbreak of war they were immediately requisitioned. At Birmingham, for instance, the Territorial Hospital was housed in the University, and an excellent hospital it made. The hospitals staffed by the T.F.N.S., like the regular military hospitals, have greatly increased their borders since 1914, and the Territorial Hospital at Manchester alone had 4,000 beds in September, 1915.

The Red Cross nurse was a volunteer serving under the Joint War Committee of the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. The Nursing Department of the Joint War Committee was placed under a Board of Matrons, with Miss Swift as Matron-in-Chief, by whom the qualifications of the nurses were examined before they were posted to hospitals at home or abroad.

The Naval Nursing Service is a separate service. The naval sisters are engaged in peace time in the naval hospitals at Haslar, Chatham, and Plymouth, and on the principal foreign stations.

But whether the war nurse serves under the War Office in a Regular or Territorial hospital, or serves in a Red Cross hospital, she must have her full nursing certificate. In the military hospitals she had R.A.M.C. orderlies under her as assistants in the wards, but these

Women hospital orderlies

as assistants in the wards, but these men were rapidly replaced by women probationers or Voluntary Aid Workers, so that the trained R.A.M.C. men might

so that the trained R.A.M.C. men might be released for service in the field. In the Red Cross hospitals the orderly work was for the most part in the hands of women from the beginning.

The ward of a military or Red Cross hospital on visiting days unfortunately soon became familiar to many, and there is no one who had friend or relative lying there who has not cause to be grateful to the nurses who gave their strength and energy to the work of restoring the sick and wounded to health, or mitigating their sufferings by all the means that nursing science could command.

Under the French Croix Rouge, there are three societies which exist to care for the sick and wounded: The Société

de Secours aux Blessés Militaires (which includes both men and women), the Association of French Ladies, and the Union of French Women. These three form the French Red Cross, and establish auxiliary hospitals for the care of wounded soldiers and sailors. At the outbreak of war the French Red Cross put at the disposal of the Government 16,125 beds, and 4,000 dames infirmières and infirmières surveillantes, with medical staffs, trained women clerks, and storekeepers.

The training of the dame infirmière is quite different from that of our trained nurse or V.A.D. worker. She obtains her training in peace time in the dispensaries

Training of the dames infirmieres

maintained by the Red Cross Society for the assistance of the poor. There her instruction is limited, but is, as far as it goes, very thorough, especially in the matter of the application of rigid cleanliness to the treatment of wounds. The course lasts four months, at the end of which the student obtains her diploma if she passes successfully the prescribed oral and written examination. To obtain a superior diploma the student must give a good deal of time and study for two years more, concluding with four months' service in the mornings at a military or civil hospital. Thus though our French allies have not the advantage of a great body of trained nurses such as we have in England, they have a great number of women who have had a limited training, and who have been fully recognised by the Government.

Frenchwomen showed abundant heroism in nursing the sick. Who can forget the calm and heroic courage with which Sœur Julie defended her wounded when the Germans broke into Gerbéviller in the first flush of their victory in Lorraine? Many others displayed equal calmness and presence of mind in the face of the enemy. There was the heroine of Rheims, Madame Mazuechi, Spanish by birth, who with her husband left her chateau outside Rheims, not to seek safety in some distant place, but for a cellar in the city, which they made a centre for the help and relief of the wounded when the first bombardment by the Germans began. Out of 2,900 cases treated in Rheims in one fortnight, half were attended to by Mme. Mazuechi herself. Perhaps no woman worked harder under shell fire than this devoted woman.

The Russian Red Cross sisters followed the armies in

185



HELPLESS VICTIMS OF THE "FUROR TEUTONICUS."

Group of picturesque Serbian women and children at a home and hospital for orphaned Serbs founded by Mme. Grovitch, wife of the Serbian Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, who is seen with an infant patient.

the field. We get a glimpse of their contempt of danger and death in the pages of Miss Violetta Thurstan's book. Russian women were not, in fact, content with the service of the wounded, but in many cases took their places as combatants in the firing-line beside their husbands and brothers.

# THE V.A.D. AT WORK. Vital Service to Army Organisation.

The official world in this country is slow to recognise voluntary effort, and in the early months of the war it looked as if there was to be little use made of the patriotism of the members of Voluntary Aid Detachments, who had been at pains to prepare themselves in peace for the duties that would devolve upon them in war. The organisation of the Voluntary Aid movement approximates to that of



A PLEASANT CHAT OFF DUTY

Miss Sandes, one of the British nurses who worked consistently in Serbia throughout the war, conversing with the Director of the Fourth Reserve Hospital at Valjevo, situated a few miles to the south of Belgrade.

the Territorial Force in that it is local. The idea underlying the original scheme was that in case of invasion there should be complete local arrangements for the care of the wounded, and for the assistance of the old and the weak. The local detachment was prepared at a moment's notice to equip a hospital, to provide its personnel, and the necessary stretcher-bearers and transport. Its members qualified by passing the First Aid and Nursing examinations of the St. John Ambulance Association.

of the St. John Ambulance Association.

The V.A.D. hospitals, of which there were some seven hundred and fifty in Great Britain served as auxiliaries to

Great Britain, served as auxiliaries to the military hospitals. The expenses of doctors and nurses were met from the funds of the Red Cross and St. John's Societies. Much of the provisioning was met by local subscriptions, as the War Office allowance of two shillings to three shillings per day per bed occupied was not over generous, and in many cases no grant at all



A few of the many Scottish nurses, who volunteered for work in Serbia, where their skill and devotion were taxed to the uttermost. Many of these Spartan women endured hardships in the cause of humanity 186

comparable only to the suffering of the soldiers on the field. In addition to the horrors of war, epidemics of typhus swept through the civilian population, filling all the available hospitals with contagious cases.

was asked for. The cooking and cleaning were done without

payment by the members of the detachment.

But it was soon found that the V.A.D. hospitals did not absorb the energies of the 100,000 voluntary workers who had fitted themselves, as far as opportunity allowed, for the service of the sick and wounded. The military and the hospital authorities maintained that the wounded must be in the hands of trained nurses, and took an optimistic view of the resources of the country in this matter. But the supply of hospital trained nurses is limited; the needs of the civil population do not cease with the outbreak of war, and gradually it came to be recognised that the nurses must rely for the work of the wards partly on willing recruits. Then gradually a new system was developed.

The Voluntary Aid worker sent in her application for general service through her county director to the head-

BATTLEFIELD. WOMEN'S WORK ON

Curious scene in a field near Kragujevatz, where a little Serbian girl was undergoing open-air treatment for typhus. She was a patient of Mrs. St. Clair Stobart, who was adored by the Serbians for her devotion to the sick and wounded of this ill-fated kingdom.

quarters at Devonshire House, where the Commandant-in Chief, Mrs. Furse, established a complete organisation to send Voluntary Aid workers where they were needed. She was given facilities for a brief experience of hospital life, and then, if she showed aptitude for the work, was drafted into a military hospital, where very much the same kind of work was allotted to her as would be given to an ordinary probationer in a civil hospital. Her services were in request, not only in the military hospital at home. but in France, in Egypt and at Malta.

For V.A.D. members who were qualified, not for nursing but for other work, there was a special service scheme under which women were drafted into the hospitals as storekeepers, clerks, and cooks, and so released trained R.A.M.C. orderlies for service at the front. So the V.A.D. members rendered a real and vital service to Army organisation.

They filled many rôles. very vivid picture of one side of their work is given in the report, dated October, 1915, of a year's work in France, by Miss Rachel Crowdy, Principal Commandant in France, which is kindly placed at our disposal by headquarters.

It is just a year (writes Miss Crowdy) since the first V.A.D. Rest Station was formed in France. This first station, under Mrs. Furse, dealt with the big rush of October and November, when hundreds of wounded men were pouring down. Through the great Aisne battle, and later, through the week of Neuve Chapelle, and later still, when the wounded from Hill 60 were hourly coming down to the base, the V.A.D. members at this station worked ceaselessly, feeding the men with coffee, tea, cocoa, sandwiches, bread and butter, etc., and doing any dressings off the improvised trains which were urgently needed.

coffee, tea, cocoa, sandwiches, bread and butter, etc., and doing any dressings off the improvised trains which were urgently needed.

In the long periods of quiet between the rushes, the time was filled by doing laundry work for the sisters on the trains, running lending libraries for the orderlies and stretcher-bearers, making sand-bags, swabs, etc., for the hospitals, tracing misdirected letters for the soldiers, or doing whatever work seemed most needed.

Gradually other stations were formed at other points on the lines of communication, but it has needed this last week to show what work the V.A.D. members could do in real stress. Twenty-four hours after the fighting (i.e., at Loos) had begun, one Rest Station was in full swing, three improvised trains with 1,000 men in each were standing in the station. The men swarming round the big boilers standing in the station. The men swarming round the big boilers of cocoa were getting hot drinks, and in the long wooden sheds by the side of the lines, where the V.A.D. Rest Station is, dressings were being done. Nurses waiting for their ambulance train, doctors from the trains waiting in the station, were all pressed into the service, the V.A.D. members waiting on them and helping with the dressings.

Then the wounded began to arrive at another of the Rest Stations, and there a trained nurse was added, and more dressings were done for the wounded from the trains. At one Rest Station I saw many wounded Germans being dressed and fed, a proof of that true international spirit of help to all sick and wounded. Another station at a base was dealing with a different kind of work, feeding



MRS. ST. CLAIR STOBART AND HER REFUGEE PATIENTS. Mrs. St. Clair Stobart, in riding habit, in company with a group of refugee Serbians retreating from the danger zone. The figure on the extreme left is a rare type of Serbian beauty, which recalls some of the striking portraits by Mistrovic, the powerful Croat sculptor, whose inspiring work is so symbolical of the heroism of Serbia.

the men evacuated from the hospital to make room for those worse than themselves, and giving hot drinks to the stretcher-bearers who have to work so ceaselessly in a great rush.

who have to work so ceaselessly in a great rush.

These stations are often formed at very short notice. One, asked for last week, was established within eight hours, and was prepared to deal with the feeding and dressing of men; within

asket for last week, was established within eight hours, and was prepared to deal with the feeding and dressing of men; within twenty-four hours it had fed its first thousand.

Two small hospitals run by V.A.D. members for men from the Army Veterinary Camp have been doing good work for many months, and the Red Cross Hospitals in France have V.A.D. members in every capacity working for them. The kitchen of one big hospital is staffed entirely by V.A.D. members. Hostels for the nurses are run by them, and in one place a V.A.D. dispenser is responsible under the medical officer for all the drugs issued in that hospital.

Over four hundred members are working in military hospitals as

Over four hundred members are working in military hospitals as probationers, but these sign a contract under the War Office, and come entirely under the control of the military authorities.

Many additional services helped to alleviate the lot of the sick soldier. If the man's condition was not too serious, he found the hospital a cheerful place, where he had many

Gifts to cheer the wounded

luxuries and much kindness. As an example of these auxiliary services, we may quote the great gifts stores of the Compas-

sionate Fund in the vast hospital which grew up opposite Waterloo Station, in the building designed for the use of his Majesty's Stationery Department, but transformed into the King George V. Hospital. It was a miniature emporium from which a man might procure, without coin of the realm, pipes, matches, cigarettes, tobacco, and a hundred other of the things that brighten life.

At Netley the stores had a great run on woolwork materials, for many a wounded man proved handy with his needle, and passed the long hours of enforced rest in embroidering his regimental colours, or in doing wonderful floral patterns on canvas. At the store he could have these things, games, and homely treasures, as well as the more orthodox "comforts." So the women who could not help in the ward, or the kitchen, or the office, found ways of brightening the hours before the soldier was called back to the firing-line.

# WOMEN DOCTORS IN THE FIELD.

Records of Devotion in France and Serbia.

Women doctors were in request in civil life to do the work of men who had gone to the front. There never was so much work for women medical practitioners as there was during the Great War. Anyone who is acquainted with the work of the women doctors at an institution like the Women's Hospital for Children, in the Harrow Road, knows how admirable the work of women doctors is in the business — more important than ever at a moment when the blood of men was being poured out on

battle-fronts stretching over hundreds of miles—of reserving the child life of the community.

The skill of women doctors and surgeons was increasingly urgent for the sick and wounded fighting men. The case of the Wimereux Hospital, directed by Dr. Louisa Garrett Anderson, was a striking example. This hospital was under the jurisdiction of the British military authorities in France, who were so impressed by its excellence that Dr. Garrett Anderson was asked to organise a military hospital at home which should be entirely staffed by women doctors, nurses, and orderlies. The result was the military hospital in Endell Street, in charge of Dr. Garrett Anderson and Dr. Flora Murray, where the British wounded were entirely under the care of women.

This chapter contains a brief account of the Scottish Women's Hospitals in France, working under the French military authorities. It is impossible to chronicle here all that women doctors accomplished in the war zone, but some examples may be given. Dr. Alice Hutchison had a good deal of war experience before the outbreak of the present conflict, for she was attached to the Bulgarian Army in the Balkan Campaign, and was present at the Battle of Kirk Kilisse. In the winter of 1914-15 she was asked by the great Belgian surgeon, Dr. Depage, to take charge of the typhoid hospital at Calais. Then in April she left for Serbia, to join the Scottish Women's unit at Valjevo. On her way she was detained for some time at Malta, and worked among the first arrivals of British wounded from the Dardanelles.

English women and Scottish women won the gratitude of the Serbs for the great efforts made in that country. A distinguished bacteriologist,

Dr. Helen Porter, gave her skill and knowledge of research work to the problem of stamping out the epidemic of Some of the leaders

typhus in Serbia. Dr. Eleanor Soltau, who was chief medical officer of the Scottish Women's Hospital at Kragujevatz, was decorated by the Serbian Government. Dr. Elsie Inglis, not content with organising two fresh hospitals for the same organisation in Serbia, managed a Serbian field hospital in addition. These are only some of the women who, having made their mark in the profession in peace, afterwards practised their art in the military hospitals.



GREAT METROPOLITAN CENTRE FOR WOMEN'S WAR WORK.

Interior scene in Lady Parsons' Streatham Common War Supply Depot, where a staff of ladies is seen busily preparing surgical dressings which were despatched to Red Cross hospitals at home and abroad. This establishment was the second largest in the kingdom, employing seven hundred to eight hundred voluntary workers, each of whom contributed one shilling a week to the general fund. The smaller portrait is of Lady Herbert Parsons, one of the chief organisers of the Streatham Common War Supply Depot.



"GREEN CROSS" CORPS ON THE MARCH.

Members of the Women's Reserve Ambulance, known as the Green Cross
Corps, and recognised by the War Office, marching to St. James's Church,
Piccadilly, having been reviewed by Colonel Dundonald Cochrane, C.B.

# WORK FOR OUR ALLIES. The Hospital in the old Abbaye de Royaumont.

British women have worked hard among our wounded allies. There were a large number of Anglo-French hospitals in France, notably the two great establishments at Nevers and Limoges, which owed much to the efforts of Dr. and Mrs. Haden Guest. The Anglo-French hospitals were partly staffed by British nurses, sent out by the British Red Cross and the Order of St. John, though fewer nurses served there after the home need increased. Millicent

Women's devotion and good sense

Duchess of Sutherland founded the hospital at Dunkirk, and when the unit was driven out of that place by shell fire, the work was carried on at Boulogne.

Englishwomen, with sisters from the British Dominions beyond the seas, worked side by side with Belgian Red Cross workers in the Belgian hospitals. In Serbia the devoted women, who came to the aid of that valiant country in its struggle against disease in the spring of 1915, stood by her in her still direr need, staying at their posts when the enemy threatened from the north and the east.

In their gifts for the service of the wounded, those who remained at home showed insight and good sense. The French War Emergency Fund, closely connected with the St. John Ambulance Association, sent large quantities of sorely needed things to the French hospitals. The work arose out of the personal experience of a lady who had worked in the French hospitals, and knew how hard put to it the authorities were to supply the men's needs. When she returned to England, she sent bales of clothing, cases of drugs, etc., to the hospitals of Normandy and Brittany, and gradually the work was extended.

The readers of "The Englishwoman" had the happy

The readers of "The Englishwoman" had the happy thought of providing anæsthetics for the French wounded—ether and chloroform for major operations, ethyl chloride for use in field-ambulances, and morphia for use in the field. Women members of the Society of Friends worked with the Friends' Committee behind the lines for the assistance of the French civilian population, and tried to build up the shattered homes, and to supply the means for the resumption of normal life. The Quaker women in Flanders supplied milk for nursing mothers and for babies, clothing for the destitute, and orphanages where children



STANDARD BEARERS OF THE GREEN CROSS.

Banners were presented to the W.R.A.C. by Colonel Cochrane. Our photograph shows members of the corps carrying their new banners to St. James's Church, where the colours were blessed.

could be placed in safety outside the war zone. The Wounded Allies Relief Committee maintained and managed two hospitals, at Dieppe and Limoges, which had between two hundred and three hundred French patients.

Any one of these efforts deserves a separate chapter, and if we select for more detailed description the hospital for French wounded at the Abbaye de Royaumont, it is because one instance must serve, and this one is particularly suited to the present chapter, because it was not only entirely staffed by British women, but was supported, like the other units of the Scottish Women's

Hospitals in France and Serbia, by one typical effort a women's organisation—the National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies.

The hospital was a beautiful old French abbey, standing in lovely grounds, about seven miles from Chantilly, and about twelve miles from Creil, a French Red Cross distributing station. Over 1,400 French wounded have passed through this hospital, which was a recognised auxiliary under the French military authorities. Its staff consisted of eight women doctors and surgeons, under Dr. Frances Ivens, a well-known Harley Street radiographer, Dr. Agnes Forbes Savill, a bacteriologist, thirty nurses, nearly as many orderlies, with men and women chauffeurs, women



MAKING GAS FOR PEACEFUL PURPOSES.

At Chew Magna, near Bristol, Mrs. Summers and her daughter undertook the laborious task of making the gas for the village. supervision of a male manager, they did all the strenuous work involved.

cooks, and clerks. Both on the medical and surgical sides the Abbaye de Royaumont, with its splendid, airy rooms and its beautiful terrace, was a great success; it received generous praise from the French Army Medical Staff, and from General Joffre himself.

In all military hospitals, especially in improvised ones, there is much hard work besides the nursing and the medical attendance. The clerks of the clothing department at Royaumont had their work cut out for them. Miss Vera Collum has described this side of the work.

Picture (she says) the weary men arriving after twelve miles' drive in our ambulances, and, after being refreshed with hot soup and cigarettes in the hall, being conducted to a great vaulted ward with church windows, into any one of which we might stow away a little English village church quite comfortably. During their passage through the hall we seize upon their baggage and accourtements, and label them—and the French soldier carries enough stuff on his back to clothe a regiment. Sometimes

## Washing and

he has lost it all before he reaches us; but he is

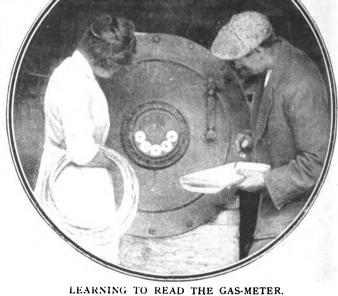
washing and mending he has lost it all before he reaches us; but he is wonderfully tenacious, the citizen soldier of France, and, as a rule, the pile of baggage is enormous. As the men are bathed and put to bed, their uniforms and under-clothing are placed in numbered sacks and hauled up by a block-pulley to the fifth story, where our vast attics are. Time was when they went up on my back. The next morning we sort out the sacks, mark and send the soiled lines to the wash collect the men's treasures (pines tobacco loss letters). the wash, collect the men's treasures (pipes, tobacco, love-letters, war trophies, and the like) into little parcels, put out the torn things for our mending heap, and store the sacks in numbered order in one of what Royaumont calls "garrets." We could put a row of our modern villas into our big store-room. The men's outdoor clothes modern villas into our big store-room. The men's outdoor clothes go into a separate attic, where they hang from the good old rafters in a current of fresh air, and everything is numbered and entered up in our alphabetical record—grown from a penny notebook into a full-blooded card index. The next stage is the mending. A wonderful Frenchwoman, Madame Fox, the wife of a British resident in our village (Asnières-sur-Oise), undertakes the mending of the washed linen. Most of her helpers are volunteers, but the head of the local rubber toy manufactory has reinforced her working party by the loan of two of his women operatives for the entire afternoon. the local rubber toy manufactory has reinforced her working party by the loan of two of his women operatives for the entire afternoon every day of the week. We ourselves tackle the uniforms, with the noble assistance of Mrs. Hacon, an N.U. worker well-known in the Shetlands, through whose ingenuity I have seen the "veste" of an antilleryman, minus half a sleeve, made into a wondrous garment with warm woollen cuffs—all because there was nothing in the world to mend it with but a pair of navy blue bed-socks and an old scarlet sock to repair a breach made by shrapnel in a pair of infantryman's trousers.

Indeed, we are earning a good name for this manufactor.

Indeed, we are earning a good name for this woman's hospital for turning out our men not only mended in body but repaired in

equipment. They say the men from Royaumont are recognisable by their healthy red cheeks and their clean, good clothes. It is a real pleasure to see the wounded man's face when he sees his kit, washed and renovated, folded ready for him to wear.

A striking tribute to the effi-ciency of the Scottish Women was the urgent request made by the French military authorities that they should establish a second hospital at Troyes. This hospital differed from Royaumont and from any other French hospital, in that the French wounded were, for the first time, being nursed under canvas. The Administrator at Troyes was Sir John French's sister, Mrs. Harley. This unit, which was directly under the French military authorities, was afterwards ordered to



Reading the gauge in order to check the amount of gas required. In the technical part of the business of gas manufacture the women were assisted by the superintendent.

Marseilles, to proceed to Salonika, and to be attached to the French army in the Balkans. Very few voluntary hospitals were so highly honoured as to be invited to follow the army in the field, and its medical head, Dr. Louise McCroy, received the grade of médecin-en-chef in the French Army.

In Serbia the need was most urgent, and here again, in spite of the language difficulty, in spite of distance and the all but insuperable difficulties of transport,

Englishwomen went to stand by the side of Appalling conditions our ally. From the offices of the Serbian in Serbia Relief Fund there went out clothing, medi-

cal stores of all kinds, money, and aid of every kind. British Red Cross nurses and voluntary workers gave their lives for Serbia, and the units of the Scottish Women's Hospitals in Serbia, organised and worked by women, stemmed the tide of disease.

Serbian doctors had coped with the wounded from the first Austrian invasion in August, 1914, but the second invasion in the autumn left them with so many wounded men that it was impossible to care for all. Men died in the streets, and many were left on the floors of cafés without

help until their limbs were past saving. The Austrians left behind them in their retreat a terrible enemy, typhus, which threatened to destroy the nation itself. These were the appalling conditions by which the first British helpers were faced. It was a case for the sanitary expert and for the hospital orderly, quite as much as for the nurse and the doctor. The earliest Englishwomen to arrive were those who accompanied Madame Grouitch, then Lady

Paget's unit, followed by the Scottish
Women, the Wounded Allies Relief, and
units sent by the British Red Cross. A
letter from one of the early arrivals in

Serbia will show the state of things which had to be tackled.

The most terrible sight I have seen here is the big fever hospital—a huge barracks where there are said to be 1,500 cases of fever, mostly enteric, typhus, and recurrent. Among their patients the acknowledged death rate is ten a day—the fill of our hospital in fortnight! With a fellow-member of the unit. I went over the typhus wards one day. You really cannot imagine what it was like. There were only a few doctors for their hundreds of cases, and otherwise only orderlies who are terrified for their own safety—poor wretches—and just crowd in corners, doing nothing unless driven to it. All the windows were shut, and the place literally smelt like a sewer. All along the corridors patients were packed together, and one of the corridors was so dark one could not see the patients' faces at first. The wards, as regards hopeless dirt and squalor, were worse than the worst slum dwellings I have ever seen. The patients lay on mattresses on the floor; often three lay shivering on two mattresses on the floor. Their clothing and bedding were filthy and alive with vermin, and helpless cases are simply left to become filthier and filthier.

All this was changed. The Serbian hospitals were revolutionised, and the revolution was due in no small part to the devotion of the two or three hundred British women attached to the various Serbian hospitals, and they bravely faced the new and menacing situation when Serbia was

attacked in overwhelming force in October, 1915. Among the noble women who laid down their lives in this service of glory was the gifted playwright and authoress, Mrs. Dearmer.

#### CARE OF BELGIAN REFUGEES. By the Hon. Mrs. Alfred Lyttleton.

In August, 1914, a few days after the war began and the Germans marched across Belgium, the rumours of a possible flight of refugees into England were heard. Lady Lugard, to whom eternal honour is due for her initiative in the matter, had word that a ship holding 2,000 women and children rescued from burning villages would arrive in three days. This information was, fortunately, not correct, as no preparations to receive them had been made, but it spurred on the few people who were already aware that a great effort would be asked of England. We began at once to prepare for the rush which was fortunately delayed for several days.

Hostels were opened in London and also in Dulwich, Clapham, and other London suburbs. The pause enabled us to organise these with the help notably of

the V.A.D. We arranged also for the registration of each refugee. But it would have taken many weeks to reduce to order

Immensity of the task

the mass of letters offering hospitality and personal service, under which we were suffocated. The confusion at first was terrible. Not only did thousands of letters arrive daily, but people rushed personally to the little rooms in General Buildings, Aldwych, to offer their help in one form or another. When the stream of fugitives began to arrive



DUTCH CONCENTRATION CAMP FOR BELGIAN REFUGEES.

At Bergen-op-Zoom the Dutch authorities provided a large concentration camp for Belgian civilians who escaped from their country during its occupation by the hated Prussians. The camp was under military supervision, and was crowded with women and children.



WIVES SOLDIERS' Making garments for wives of soldiers at the front at the Hammersmith branch of the "Tipperary Homes."



WAISTCOATS NEW OLD GLOVES FOR Trying on waistcoats made of old gloves. The Ladies' Territorial Committee, at the cost of a shilling apiece, made hundreds of these garments.

numbers of volunteers devoted themselves to the task of meeting the trains, sorting out the poor bewildered people as they arrived, and escorting them to the various temporary shelters which had been equipped.

A committee had by then been formed, with Lord Hugh Cecil as its chairman, and Lord Gladstone as its treasurer, and to this committee the General Omnibus Company lent the services of Mr. Campbell, who undertook the huge task of organising the transport of the refugees all over the British Isles.

Roughly, the scheme of the committee was to billet the refugees in homes provided by private hosts. Tens of thousands of hosts came generously forward and offered to house and feed the fugitives, who had just been driven from their homes and had in most cases lost everything they possessed. The difficulty of classifying and registering the thousands of offers, the fitting of the guests to the hosts in batches of twos and threes, the temporary housing, the final despatch of the refugees to the country districts, all involved an immense labour.

It was very soon realised that assistance from the Government was an absolute necessity. Mr. Samuel had publicly in the House of Commons offered the hospitality of

the nation to the Belgian refugees, and the Local Government Board opened various The rush from camps and wards under the management of the Metropolitan Asylums Board. Antwerp

At first accommodation was provided in some of the large workhouses—Marylebone, Endell Street, Edmonton, and so on—and later Alexandra Palace was furnished, as was Earl's Court. Just when it seemed as if a certain order and routine had been established and a system devised for dealing with thousands of individuals in detail, Antwerp fell. I shall never forget the day, when working quietly in the office at General Buildings, a message came up from a temporary waiting-room, which had been hired at the skating rink next door, for someone to come down immediately. I went, little thinking that for a full year I should be working in the great ramshackle building through which thousands of refugees have passed.

The rush was difficult to deal with. Four or five thousand people a day would arrive; all had to be seen, talked to, and helped. People came eagerly from every part of the country and took away the refugees in batches of sixty and seventy. Local committees were formed, and there were soon 2,000 large committees in existence, without whose devoted work the whole enterprise would have been impossible. Glasgow, Bradford, Dublin, Cardiff,



NO ONE TOO YOUNG OR TOO POOR TO HELP SOMEHOW.

Girls of the Rockingham Street Schools knitting for the sailors on H.M.S. Drake. Above: Examining sleeping-bags before despatch.

many hundreds; smaller places, such as Blackpool, Exeter, Swindon, and Carnarvon; villages and private people all sent representatives up to Aldwych to pick out the Belgians best suited to the hospitality they had to offer.

The Belgian Consulate early in the war, in conjunction with the War Refugees Committee, opened a special office in General Buildings, and here, too, helped by a band of volunteer workers, the people who had come from rich and sheltered lives were specially cared for.

and sheltered lives were specially cared for.

Gradually the stream slackened, but the work of caring for our guests remained. The War Refugees Committee was like the government of a small country; it had to legislate for the community; it had to house, clothe, feed, doctor, nurse, marry, christen, bury, punish, fine, employ, educate and pension something like 200,000 people. Many educate, and pension something like 300,000 people. Many mistakes were made, and at first there was much confusion; but Lord Gladstone, and the able Honorary General Secre-

Some facts and figures

tary, Mr. A. Maudslay, gradually produced order out of chaos, and the whole organisation ran easily and smoothly. Some idea of its size and scope may be given

Three hundred and seventy people were by a few facts. working in General Buildings alone. There were 2,000 local committees who cared for anything from twenty to 5,000 refugees each. About 30,000 private people gave hospitality. Thousands and thousands of pounds passed through the Committee's hands, more than half a million garments were given away, and tons of foodstuffs generously sent by the Colonies were distributed through the agency of the National Food Fund.

The War Refugees Committee doctored 5,684 people in its private dispensary, doctors and nurses giving their services voluntarily. Many workshops for the refugees were opened, and employment of all kinds was found for A considerable number worked in munition factories, others tilled the ground; many who could not fight from various causes got places as correspondence clerks in business houses, as shop assistants, motor mechanics, etc.

#### COMFORTS FOR THE SOLDIERS. By Mrs. Massey Lyon.

The Government scheme for the organisation of voluntary work for the troops was the most important development in that branch of war work which, when all is said and done, is the one which can absorb the greatest amount of

the energy of women-kind.

As most people know, the organisation was after a time placed under Col. Sir Edward Ward, Bart., K.C.B., K.C.V.O., who was appointed Director-General of Voluntary Organisations, or, as he was known in Army parlance, the D.G.V.O. Sir Edward Ward's reputation as an organiser was as well known as the charm of his personality, and both played no inconspicuous part in the work which was to co-ordinate voluntary effort all over the country.

Under the scheme, complete in its simplicity, the whole

country was divided into districts under the Lords-Lieutenant, Lord Provosts, Devolution of responsibility Lord Mayors, Mayors, and Provosts. They, in their turn, divided their districts

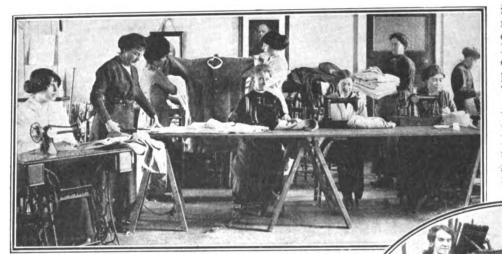
into centres under responsible heads, who again had the right of redivision into any number of groups rendered necessary by the size or circumstances of their districts. Each group was responsible immediately to the one above it, both for the quality of the work produced and the carrying out of orders given to its workers; so that, by the time the Lord-Lieutenant, or whoever might be the official head of the main district, was reached, a vast amount of guaranteed work was accumulated. This was at the disposal of the D.G.V.O. to meet demands which he received direct from the Army authorities, and by this means certainty was assured that whatever was needed by a particular unit at a particular time reached that unit. particular unit at a particular time reached that unit.



WOMEN COAL-HEAVERS IN SCOTLAND.

Owing to the shortage of male labour, women were engaged by several Scottish coal merchants. All had been used to heavy farm-work, and they proved most efficient in their new employment. At the top: Weighing out coal in hundredweights into bags from the railway trucks. In the centre: In the depot, filling bags for delivery. At the bottom:

Bringing in vans to the depot after delivering a load.



WOMEN'S WORK IN GALLANT LITTLE WALES.

Inside a women's war-work club at Swansea, where members were engaged in making shirts for soldiers at the front. The women of the Principality worked as loyally as the men fought gallantly.

By this means the overlapping and waste which occurred in the winter of 1914-15 was prevented. Emergencies are notoriously extravagant, and the outbreak of war was a very big emergency indeed. It is not surprising, therefore, that some regiments were, as they expressed it "snowed up" in comforts, while others were left out in the cold—in a very literal sense of the words.

The new organisation also enabled the Army authorities to make use of voluntary work, and this is

Army Council recognition

an important point, for unless they could count upon a definite number of definite things at the time they were wanted, all

the "comforts" contributed (and incidentally blocking up transport already strained to the utmost) were of no use to them. The provision of warm things cannot be left to chance, or at any rate should not be. And this aspect had its own importance to sensible women, for it not only gave gratifying recognition to their work, but enabled them to play their own distinct part, none the less important because

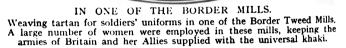


"FOR THOSE IN PERIL."

At the headquarters of the British and Foreign Sailors' Society, which successfully undertook the arduous work of supplying men of the Navy with thick jerseys and socks.

it was a small one, in the great machine by which alone victory could be brought to our arms. For every one who supplied a definite purpose in that machine played a definite part in the whole.

In recognition of this truth, the Army Council provided each worker under the scheme who had proved her mettle with a special badge. This was only given to those who had worked in an approved manner for three



months, and was forfeited unless the due conditions were complied with, so that it was no mere form, but a tangible proof of recognised work

Work under the scheme divided itself naturally into two sections—for the men on active service and those in hospital. So one had one's choice as to which one



TWENTIETH CENTURY POWDER-HORNS.

Making ammunition bags for the Fleet. Wives of officers and men of the senior Service found occupation at Bo'ness, Scotland, converting red raw silk into pockets to hold powder and shells.

worked for. A scheduled list of articles required for each was provided by the D.G.V.O. for the guidance of each centre, each article being made according to the design passed by experts at headquarters. This immediately stopped the waste which had been caused by the making of garments, etc., on unpractical lines.

A certain amount of dismay was expressed at the announcement of the scheme, lest it should damp the ardour of the many societies and groups of workers all over the country. But very little consideration served to prove that the reverse must be the case, for every such body could "come in" under the central council, thus receiving Government recognition of its work and the right to the description "approved by the War Office."

The big societies, whose work has become Co-operation with a household word amongst us-such as the Red Cross, the Order of St. John, Queen Mary's Needlework Guild, the Cavendish Square Hospital Depot, and so forth—soon

received this imprimatur.

Of course, there were many tangible advantages to those co-operating in this way with headquarters; for instance, free carriage was given, and arrangements made in many cases where individual workers could have the advantage of the reduction in cost of materials bought in bulk. But more potent than such things to patriotic Englishwomen was the knowledge that they were playing their real part in the great work of the war, and, from the practical standpoint, that whatever they did, whether the knitting of a sock or the making of a simple bandage, went directly would there be any uncertainty as to what was wanted; no more the lingering fear that the expenditure of time and money—both commodities of increasing value amongst us-might be wasted; no more should we hear horrid rumours of bales of garments, each representing no little time and trouble, and often of sacrifice too, lying about in some forsaken district, or of mufflers being used to polish harness, and so on.

This was doubly important in 1915; for, on the one hand, there was less money to spare, and on the other, the number of women who were ready to sew and knit



ITALIAN WOUNDED UNDER THE ARMS OF THE RED CROSS.

A most striking photograph showing the Italian Red Cross actually at work on the field of battle. The kind-faced sister and the capable Red Cross men were as unconscious of the presence of the photographer as the Royal Castle of Moncalieri under the auspices of the princess.

had been considerably reduced; for the months of war had provided numberless outlets for energy and devotion, and innumerable women, who previously found no outlets for their energies save in this way, were by then engaged in canteens, in nursing, and a hundred other directions. Many and many a woman with home duties which must come first, or denied the gifts of youth or of health, had been feeling just a little envious of the opportunities so gladly seized by those unhampered by such considerations to do something definite for England. Well, here was their chance, too; and it was one which would be gladly welcomed and made the most of by all who realised that

even the knitting of a muffler or the making of a shirt, provided it was the right muffler and the right shirt, made in the right way and at the right time, was part of the great work of securing a victory for our arms.

## "WOUNDED AND MISSING."

By A. W. Holland.

The above legend brought a dark shadow into many homes. Inquiries were made, differing according to the circumstances of the inquirers, for the poor had little idea how to set about

the business. Pre-sently, one of the missing man's com-The agony of suspense rades might be home on leave, but his opinion, eagerly sought, did not necessarily dispel uncertainty. Happily, there was a department of the Red Cross given up to inquiries for prisoners of war. It had eyes and ears behind the lines in France, in the hospitals, in the neutral headquarters of the Red Cross in Geneva, and it was in regular, close touch with the War Office and the Record Office. It was not long before even into the obscurest villages of the kingdom, the knowledge pene-trated that there was a place in London where an anxious mother or wife might go in search of news of one she loved.

Corporal Fuller, V.C., of the Grenadier Guards, was under treatment at the No. 3 Base Hospital, Sheffield, when the King visited it, and his Majesty took advantage of the opportunity personally to pin on his breast the Cross of the Order of St. George (third class) which had been

AN ENGLISH SOLDIER. conferred upon the gallant soldier by H.I.M. the Tsar. Above: During his tour of inspection in the North, the King paid a visit to the No. 3 Base Hospital, Sheffield, and spoke to many of the wounded. His solicitude for his men was touching in its sincerity, and was gratefully appreciated.



GIRLS MAKING BOXES TO HOLD THE SHELLS THAT OTHER GIRLS HAD MADE.

At first it was supposed that much of the work in the munition factories would be too heavy and arduous for women, but in fact they proved themselves able to engage in every process connected with the manufacture

and despatch to the front of even the heaviest shells. This photograph shows a group of girls making ammunition boxes and placing in them the rests that support the shells.

Sometimes there was definite news that the soldier was a prisoner in Germany, in which case there was the satisfaction of knowing where the man was, and of being able

to write to him, and to send him parcels of necessaries and small luxuries. The German lists of prisoners were sometimes delayed. Wounded prisoners had no opportunity of writing home if they were delayed in a hospital on the lines of communication, and it was not until they were finally settled in a hospital or an internment camp in Germany that there was any likelihood of news. Sometimes all the consolation the Red Cross Inquiry Department could give was news of how son, lover, or husband died. Details are a consolation in these circumstances, and the Red Cross inquirer obtained them from comrades, or from doctors or nurses. Occasionally the answer was that the man was dead, but even then there was a small lightening of sorrow to learn from the Red Cross that the grave, "somewhere in France," was carefully tended. "I am glad to know," wrote a private's mother in answer to a description of her son's grave, "that he lies comfortable."

News of prisoners of war

came to the Red Cross in London from the German Red Cross, transmitted through Geneva. The department had news from German camps and hospitals, and was kept posted about the movements of prisoners from one

posted about the movements of prisoners from one camp to another. We know now how hard was the lot of our countrymen who were prisoners of war. An agency that helped us to know where our prisoner of war was, and told us of his movements, was indeed blessed.

Another department of the Red Cross was one at Devonshire House, where Lady Dodds and her workers undertook to send parcels to prisoners in Germany. Each parcel cost five shillings, and was sent free of charge by the Post Office. It contained currant bread, jam, tinned meat, tea, milk, sugar, cheese, dripping, soap, and tobacco, and was packed by experienced hands, so that it was sure to arrive in good condition.

There is no space to tell here of other good work of a similar kind for "all prisoners and captives," but in quiries for Belgian prisoners in Germany were carried out by the Wounded Allies Relief Committee, and there were kindly people who undertook to advise and help in the composition Z 187



HOW BRISTOL WOMEN HELPED THE "ADVENTURERS."

True to her long tradition of service to England, Bristol sent many
"adventurers" into the Navy and Army. The women of the old town
flocked into the munition works, this one a converted motor-cycle works,
to release their men for military duty.

and the safe tying-up of parcels for prisoners in Germany. The bread must be of a kind that would stand keeping, and the experienced sender of parcels learned just what was most acceptable.

## THE WORK OF THE S.S.F.A. By Eleanor Rathbone, C.C.

Hon. Secretary Liverpool Branch.

In distributing public funds in a number of small weekly grants three methods are possible—payment through the post, at pay stations, and through home visitors. The S.S.F.A. has always preferred the last-named system, because it saves the recipient the trouble and fatigue of attendance at a pay station, renders investigation of circumstances and detection of imposture much easier, and, above all, makes possible a personal relationship between visitor and visited. The vast majority of those assisted by the Association are women and children, although aged or invalid fathers also find their way on to its lists. It is natural, therefore, that most of the visitors should



READY TO START AT A MINUTE'S NOTICE.

Members of a Canadian nursing unit photographed near the headquarters, the Thackeray Hotel, when their unit was in hourly expectation of being ordered to the front.

and in this one branch alone it is estimated that well over a quarter of a million visits were made, in the course of a year of war, to the homes of our soldiers and sailors.

When it is stated that a large proportion of these visits were paid in the very poorest quarters, and that in some streets we had as many, or more, "cases" on our books as there were houses in the street, it will be realised that this great system of war relief visitation represented an opportunity for constructive social work which it would be difficult to overestimate. Into problems of housing, of



NURSE, ORGANISER, AND AD-MINISTRATOR.

Miss Amy Nunn, Matron of Roehampton House, Queen Mary's Convalescent Auxiliary Hospital for soldiers and sailors who had lost their limbs in the war.

be women. In fact, there is probably no other national association in England, engaged in spending a great national fund, which is staffed so largely by women. Some of the large provincial cities have male officers and committees, but the county associations appear to have usually women office-bearers.

The branch of the Association with which the writer is best acquainted owes much to the work of its men helpers in its treasurer's office, its regimental correspondence department, and its index room; but the work of visitation is carried out mainly, though not entirely, by women,



PHYSICAL DRILL AT THE BELGIAN NURSES' TRAINING COLLEGE.
Dr. Jacob originated the idea of training temporarily exiled Belgian girls as auxiliary nurses to aid the Belgian Military Hospitals at the front. Premises were taken in Russell Square, and, at a minimum cost of fro each, numbers of girls were trained under Nurse Owen.



FARM WORK FOR FARMERS' WIVES AND DAUGHTERS. Country women recovered much of their old-time usefulness in farm life as a result of the shortage of male hands. Besides the more obvious dairywork, they undertook much of the labour into which machinery enters, and drove and managed harvesters with skill and self-possession.

sanitation, of child care, of temperance or intemperance, our visitors gained an insight which they had never had before, and an opportunity for improving conditions and exercising influence which it would have been a crime to neglect. At the same time, they were instructed always to remember that the Association was not a charitable institution, and that acceptance of assistance from it should not expose the recipient to interference into her private affairs.

But, without patronage or officiousness, a tactful visitor could usually do much to help those she visited in innumerable small ways which found no record on case papers. It must be remembered that many wives of soldiers and sailors, like the soldiers and sailors themselves, were very young, and were going through a time of great anxiety, and sometimes of great loneliness. Some of them were financially better off than before the war, and this was a state of things that had its temptations. Others were feeling the pinch of the high cost of living, and even with the aid of the grant made them from the Association's funds, found it not easy to make both ends meet without lowering the standard of

family life. Most well-worked branches of the Association soon evolved a complex machinery for meeting both of these types of difficulty—clubs for education and

recreation, thrift schemes, sub-committees for dealing with every kind of special need. The grants in aid of separation allowance made by most branches took the form of a rent allowance in cases where the rental of the house was over four shillings a week; others adopted a slightly different basis of assistance. All made provision for emergency help in cases of special need, such as convalescent change for invalids, milk for delicate children. free medicine and medical advice for those who could not afford to pay. Even where no material help was needed. however, the system of occasional visits was still kept up, and relations of real friendship often grew up between the visitor and the visited. In the poorest districts the Association tended perhaps to be even too much relied on. In the better class or more self-respecting districts its help had to be pressed upon the recipient rather than safeguarded from his self-respecting districts its help had to be pressed upon the recipient rather than safeguarded from her. Its functions as the helper, friend, adviser, and last, but certainly not least, the confidential private secretary of the soldier's wife or mother in her often complicated transactions with the paymaster, were increasingly recognised, not only among the women, but among the soldiers and sailors themselves.

# THE NEW GENERATION. By Mrs. Despard.

In the fine work that has been done by organised women during the war for hospitals, not only in Great Britain, but in France, Belgium, and Serbia, certain other work of fully as much value to the nation must not be forgotten.

In France, where there is a conscript Army, and where, consequently, the allowances made to the wives and children of the fighters are much less



COUNTRY LIFE IN THE HEART OF THE TOWN. Novel scenes were witnessed at Carlton House Terrace, London, in the course of the exhibition of farm work available for women. Hardly anyone would imagine that this pretty pastoral scene could have been photographed, as it was, within a quarter of a mile of Charing Cross.



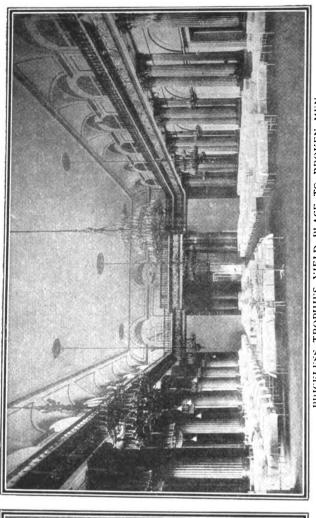
NOVEL CLASSES IN CAMP COOKING.

At the King's College for Women, London, special classes were started to teach nurses leaving for the front how to cook out of doors. The classes were well attended and greatly enjoyed, the novelty of the course appealing to the nurses as much as its practical utility.



THE "LITTLE FATHER'S" CARE FOR HIS CHILDREN.

The Tsar had his famous Winter Palace at Petrograd converted into a military hospital to which he gave the name Tsarevitch Alexis Hospital, after his only son. The Nicholas Hall, shown above, formed what was probably the most magnificent and luxurious hospital ward in the world.



Another superb gallery of the Winter Palace, the Relic Hall, cleared of its trophies and furnished as a ward where wounded soldiers were tended and many priceless lives were saved. The name "Little Father" must have acquired a more personal meaning for the broken men welcomed into his home.





than in this country, women of leisure and many engaged in keeping family businesses going organised themselves for the purpose of supplementing the meagre allowances, by giving out work and finding outdoor employment for those women who were able to undertake it.

In Paris they formed and kept up, principally by voluntary work, a bureau whose object it was to bring together families the members of which were separated through the war in Belgium and the North of France. The work was onerous. When the writer was in Paris, no less than 4,000 applications had come from applications had come English mayors about lost Belgian refugees; sixty women clerks, all voluntary, were employed, and then, in the month of February, 1915, success had just begun to crown their long and patient efforts.

In our own country no one in touch with those living in the

August, 1914. It must be remembered that many who enlisted at that time were casual workers, living with their families from hand to mouth, and often out of work. Mothers of small children found themselves in many cases absolutely destitute. Moreover, they were ignorant as to their rights, and did not know where to apply for information.

The Soldiers' and Sailors' Families Association did what they could to An appalling grapple with the situation; but in many places the work was far too situation heavy for them, and the relief they gave pending settle-

ment was quite inadequate.

It was very well that this appalling situation found women organised. Had it not been so their efforts would have been ineffective. As it was, those who had banded themselves together to work for Women's Freedom were

able, with but little difficulty, to throw much of their energy into the task of making life possible for the women and children whose husbands and fathers were in the Navy or at the front.

It would take volumes to record the numbers of helpcentres, clubs for babies, welcomes, hospitals for women and children, cheap and good restaurants, maternity centres, that were started and carried through by women, and principally for women, during the months of war. As specially touching on the families of soldiers and sailors, the writer would refer to an admirable association formed in 1915, "The League of Rights for Soldiers' and Sailors' Dependents."

The committees of the branches of this League-and, in many cases, the officers-were soldiers' and sailors' relatives. To the committees were brought cases



poorer districts of our great towns The Russian Royal Family worked strenuously throughout the period of the war as nurses in the will ever forget the horror and hospitals of Petrograd. This photograph shows the beautiful Grand Duchess Tatiana tending the wounds of a Russian soldier.





THE RUSSIAN EMPRESS AND HER DAUGHTERS AT A HOSPITAL FOR THE WOUNDED. Interior scene of a ward in the hospital at Tsarsköe Selo. The Grand Duchess Olga is seen on the extreme left, and in the background immediately in front of the closed door are the Grand Duchess Tatiana and the Tsaritza. The centre photograph shows Lady Sybil Grey, who acted with the Red Cross Commission at Petrograd.





ACTUAL WAR SERVICE

Work of a kind very congenial to healthy women fond of outdoor exercise was provided by the Forage Purchasing Department of the A.S.C., which engaged them to supervise the despatch of hay and straw from farms

of neglect on the part of the authorities, of errors, of injustice, often arising from mistake. The recipients The recipients of allowances were made to realise, not only their rights, but their responsibilities; they met and discussed their affairs as women of business who, through their children at home and their men on the battlefields, had a heavy stake in the country; and the effect, as many of us believed, was salutary.

As more general in its objects, but as having helped women and children belonging to the Army and Navy, the hospital at Bracken Hill, Bromley, Kent, ought to be mentioned. There, in a fine house, surrounded by a beautiful garden, women who from lack of beds must leave the hospitals before they were cured, children, and expectant mothers, many of whom had husbands at the front, found a comfortable and happy resting-place during their time of trouble. Doubtless there were other homes of the some

FOR OUTDOOR WOMEN.

and stations. Two of them are shown on the right. They had O.H.M.S. badges on their coats and cycles, being engaged in actual war service. On the left: Four Nottingham girl window-cleaners, ready for work.

kind. This one was known to the writer. The conception and carrying out of the scheme came from one woman, and women have been her assistants right through. This

hospital was started in November, 1914.

There can be no doubt that many of these institutions, such as the women's hospitals, the babies' welcomes, and the maternity centres, which in many parts of the country have done extraordinarily valuable work for the whole community, and which owe their origin to the war, have come to stay. It is to be hoped that they will expand and increase.

## WOMEN AND INDUSTRIAL LIFE.

By Margaret Bryant.

There is no new thing under the sun. In an "Illustrated London News," dating from the Crimean War, there is a



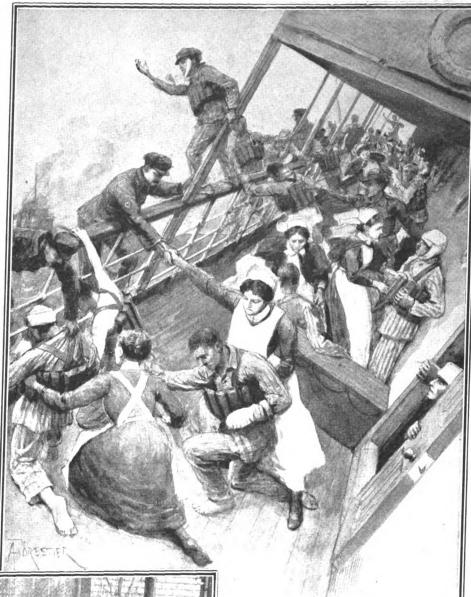


Mr. Saunders, village blacksmith of Aldbro Hatch, Essex, was assisted by his two sons until they joined the Army early in the war. One of them was killed subsequently at the Dardanelles. After their departure, Mrs. 202

PLACE IN A VILLAGE SMITHY. Saunders gave her husband active and efficient help in his business, and learned to shoe a horse as satisfactorily as she could mend a fire. On the left: At the forge. On the right: Filing the cap of a new shoe.

picture of our early Victorian grandmothers engaged in the making of cartridges. As a matter of fact, certain processes in armament factories have long been carried out by women, and in the months before the war there were over a thousand women employed in small arms factories. The chainmakers of Cradley Heath proved long ago that women could carry out heavy work in the metal trades, and even before the war over 25,000 women were engaged in the iron and steel works of England and Wales. But after the formation of the Ministry of Munitions there was a great extension of the labour of women in the making of war material, and where women munition makers had been counted by hundreds they were counted by thousands. Some of these women went to factory work for the first time, from purely patriotic motives, but by far the greater number were transferred from other industries, and were already inured to factory life.

Women munition workers were engaged for the most part on automatic or semi-automatic processes. But this was by no means always the case, and in instances where pains were taken to give expert training to the women, they were found to turn out excellent skilled work. There were factories where women carried out the whole work of shell-making from start to finish, involving twenty- one separate



"WOUNDED FIRST!": THE MOST BEAUTIFUL STORY OF THE WAR.

STORY OF THE WAR.

Touching scene of womanly heroism and devotion on board the hospital ship Anglia. When the vessel was sinking as the result of collision with a mine, the nurses insisted on all the wounded leaving the ship first, tying lifebelts round them and assisting them into the boats. Remaining to the last, several of these noble women perished, in addition to about eighty badly-wounded soldiers and members of the crew.

operations in the case of 18 in. high-explosive shells. In a certain munitions factory where three hundred women were employed in making shells, labourers were originally provided to lift the heavier pieces of metal, but the girls decided that they could do this themselves, and so they handled the material in all stages through all the processes.

through all the processes.

The "Report on Women's Work" presented to the British Association, at Manchester, in 1915, quoted an engineering expert in a technical journal on the capacity of the woman munition worker. Higher tribute to her utility could hardly be forthcoming. "It may be safely said," he wrote, "that women can



SURVIVORS OF BATTLE AND SHIPWRECK.

Some of the wounded soldiers from the hospital ship Anglia, which was sunk by a mine in the Channel, on November 17th, 1915. After their terrible experience they were sent to the County of London War Hospital, where this group was taken.



THE HAPPY SMILE OF ANZAC.

Wounded Australians in charge of an escort of feminine admirers off for a picnic in the woods near Harefield, Sussex. The second photograph shows Lady Coglan (left) and Lady Talbot photographed by the bedside of a wounded Anzac, on the occasion of a garden-party in the grounds of Harefield Park, under the auspices of the New South Wales Clothing Distribution.

successfully handle very much heavier pieces of metal than had previously been dreamed of. Moreover, they have shown themselves capable of successfully carrying out arduous processes, such as forging, etc., which hitherto have only been performed by men, and of managing machine tools of a very different nature and requiring a very much higher standard of intellect than do automatic and semi-automatic tools.

Doing the work
of men

In fact, it can be stated with absolute truth that, with the possible exception of the heaviest tools—and their inability to work even these has yet to be estab-

tished—women have shown themselves perfectly capable of performing operations which have hitherto been exclusively carried out by men." In the making of fuses they excel, and some women, highly skilled in other trades, rendered great service in the delicate work involved in the manufacture of the wings of aeroplanes. The previous experience of women workers was turned to account in other departments. Women who had been employed on photographic apparatus were very successful in the making of clinometers for artillery, and other instances might be adduced.

So women actually helped in the technical business of war. They put on the workmen's overalls, and showed themselves capable of hard physical toil; and they brought to their work a concentrated zeal and enthusiasm which went far to make them efficient craftswomen.

The woman industrial worker and the business woman helped



indirectly by setting free large numbers of men to join the Colours. In rural England, in spite of the farmer's deep-

seated prejudice against the labour of women except as fruit pickers and possibly milkers, strong girls could be seen handling big cart-horses. The milkmaid began to return to her old province, which had been largely usurped by the cowman, and women began to take a hand in all the processes of a farm. There was on the whole more success in placing women on farms in the south - western counties than elsewhere. Certain counties gave special facilities for the training of women for agriculture, with the result that an increasing number became really skilled workers in a complicated art. The Central Committee for Women's Employment, which accomplished so much good work in the training of women for industrial occupations during the war, carried out an interesting agricultural experiment at



LOOKING AFTER THE LAND.

Lady Petre, in deep mourning for her husband (Lieutenant Lord Petre, who fell in action), with some juvenile pupils of her dairy-farm school at Thorndon Hall, Essex, whose work proved an admirable substitute for farm-hands on active service.

Radlett, in Hertfordshire. Mr. R. C. Phillimore gave the committee the use of thirty acres of land for a training scheme. There were about thirty girls, chiefly London factory girls, working there, chiefly at fruit growing, who were in due course well qualified for rural life.

The same committee enabled girls to qualify themselves for work in the more skilled branches of the leather trade at Bethnal Green. At Hammersmith the embroidery industry was revived, and in many other trades women acquired skill under the care of the committee. As the organisation was in close touch with Government departments, there was a certainty that plenty of work would be forthcoming for the women as they were trained.

Women's share in industry was, temporarily at all events, enormously increased. When the Queen's Work for Women Fund was started the problem before it was to cope with the distress among the many women thrown out of work at the outbreak of war. Later the tables were turned, and the business before the committee was to supply enough trained women to meet the demands of the industries with which it was concerned.

In every detail of daily life women workers were more and more in evidence. The morning milk was left by a girl, and a girl delivered the morning paper; at the station a girl booking clerk handed out the ticket, another clipped at the borrier, and though the male conductor or the it at the barrier, and though the male conductor or the

Every industry represented

guard was still at his post, the chances are that the railway-carriage had been cleaned out in the early hours of the

morning by a woman. A woman called to inspect the gas-meter, or to rectify a defect in the

geyser.
The first week in November, 1915, saw women conductors, clad in a suitable and becoming costume, on one at least of the London 'bus routes. In this instance, as was often the case on the railways, preference was given to the near relations of the man who was released to serve with the Colours. In France the tram was apt to stop at a certain point to allow the woman conductor to embrace her baby. "Allez donc! C'est mon bébé!" she cried. On the French farm ploughing, seedtime and harvest, found the fermière at her husband's post in the fields. English women did not fill the occupations of their men at the front to the same extent as in France, but we moved

rapidly in that direction. It was clearly in that development that economic safety lay, as our armies increased. For the war was one of money as well as guns, and women were compelled to bear an increasing part in the work of the nation. In clerical work, where there has always been a large field for women, they replaced men to a very large extent, and in some businesses like banking, which had hitherto been reserved for men, they were employed in considerable numbers.

The Government Departments employed many temporary women clerks. For the most part the State employed its temporary women assistants in the lower

grades, but there were brilliant excep- In the Diplomatic tions. At the end of October,1915, it was announced that a woman, Miss Pressley

Smith, well known for her work in Edinburgh, had been appointed Secretary of the British Legation at Christiania. The Diplomatic Service is the most carefully guarded of all but Sir Edward Grey is a staunch champion of feminism.

The war service of by far the greatest number of women. however, was in industry, especially in the clothing and tailoring trades. When they were engaged on piece work the problem of securing that the influx of female labour should not depress the standard of wages was simplified. When they were paid at time rates it was more difficult to say whether the difference between theirs and the men's

wages was justified by the difference in skill and strength.
Mrs. Philip Martineau wrote in the "Englishwoman" that
"The wives and sisters of the men who have enlisted have yet to see that they can take their share in saving England, just as the women of France are saving their land for their men who are fighting." They did come to realise their share more and more.

The response to the War Register opened at the Labour Exchanges showed their eagerness to do their part; what was needed was better organisation and extended opportunity, so that every woman might know exactly what her share in the service of her country was. The high hopes of those who placed their names on the War Register were hardly fulfilled. It was hoped that the call for more women workers, which was the necessary corollary of Lord Derby's, or any other scheme, for a larger army in the field, might offer the women more definite instruction and guidance.



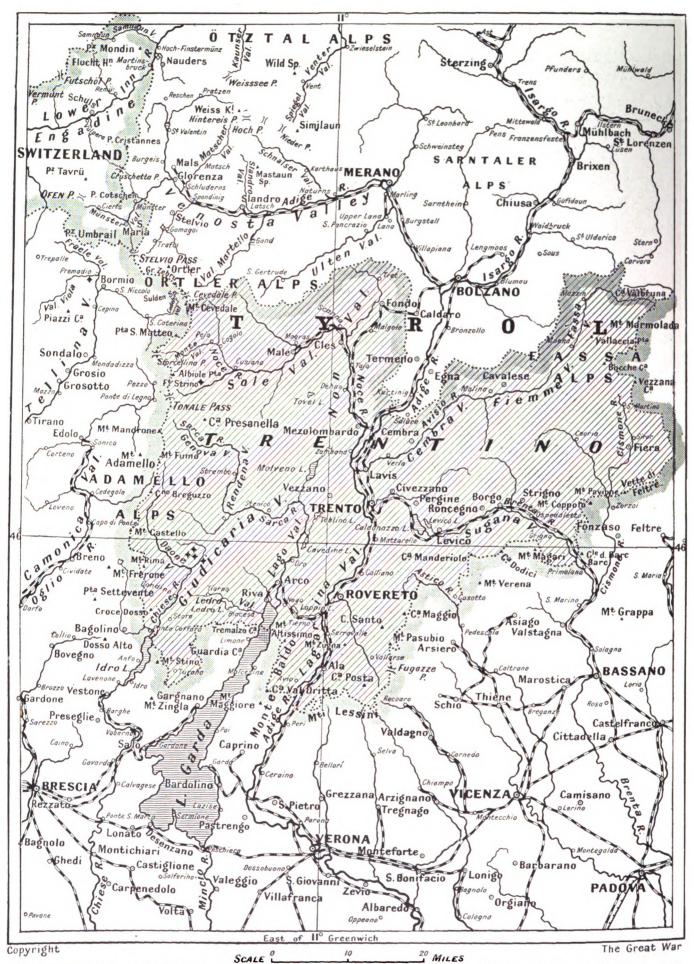
ON THE UNDERGROUND. The Tube liftwoman, a novel feature of London railways towards the end of 1915.



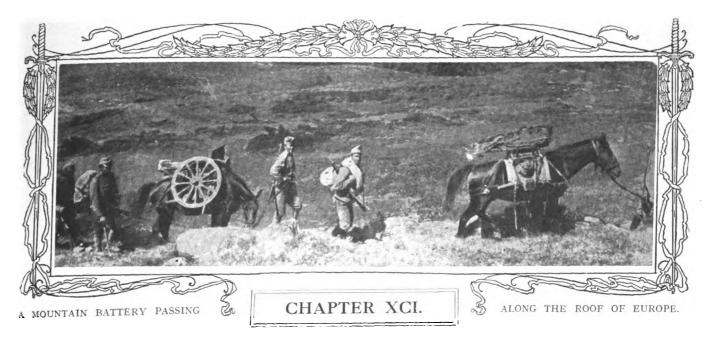
NOVEL SIGHT IN CONSERVATIVE BRITAIN. Instruction in tram driving. Women learning the mechanism of electricar control in the Corporation School, Albert Road, Cross Hill, Glasgow. Women in France and Germany were taught to control the traffic.



TICKET COLLECTORS at the Caledonian Station, Edin-burgh, wearing special badges pend-ing the arrival of uniforms.



THE TRENTINO AND TYROL FRONT, SHOWING THE AUSTRIAN SYSTEM OF RAILWAYS FOR INVADING THE LOMBARDY PLAIN, AND THE MOUNTAIN PASSES WHICH THE ITALIANS CONQUERED BY A SUDDEN SWOOP ALL ROUND THE GREAT ENEMY SALIENT.



## THE MOUNTAIN BATTLES FOR "ITALIA IRREDENTA."

How Giolitti Upset the Plan of Attack by General Cadorna—The Enemy Gains Three Weeks in Which to Garrison His Alpine Fortresses
—But Through Under-Estimating Her New Opponent Austria Loses All The Mountain-Passes—Part Played by the Alpine Clubs in Saving Italy from Invasion—Bull-Charge Against the Wire Entanglements on Korada Mountain—General Cantore's Lightning Dash to Ala—Wild Fighting on the Alps of Carinthia—How the Alpine Troops Dropped from the Glaciers into the Paradise of Cortina—Great Battle for the Dolomite Road—Advance-Guard of the Third Army Clears the Venetian Flain—Land Around the Isonzo is Flooded by Austrian Sappers—But the Italian Engineers Throw a Bridge Over the Flood—Monfalcone, With its Warship Building-Yards, is Captured—Italian Infantry of the Line Wait for their Heavy Guns—The Strategy of General Cadorna, and the Political Reasons for It—Bavaria Comes to the Help of Austria-Hungary—Violent Counter-Attacks all Along the Front—Terrific Struggle on the Carso Table-Land—the Siege of Gorizia and Tarvis—Closing the Gateways of Invasion in the Carnic Alps—Austrian Alpinists Arrive, and the Mountain Battles Grow Fiercer—Garibaldi at the Col di Lana—The Army of Cadore Presses Towards the Enemy's Vital Railway—The Italian Achievement in the First Phase of the War—It Compares Favourably With the Results of the Parallel Battles in France and Flanders.



N a previous chapter we related, as fully as was possible at the time, the stirring story of the renaissance of popular aspirations which flung Italy into the war. Some matters, however, had to be left diplomatically in the

shadow while the patriotic directors of Italian policy were still engaged in educating their public opinion. Not until the Ancona was sunk, amid circumstances of extreme barbarity, by a German submarine flying the Austrian flag, was it possible to discuss frankly all the aspects of the Italian campaign.

For the first six months of this campaign King Victor Emmanuel and his generals were only able to fight for their unredeemed territories—Italia irredenta—in a very cautious manner, and with part only of their national strength. For there were mighty pro-German and pro-Austrian forces still working throughout the fabric of Italian society, and awaiting an opportunity for swinging the people back into a condition of servitude to Teutonic interests. In both politics and strategy Italy had still to temporise with her foes after the Austrian batteries on the Carnic Alps opened war at 7 p.m. on Saturday, May 23rd, 1915. In particular, General Cadorna

decision at the cost of losing a hundred thousand men in a victorious thrust towards Trieste. He had to be very economical in expending the human resources of the most prolific of modern nations, for fear of Teutonic political influences.

Opened war at 7 p.m. on Saturday, May 23rd, 1915. In particular, General Cadorna rever could seek for a sudden Saturday sudden Saturday at 1915. In This admirable portrait of General Count Luigi Cadorna was sent specially for insertion in our pages by the wife of the Italian Commander-in-Chief, whose act of courtesy testifies to the interest taken in The Great War by our gallant allies.

It was these influences that defeated the great plan of attack which he, the son of one of the victorious generals in the 1866 war, had been elaborating for years. His father, General Cadorna senior, had routed the Austrians in 1866 in Friuli and captured the town of Gradisca; but the enemy had won back this town in the treaty of peace, together with practically every other strategical position along the frontier. From the Stelvio Pass, near the Engadine edge of Switzerland, to the river line of the Isonzo on the Adriatic, the Austrians in 1866 had retained every dominating position over Italy. No mountain pass through which Italian troops could move was left in Italian hands. Bismarck, having used Italy against Austria, betrayed his ally in order to win Austria over to the Teutonic cause, and keep her quiet during the attack on France, which he was preparing. Moreover, by giving the Austrians all the passes by which Lombardy and the Venetian plain could be in-vaded, Bismarck was able to

force Italy into an alliance with the Teutonic Powers. General Cadorna the younger, therefore, had to open his campaign with everything against him. Every valley road along the front of three hundred and twenty miles was dominated by Austrian forts, many of which had recently been reconstructed and enlarged. In fact, since 1910, Austria had greatly increased the number of mountain fortresses, and in the ten months preceding the outbreak of hostilities new entrenched camps of enormous size had been built and gunned with 12 in howitzers in order to intimidate the Italian people. In these circumstances, General Cadorna planned a great surprise assault on the Austrian line of fortified mountains. The Premier, Signor Salandra, and the Foreign Minister, Baron Sonnino, worked with the Commander-in-Chief, and if they had been men of the type which the old Florentine, Niccolo Machiavelli, admired, they would have abruptly declared war, in order



THE WATCH ON A MOUNTAIN BATTLEFIELD.

A lonely Italian outpost keeping watch among the rocks on the summit of the Dolomites, where "The hum of either army stilly sounds."

to enable their armies to use to the full the advantage of a surprise attack. But the modern Italian laboured under the same defects of character as the modern Frenchman and the modern Briton. He was so civilised that he thought of even making war in an honourable way, and the Italian Government gave the enemy full warning by denouncing the Triple Alliance on May 4th, 1915. It was expected that Germany and Austria would reply by breaking off diplomatic relations, and thus bringing about a rupture leading at once to a declaration of war. This was the real reason why King Victor Emmanuel decided to forgo attending the inauguration of the monument to the Thousand of Garibaldi on May 6th, at which he had promised to listen to the great speech of the poet Gabriele D'Annunzio in favour of war. For he expected that his armies would be moving to battle while the poet was speaking. But, as has

already been related, Signor Giolitti intervened and overthrew the War Cabinet, and hostilities were delayed for nineteen days.

By this means Signor Giolitti, the chief representative of Teutonism in Italy, saved Austria from a swift attack and immediate disaster. Giolitti, it must be understood, was only in a position similar to that of the boss of an American party. He was an agent, and not a first-hand force. He was, so to speak, the mechanic at the head of the commercial, financial and political machinery which the Germans had constructed in Italy. Immediately behind him were Italian men of business, working either in partnership with German magnates, or bound to Ger-

many by business interests or financial obligations. The ruling men of this class, as in all modern plutocratic Governments,

working under the cover of democratic institutions, did not get themselves elected into Parliament, but appointed lawyers and other professional politicians to act as their marionettes in the national assembly. Giolitti was merely the principal marionette in this commonplace tragi-comedy of a plutocracy which had corrupted everything in national and municipal politics, in order to increase its powers of money-making and establish its control over the working classes. As in Germany, so in Italy, the professed leaders of the working people—the Socialist deputies—were obscurely attached to the grand interests of the plutocratic party, and though it may not have been true in Italy that strikes were usually arranged to give vent to working-class discontent in as harmless a manner as possible, it was patent that the anti-national policy of the Socialist party largely agreed with the policy of the machine that Giolitti handled.

On the other hand, it must be admitted that the Italian plutocracy as a whole was not, like the Italian noble families that dominated the Cardinals' College, bitterly antinational. Most of its members were moved by the same motives as the plutocracy which governs the United States through its bosses and elected marionettes. They esteemed neutrality as a means of making money out of the belligerent nations. This was a process which also had the advantage of possessing a colour of patriotism, in that it promised to augment the national wealth and leave the country in a position of great financial strength when the belligerent nations had almost exhausted each other. But though this may have been the view of the directors of the most powerful political machine in Italy, yet the nominal head of the machine, Signor Giolitti, through thwarted ambition or want of political insight, struck a blow at his country from which it took long to recover.

All the principal mountain fortresses could easily have been forced at the end of the first week in May, if the war had opened in accordance with the plans of General Cadorna, King Victor Emmanuel, and his Ministers; for both

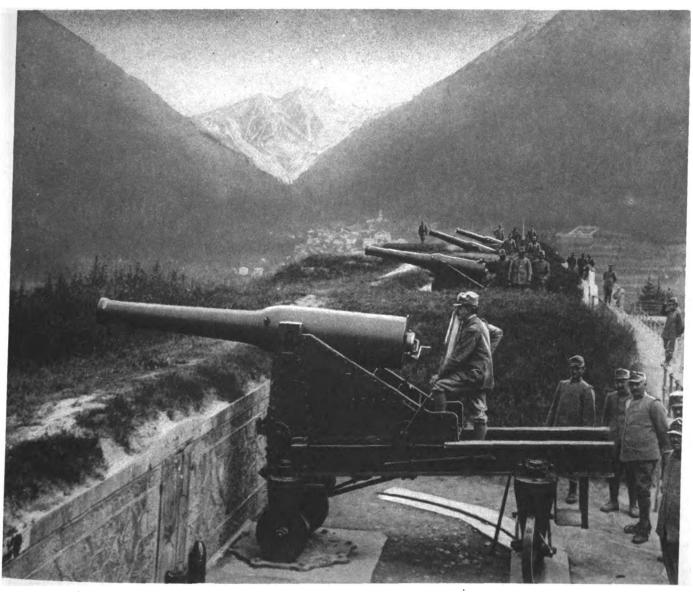
Austria and Germany had been taken unawares by the denunciation of the Triple Alliance. The mountain forts were

What delay cost Italy

held by only a few thousand troops, Austria's forces being employed against the Russians in the great Galician offensive, or massed along the Serbian front. But during the three weeks which Signor Giolitti won for his old friends, the mobilisation against Italy was carried out at high speed. The cemented trenches, the gun emplacements, the armour-plated casemates and strategic roads had long been ready; but the men to use them were mainly provided between May 4th and May 23rd. Every man who could be spared from Hungary and the Southern Austrian provinces was railed to the Italian front, until, by May 23rd, more than 300,000 men had been got into position. They were mostly Tyrolese and Hungarian Territorial troops, supported by first-line regiments in positions of importance. Against them General Cadorna brought up 700,000 first-line soldiers; but as his plan of a



Over Alpine heights: Italy's famous mountain soldiers on the march.



Heavy Italian howitzers in position on the slopes of Cadore.

Digitized by Google



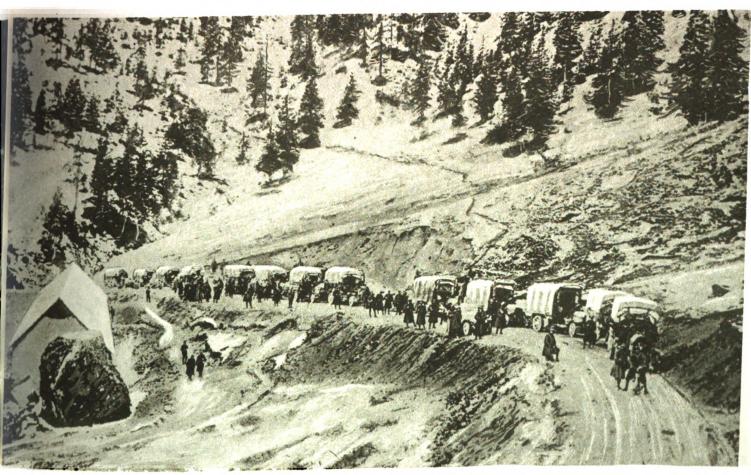
The Austro-Italian Campaign: Italian howitzer battery in action.



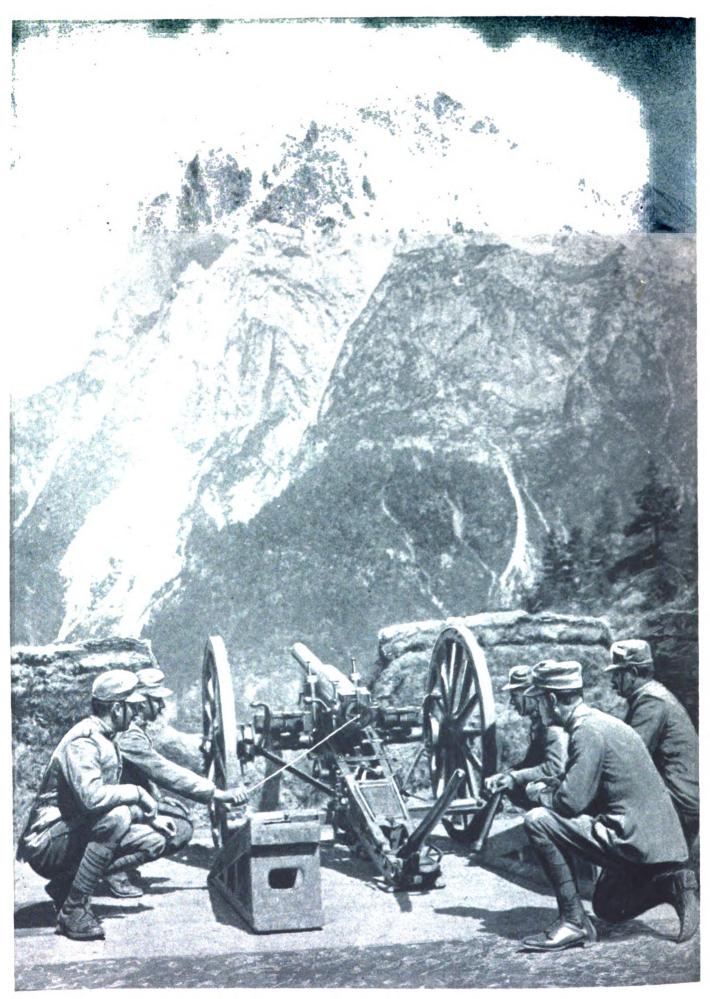
Man-hauling a heavy gun into position on the Italian front.



Austrian artillery position: Giant ordnance screened amidst the mountain pines.



Italian motor=transport resting after a perilous descent from a mountain height.



The fight for Gorizia: Italian field=gun in action in the Carso.

great surprise attack had been defeated by Giolitti, the campaign opened badly for the Italians.

The fact that they had somewhat more than two men to the enemy's one was not of much importance. What counted was guns, and especially heavy siege-guns. The Austrians had their heavy artillery placed with precise science on every dominating height, fed by railways, defended by machine-gun redoubts on the mountain sides, with light quick-firers sheltered in caves or galleries hewed from the rock. The Italian guns were on railway lines in the plain, or being hauled up distant valley roads by oxen

teams. The Italians had to set about building mountain fortresses, from which their guns could work; and before they could build these fortresses they had first to

conquer the mountains. The Italian position was similar to that of the Franco-British position in Gallipoli. But on the Austrian mountain line the peaks were higher and steeper; the front was enormously larger, giving the enemy room for grand manœuvres; and on the fortresses on the mountain heights millions of pounds had been spent, and the labour of ten years crowned by the recent work of thousands of engineers, with full and exact personal knowledge of all the recent developments in artillery fire and modern earthwork fortifications.

Had General Cadorna only retained his opportunity for surprise, he would have launched by night some hundreds of thousands of men, with Maxims and 3 in. mountain guns, to attack the Austrian forces in the rear before they were fully garrisoned. But after the long delay imposed by Signor Giolitti, the Italian commander, at midnight on May 23rd, only sent out battalions of Alpine troops to seize any ridges not held in strength by the Austrians near their main position. There was no surprise whatever about this movement, for the Austrian batteries had begun to fire on Italian redoubts five hours before hostilities were declared to be opened. The Austrian Chief of Staff, General von Höfer, was amply prepared for every manœuvre by his opponent. At least, he considered himself amply prepared. He, however, made the mistake of despising the men brought up against him.

This was the main reason why the Italian troops started the campaign with an uninterrupted series of brilliant successes. It was an article of faith in Austria-Hungary that the Italian soldier was a figure from romantic opera, who could sing better than he could fight. This tradition had come down from the eighteenth century, when the Austrian Court drew on Italy for her musicians and poets, and regarded the subject and oppressed people as an effecte but still decorative race of artists. The fact that Italy had recovered her independence in the latter half of the nineteenth century by the help of other Powers, left the Austrians and Hungarians with their old pride of conquerors still unbroken. They regarded modern Italy as a flimsy structure with a stucco façade that could be shattered in a single battle; and they were blindly confident that, whatever happened in other fields of war, they could beat

the Italian nation into the dust with but little effort. It is only fair to the German to say he had a suspicion that the modern Italian might be formidable. Italian engineers, Italian mechanics, Italian navvies and labourers

engineers, Italian mechanics, Italian navvies and labourers were well known in Germany and esteemed there. German engineers were aware that in skill, versatility, and solid knowledge, the fertile, virile race beyond the Alps was one of the great forces in European industry. But the Austrian nobleman and the Hungarian magnate, who disdained industrial affairs and held themselves above any person who lived by designing tools, remained ignorant of the fact that the Italian of the modern type had developed into as masterful and knowledgeable a character as the best men of Florence, Venice, and Genoa in the age of the warlike republican city States. They did not know that, as the French writer Stendhal pointed out a hundred years ago,

the human plant grows more strongly in Italy than anywhere else, and that fifty years of liberty and development had produced a hard-headed, cautious, and yet enterprising and tenacious type of Italian, who could hold his own in all ways with Briton, American, and German.

Thus it befell that the Archduke Eugene, with General von Höfer as his Chief of Staff, and Dankl as army commander in the Tyrol, made the mistake of holding the first line on the Austrian frontier with a ridiculously small number of troops. The Alpini and the Bersaglieri, with some battalions of the line and some gendarmes, crossed the frontier soon after midnight at all the strategical points, and by a hundred swift, fierce little skirmishes, began to reverse the positions of Austria and Italy. Among the points occupied at a singularly small loss of life to the victors were the Montozzo Pass, 8,585 feet high, and the Tonale Pass, 6,180 feet high, leading into the Western



ITALY'S FAMOUS GREEN-PLUMED WARRIORS.
Bersaglieri cyclists on their way to the front. Each Bersagliero is a picked, highly-trained athlete. The infantry invariably march at a quick trot. The cyclists' machines are so made that they can be quickly packed on the soldiers' backs.

Tyrol, and Ponte Caffaro, running into South-Western Trentino; the ridge of Monte Baldo, extending northward for fifteen miles towards Arco and Rovereto in the Southern Trentino; some of the heights giving westward towards Trento; all the valleys in the labyrinth of the Dolomite Alps, and several footholds on the Alps of Carinthia.

It was nearly all done by bayonet fighting, after splendid mountaineering feats. The cyclist sharpshooters advanced in a straightforward manner up the mountain paths till they were greeted with musketry fire. They then sought more carefully for cover, pushing forward from rock and tree with their wings extending up the mountain sides, and there engaging any enemy skirmishers. Meanwhile while the Alpine troops were climbing the mountain, by ways only known to themselves through many mountain-eering excursions undertaken by their leaders in summer holidays. The officers led the men over the trackless screes and rocky falls, over glaciers and snowdrifts, and then descended the opposite slopes at some distance behind the enemy vanguards skirmishing near the entrance to the path. It was the day of glory for many members of the C.A.I., the S:A.T., and S.A.F.—these letters standing for the Club Alpino Italiano, the Societa degli Alpinisti Tridentini, and the Societa Alpina Friulana. Englishmen had formed the first Alpine Club purely for the furtherance of their sport; but German and Austrian Alpinists had been encouraged by their Governments to

create a variety of Alpine Clubs; and the Italian Government had seen the meaning of this manœuvre, and had also encouraged the pastime of climbing

the Alps. For years the great game had gone on, in which all the more adventurous spirits worked over the snow and ice with ropes, crampons, and ice-axes, rejoicing in each discovery of a new practicable route, which was not always published in the Club's journal. The Swiss Alpinists entered into the game with as much zest as the Austrians, Germans, and Italians; and of all the nations of Alpine climbers only the British, who made a good many important discoveries, thought nothing of the possible warlike value of their explorations.

In recent years the Italian Alpinists drew up to the level of the British climbers, and in some cases surpassed our men. It was intense patriotism as well as sheer joy in mountain adventure that made many a young Italian lieutenant a peer of Freshfield and Whymper. But, unlike the Englishmen, the young Italian climber seldom published any of the results of his holiday sports. In fact, he was often more anxious to conceal his achievement than to talk about it, and he preferred, if possible, to strike an old well-known route, when he was descending, in order to make it appear as if he had come across the mountain in a commonplace way. He kept his special knowledge for the day after the declaration of war, when by means of it he was able to help to place his country at once in the position of which Austria had robbed her in



AN HISTORIC MEETING.
King Victor Emmanuel of Italy greeting
General Joffre on the arrival of the latter
at the Italian Headquarters in September, 1915.

1866. By the evening of May 25th, all the passes of the Dolomite Alps were won, and good breaches were made at Tonale Pass along the north-west and in the Carnic and Julian Alps along the north-east front.

The gun trains began to move more rapidly towards the holes made in the great mountain rampart, and tens of thousands of Italian engineers went up by train and motor-vehicles, and started building trenches and making gun emplacements. Meanwhile, the main Italian infantry force, con-sisting of the Third Army, moved with great speed across the Friuli Plain through Udine, Palmanova, and St. Georgio, where two railway lines ran into the Isonzo Valley and the Torre Valley. Here the covering troops had moved forward over the frontier at midnight on May 24th, and in a single day they captured nearly all the towns and villages between the frontier and the Isonzo River, from Caporetto, nestling in the north below the precipices of Monte Nero, to the hamlet of



FRENCH GENERALISSIMO ON THE ISONZO FRONT.

During the two days that General Joffre spent at the Italian front in the autumn of 1915 he was taken to various important points, and was able to discuss the plans of the campaign with the King of Italy and his generals. In this photograph the French Commander-in-Chief is seen near the River Isonzo with the King and a group of Italian leaders.



General Joffre, King Victor (on the right), and two Italian generals on a mountain road at Plezzo. The French leader's short visit to Italy was kept secret until his return to France.



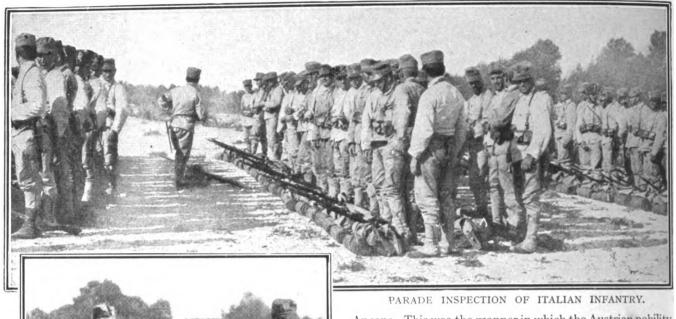
General Tassoni describing the Austrian defences of Tolmino to General Joffre. On the first day of his visit the Generalissimo inspected the Italian position near Doberdo.





From left to right: Generals Joffre, Porro, and Cadorna, the Italian Commander-in-Chief. The Grand Cross of the Military Order of Savoy was conferred on General Joffre by King Victor.

GENERAL JOFFRE'S VISIT TO ITALY: HISTORIC MEETING OF THE ALLIED LEADERS.



Ancona. This was the manner in which the Austrian nobility, which had never been remarkable for its fighting qualities, protested against the sudden, disagreeable revelation of

the strength of the Italian democracy.

The skirmishing along the mountain frontier continued till the end of May. By this time, the forces attacking the Trentino southward had crossed the Lessini Mountains north of Verona, and, penetrating nearly ten miles into Austrian territory, had taken the town of Ala and brought forward heavy guns against the Rovereto forts. Further advances were also made in Southern Trentino along the Giudicaria Valley towards the towns at the head of Lake Garda and along the Sugana Valley towards Trent. All these actions, however, formed only a holding movement, like the operations in the Tyrol through the Stelvio, Montozzo, and Tonale Passes.

It will be seen on the map that the Austrian railway system spreads like the five fingers of a hand southward down the Trentino. These five railway lines were never designed for ordinary traffic. Though the valleys are beauti-

ful and fertile, with silvery-white olive orchards, vineyards, orange groves and thickly-wooded slopes of chestnut and oak, forming, with the cloud-like peaks of

white snow and the radiant waters of the lakes the loveliest landscape on earth, the network of modern railways was not built for the summer tourists or the picturesque oldfashioned peasantry. The lines were intended to transport and supply a large Austro-Hungarian army, and this army was to leap on Verona and all the rich, busy cities of Lombardy, thus beheading Italy by cutting off her chief centres of industry. Such was the plan of Conrad von Hötzendorf, who was the military mind of the Dual Monarchy. Then, according to his scheme, the Italians were to be allowed to approach the Isonzo line on the way to Trieste. But when they had become involved in this operation and the two railway lines running from Venice were choked with their supplies, another large Austro-Hungarian army was to advance through the passes of the Carnic Alps and through the Julian Alps from the entrenched camp of Tarvis, and by a quick southward swoop take in the flank the Italian forces on the Isonzo line.

All this was well-known to General Cadorna. It was indeed the reason for his drives at all the mountain passes, for each pass was a Thermopylæ where a battalion with a couple of quick-firing guns and half a dozen Maxims could hold back an army corps for days. Behind each outflung battalion was a large reserve of Italian troops, ready to reinforce their comrades at any hard-pressed point. The Italian Commander-in-Chiet, having conquered practically all the enemy's first line along a front of three hundred miles, waited to see in what sector the

Belvedere southward on the Gulf of Trieste. In this region the Italians had a strong fortress town, Palmanova, lying about fourteen miles west of the great Austrian fortress town of Gorizia, to guard against any irruption into the Venetian Plain. But General von Höfer had abandoned the direct attack through Gorizia, and had made a more subtle scheme of campaign. All he did was to place a strong force on the mountain of Korada between the Isonzo River and the Judrio. The mountain dominated the middle course of the Isonzo, and was transformed into a fortress with a network of deep trenches protected by wide wire entanglements. It was reckoned that by the time the Italians brought their heavy artillery into play on the trenches and began to cut up the wire with their field-guns, supports could easily be moved forward across the Isonzo.

But the Italian brigadier-general had looked at the wireentanglements some time before the war broke out, and he

now brought up a herd of very savage Charge of the bulls and held them in a hollow, while his bulls field and mountain artillery played upon the hostile trenches. The bulls were violently disturbed with the racket of the guns, and, just

before they grew quite unmanageable, they were loosed and driven up the mountain. In their mad charge they broke through the obstacle, and before the last of them could be shot by the enemy the bayonets of Italy followed in their wake through the broken wires and captured the position. All the frontier skirmishes ended in successes of high strategical importance for the Italian troops, and the perturbed Austrians and Hungarians could then find nothing better to do than to attempt to terrorise the Italian people by dropping bombs on Venice and sending a battleship or two to bombard the open town of

Austrian pressure would be most strongly felt. The answering counter-thrust of the enemy came at Monte Croce Pass, in the Carnic Alps, on May 20th. It was a foggy day, and under cover of the mist the enemy massed a strong force through the railway from Villach and brought them to Mauthen, from which they made five stubborn attempts to regain the pass. The Alpini and Bersaglieri swept away each wave of assault by musketry and machine-gun fire at almost point-blank range; then, leaping up after the last attack, they drove the enemy down the valley at the point of the bayonet.

This was only the beginning of the Battle of Monte Croce. Each side had large forces within call, and fed the troops up the valleys as the fighting-lines wasted. So the

Battle of

struggle continued day and night, while the Italian commander pushed over the Monte Croce

neighbouring passes and strengthened himself for the great counter-attack.

The height known as Freikofel, commanding the Plöcken

Plateau, near Monte Croce Pass, was stormed on June 8th, and the Pass of Valentina and the Pass of Oregione, 7,590 feet high, overlooking the thickly-wooded Gail Valley, were taken. The last pass was won by the Alpini climbing over the white mass of Paralba and fighting their way down to the high saddle. The Austrians brought up another army corps, and on the night of June 14th made a great attempt to break through the rampart of Italian valour and turn the Carnic Alps, according to design, into the gateway for a flank attack on the main Italian army. Oregione's saddle, the snowfields of Paralba, and all the peaks and wild ravines extending to Monte Croce and Freikofel, were dappled with groups of fighting men, some shooting from rocky cover, others trying to get home with a bayonet charge delivered at close quarters from some fold in the limestone. On Paralba, some 8,840 feet high, the Austrian troops were on Italian territory; but they were soon caught on the flank and threatened towards the rear, and scattered towards the Steinwand, a limestone mountain towering above the Gail Valley.

In this area of war the Austrians had the advantage of possessing a railway running through the Drave Valley, and approaching closer to the frontier rampart than the Italian railway system did. They could therefore bring up fresh troops with more speed. In the Gail Valley they had a wide, long region in which they could mass without being some that had a good to the region of the standard of the standa being seen; they had a good road to the mountains from Mauthen, while the Italians had only rough valley tracks. Nevertheless, the Italians kept the gateway to Venice firmly closed, while they attacked the enemy force on both flanks. These flanks consisted of the Tarvis system of fortresses on the right, lying round the Predil Pass, by which Napoleon had invaded Austria, and the Cortina d'Ampezzo Pass on the left, running towards the Austrian railway at Toblach.

The beautiful village of Cortina, lying 4,000 feet high amid the most superb scenery in Europe, was captured by the Cadore army on May 30th. The far-famed road, winding through the spired and towered maze of the Dolomites,

On to Falzarego

was barricaded and trenched by the enemy, who had mountain guns behind his advanced garrison. But the Alpini worked over the mountain ranges, by the glaciers

of Sorapis, and the tarns of Croda da Lago, and dropped into Cortina on either side. Then, holding the enemy on the east, they advanced into the Tyrol westward along the new Dolomite road to Falzarego. In this profound ravine, with impracticable but picturesque walls of green-hung limestone, an Austrian had built some years before an hotel which was very difficult of approach. Tourists thought the man did not knowhis business, because he put an hotel where it was not wanted. The building, however, did not cost him much, because he received a Government subsidy. When war broke out, sand-bags, machine-guns, and quickfirers were hauled up to the eyrie, and in a few hours



ITALIAN GUN OF HEAVY CALIBRE COMING INTO ACTION. One of the most inspiring sights on the Italian front was the hauling into almost inaccessible positions of pieces of field artillery. As many as a hundred men would drag a weighty piece of ordnance up a slope. Frequently this was the only reliable means of haulage in the mountains.



A PEASANT PATRIOT.

An Italian leading his oxdrawn waggon to a military depot, where he received a receipt in exchange for his oxen and goods.

the hotel became a splendid fort, with quarters for a large garrison, and guns dominating the farfamed ravine. But the Alpini were led by men with ingenious minds and minute knowledge of the ground. Most of the fighting took

place on the great northern mountain height, crowned by the glaciers and snow-fields of

On the glaciers
of Tofana
Tofana, and around the Cinque Torri, a line of appar-

ently inaccessible peaks. The most difficult is called the English Tower. Loose stones and an infinite number of fissures, holes, and ravines sculptured in the grey white weathered rock, made the mountain skirmishes in the thin, cold air a test of climbing skill and ingenuity in manœuvring.

It was mainly sharpshooters' work, in which combination tactics had to be used, and the more dashing spirits had to be kept well in hand to prevent the force being too much scattered when intricate and well-timed teamwork was necessary. And as the struggle went on for more than a week, there was the further task of keeping the men well supplied with food and ammunition, and relieving them before they became exhausted by the day and night

struggle at heights going up to 10,000 feet. But by their powers of endurance and their vehement and yet tricky way of fighting. the Alpini cleared the mountains above the ravine road, and then dropped on the hotel. By June 9th Falzarego Pass was won, and in the closing battle, in which the enemy lost a gun, a footing was obtained on a very important strategical position, three miles beyond the pass, on the Sasso d'Istria, close to the point at which the Dolomite road bends southward through its ravine and goes in two tunnels under the mountains.

It was this great and rapid success that disturbed the enemy com-

made him anxious about the western defences of the Tyrol; for at Falzarego and Sasso d'Istria the

and

mander.

Italian troops were approaching the rear of the Col di Lana, and its neighbouring mountain masses on which the fortresses defending Cordevole Valley were constructed. By a double flanking movement along the Cordevole River and the Dolomite road, the Cadore army had begun to extend in a pincerlike formation around one of the main Austrian



"VIVA ITALIA!" SOLDIERS IN BILLETS, BOYS IN TRAINING.

Italian soldiers comfortably billeted in a railway-station at a captured Austrian position. In oval: The ubiquitous Boy Scout in Italy. There, as in other Allied countries, this splendid organisation trained boys to useful war-time work.

systems of defence. General Dankl had to pour more troops and light artillery on to the Cadore front; for the Italian thrust up the Cordevole Valley was the most dangerous threat to Southern Austria. At the end of the valley, across another range of mountains, was the wrist of the Austrian hand-like railway system that fed and munitioned both the Trentino forces and the forces in the Southern Tyrol. If the wrist were cut by the army of Cadore all the lands between Switzerland and the Carnic Alps would be lost. The fortresses, field-batteries, and infantry divisions would not be able to resist for very long if their supply-line were cut behind them. It will be seen from the map that the Southern Tyrol and the Trentino form a great mountain wedge thrust into the Italian plain. For thousands of years this tortous highland maze with its hardy mountain

tortuous highland maze, with its hardy, mountaineering races, had been the principal menace to the peace of Italy. But General Cadorna rightly decided that, in the new era of railway warfare, a thrust at the eastern base of the salient towards the only trunk line feeding the army of General Dankl would make the enemy so alarmed about his own safety that he would not think of erupting into the plain.

General Cadorna, having both the gift of strategy and ample fighting troops of fine quality, was able to impose his will on his adversary. The Austrians had only to advance some twenty miles across their Trenting frontier to reach Verona

across their Trentino frontier to reach Verona,
that city of old romance still
fragrant with the memories of
Romeo and Juliet. Brescia was
still nearer, with all the fertile,
busy plain of Lombardy extending around. The
conquest of Verona was largely a matter of heavy
siege-guns, and the new 12 in. Skoda howitzers,
would have been instruments of great power. But
it was General Cadorna who chiefly decided where
most of these great hostile weapons should be used.
Many of them were placed with great labour on the
Cadore front, because the Italian pressure there was

very severe. Many of them were also sited behind the Carnic and Julian Alps, especially in the corner near Predil Pass, by which Napoleon invaded Austria; then the Isonzo front, between Tolmino and the Adriatic, needed more heavy guns for its defence. In the end none remained for any movement into Italy.

This was very important, because for a considerable time the Italian artilleryman fought at a disadvantage. To say that his guns and mortars were unequal to those of his opponent is to understate the case; for the Austrians' heavy gun—the big Skoda—was the finest in the world. It had done much of the work of fortress smashing in Belgium and Russia, and the fact that the Aus-

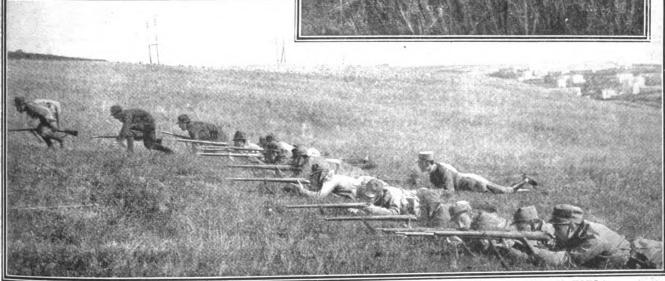
trians were in a position to lend heavy artillery to their allies for use on the western front is an indication of the wealth

Peerless Skoda guns

of big-gun power in Austria. And after ten months of war, when the great howitzers were being employed by the thousand in Galicia and along the Danube, the Skoda works could still produce an armament superior to that of Italy.

Besides the 12 in. Skoda, with its extraordinary handiness,





ITALY'S STURDY INFANTRYMEN IN ACTION AGAINST THEIR COUNTRY'S HEREDITARY FOES.

Italian infantrymen skirmishing at an outpost position near the Austrian lines. Above: Typical Italian scouts making their way to an advanced observation-post, under cover of long grass, during the summer operations of 1915.

due to its consisting of two separate parts easily hauled along and its magnificent force and precision, there were great and still increasing numbers of the new 6 in. steel-built Skoda, designed at first, in the summer of 1914, for mountain warfare in the Carpathians. Krupp had one larger, clumsier howitzer, slow in firing and intricate to handle, but he had nothing so fine as the new products of Skoda of Pilsen, an armament firm which the Germans despised before the war with more sincerity than they despised Schneider of Creusot.

The level-headed Italians did not make the mistake of underestimating the efficiency of the weapons of their enemy. Indeed, it was because they recognised that their old artillery was much inferior to the hurricane firing batteries of Austria-Hungary that they maintained for ten months so philosophic an attitude of neutrality. Meanwhile

they created, at utmost speed, a new armament. They took as their field-gun the French 75 mm. quick-firer, as newly improved by its inventor, Colonel Déport,

and they built 6 in. and 12 in. howitzers for attacking the Austrian forts. But an army of a million men needs 4,000 guns, and the twenty-five Italian army corps required also several siege trains of great power. This ordnance could not be turned out in a year, even with help from other countries. Every gun-maker in the world was overwhelmed with urgent orders, and Italy, being without coalfields, was not a steel-making nation.

So in spite of all the speeding up of the production of

artillery of the finest type, the Italian armies entered on the war at a disadvantage. Their great peril was that an enormous quantity of heavy Austrian artillery might be released in the eastern theatre of war, by a decision against the Russians, and brought up against them.

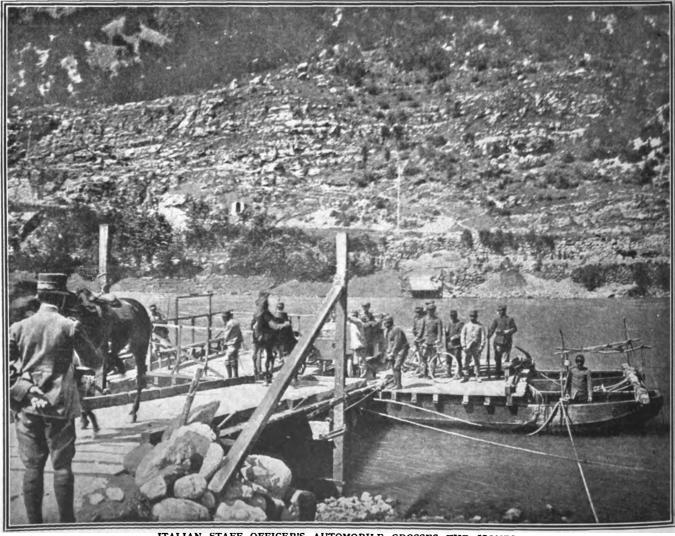
This must be well borne in mind when studying the operations of General Cadorna and his assistant commander

General Porro. All that happened in Galicia, Russian Poland, Lithuania, and Courland, directly influenced their plans.

The Russian reverses, on the one side, and

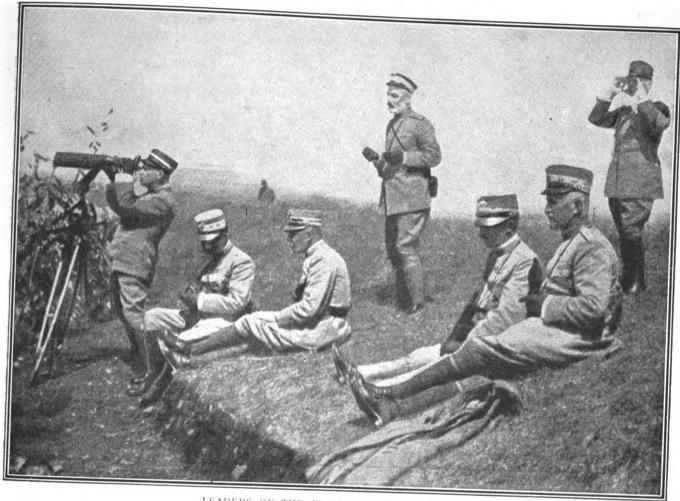
the checks to all Franco-British attempts at breaking the German line on the other side, made the Italian Commander-in-Chief very cautious. He had always to reckon with the possibility that an immense Austro-German host, with an incomparable artillery equipment, might be launched against his army before it was amply provided with new guns and shell supplies on the vast new scale.

We have also seen that, for political reasons, General Cadorna could not afford to sacrifice his men in offensive movements costing 50,000 or 70,000 men a day. Even with a view to reaching Trieste he could not do this. Much less could he contemplate doing it in order to attain some key position in the mountain ramparts. That is to say, he could not think of eking out his artillery forces by a tremendous use of his infantry. His problem was to conserve his forces for a possible, and sometimes probable, defensive campaign against mighty Teutonic forces, and meanwhile win victories and keep his casualty lists short,



ITALIAN STAFF OFFICER'S AUTOMOBILE CROSSES THE ISONZO.

The steep cliffs in the background, partly covered by mountain vegetation, give some idea of the locality and conditions of Italy's struggle for the Trentino. The Isonzo played as great a part in this hereditary feud against Teutonism as did the Vistula on the eastern front, the Danule in Central Furope, and the Marne in the west



LEADERS OF THE ITALIAN ARMY IN THE FIELD.

From the beginning of the war King Victor Emmanuel personally directed the fortunes of his armies in the field, sharing the hardships and perils of his men. Ever solicitous of their welfare, this most democratic

while fighting heavy howitzers with light mountain guns and 3 in. quick-firers.

It was a very difficult programme to carry out, but the Italian commander at least equalled the achievement of General Joffre and Sir John French under the similar conditions of a parallel battle. The forces opposed to him were smaller than those entrenched against the French and

Striking Italian achievement British troops. The Austrians, Hungarians and Bavarians on the Italian front seem to have numbered 300,000, at first, increasing towards the autumn to 700,000.

But on a line of three hundred miles, walled in everywhere by great mountains, entrenched hill camps, and fortressed plateaux, like the Carso, the actual fighting density of the enemy troops was not much less at last than that of the Germans on the Franco-Flemish front; in fact, the points of incessant conflict in Italy may in the end have been more crowded.

Yet, in this modern kind of parallel battle, in which siege-guns were an important factor of success, and on which all the Allies entered under a disadvantage in regard to heavy armament, the Italians did quite as well as any. They broke farther into the fortified Alps, and the limestone tableland west of Trieste, than we did into the fortressed hill positions in Gallipoli, or into the low horse-shoe ridge in the Lille area; the length of their thrusts exceeded those of the French advances in Artois and Champagne, and they were as successful amid the ice-crowned and snowmantled peaks of Carinthia and the Tyrol as the Russians were amid the swamps and rivers of Courland and the Royno region.

And all the first striking successes by General Cadorna, between the last week in May, 1915, and

of European monarchs worked as hard as the most enthusiastic subaltern. His Majesty is the second seated figure from the right, next to the Duke of Aosta, while General Zupelli is sitting, with his legs crossed.

the third week in August, 1915, were accomplished with a total casualty list of less than 30,000 names. The Austro-Hungarian losses in the same period on the same front were 18.000 dead, 54,000 wounded, and 18,000 prisoners.

This is a very striking result, especially having regard to the fact that the Italian troops were continually attacking fortified mountain positions at a time when only part of their new artillery was available. General Cadorna told his men that they won their successes because they fought in a more scientific manner than their foes. And this was no inspiriting flattery.

The Italian soldier had learnt as much in the Libyan campaign as the British soldier did in the South African War. He had acquired a cooler, deadlier skill, and a gift for improvising stratagems which sadly surprised his enemy.

For the Austrians and Hungarians, being tempered by both defeat and victory in the great struggle with the Russians, and coming in veteran strength from the conflicts on the Carpathians and in the Serbian mountains, expected to find the Italians an easy prey. At first

they felt for the Italians the scorn that Napoleon felt for Wellington when the forces of the two commanders first clashed

in Portugal and Spain. Napoleon's view was founded on the fact that Wellington had been used only to fighting Indian armies, poorly trained and badly led, and he expected that, faced by large forces of experienced European troops handled in a scientific way, the Irish general would be defeated before he recognised he was so. In the same way, the Italians were regarded by their enemies as troops of the modern Continental school, originally poor in quality, and further

Digitized by Google



IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE LAWS OF CIVILISED WARFARE.

Striking photograph of an Italian patrol entering an Austrian village. The orderly conduct of this body of cavalrymen will interest those who hold that warfare and civilisation are incompatible. The village, being unfortified, bore no sign of destruction or the ravages of war, and the civil inhabitants were in no way molested by the conquerors.

spoilt for European warfare by loose, easy fighting with the Arabs of Tripoli.

But what happened when the Italian and the Hungarian met was afterwards revealed with fine candour by the well-known Magyar novelist, Francis Molnar. Molnar wrote from Austrian Headquarters. He said that in the early fighting round Monte Nero, the 3rd Battalion of the 7th Honveds was ordered to attack the Italian position. The Hungarian Territorials, famous for their valour, moved forward by the method learned on the Carpathians. They crept up the mountain slopes, under the cover of the thick vegetation. Reaching the trench of the Alpini, they closed, poured in rapid fire and then charged with the bayonet. But they were beaten back, and as they turned to retreat they found themselves ambushed. The Alpini had seen them coming, and had flung out both wings high up the valley of approach. The two outflanking bodies did not fire when the Hungarians passed and exposed

themselves temptingly to a double side attack. The wings closed behind the creeping attacking force, waited silently until the enemy's frontal assaults failed, and then completely annihilated the trapped battalion, as it would not surrender.

All the long series of small but highly important frontier victories were won by light Italian troops, composed mostly of Alpini, cavalry, cyclists, the Bersaglieri, and batteries of horse artillery. On the Venetian Plain, by the Lower Isonzo, a few thousand men in two days conquered with little loss all the territory which Prince von Bülow had offered the Italian nation as the grudged price of her permanent neutrality. But the light troops that so swiftly moved to the enemy's second line were trained to great feats of skill and endurance. Many of the cavalrymen could climb, on horseback, mountain steeps up which an ordinary man of athletic habit would not care to clamber on all fours. The Alpine troops were known, by the results of competitive marches against the records of other crack European corps, to be able to outwalk all other light infantry.

After these troops had swiftly won the first round in the Austro-Italian struggle, there was an apparent relaxation of effort while the infantry of the line waited for their heavy siege artillery to come into action. This was mainly a matter of engineering, especially on the Isonzo front, where the river was in high summer flood owing to the melting of the snow on the mountain-tops. Bridging skill of an unusual kind was needed to get the new siege-guns across the floods, at the places small bodies of the where advanced troops were furiously holding bridge-heads on the enemy's side of the swollen waters. Along the Isonzo the retreating Austrians had broken down the high embankment used

SADDers

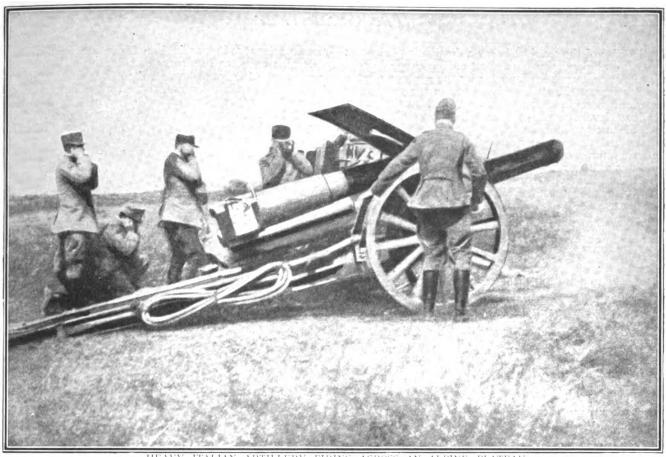
to carry off the snow-water, and had thereby inundated the plain in the manner of the Belgian Yser defences.

The gallant Italian sappers, working under a plunging fire from the enemy's batteries on the mountains, foothills, and Carso tableland, had rapidly thrown some light pontoon bridges over the flood. Gallant Italian

some light pontoon bridges over the flood. Along these frail temporary structures the first Italian contingents crossed in the darkness took the first line of Annales.

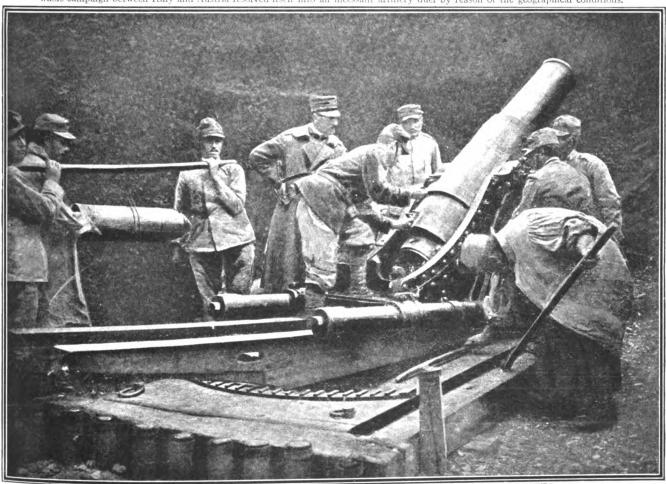
darkness, took the first line of Austrian trenches near the waterside, and broke up the light artillery positions close to the river. But this was the utmost that could be done to prepare the way for the attack on the enemy's last systems of hill and mountain fortifications. And it was accomplished by the first week in June, 1915.

But though the enemy's main positions could not be assailed until the infantry of the line advanced with heavy guns, those troops on the Lower Isonzo made a happy stroke in a south-westerly direction on June 9th.



HEAVY ITALIAN ARTILLERY FIRING ACROSS AN ALPINE PLATEAU.

Field-howitzer in action against an Austrian position. The gunners are holding their ears, as the shriek of this weapon was truly deafening. The whole campaign between Italy and Austria resolved itself into an incessant artillery duel by reason of the geographical conditions.



POWERFUL INSTRUMENT OF DESTRUCTION CONCEALED IN AN ALPINE GROTTO.

Placing an 8'2 in, siege-mortar in position. The weapon has a special emplacement and is fixed to iron rails, along which it recoils. After continuous bombardment with these howitzers many of the Austrian mountain forts hitherto considered impregnable were reduced to fragments.

By the edge of the sea, just below a dominating height on the Carso tableland, was the seaport of Monfalcone, belonging to Venice, but stolen from her by the Austrians in the Napoleonic era. Monfalcone had become the third most important port in Austria-Hungary, and at its yards. Cantiere Navale, warships were still being built for the Dual Monarchy. Monfalcone was only sixteen miles from Trieste, and though the road and railway tracks by the sea were impracticable for an advance in force, Monfalcone itself was well worth taking. It had been bombarded by the Italian fleet on May 30th, when a large chemical factory, in which asphyxiating gases were being made, was destroyed.

The bombardment was continued by light cruiser squadrons on June 7th. Then the Castle of Duino, the magnificent residence of the Hohenlohe family, standing on the edge of the sea, nearer Trieste, and defended by three batteries of artillery, was shattered and set on fire, in order apparently to prepare for operations against Monfalcone from the south-western side in the Gulf of Panzano. The design was to threaten an advance on Trieste by the searoad leading down through the famous pleasure palace of The destruction of Prince Hohenlohe's Castle of Duino—the Prince had been the chief oppressor of the Italian subjects of Austria—was calculated to make the Archduke Eugene anxious about the probable line of Italian advance. Some of his troops were therefore collected hastily, but in strong force, above Duino, in preparation against an Italian landing-battle, but not an Italian landed. It was all a

The attack on Monfalcone was launched from the opposite quarter, in a straightforward direction across the Isonzo, on June 8th. Only the light troops—Bersaglieri, cyclists' corps.

and grenadiers—were employed, but they broke the enemy's river-line at a point where it was considered impregnable.

Then, as the over-confident enemy had

prepared no line of retirement between the river and the plateau, Monfalcone was won in a rapid running fight through the villages around the Isonzo delta. The most famous of these villages, Aquileia, had already been won by the advance guard. Great was their joy in winning it, though it was only a miserable hamlet with a few hundred poor people, mostly mendicants; for Aquileia was as

romantic a spot as Pompeii. It had been one of the greatest of Roman cities, and its sorry condition was the work of the ancient Attila, who levelled it to the ground after his defeat between the Aisne and the Marne in France. Like the modern Attila, the ancient leader of the Huns had intended to destroy and enslave France; and, next, to terrorise and subjugate Italy. But he died soon after he had treated Aquileia as the modern Ger-

mans have treated Ypres and Arras. To the Italians, with their historic memories, there was a deep source of inspiration in

the swift capture of the little seaside hamlet, from which antique works of art and curiosities had been obtained in large quantities by the Austrian oppressors of the dominions of Venice.

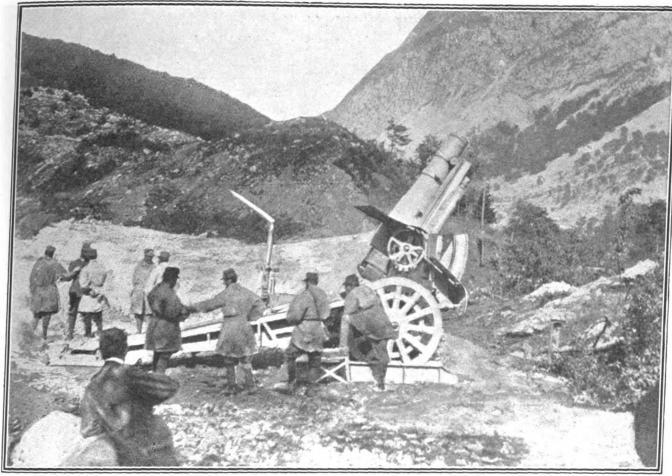
Close to the hamlet the passage of the Isonzo was forced by a smashing bayonet attack, and the Italian troops, headed by motor-cyclists with machine-guns, cycling scouts, and aeroplane observers, flowed in two arms around every position at which the Austrians tried to make a stand. By this continual threat of an encircling movement they forced the Austrians into Monfalcone. The enemy then for the first time displayed a telling ingenuity in warfare. Like the Turk in the Suvla Bay battles, he set fire to some of the slopes which the Italians were attacking. But while the pine-wood near Monfalcone flared to the skies, the quick-manœuvring Italians, headed by a grenadier battalion, broke into the open town and occupied it, after storming the Rocca promontory. But as the seaport reposed at the foot of the Carso plateau, with two large clumps of limestone, rising a thousand feet above the streets on the northern side, the enemy's heavy artillery on the heights had the power of turning the town into another Aquileia.

But the Bersaglieri, grenadiers, and sharpshooters were not disposed to see the famous city they had captured ruined by 6 in. high-explosive shell. Moreover there were some warships lying in the shipyards in various stages of construction, and the Italians wanted to complete and gun these ships, and employ them against the men who had designed them for use against Italy. So the conquest of Monfalcone was completed by the brigade of light troops climbing up the limestone cliffs and hauling their 3 in guns after them. With these they induced the enemy to drag his howitzers farther away from the seashore.



TREACHEROUS AUSTRIAN FOES CAPTURED BY BERSAGLIERI.

Dramatic scene on the Italian front. After eluding the vigilance of Italian scouts for many weeks, an Austrian sniper and spy were eventually tracked to their hiding-place. This document was recorded immediately after the arrest of the culprits in a mountain cottage. The little daughter of the sniper, anxious for the fate of her father, is crying.



EFFECTIVE ORDNANCE IN THE MOUNTAIN WAR. ITALY'S

One of Italy's heavy field howitzers on the Trentino front. From the angle of the gun it will be seen that the shell had to be fired completely over the mountain. The difficulties of transporting heavy ordnance in the Trentino were enormous, and this photograph gives a typical idea of the country.

The loss of Monfalcone stung the Austro-Hungarian Government very deeply, for the seaport had been one of the parts of old Italian territory which Austria had refused to relinquish, even under the threats and cajoleries of Prince von Bülow. Yet it had cost Italy only about a hundred dead and wounded men to capture the fourth most

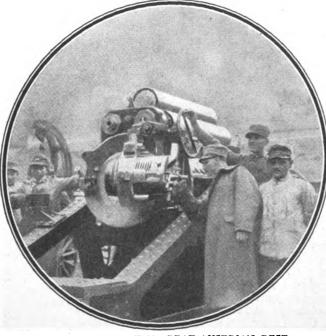
important seaport in the Dual Monarchy. All this happened at a time when the Austro-Hungarian army in Galicia had continually to be saved from destruction and helped forward by the Grand Phalanx under Mackensen. But though Ivanoff was killing the Austrians at the rate of a division a day, this loss was regarded as slight in comparison with the couple of thousand men who were put out of action at Monfalcone. The German jeered publicly at the Austrian over Monfalcone, especially in a violent and bitter satire, published in an important newspaper, the "Frankfürter Zeitung."

The "Frankfürter Zeitung" put its views of Austria in the form of fable: "There was a dog of noble birth, with the finest pedigree in the world. And this dog, knowing that purest blood was the source of the highest courage, resolved to go wolf-hunting.

But, although the  $\log$  was extremely noble, it was also very old. It had lost its teeth and all its strength of muscle, and the result was that when it tried to tackle the wolf it was very badly mauled. Seeing what had happened, the master of the hunt called to a strong mastiff, whose fighting power was more striking than its pedigree, and thus the

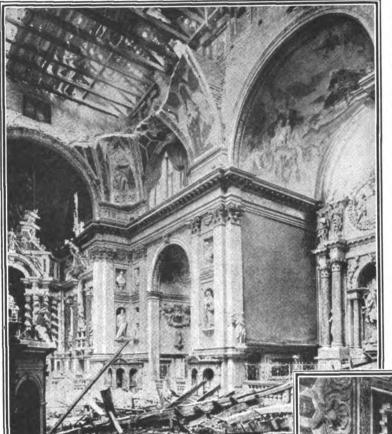
feeble, toothless dog of noble breed was saved from destruction. When the wolf was killed by the mastiff, the old dog wanted to lick up all the blood and claim the victory. But the master of the hunt gave it two severe kicks and saw to it that the mastiff had all the profit and the glory.

There is scarcely any need to point out that the master of the hunt was the Hohenzollern Emperor, and that Prussianised Germany was the mastiff. But the fact that an article of this sort was published in one of the most important papers in the Central Empires, a paper which indeed was the organ of international German-Jewish finance, was a clear indication of the condition of things between Germany and Austria. If the Italian successes had not been so important, Austria, who still served Germany well in the



AN ITALIAN GUN THAT BEAT AUSTRIA'S BEST. An Italian heavy gun in position. One of the main features of the campaign along the Alpine frontiers was the superiority of the Italian artillery matched against the Austrian.

CC



AUSTRIAN VANDALISM AT VENICE.

Irreparable damage was caused by a bomb dropped by an Austrian airman, on October 24th, 1915, on the Church of Santa Maria degli Scalzi in Venice, primarily famed for its wonderful ceiling decoration by Tiepolo.

matter of siege artillery, might have escaped from the intrigues of the Hungarian magnates and the nets of the German-Jewish financiers, and have remained to some extent an independent nation. But the blow from Italy, following on the blows from Russia and Serbia, reduced the governing class in Austria to a condition of decorative impotence. And the Prussian boa-constrictor,

Prussian
arrogance—
having swallowed and digested all the German States, offered to give Poland to Austria, on condition that the Austrians should

allow themselves to be absorbed like the Bavarians. In the meantime, a considerable force of Bavarian troops was railed south towards the Italian frontier. Several Austrian and Hungarian commanders on the Italian front were dismissed, and the struggle was resumed, with Prussian officers acting nominally as advisers, but actually as the directors of the campaign. Germany was afraid that, without her help, the great Austrian entrenched camps, such as Tarvis, would go the way of the Przemysl forts. With a view, however, to avoiding a state of open war between Italy and Germany, all the German soldiers brought up against the Italians were supposed to have volunteered for this service in an irregular, individual manner. No attempt was made to explain why the German military

authorities let their men go over to another country and practically desert in army corps. The Italians themselves continually expected that Germany would regularise the situation by a declaration of war. But months elapsed and the declaration was not made.

Even when the latest and largest types of German submarines operating in the Mediterranean went over to the side of Austria and flew the Austrian flag, Germany did not declare war. In-

stead, she sent Prince von Bülow to Switzerland to get again into personal touch with certain Italian ecclesiastics and Italian

—and Prussian money-bags

politicians. The fact was that the German banks had more than £100,000,000 sunk in Italian industries, and the principal German financiers nursed the hope that the lucrative properties they wholly or partly possessed in Lombardy would be returned to them when the war was over. Naturally, the King of Italy and his Ministers were well aware of all the details of this manœuvre. Their knowledge enabled them to control their own pro-German party, which still watched over the industries of Teutonic capital and Teutonic Catholicism.

While thus lightly flourishing the whip against Giolitti and the Teutonic forces round the Vatican, the Italian Government continued the most vital



TIEPOLO'S FAMOUS FRESCO BEFORE ITS DESTRUCTION.
Giovanni Battista Tiepolo was one of the greatest artists of the eighteenth century, and this beautiful ceiling decoration in the Church of Santa Maria degli Scalzi, on the Grand Canal, was perhaps his most famous piece of work. It was utterly destroyed by a high-explosive bomb.

work of educating the Italian middle-classes and the haute bourgeoisie in regard to the permanent interests of the country. It must always be remembered that it was the King, the populace, and a minority Parliamentary party that launched Italy into the war, at a period when the breaking of the Russian line in Galicia and the checks to the British and French advances on the western fronts made the fortunes of the Triple Entente look sombre and even doubtful. At any time between the Russian retreat and the disasters to the Allies in the Balkans a severe reverse to Italian arms might have stirred to violent action all the agents of Teutonism in Italy.

General Cadorna on land and the Duke of the Abruzzi at sea had to be conservative in their use of their principal forces, and in particular to avoid all attempts at brilliant strokes of decision, in which large risks were run. In short, they had to settle down like General Joffre to a rather slow, patient, scientific sort of chess-play, in which all their main pieces were covered by a well-arranged formation of pawns. Towards the middle of June, 1915, General Cadorna showed himself a fine statesman as well as a great soldier by issuing a statement in which the Italian people were clearly warned that the important series of preliminary successes, which had made good the strategical defects of their frontier, would be followed by a long stage of gradual approaches against the enemy's second line, during which sappers' work, and local trench

warfare with hand grenades. In point of fact, General Cadorna and General Porro seem to have been the first leaders of the allied nations to work out fully the proper system of closely-combined strategy against the Central Powers. We have seen that General Pau first attempted to establish a well-linked Continental movement against the Teutonic Empires, but his scheme broke down when the Russians were compelled to retire from the Carpathians. General Porro then took up the matter and stayed for a considerable time on the French front, consulting with the Staffs of the Western Allies. It is, moreover, an open secret that the Italian Commander-in-Chief refused to divert any of his forces to the secondary theatre of war in the Dardanelles. His was the close logical mind of the Latin race, and he was even less susceptible to considerations of sentiment and prestige than was General Joffre. The possible danger to the new Italian dominion of Tripoli could not move him from his policy of maintaining a single concentrated effort in the field where the final decision was to be obtained. And later, when the Teutonic and Bulgarian advance towards Salonika and Asia Minor disturbed the French Cabinet, General Cadorna was personally inclined to answer this diversion by the simple and direct method of putting more pressure against the enemy's vital line.



the attrition of the Austro-Hungarian forces would be carried on by means of long-range artillery, sappers' work. and local trench

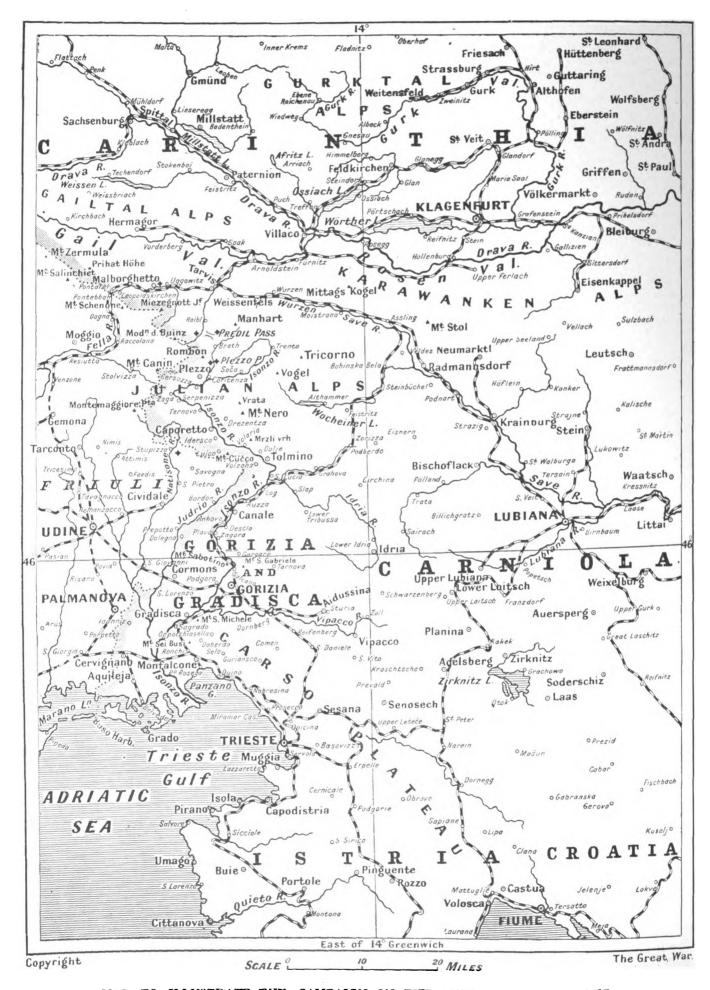
But the enemy's line in the North of Italy was of incomparable strength; and after the first surprise attack, by which the Alpine passes were won, General Cadorna had to increase his troops in the field to a million men in order to withstand the enemy's counter-attacks; for the Austrian, Hungarian, and German forces were continually reinforced until they numbered more than double the troops which the Austrian Chief of Staff had first considered necessary

on his south-western front. There can be little doubt that the Italians would have broken through the mountain rampart in one month, if the Austrian

Capture of Gradisca

rampart in one month, if the Austrian and German reserves could have been retained in combat by the Russians. As it was, the task of the Italian armies became more difficult than had been contemplated. All went well during the week following the capture of Monfalcone. General Cadorna had the keen joy of recapturing the Isonzo town of Gradisca, which his father had won from the same foe forty-nine years before.

The capture of Gradisca on June 9th completed the Italian control of the Lower Isonzo, and the general attack on all the fortresses guarding Trieste was then prepared. Of these fortresses four were of supreme importance. On the south was the Carso tableland, immediately defending Trieste. Between this talkeland and the foothills



MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE CAMPAIGN ON THE AUSTRO-ITALIAN FRONT.

of the Julian Alps was the river-valley of the Vipacco, barring which was the fortress system of the cathedral city of Gorizia. Then north of Gorizia was a fortified system of heights round the Isonzo town of Tolmino, and above Tolmino was the vast entrenched camp of Tarvis, that extended to Malborghetto and other Alps of Carinthia.

It was useless to mass an army against any one of these fortress systems. Had an attempt been made to win Trieste across the Carso tableland, the advancing forces would have been cut on the northern flank from the Gorizia area. It was also useless to attack merely the Carso and Gorizia. A well-defended advance towards Trieste could only be undertaken by using another large force in thrusting at Tolmino and the

force in thrusting at Tolmino and the
Tarvis fortresses, by which ran the road to
Vienna. Ever since Napoleon overthrew
Austria by clambering over the Carnic and

Julian Alps, the Austrian engineers had turned this corner in the Alpine chain into a Gibraltar. The first important system of earthwork fortresses was built after the Napoleonic wars. The system was strengthened after Napoleon III. overthrew the Austrians in 1859 in the battles that freed Lombardy. And when the Italian kingdom was fully established by the war of 1866, the mountain roads to Vienna and to Trieste were again fortified in a more formidable manner. Another great reconstruction followed the Siege of Port Arthur, which was the first important test of the power which fortresses had of resisting high-explosive shells. Then, in 1910, when the German and Austrian Staffs made the great discovery that their new 11 and 12 in. howitzers rendered all armoured and concrete works practically useless, the Alpine fortresses were remodelled, and positions were selected on the plateaux for earthwork systems of defence in which mobile siegeguns could be used.

In the centre of this long fortress-line was the railway town of Plava, lying on the eastern bank of the Isonzo, beneath the wooded heights of Ternovane Forest. Plava, with its tunnels and entrenched heights, moated by the flooded river, formed the point of the middle Austrian salient. In short, it was a key position, and the general Italian offensive began by a night attack on Plava, from Mount Korada on the other side of the river. The Italian sappers, with great coolness and skill, built a pontoon bridge in the darkness; and the infantry crossed the water on June 17th, and by a violent bayonet attack carried the town and the surrounding heights. The fighting was similar to that of our First Army Corps on the Aisne; and it was only by the most stubborn valour that the Italian troops overcame the tremendous difficulties of the position, and won a further foothold on the thickly-wooded heights.

The Battle of Plava

The Austrians returned with strong reinforcements, for their commander saw, as clearly as General Cadorna, the importance of the position. On the other hand.

the Italian general, having breached the enemy's second line in this place, poured strong forces into the gap, and a great battle took place on the edge of the forested highland. The local conditions were in favour of the Austrian army, for its forces could be massed amid the screen of trees where no Italian airmen could spy them. On the other hand, the Italian heavy artillery across the river on Mount Korada was able to send a plunging fire on the lower tableland, and with this help the dashing Italian troops won the battle and drove the enemy back.

At the same time, the Hill of Podgora, directly covering Gorizia, and forming the barbican of the defence system of the city, was assailed, and a strong reconnoitring force advanced towards Mount Fortin. Then, with five hundred guns massed against the defences of Gorizia, the first great Italian offensive move was made. It was, however, more in the nature of a reconnaissance in force than a sustained attempt to break through the great entrenched camp.

General Cadorna wanted to discover exactly the enemy's new lines of defence and the new position of his heavy mobile artillery. The Italian infantry of the line charged with superb intrepidity, and penetrated both the northern and the southern entrenchments. These extended over a front of more than ten miles from San Gabriele Mount, below Plava, to San Michele Mount on the Carso tableland. The trenches were built in the latest German style, with concrete more than a yard in thickness and armour plate cover, so that not only was shrapnel futile, but even ordinary sized high-explosive shell did little or no damage. Bayonet and rifle also were of no avail in an assault; the lines had to be won and retained by hand-bombs and short knives. The Italian attack would have been a complete check,

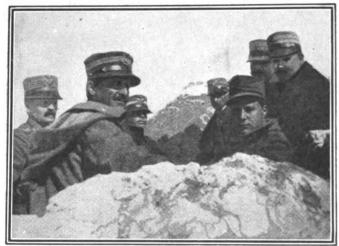


PATRIOTS OF THE HOUSE OF SAVOY.

The Duchess Elena of Aosta, whose husband is cousin to King Victor of Italy, with her eldest son, Prince Amedeo, who served as a corporal in an Italian artillery regiment.

if the enemy had been content with having repulsed the four army corps operating under the Duke of Aosta, between Gorizia and the sea. But the comparative ease with which the assault had been beaten back led the Archduke Eugène and his lieutenant, General Boroevics, to take the offensive in turn. They thought the Third Italian Army would be so discouraged that it could be driven over the Isonzo and broken. Therefore, as soon as the Italian attacking forces slackened, the main Austrian army advanced in full force across the Carso Plateau.

Thus began the first grand open field battle between the Italians and the Austrians. It began on June 22nd, and it did not end on July 6th. Although there was a short breathing-space at the end of the first week in July, the Austrians brought up more army corps, and renewed their attack, and it was not until the last days of July that the battle drew to a close. In this long and terrible conflict in the open field, the theatre of which included all



WAR'S ERUPTION AMID THE ETERNAL SNOWS.

General Segato with his Staff in a trench in the Alps during an Italian bombardment of the Austrian positions.

the Carso front, the Vipacco River valley, and the southern part of the Ternovane Forest, the enemy suffered such

heavy losses that his army was half shattered.

Yet his position had been found impregnable by the forces of the Italian commander, for the five hundred guns which the Italian general employed were quite inadequate. The ground was unassailable. The Carso is a tableland of broken rock rising in places to a thousand feet, and almost uninhabited in peace time. It is planted with trees, seamed with deep, narrow, winding gullies, with a

few larger ravines, that resemble the picturesque limestone valleys of the Peak district in Derbyshire. Owing to the action of rain on the limestone the plateau is pitted with funnel-shaped holes, which form natural machine-gun redoubts. Then there are innumerable caves from which quick-firing guns could be worked, and labyrinths of crags and scattered rocks, and foliage-hung cliffs behind which large reserves could safely be sheltered.

But General Boroevics lost all the tremendous natural advantages of this immense natural fortress when he sent his divisions charging across the open ground against the lines to which the Italians were clinging; for though the Italians only held on to the rim of the tableland, in positions somewhat like the Anzacs' under Sari Bair, with a flooded river a third of a mile broad beneath them, yet their well-built sand-bag trenches gave them excellent cover against the enemy's artillery. He seems to have had at first only a few 12 in. howitzers, the greater number of these heavy pieces having been diverted to the Carnic Alps line and the Tyrol and Trentino salients. And though his 6 in.

pieces were numerous, the heavier Italian guns across the river could search out the batteries, for the Austrians, in a Austrian formation renewed outburst of over-confidence,

frequently tried the effect of nocturnal bombardments, followed by night assaults with the bayonet. Their troops were used in every possible variety of formation. They were sent forward in line, in artillery order, in the case of first-rate veteran troops brought from the Russian or Serbian fronts; or a single fighting-line was established, consisting of a mixture of riflemen and bomb-throwers, and this line was fed, as it advanced and wasted, with files of supports creeping up under cover of the rocks. Then, as neither of these methods of infantry attack prevailed against the solidly - established Italian positions, the old Prussian method of mass attack in columns was employed.

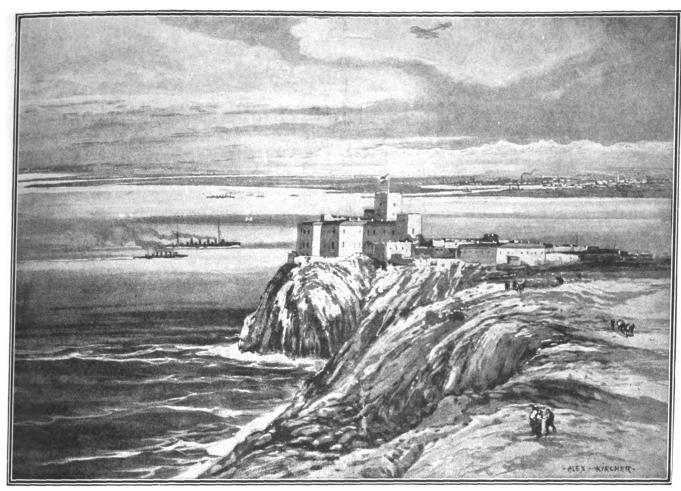
By the second week in July, however, none of the conquered ground was wrested from the Italian army. And as soon as the enemy relaxed his efforts, the Italians began to work up the fortified hills overlooking Gorizia by means of sharp, dashing attacks with bayonet and bomb. In the cultivated ground the siege method of sapping forward could be practised; but on the bare rock dynamite was needed to excavate a trench, and the charging soldiers had to carry sand-bags to make temporary cover from machine-gun fire. This extraordinary kind of trench-





GRANDSON OF GARIBALDI AS AN ALPINE FIGHTER.

Italian artillerymen hauling a field-gun over boulder-strewn ground during the Alpine fighting. Above: Captain Beppino Garibaldi (left), of the Alpini Brigade, a grandson of the great Italian patriot.



THE RIVER OF CONTENTION BETWEEN ITALY AND AUSTRIA: The mouth of the River Isonzo and the Isonzo Valley during heavy fighting between Italian and Austrian troops. The Isonzo, rising near Mount Terglon, at the junction of the Julian and Carnic Alps, flows

ENEMY ARTIST'S IMPRESSION OF A BATTLE NEAR THE ISONZO. tortuously southward for about seventy-five miles, entering the Gulf of Trieste five miles from Monfalcone, seen in the background and to the right of this picture. In the foreground is the celebrated old Castle of Duino.

making was indeed the general feature of warfare along the three hundred miles of mountain front, for though the rocky masses changed from limestone to granite, gneiss, and other kinds of hard stone, the depth of loose earth was usually small, and sand-bags had to serve as a defence until the engineering corps bored and blasted channels and galleries up and down the steep slopes. All this added greatly to the difficulties of the Italian advance.

The first phase of the Battle of Gorizia ended in the repulse of the Austrian counter-attack in the middle of July. General Cadorna then delivered a fiercer assault, based on the knowledge he had obtained by his first reconnaissance in force. For three days and nights—July 18th, 19th, and 20th—the troops of the Italian Second and Third Armies leaped forward with heroic energy all along the zone of the Isonzo, and broke through the wire entanglements and the armoured trenches, taking 3,500 prisoners. As a rule, the Italians attacked by day, and then resisted in their newly-won positions the nocturnal counter-attacks by the enemy. Owing to the fine work of their engineers, they retained all the ground they had won, and began to deliver night attacks themselves on July 20th.

**Both sides** reinforced

But the next morning General Cadorna stayed the forward movement of the Duke of Aosta, and bringing reinforce-

ments, ordered every man to help the engineers in strengthening and extending the trenches; for the commander, either through his aerial observers or his secret agents, had obtained knowledge that the enemy was about to make his supreme effort. July 21st passed quietly; then, on July 22nd, a mightier concentration of heavy Austrian artillery opened a hurricane fire on the Italian lines. A large number of German gunners had been sent to the Carso by the Crown Prince of Bavaria, and the

railways from Trieste and Laibach were used to their utmost capacity in bringing up shells.

The main infantry attack was delivered towards Gradisca, where the Italians had built their chief bridges across the Isonzo. The design, of course, was to cut the Italian line of communications, interrupt their supplies of ammunition, and destroy or capture their forces on the tableland. Under cover of the bombardment the infantry

advanced in close formation, after massing behind the neighbouring hills. The first line of Italian troops could not kill the

Supreme Austrian effort

close-packed lines quickly enough, and it seemed as though the position would be lost. But the Italian gunnery officers, watching the operation from their observing-posts, had the situation well in hand, and at the critical moment a storm of shrapnel from five hundred guns and howitzers fell on the large target in front of the first Italian line, and made such holes in it that the garrison of the fire-trench beat back the remnant of the attacking masses with little difficulty; and soon after they had stopped the great charge, they received, owing to the excellence of the Italian Staff work, a strong reinforcement. The old and the new troops then charged the shattered ranks of the enemy, captured the lines from which they had delivered the assault, and took two thousand of them prisoners.

The next day General Boroevics, pressed by the Archduke Eugène and his Headquarters Staff, launched another strong attack on the Italian positions near the sea-edge of the Carso tableland. This was an attempt to recover Monfalcone, but it failed completely, though the rough ground did not permit the Italians to make another fierce pursuit. Finally two Austrian divisions, which advanced from the heights of San Michele and San Martino to storm Sagrado, were so smashed up that, on July 25th, the Italian

Digitized by Google

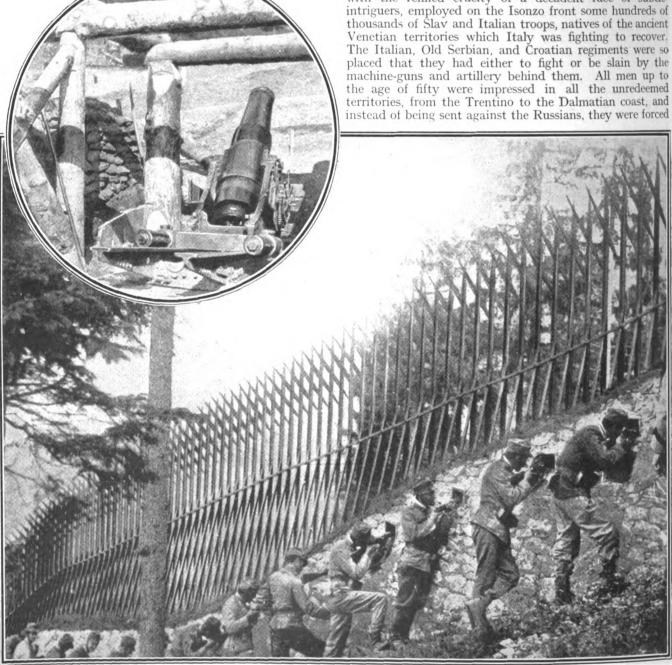
troops were able to carry some of the entrenched slopes of San Martino, and to storm the hill of Sei Busi. Monte Sei Busi, with its seven caverns, was the scene of one of the most violent contests on the whole front, for in a single day it was won, and lost, and won again, each strong opposing army throwing reinforcements up the height, after breaking up all the ground with direct and indirect shell fire.

The crest of San Michele was very important, as it dominated a large part of the tableland, and the main tide of battle surged around and over it for many days. At last the Italian infantry, on July 27th, tearing forward with passionate ardour, bombed and bayoneted their way to the summit, along which they then tried to establish themselves. They also sand-bagged part of the lower slope facing the enemy; but under the torrent of high-explosive

and asphyxiating shell the crest and the exposed slopes beneath it could not be garrisoned. The men had to retire to the sheltered side below the crest, where they were beyond the reach of the enemy's guns and hard to find by his howitzers. The British reader will understand the position by recollecting the struggles of his fighting countrymen on Hill 70 at Loos. It is practically impossible to hold a hill-slope facing the enemy's artillery. The best that can be done is to entrench on the reverse slope, and, if possible, keep an observer, with a telephone and a periscope, in a dug-out near the summit. This was the method by which the Germans held their downland front in Champagne, and it was the method by which the Austrians held the Carso.

All the fighting was an affair of Archduke Eugene's

refined cruelty artillery, with thousands of machineguns serving as secondary armament. In the defence, especially, the infantry was a force only of the third order, and the commanding Austrian, Archduke Eugène, with the refined cruelty of a decadent race of subtle



SPIKED DEFENCES AND A MASKED MORTAR ON THE ITALIAN FRONT. An elaborate trench defence built on the Italian front. Above the stone barricade, loopholed for rifle fire, the Italians erected formidable iron railings with spiked tops, sharply pointed. Above: A heavy mortar in position on the Italian front. The timber framework was later covered with brushwood as a mask.

to fight the armies which were struggling to free them.

Two ends were aimed at in this diabolical scheme. The first end was to set the women of the country against the army of liberation by alleging that their men would not have been called up for military service if the terms of neutrality arranged between Prince von Bülow and Signor Gioliti had been accepted. The second end was to depopulate the lands in dispute, so that if Italy won them their value would be lessened by the wholesale destruction of boys, able-bodied men, and middle-aged men. It was also calculated that by pitting the independent Italians against the oppressed peoples they were trying to liberate, the Italians' ardour for battle would be diminished.

In the battles with the Russians and Serbs, considerable bodies of Slav troops in the Austro-Hungarian armies had succeeded in surrendering to their fellow-Slavs.

But since then the Teutonic and Magyar officers had worked out stricter methods of maintaining the power of death over

the men of oppressed subject races, whom they set in the front lines. German and Hungarian non-commissioned officers, both of an overbearing, brutal temperament, were set over the discon-

Teuton way with used only as a screen to a chain of malcontents machine-gun positions, whose fire swept the entire front. When the infantry charged under cover of an artillery bombardment, the

guns were always ready to shatter the men if they tried to go over to the Italians.

It was these unfortunate, tragic, enslaved infantrymen of Latin and Southern Slav origin who were used up by the hundred thousand around Gorizia and around Trento in the first four months of the war. Then the Tyrolese, Austrian, Hungarian, and Bavarian troops had to be employed in larger numbers, as the steady pressure of the Italian offensive increased; for General Cadorna not only brought up continually more men from his resources of three million trained troops, but as progress in the great scheme of re-armament was accelerated by the gospel of munition work, which spread from Britain to all allied countries, the power of Italian artillery, in both the number of pieces and the supply of shells, augmented in a formidable, menacing manner. The Italians were compelled to refuse to take any part in the Dardanelles adventure, because they had no guns to spare on a side issue, and afterwards they were still unable, for the same reason,

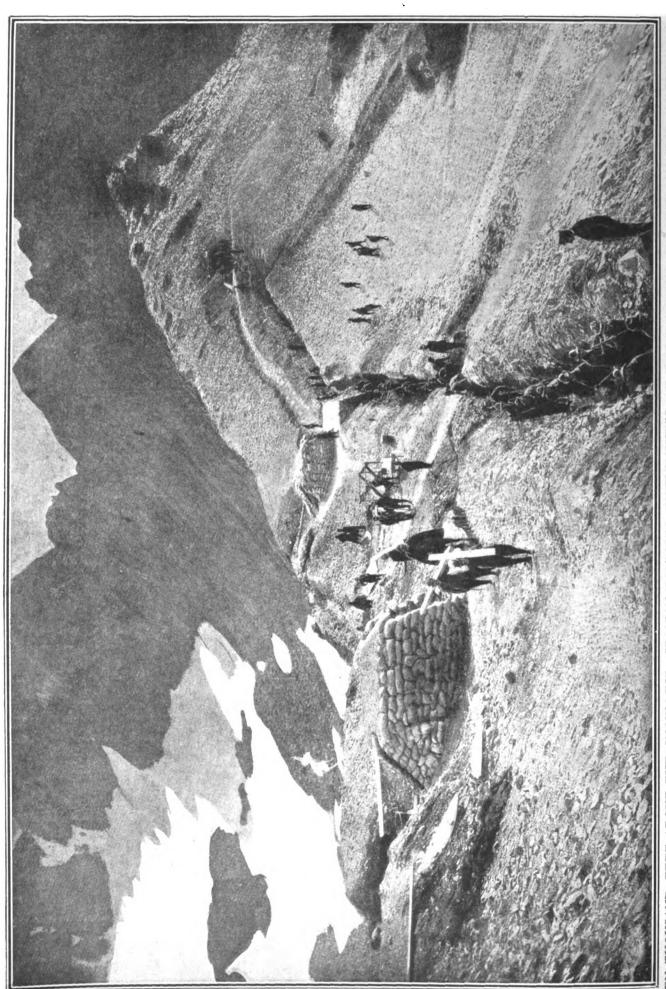


still unable, for the same reason, to send an expedition to Serbia in October, 1915. They had not,

ALPINI TAKING COVER FROM THE ENEMY'S GUN FIRE.

Next to the Bersaglieri, the finest Italian troops are the Alpini, specially trained mountaineers. In this photograph some Alpini are seeking cover after firing their gun and while being bombarded by the enemy. Above: A patrol of Italian soldiers on the alert.

DD



ENTRENCHING AT THE FOOT OF A GLACIER ON THE AUSTRIAN ALPS which had to be surmounted were tremendous. The trenches which the Italians were digging when this photograph was taken commanded the valley below. Nearer the great glacier was a row of dug-outs, protected by sand-bags, while in the background a gun-platform was being prepared. TEN THOUSAND FEET ABOVE THE SNOW-LINE: ITALIAN SOLDIERS Italian soldiers digging trenches and preparing breastworks at the foot of a glacier near a mountain crest, ten thousand feet above the snow-line of the Austrian Alps. At various points along the Italian buttle-front fighting took place at many thousands of feet above the snow-line, so that the difficulties

234

in tact, sufficient first-rate artillery for their own front, and it was not until the deep snows of midwinter increased their blockade of the Alpine passes that they could consider entering any third theatre of war besides the Austrian

front and Tripoli.

All that General Cadorna could immediately do, when Austria, Hungary, Germany, and Bulgaria closed round Serbia in October, was to follow the early example of General Joffre and Sir John French. The French and British commanders had helped the Russians in May, June, and September, 1915, by launching great offensives in Artois and Champagne, which compelled the German Staff to rail quickly large forces from the eastern to the western front. In the same way General Cadorna had continually co-operated in the helping movements for Russia, by fierce, sustained thrusts at the Austrian lines, which forced the Austrian Staff to divert troops from

Cadorna's

Russia towards Italy. And in October, 1915, he employed all his power to draw off some of the Teutonic and Magyar pressure against Serbia, by launching a third great assault against the hostile positions along the

Isonzo.

Like the grand drive of the Franco-British forces at Massiges and Loos, the Italian offensive on the Gorizia fortress chain failed to break the enemy's resistance. Yet, as in Artois and Champagne, so on the Isonzo, the heroism, endurance, and violence of effort of the attacking forces were tremendous. Of this there is a most striking proof, for the enemy commander on the Isonzo line, General Boroevics, was so moved by the superb courage of the Italian troops as to praise them to his own countrymen. In an interview published in a Hungarian newspaper soon after the battle, the general explained:

The third Italian offensive developed out of a stationary struggle that had lasted for months. The Battle of the Isonzo, from the Italian point of view, was nothing else but an unsuccessful Gorlice, and on our part it was a defensive effort of the greatest magnitude, which could be compared only to that of the German defensive of a few weeks ago on the western front. General Joffre visited the Italian front a month ago, and gave the Italians the benefit of his

experiences.

The Third Italian Army, under the command of the Duke of Aosta, attacked the Doberdo Plateau. Part of the Second Italian Army was directed against Gorizia. Twenty-four divisions and two Alpine brigades were in action. Over three hundred thousand rifes and one thousand five hundred guns were directed against the defenders of the Isonzo. The first signs of an offensive were clearly evident in the middle of October, when an artillery cannonade was feeling its way all along the front. The first heavy shells fell on October 15th, and the first infantry hand-to-hand battle was fought on October 18th. On this day it was already clear that the Italians meant business. The first attack was delivered against

the Italians meant business. The first attack was delivered against the northern part of the front—Monte Nero and the bridge-head of Tolmino were the objectives. At the same time the battle began to rage on the Doberdo as well. This was the introduction.

The real battle began on October 20th, when the first important infantry action was fought. On the 20th and 21st the Italian artillery worked with such vigour that our men had to seek refige in caves. The most strongly-fortified positions became quite unsafe, and the observers left there to watch the movements of the enemy, and changed every half an hour, were invariably found to be killed by the time the reliefs arrived. Guns of all calibre were used, and the bombardment lasted for fully fifty hours. Most of our positions were demolished, and the nerves of the men shattered also, and when the Italians believed that the rocks had melted away and every human being had been destroyed in our lines, the infantry attack

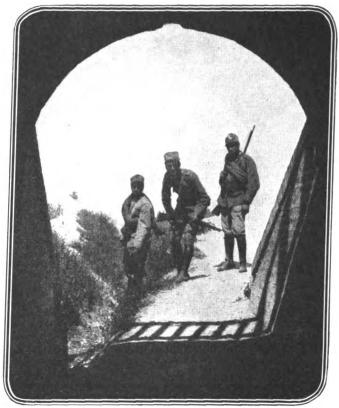
the Italians believed that the rocks had melted away and every human being had been destroyed in our lines, the infantry attack began. They took some of our positions, but they achieved no substantial success, and the battle raged throughout the day and the night following. There were gallant deeds on both sides, and, if I praise my own men, I likewise cannot deny a tribute to an enemy who fought with the courage of lions.

Instead of subsiding, the battle grew in vehemence, and reached its height on October 24th. On this day the attacks against the Doberdo ceased, only to begin against the Monte San Michele and the San Martino. On October 26th it seemed for a moment that the struggle was coming to an end. The Italians expended less ammunition and used fewer men; they threw their reserves into the battle with more caution and much more slowly. But on October 28th the titanic struggle assumed a still more desperate character than before, towards the northern part of the front.

This time the bridge-head of Tolmino bore the brunt of the attack for fully three days. At this juncture the battle again took another turn, and the assaults were made on the southern sector of the front. In the first days of November the bridge-head of Gorizia was the

goal of Italian endeavour, not only because its capture would be a visible symbol of Italian success, but also because it is of first-rate a visible symbol of Italian success, but also because it is of first-rate importance from a strategical point of view, as it forms a gap between the mountainous region and the sea, and on a front almost twenty miles contains six excellent roads leading from Italy into Austria. It is, therefore, the best starting-point for an invasion of the Monarchy, and the attacks delivered here were the most furious, and the losses inflicted on the enemy and by the enemy were the greatest. On October 28th the Italian attack was repulsed by the defending forces, yet a few days later, on November 1st, new Italian reserves appeared, two brigades being withdrawn from the Dolomite front. This time they succeeded in taking some advanced positions, and on November 2nd and 3rd more reserves appeared, and superhuman efforts followed, but with no result. no result.

Podgora Hill, which dominates the town of Gorizia, was defended by the 23rd Dalmatian Landwehr Regiment, which on the afternoon of November 2nd repulsed six storming attacks, with the 52nd Hungarian Regiment as its reserve. The battlefield had three distinct areas—the Doberdo Plateau, the bridge-head of



THE CHALLENGE: ITALIAN SENTRIES ON GUARD. An Italian patrol photographed at the moment they challenged the photographer, who was under the bridge they were guarding, near the Italian lines.

Gorizia, and the bridge-head of Tolmino. At the same time it raged in three distinct periods—first, from October 18th to the zznd, which period was characterised by fierce assaults delivered on the which period was characterised by heree assaults delivered on the whole of the front; from the 22nd to the 26th, when the attacks were delivered only on the northern sector of the front; and the period from the 26th, in which attacks were made solely on the bridge-head of Gorizia and the neighbouring heights, and which is still undecided. Yet there was one point where, from October 15th up to the present day, the battle did not cease for a moment, and that was the northern part of the Doberdo Plateau.

Although the enemy's efforts did not succeed, I cannot refrain from saying that the bravery of the Italian troops was almost incredible, for even if certain regiments lost all their officers, this did not deter the men from advancing with the greatest contempt

It will be remarked that General Boroevics admits. with gallant frankness, that he lost various positions, and that the number of his men put out of action was great. It will also be noticed that the commander states that the Landwehr of Dalmatia (Italian and Old Serbian troops) were placed in the very forefront of the battle at Podgora

Hill, with an Hungarian force behind them. But the main feature of this extraordinary statement by the opposing army commander is his repeated references to the "incredible bravery" of the Italian soldiers. Not thus did any man in Austria-Hungary or Germany talk of the Italians in the last week of May, 1915. Vicious and base as was the abuse first poured upon our own Territorials and New Army men by the Germans, before Neuve Chapelle and Loos, this contemptuous invective was mild in comparison with Austro-Hungarian insults on Italian valour in the days when the struggle for "Italia Irredenta" was opening. We can fairly judge, from the change of tone in their traditional enemies, of what stuff are made the men of that fine creative race whom the best English minds have loved through all changes of history, from the age of Chaucer, the age of Shakespeare and Milton, the age of Byron and Shelley, and Swinburne and Browning. From the Italian of old we received the torch of poetry, art, and science, and it is pleasant to us to see him now compel his bitterest foe to praise him.

In spite of the exact work of the Italian gunners, in whose school at Turin the Serb and Bulgar artillery officers

The great offensives and counter-offensives were quite as violent as the French, British, and German movements in Champagne and Artois. But in Italy, when the great drive and counter-drive had slackened, fighting went on day and night-somewhat in the fashion of the Hohenzollern Redoubt and Labyrinth combats, but on a larger scale and with much stronger pressure. What we might call the sand-bag brigades moved forward yard by yard, with

now and then a happy leap, and when the ground they had won was consolidated, the engineers bored and blasted out the rock, making permanent fortress works

The sand-bag brigades

in the Gibraltar style, while the sand-bag brigades, with machine-guns, quick-firers, and howitzers, brought up close to their temporary lines, continued to work forward to the enemy's main system of works. This system was built upon the Doberdo Plateau, rising some three miles south of the village of San Martino, and about the same distance north of Monfalcone. This upland, which dominated the general tableland, was in turn overlooked by a rocky height, Hill 209, towering by the road to Gorizia; and behind it, at Resolica, was the still taller mass of Hill 376. These two

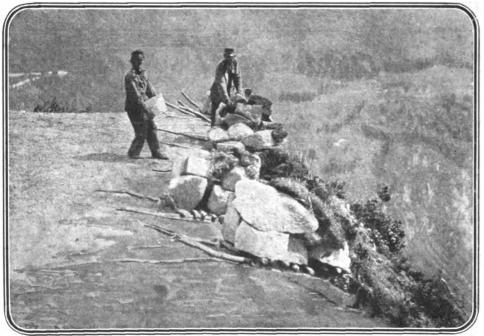
hills had well-protected galleries, from which expert German artillery officers directed the fire of the heavy Austrian batteries against the Italian lines at San Michele, San Martino, and Monte Sei Busi. On the Italian side there was no dominating height which could be used for controlling the gun fire; and this work had to be carried out from observation balloons sent up across the Isonzo River.

When it is remembered that Gibraltar, with only a hundred guns, held out against the attacking forces of two king-doms for more than three and a half years, it cannot be wondered that the Italian army found the great, peaked, rocky mass of the Carso a very difficult thing to conquer; for most of the advantages derived from the developments in modern artillery rested with the defend-

AGE OF THE ALPS.

uns and high explosive shells.
the campaign, utilised Nature's alians.

motor - batteries working along many new branching roads. These could seldom be put out of action, and they came rapidly into the battlefield when a movement of the Italian infantry was signalled on the observation heights Italian infantry was signalled on the observation heights. All night the tableland was swept by searchlights, which quickly picked out any body of troops trying to steal an advance, and lighted them up for destruction by the artillery. All the wire entanglements were charged with deadly currents of electricity; and more formidable than all the guns, howitzers, poison-gas cylinders, aerial torpedoes, and flame-projectors which the enemy employed, was his ubiquitous and skilfully used secondary armament of machine-guns. The sea-mists, floating in from the Adriatic, often tempted the Italian sand-bag brigades to make a dash for an enemy trench, when the hostile artillery was blanketed with the fog. But even in these circumstances the remarkably complete organisation of the enemy enabled him to parry a stab through the fog. As soon as a trench was lost, telephone reports reached the German and Austrian gunners, and these, knowing to an inch the range of the lost, invisible position, battered it with



AUSTRIAN DEVICE THAT RECALLS HANNIBAL'S PASSAGE OF THE ALPS. Another instance of primitive weapons surviving to the days of 15 in guns and high explosive shells. Like the ancient mountain tribesmen, the Austrians, during the Alpine campaign, utilised Nature's "munitions," hurling rocks on to the advancing Italians.

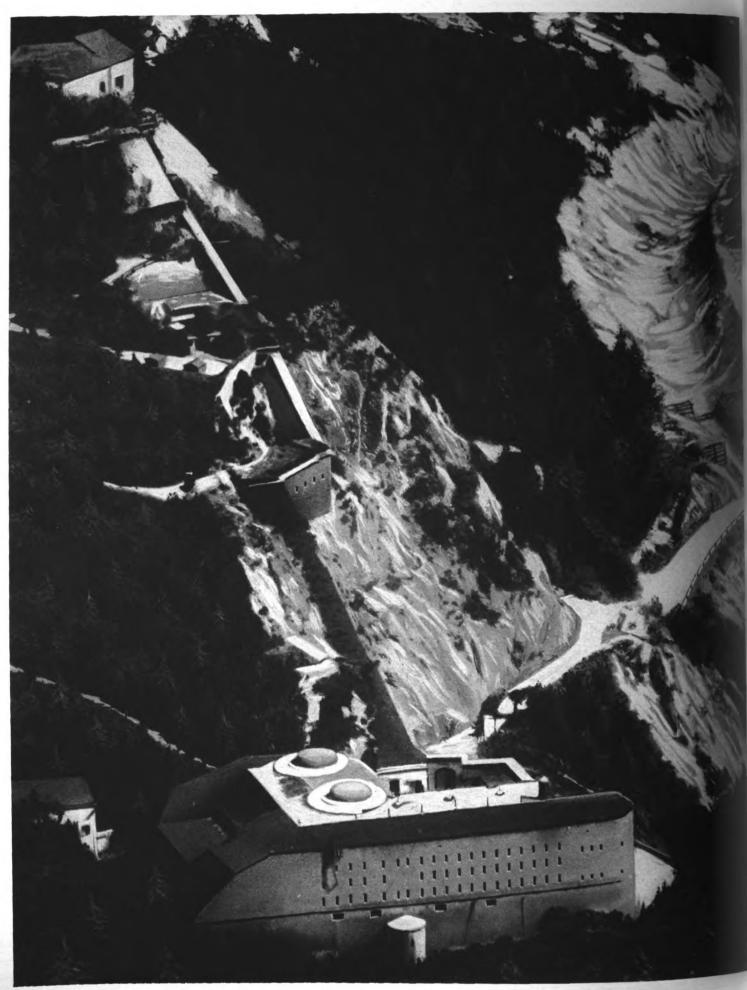
had been trained to the victories of the Balkan War, practically all the victories on the Isonzo line had to be won by hand-to-hand fighting; for though the Italians were terribly exact in handling their new artillery, as the Austrian army commander admits, the general damage they did was slight. The natural and artificial defences, behind which the Austrians fought, protected them from the Italian guns. Shells burst against the rocks and the cemented trenches without reaching the enemy. It was

the Isonzo

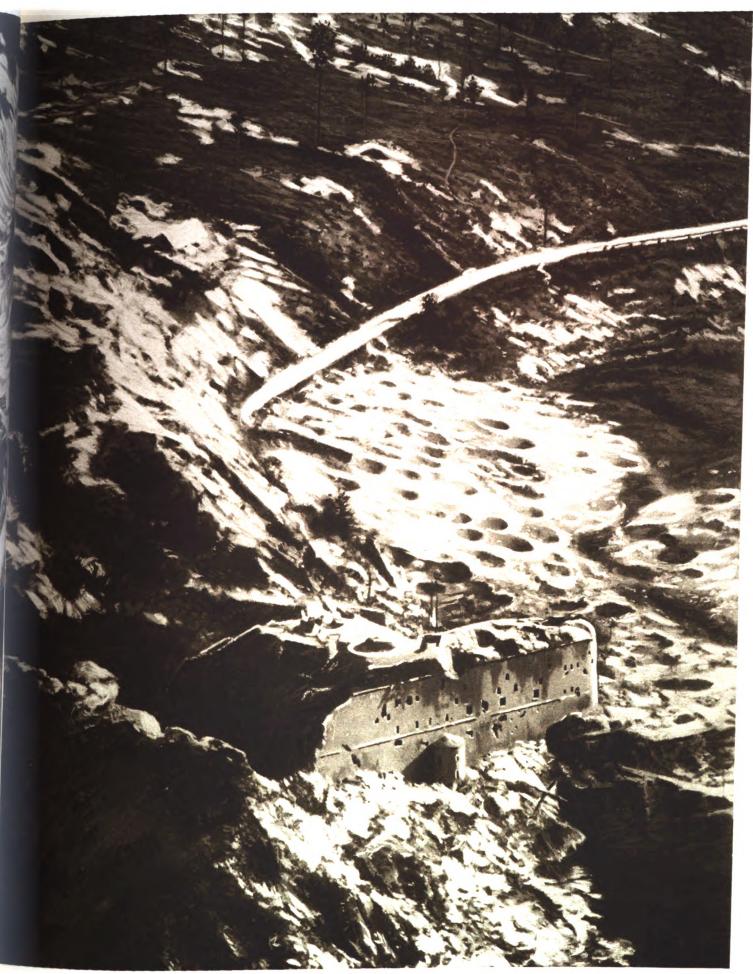
only in the counter-attacks that the effec-Hand-to-hand on tives of the Austro-Hungarian-German forces were slaughtered by thousands and tens of thousands. On the other hand, in order to provoke these counter-attacks, the Italian troops

had continually to thrust forward. Thus there was produced on the heights overlooking Gradisca and the Gorizia Plain a kind of pumping movement, in which the Third Italian Army continually made little advances and smaller withdrawals in the neighbourhood of the village of San Martino del Carso. There was seldom a week of quietude on the Gorizia front.

Italian 305 mm. gun bombarding an Austrian fort on a remote mountain peak.



Austrian armoured fort at Malborghetto, in the Carnic Alps, before bombardment.



View of the same Malborghetto fort shattered by the Italian heavy guns.

Digitized by Google



Immense labour and great ingenuity were required to haul the monster Italian guns up the mountain steeps to their positions.

asphyxiating shell, by way of preparation for a strong counter-attack by their bombing parties. Such were the conditions under which the Third Italian Army wore down the opposing effectives, and very gradually yet continually worked forward to the Doberdo Plateau.

The deeds of heroism performed in this fortress war cannot be related even by the Italians themselves. For heroism became as common as at Anzac; and as the Italian

Italians and Anzaes army was much larger than the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps, and was fighting on a longer front, the adventures of men, battalions, brigades, and divisions

were more numerous. There were some very remarkable points of resemblance between the soldiers of Italy and the men of Anzac. In both cases the troops began with a bayonet charge of a fierceness, passionateness, and prolonged fury that was amazing. There was not much science about either of these preliminary charges; but the desperate, deathless spirit of the men enabled them to conquer positions that should have been impregnable. When the Anzac men recovered from their Berserker raids, they showed an engineering skill superior to that of many

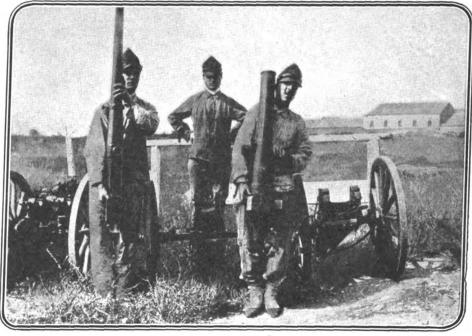
British regular officers. In parcular, they thought out tricky, original ways of doing things which saved them during the campaign much trouble and many casualties. It was the same with the Italians. When they climbed the Carso, and, going at a run, got too far ahead of their guns and reserves, they fell back towards the edge of the steep, and there surprised their enemy by a speed in rock entrenching as great as their speed in a bayonet attack. They first pene-trated into positions which they had to leave, and which afterwards took months for their main forces to approach; and their officers had very great difficulty in holding them back and from certain and useless death. But General Cadorna knew his men, and the first extraordinary thrusts in which the troops were, so to speak, given their head, were part of a long-considered plan by the Italian commander. By using first the sheer vehemence in battle of the Italian race, he accomplished swiftly with a few thousand men more than

he could have won with a great army by slow, scientific methods. Then when the need for siege-warfare tactics arose, he was still able to evoke at will the flaming spirit of his men, while keeping them firmer in hand and using their great technical ability in preliminary engineering works.

In order to illustrate our general remarks on the valour of the forces that stormed the Carso tableland, we must give one instance out of the hundred dramatic episodes of the war. The chief Austrian bridge-head south of Gorizia was the village of Sagrado. It rests beneath an overhanging hill, which forms a projection of the Carso Plateau, and the railway from Trieste to Gorizia runs under the cliff. Half a mile west of the railway is the Isonzo River, across which stretched an iron railway bridge. When the Austrians lost their advanced position at Gradisca, they tried to blow up the bridge, but only destroyed the centre, and two footbridges were left slightly damaged. In the third week in July some small detachments of Italian infantry crept out by night with sand-bags, and built

redoubts on the unbroken part of the bridge; and in the darkness their engineers repaired the footways across the broken central piers. Then in broad daylight an Italian field-gun rattled down the valley, horses and men running through the fire from the enemy's positions across the river, and halting by some trees near the bridge.

The gunners quickly got their gun on the target, and began to shell the tiers of Austrian trenches round Sagrado. They drew the fire of every rifle and machine-gun, while the infantry detachments sprinted across the bridge, and got home with the bayonet in the Austrian position. Meanwhile the distant Austrian batteries on the tableland, working by telephone through their observing officers at Sagrado, found the range of the single gun. The little group was soon wrapped in smoke; the men began to fall, and one wheel was shattered. Still the Italians served their gun, until an Austrian shell struck it full on the muzzle, and killed all the crew. But by this time the battalion was across the river, and fighting its way up the steep to the brink of the tableland. All the Austrian artillery curtained off this small force, smashed the bridge down again, and the Austrian troops were



HOW ITALIAN ARTILLERYMEN CARRIED GUNS OVER ROUGH COUNTRY.

The ease with which Italy's fine Alpini manipulated their guns when confronted with mountainous country or marshlands was similar to that of British naval men when operating ashore. When bad country rendered it impossible to drag the gun-carriages, the pieces were taken apart and different sections were carried by the men.

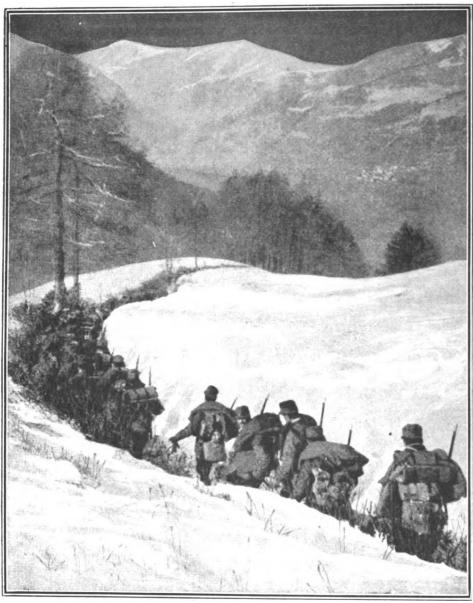
reinforced and flung round the cut-off battalion. But the Italians held out until night, and once more in the darkness their engineers repaired the bridge; an infantry brigade came over and, supporting the heroic battalion, captured a mile or so of the tableland, and there fought back every assault until there was room for an army corps to work forward towards the Doberdo Plateau.

By the middle of November, 1915, the situation on the Carso tableland resembled that in Cham-

pagne. The enemy had been driven back to his last line, and had been compelled to bring up half a million more troops.

A seeming stalemate

Having, however, won time to recover from the blow which he had received, General Boroevics constructed another system of lines behind the Doberdo Plateau, so that his position was practically as strong as it had been before. To all appearance the Italian army, like the Franco-British forces on the western front, was in a position of stalemate. It seemed as though only by gradual attrition could the enemy's power of resistance be worn down. But the



AN ITALIAN TRENCH ON A MOUNTAIN TOP. Italian infantrymen amid the picturesque grandeur of the snow-covered Alpine heights. Alpini passing through a trench during the mountain fighting.

Italian soldier, like the French and British soldier, did not believe that this state of things was permanent. He had clearly shown such a marked personal ascendancy over his foe that he confidently waited for more guns, more shells, and a large store of stupefying gas, so that he could balance the enemy's extraordinary machinery of warfare, and then engage in a decisive hand-to-hand struggle in the fortrees for which the struggle in the fortress from which the roads branched to Trieste and Vienna.

Meanwhile, the still more exciting, difficult, and wildly picturesque work of Alpine warfare went on in the Julian, Carnic, Dolomite, Trentino, and Tyrolean

A stroke of mountains. In the Julian Alps the fighting mountaineers of Italy had a startling luck stroke of luck in the first phase of the

struggle. From an order issued by the Austrian commander, General Rohr, it appears that two of his companies were set to guard a formidable rampart of rock between Tolmino and Monte Nero. The position was one which five hundred men, with Maxims and quick-firers, could easily have held against an army corps. But the strength of the cliff of rock was so apparent that the Austrian troops took their duties very lightly. Leaving a few men at the post of observation, both companies used to sleep at night. The

Alpinists clambered over the mountain in the darkness, killed the watchmen silently with the knife, and then dropped in the rear of the two sleeping companies and captured them. This is a good instance of those happygo-lucky methods of the Austrian officer which excite the contempt of the more business-like and efficient German. In the present case it resulted in an alarming breach being made in the ap-proaches to the entrenched camp

of Tarvis.
The Italian siege-guns were able to use the peak of Monte Nero, which is a mountain in the form of a stump 7.370 feet high, as a fire-control station from which the 12 in. shells of their howitzers were pitched into the Tolmino forts, and the southern section of the Tarvis forts such as Flitsch, or Plezzo in Italian, a picturesque village only a few miles south of the famous Pass of Predil, and connecting with it by an easy highway. Plezzo valley, where the Austrians had a mobile battery, was surrounded by a series of brilliant infantry actions in the mountains.

Then at the western end of the great ring of fortified heights, barring the Predil Pass and the highway and railway running into the heart of Austria, was Malborghetto. The Malborghetto forts formed a mountain salient in Italian territory, and the chief works, such as Fort Hensel—a great white oblong of armoured concrete—could be plainly seen from the Italian mountains. The Italians quickly brought their heaviest howitzers against the Malborghetto system, and reduced Fort Hensel and other permanent works to the same condition as

that to which the Skoda guns had reduced the Liège forts. When the Malborghetto Forts obliterated Italian gunners had done with it, the bare Alpine valley looked in places like a lunar photograph, by reason of the craters made by

the 12 in. shells, while the long white fort, blown up at last by a projectile reaching the ammunition chamber, was an amazing spectacle of ruin.

This work of destruction, however, went on very slowly; for the high Alps, over which the shells had to be sent, were usually either veiled in mist or curtained by falling rain. Rare were the days when the air was clear, and the observation officers could watch every shot and telephone the gunners what allowance they had to make for the winds above the mountains. When the forts were destroyed the work of the Italian artillery became more difficult. The enemy brought up batteries of new 12 in. guns, which were hidden on what is preparate became as an Alp that were hidden on what is properly known as an Alp, that is a stretch of pasture-land, well below the summit, and covered with snow in winter, but used for pasturing cattle in the short summer. The guns were placed in tufted pits and their muzzles consoled form reconsisting airmen. pits and their muzzles concealed from reconnoitring airmen, while dummy wooden guns were partly displayed at a safe distance in order to draw the enemy's fire. The



REVERTING TO PRIMEVAL WARFARE: A primitive ruse employed by the enemy during the Austro-Italian campaign in the Alps. The Austrians had lashed loose, heavy boulders to the edge of a precipice, and masked them with pine branches. According

AN AUSTRIAN TRAP IN THE ALPS. to this drawing, reproduced from an enemy journal, the Austrians cut the wires holding the avalanche of rocks in position, and so sent them hurtling on to a company of Italian soldiers passing along the mountain path below.



CYCLIST SCOUTS OF THE BERSAGLIERI.

The cyclists attached to those world-famed regiments of green-plumed sharpshooters, the Bersaglieri, used specially-constructed machines which could be packed on their backs or as quickly unpacked for use.

heavy artillery on both sides could easily pitch a huge shell over the highest peak, and after a few trial shots hit a small target. But the Italians were undoubtedly the finer gunners. They made their calculations more quickly and more precisely, and got their shell home while their opponents were still ranging. This was seen all along the Carnic Alps from Malborghetto on the east to Landro and the grassy flat of Platz Wiese, near Monte Cristallo and Cortina. The Italian artillerymen, firing over

Intricate artillery work glaciers and fields of eternal snow, were often able to report to their commander that they had silenced the enemy's great mobile guns which were invisible to them.

All this long artillery duel, with its weeks of waiting through cloudy weather, when the observing officers on the mountain-tops could not see through the clouds beneath their feet, and the fierce brief outbursts of thunder, when the clouds lifted from peak and glacier, was an involved and interesting affair. The 12 in guns were not intended to fight each other. They were laboriously hauled up, by the hand-labour of brigades, to plateaux five or six thousand feet above sea-level, in order to outrange and destroy some hostile 6 in batteries across the Alps. The 6 in batteries had been brought up in order to overpower the opposing 3 in mountain guns, some of which were worked by the Italians at the extraordinary height of

10,000 feet. These mountain guns were lifted with ropes, twined around pinnacles of rock, to a dominating position in order to smash up the enemy's machine-gun positions. And, lastly, the machine-guns were used in order to break up any charge by the Alpine troops. When both sides had a strong connecting chain between their 12 in. howitzers and their Alpine troops, the conditions of the duel were fairly regularised. If a 12 in. gun tried to smash up a 6 in. or 3 in. piece, a hostile 12 in. gun would intervene by a direct assault upon the big bully across the mountains. All the real work of advance consisted in winning the peak from which the enemy artillery officers were marking the target and correcting the fire of their heavy artillery.

The peak was not always the highest in the surrounding mountain masses. The strategical value of a height was determined by the direction of the views to be obtained

from it, and the extent of the field of vision over hostile scenes of operation.

Thus, when the Battle of the Alps became violent and continuous all along the line,

Freikofel and Cresta Verde

small summits, unmarked on ordinary maps and passed over by the happy summer climber in the days of peace, became world-famous through their frequent mention in the daily statements issued by the Austrian and Italian Staffs. Freikofel, as we have already seen, was one of the smaller peaks that stood out continually in the limelight of war. The Alpini captured it by a surprise attack with scarcely any loss, and then for months the Austrian commander sacrificed battalions and regiments, and even brigades, in vain attempts to recover the key-height in the central pass of the Carnic Alps. But the loss of Freikofel, though followed by the loss of Cresta Verde, near the Zellenkofel, on June 24th, did not quicken the minds of the Austrian officers; for in the first week in July the extremely important observation peak of Zellenkofel was lost by them. The enemy had a squad of forty men and some observation officers entrenched on the crest. Below them, on the reverse slope, was a battery of their mountain guns, with indirect fire to sweep the southern slopes of the heights. The battery was in telephonic communication with the observation-station, and the station could also speak by wire to more distant batteries of heavy howitzers, and to the large infantry reserves collected in the wooded valley.

But both the men and the officers on the peak were lulled into a blind sense of security by their extraordinary position; for, on the side on which they faced the Italians, there was not a slope, but an almost perpendicular precipice, with a

fall of thousands of feet. In the darkness, twenty-nine Alpini, with an officer, crept up to the foot of the precipice with ropes and a machine-gun. The finest climbersmen who had made a special study of the Zellenkofel—pulled themselves up by jutting rocks, and then let down the ropes by which the other men ascended with a machine-gun. A clatter of falling stones would have alarmed the enemy, but the foot-holds and the rope-holds were so skilfully chosen that no detached pieces of rock were toppled over. Just at moonrise the Alpini squad reached the crest, shot down the sentries, and then killed the garrison of the observation-station by a bayonet charge.

There then followed a long and desperate fight with the mountain battery Capture of the Zellenkofel on the reverse slope. But by means of the machine-gun the Austrians were

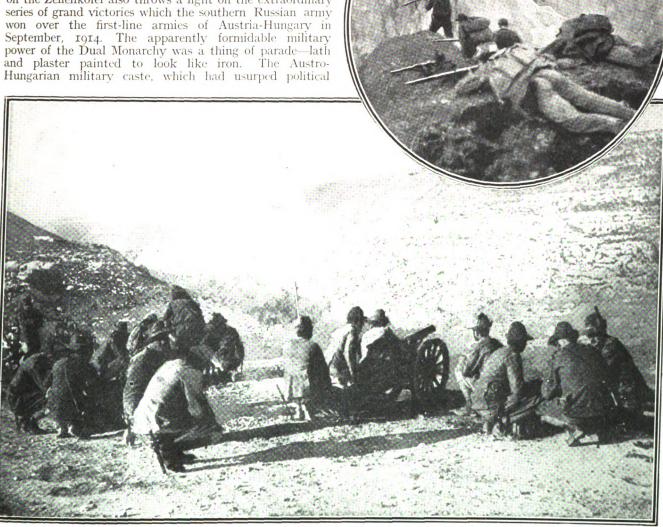
shattered in trying to make a charge, and their guns

were captured just as day was breaking.

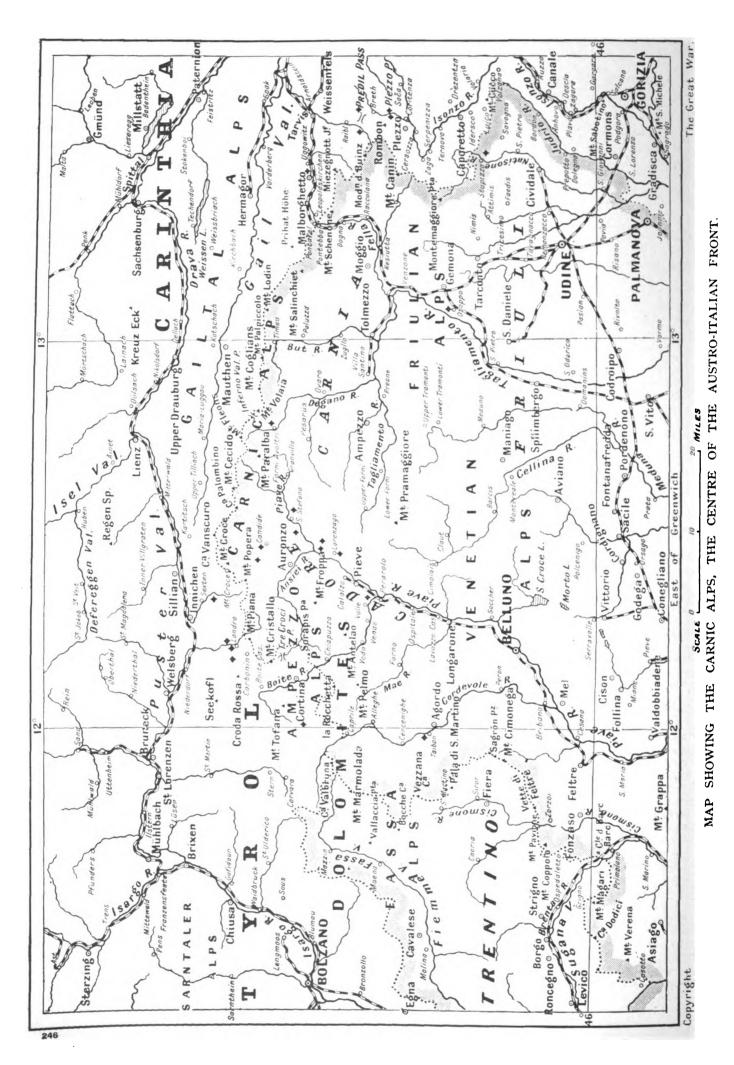
By the time the Austrian reserves arrived, the Italian Alpine troops had entrenched on the southern slopes, and with the captured battery protecting them and large reinforcements arriving, they were able to hold the mountain against all assaults, and to break the charging Austrian lines with gusts of Austrian shrapnel and shell, which formed part of the spoil of the Zellenkofel. That in the sixth week of the war the Austro-Hungarians should have let themselves be defeated at vital strategical points by forces of thirty men may, we think, be taken as a fair measure of comparison between the capabilities of the Italian soldier and the incapacity of his foes. The affair on the Zellenkofel also throws a light on the extraordinary

power in the manner of the Prussian caste on the ground that democratic government made for weakness in war, proved itself, when the test came, to be disastrously lacking in fighting skill. If the Prussian Staff, which was undoubtedly very efficient, had not reorganised and officered the Austro-Hungarian forces, Italy alone could have shattered the corrupt, spectacular, incompetent governing classes of the decadent Empire of the Hapsburgs. The fable published in the "Frankfürter Zeitung" only the brutal truth of the matter.

The present writer would not, however, rank the privates and non-commissioned officers of the Austrian Alpine troops below those of the Italian Alpine troops. Only a year before the war he made a climbing expedition in the Tyrol Alps, in company with a young Tyrolean Alpinist of the middle class. The knowledge, skill, and enterprising spirit of this friendly fellow-climber were remarkable. He was a perfect mountaineer, given to



OUTPOST SCENES ON RIVAL FRONTS DURING THE MOUNTAIN FIGHTING. Alpini during the fighting in the Carso. A machine-gun section waiting for the approach of Austrians over a ridge of rock. Above: An Austrian outpost firing on Alpini from amid barren, snow-capped peaks in the Tyrol.



Digitized by Google

exploring for new paths, but methodical and steady in his work. The fact is that the Tyrolean Mountain Corps were formed of excellent material, but they were badly officered. The Tyrolese Regiments had, unfortunately, the name of being the crack body of troops in Austria-Hungary. They therefore attracted from Vienna the kind of courtier officer who wanted to swagger, and who could rely on social and political influence to win for him promotion he could not earn by merit and hard work. Apparently the battles in the Carpathians had not eliminated officers of this kind from the Tyrolese Regiments, and in the first two months of the war they tarnished the bright fame which the bravest mountain race in Austria had won in the days of Andreas Hofer.

It was along the line of the Carnic and Julian Alps, where the Austrian Staff had most frequently conducted manœuvres in recent years, that its Alpine troops chiefly

failed. And these troops came into action rich with knowledge that had been dearly bought in the Carpathians, while the Italian Alpini were entirely lacking in experience of mountain warfare. It is almost with relief

experience of mountain warfare. It is almost with relief that we turn to the western edge of the rocky battle-front, and find that there the fighting mountaineers of Tyrol managed at last partly to redeem their reputation by a

gallant and daring stroke.

Close above the Tonale Pass gleams one of the greatest glacier systems in Europe. The vast crown of ice extends from Alp to Alp for more than twenty miles, showing like a white, cloud-like crescent in the blue sky from Presanella to Care. The broadest part is that which stretches for some six miles to Monte Adamello, 11,640 feet high. There are several easy paths over or by the glaciers, and the Alpini had seized and fortified these, and drawn a retaining line over the system, most of which lay in Italian territory. But as they were watching the Austrian valleys



ITALIAN STRATEGISTS AT WORK TO OUTWIT AUSTRIANS.
Staff officers with the Italian forces in the field examining a map and deciding tactical problems.



GENERAL COUNT PORRO.

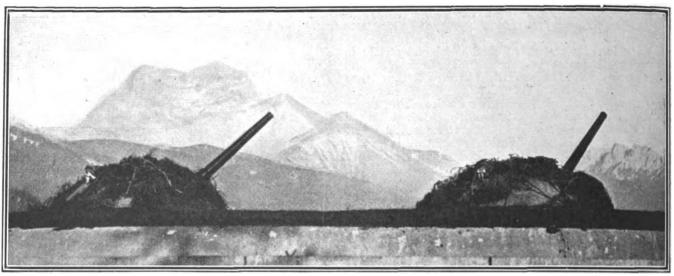
Sub-Chief of General Staff of the Italian Army, who represented Italy at the Allies' War Councils.

eastward, while the infantry of the line hauled up big guns to dominate Western Trentino, a force of Tyrolean mountaineers, in mid-July, 1915, came over the glaciers by a new track, and penetrated a few miles into Italian territory. At the well-known Garibaldi Hut, belonging to the Italian Alpine Club, there was a battle just beneath the Adamello, and the Tyrolese were thrown back. They retained some peaks from which the Garibaldi Hut was afterwards shelled, but the intended threat of an invasive movement towards Lombardy was reduced to the shadow of a little Alpine skirmish.

Just north of the ice-capped Alps of the Adamello group was the upper part of the lovely Giudicaria Valley, that runs by the fruitful lands of Lake Garda. The Italian troops seized here one of the northern passes by a surprise

attack and worked forward towards the forts defending Riva and Arco. All the country south of the Ledro Valley was readedly work by force artillery actions

gradually won by fierce artillery actions amid the mountains and densely wooded slopes, the duels between the Austrian forts and the mobile Italian batteries being followed by infantry attacks. A striking victory, which had decisive consequence, was the attack on Pregasina, by the edge of Lake Garda, which was undertaken in bad weather in the second week in October, 1915. On the opposite side of the lovely waters the Italians had won Monte Altissimo early in the campaign. They now demonstrated against the town of Riva from this height, and drew the enemy's fire, while across the lake, in difficult mountain country, the western attacking force reached the enemy's entrenchments and cut the wires at Pregasina. Then, screened by a dense fog, the Italian troops charged and took the hill, and though the Riva guns massed their fire on the victors, and poured asphyxiating shells on them, the Italians took the town, and swept through it and conquered the northern hills dominating the Ledro Valley. Every day the force worked furiously forward, shattering



ITALIAN PIECES, WHICH LORD KITCHENER PRAISED, SILHOUETTED AGAINST SNOW-CAPPED PEAKS

Italian heavy artillery in position on the Alpine front. These huge, black muzzles, pointing up from the brushwood-covered earthworks, provide a strange contrast to the splendour of the snow-clad mountains against which they are silhouetted. "The achievements of the Italian artillery

have been truly remarkable, and the manner in which heavy pieces have been hauled into almost inaccessible positions on lofty mountain peaks, and in spite of great difficulties, evokes universal admiration," declared Lord Kitchener in the House of Lords on September 15th, 1915.

hill forts with its guns, till at the end of October all the western side of Lake Garda, close to Riva, was the redeemed territory of the race that had peopled it.

A similar movement of advance went on at the same time along the eastern lands of Lake Garda and down the Lagarina Valley. As October closed, both forces on either side of the lake were pressing on Riva and battering its fortified heights and bombarding the defences of Rovereto, which barred the road to Trento. All this may appear informative, but unexciting to most of our readers. would not be stirred, as by fine music, to learn that the village of Bezzecca, in the Ledro Valley, was captured on October 22nd, 1915. But to the Italian, Bezzecca, which Garibaldi had stormed in 1866, was a place of sacred memories, and all the orange groves, citron, myrtle, and pomegranate trees along Lake Garda were hallowed by the struggles of the great Liberator and his red-shirted

The joy of wresting this storied paradise from the ancient oppressors was felt by every Italian soldier. For months the men sang at their work, and this work of theirs was tremendous. An infantry charge was the rare, romantic thing in the war. Even an artillery duel was a holiday. The daily prose of the campaign was merely navvy work of a long, violent kind. Anything with any resemblance to a road along which a gun could be hauled was dominated by the enemy's forts. New roads had to be made up and down mountains. Round the site of the future road a line of infantry, with machine-guns and field and mountain guns, kept off the Austrians, while most of the Italian force was labouring at levelling the rock, blowing it to bits, shovelling the fragments aside, and making a surface along which 6 and 12 in. howitzers could be moved.

In some places the largest siege-guns were pulled to the tops of mountains by human force. Indeed, one steel monster

was to be seen dangling over a precipice, Incredible where it was pulled up by ropes. The engineering feats Austrians, it is said, tried to do the same thing; but after getting a 12 in. Skoda

gun half-way up a mountain they had to let it down again. Their engineers had not arranged the roping properly, or chosen the best scene of operations. Probably not since the Pyramids were built have human hands successfully tugged at such gigantic weights as the hardy peasantry of Italy, Sardinia, and Sicily lifted at need a mile above sea-level. The small guns were raised two miles above the sea by means of ropes, and by the same primitive method large stores of shells and provisions were hoisted above the clouds into the region of everlasting snow. Fuel was hauled up, and tools and dynamite for making caves in which to live in Eskimo fashion, when the valleys far below

were still sweltering in almost semi-tropical heat. This work went on in the Dolomite maze, north-west of the Lake Garda region. There, on the western front of the Trentino and the Tyrol, the Italian forces were thrusting against a series of vital points, along the Trento, Bozen, and Innsbruck railway line.

Trento was approached from the south by way of Riva, but the main advance against this historic town, with its cathedral, marble palaces and castles, rising in romantic beauty by the Adige River, was made along the Sugana Valley. The Italians had advanced very rapidly down this famous valley, till in a few weeks they were east of Roncogno, and barely twelve miles from Trento. But the forts of Cantangel and the mobile siege-

guns brought up the railway then checked Austrian outrage the advance, and the Austrian gunners distinguished themselves by a diabolical

near Roncogno

act of cruelty. They shelled the alarmed Italian population of the village beyond Roncogno, when the people-old men, women, and children—tried to flee from the zone of death between the two forces and went westward towards the army of liberation.

The Bozen section of railway was menaced by the more northerly thrust along the Cordevole Valley and the connecting swoop from the Cortina region, the first striking incidents of which we have already described. When General Dankl was strongly reinforced from the Serbian and Russian fronts, the Austrians made a very gallant and adventurous attempt to outflank the advanced Italian position. A considerable force of Tyrolean mountaineers climbed over the enormous masses of Mount Tofana, and on a great line of bastion crags, rising two miles above sealevel, there was a long, fierce struggle between large detachments of Alpine troops. It was a more important affair than the battle on the Adamello glaciers, and for some months the conflict went on at this extraordinary altitude. But the Italian Alpini proved themselves the better fighters, and by their powers of endurance, as well as by their skill in shooting, learned in chamois hunting, they cleared the larger part of the Tofana range, threw the enemy back towards Bruneck, and built a line of blockhouses to stall off any other surprise attack.

In these little forts men had somehow to live in winter, when even on the lower passes there was a depth of ten to twelve yards of snow. It was also in this region of mountain warfare, where the Italians were curving round their enemy by the new Dolomite road, that a most remarkable example of engineering warfare was seen. One of the grandsons of Garibaldi was colonel of a regiment which was trying to connect from the south with the forces advancing along the Dolomite road. One of the chief obstacles

Digitized by Google

between the two tips of the Italian crescent was the rocky mass of the Col di Lana. This mountain, only 8,000 feet high, commanded a superb view. For this reason it had been a favourite climb with summer tourists, and for the same reason it was an object of desire to the fire-control officers of the contending armies. In their first dash the Italians had reached the western slopes; but the Austrian engineers redeemed the faults of their commander on the Dolomite front by making the Col di Lana a perfect work of military art. A system of trenches and galleries began on the eastern slopes and wound in a spiral up the height. so that the Italians at the western foot were completely mastered. If they tried to charge up the steep, an avalanche of rock would fall on them. This avalanching method of repelling an Alpine attack had been elaborated by both sides. Masses of rock were drilled, filled with sticks of dynamite and other explosives, with an electric detonator which an observation officer could fire when he thought the enemy were clustered sufficiently thickly on the lower slopes.

The hand-bomb and the heavy high-explosive shell were useless against the Austrian Col di Lana works, which had

Tunnelling extraordinary been excavated deeply in the solid rock. But Colonel Garibaldi met this marvellous system of defence with a still more mar-

vellous system of attack. He engaged corps of skilled engineers, who had helped to drill and blast the great railway tunnels on the Swiss frontier. Under his direction, they tunnelled right through the mountain into the Austrian galleries low down on the reverse slope where a hostile battery was working. When the fumes of the last blast of dynamite cleared away, a strong force of bombers leaped from the jagged hole at the end of the tunnel, cleared all the neighbouring galleries, and then, constantly fed by

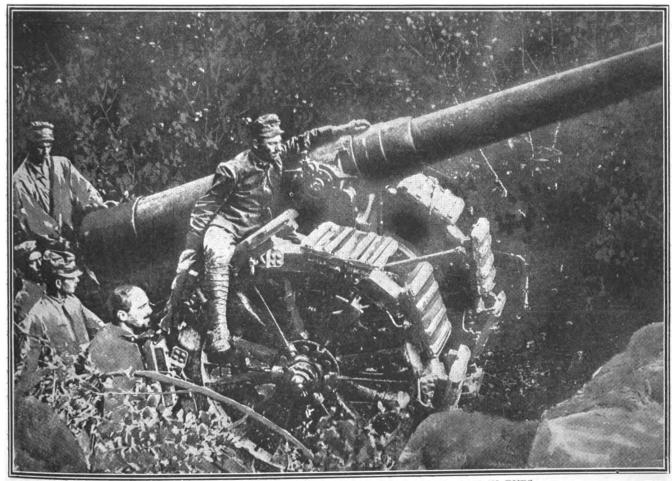
supports, smashed their way up and down the mountain.

But towards the middle of September all this extraordinary Alpine warfare began to slacken, for winter was setting in, and veins of snow appeared on the bare rocks and broadened into white fields. Preparations for an Arctic campaign had been going on for months. Wire railways ran from the valley and caves on the summits:

strong lowland torrents, that were known not to freeze, were harnessed to dynamos, and the currents were wired up to the heights to warm, light, and do cooking

**Both sides** fighting Nature

for the fur-clad garrisons of the peaks. Great stores of ordinary fuel and food were also hoisted up to the detachments likely to be cut off for weeks, or even for months, by the snow. Then in many places it was possible to arrange for snow-clearers to fight each fall of snow, and keep a practicable white ravine running to the mountain-top, by which frequent reliefs could be sent to the troops that lived and watched above the clouds. As on most mountains used for observation purposes the snow fell thickest on or near the summit, the garrisons had to work incessantly to prevent themselves from being buried in snowfalls; for no matter how well the direction of the prevailing winds was studied, practically nothing was known about the way in which the snow would drift and pile up. So the men had to be prepared to dig themselves out every morning, and maintain a sort of crater to the great snowfield. By November, 1915, the Alpine troops on both sides were more busy fighting against the terrible powers of Nature in her sombre moods than in trying to steal little tactical positions from each other. And so a halt was called until the spring.



AN ITALIAN SIEGE-HOWITZER WELL SCREENED FROM ENEMY EYES. Napoleon's scaling of the Alps falls into insignificance when compared with the gigantic task undertaken by Italy when she used her monster ordnance against the Austrians on the "roof" of Europe. By successfully



## GERMAN INHUMANITY TO BRITISH PRISONERS.

By F. A. McKenzie.

The Hardships of Our Captured Soldiers—Brutal Tyranny of the German Guards—The American Ambassador Intervenes—The Official White Books Relating to Prisoners of War—Inhuman Treatment of Major Vandeleur—The Slaughter of Our Wounded—A Pleasing Contrast—A Canadian's Terrible Experience—British Herded in Cattle Trucks—German Women's Insults to British Prisoners—Pitiless German Red Cross Nurses—The Dum-Dum Bullet Charge—Wholesale Arrests of British Civilians in Germany—British Civilians Housed in Horse-Boxes and Stable-Lofts—"Coffee" of Burnt Barley—Horseflesh as Food for Interned British Civilians—Prisoner Organisation at Ruhleben—Clothing and Food Sent from England Stolen by the German Guards—Protest by Men of the West Kent Regiment at Sennelager—British Soldiers' Retorts to German Taunts—Daring Escapes from German Bondage—The Case of Private Lonsdale—An Outrageous Retrial—German Protests on Behalf of Lonsdale—Trench as a Hospital for Wounded Prisoners—Fruits of the American Ambassador's Representations—Prison Camps "Window-dressed" for Neutral Visitors.

B

the winter of 1915 there were over 32,000 British prisoners of war in Germany, confined in one hundred and eighty camps and one hundred hospitals. Some had been interned since August, 1914, sailors of merchantmen at German ports

immediately before the declaration of war, and prisoners from Mons, wounded and left, or stragglers cut off during the great retreat. The British prisoners were scattered among French, Belgian, and Russian captives. A large number were kept in big prison camps such as Münster, Sennelager, Schneidemühl, Giessen, and Ohrdruf. Some of these camps held as many as 40,000 men. A

few of the badly wounded were in semiprivate hospitals in Belgium, where they received much kindness from the people. Others were imprisoned all over the German Empire; in the suburbs of cities like Berlin and Hamburg, in the Harz Mountains, in Schleswig-Holstein, in Bavaria, in Mecklen-

burg, and in Westphalia.

Great indignation was aroused in Britain by the ill-usage of our captured soldiers. The Hague Convention, which Germany, in common with other great Powers, signed, laid down certain regulations for the protection of prisoners of war. These stipulated that prisoners must be humanely treated, that all their personal belongings, except arms, horses, and military papers, are to remain their property, and that their rations, quarters, and clothing are to be on the same footing as troops of the Government which captures them. These requirealthough strictly ments,

observed by Great Britain in her provision for German prisoners, were ignored by Germany. Numbers of our men, particularly in the early days of the war, were stripped of their overcoats and coats, and were left in their shirt-sleeves to face the rigours of a North German winter.

In some cases, as in Schneidemühl Camp, even their boots were taken away and sabots substituted for them. Their housing accommodation was exceedingly bad. Men were left out in the fields for weeks during the wet autumn weather, sheltering themselves as best they could in holes in the ground. Later, they were transferred to circus tents, leaking hadly and forming no protection against wet

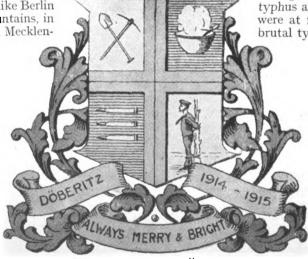
leaking badly, and forming no protection against wet weather. From these they were again transferred in due course to hastily erected wooden huts. In some camps the sanitary arrangements were so inadequate that typhus and cholera broke out. The guards were at first allowed to exercise the most brutal tyranny unchecked. The food was

often bad, and was of a kind which even the hungriest of our men found it difficult to eat.

In the beginning little complaint was made from England about the treatment of the men.

It was feared that criticism and publicity might make the lot of the prisoners harder. Private representations were employed, and the good services of the American Ambassador at Berlin were enlisted to visit and inspect the camps and to help to relieve the most pressing wants of the prisoners.

Early in April, 1915, the British public were aroused by the issue of an official White



THE "ARMS" OF DÖBERITZ.

Mock coat of arms designed by British prisoner at Döberitz.

The "canting heraldry" explains itself, but the brave motto only emphasises the bitterness of the joke.

Book containing correspondence with the United States Ambassador in London, relating to the treatment of prisoners of war and interned civilians. The facts given here left no doubt that our men were being treated, in many cases, with brutal cruelty, and that often the British prisoners were picked out for special severity. This was shown, for example, by the evidence of a Russian medical officer who had returned to Petrograd after three weeks' detention as a prisoner of war at Dan Hollam bei Stralsund. He said:

The British officers are not as well treated as the They are placed among the less-educated t they cannot talk. The Russians are Russian officers. Russians, so that they cannot talk. The Russians are allowed to buy books, but the British

A Russian doctor's officers are not allowed to do so. The German lieutenant in charge is openly insulting and hostile towards the British

prisoners." One British officer complained of his conduct, and expressed the opinion that the German officer was acting on his own feelings and that the German authorities were not aware of his conduct towards the British officers, but the doctor did not entirely share that view.

Sir Edward Grey sent to the American Ambassador in London a report by Major Vandeleur, of the 1st Cameronians, who escaped from Crefeld where he had been interned, on the treatment meted out to him and to other British officers and men after capture. Major Vandeleur was taken prisoner on October 13th, 1914, by the Prussian Guard Cavalry, close to La Bassée.

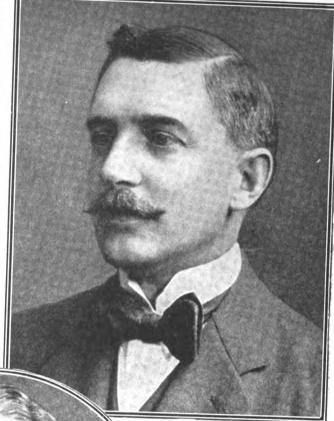
troops who captured him treated him well, giving him food and shelter, although they did not treat the other prisoners well. They evidently hoped to get some information out of the officer, for they bombarded him with numberless inquiries concerning the state of the British Army and our munitions.

Major Vandeleur, though wounded, was left on view at Douai, in the square in front of the Town Hall, where he was exposed to much abuse from the people. He and his fellow-prisoners were treated with the grossest inhumanity on their way to Germany to be interned. The officer declared that in his opinion this treatment was deliberately arranged for by superior authority "with the object of making us as miserable and despicable objects as possible." British officers British officers were treated quite differ-

ently from the French.

When they reached Crefeld the treatment improved. Major Vandeleur's complaints were supported by similar accounts from various other camps. They were afterwards amply confirmed by the stories told by helpless wounded exchanged prisoners of war on their return to this country.

There can be little doubt from the first-hand accounts of men present on the battlefield that in a number of cases the German troops in the first line of advance slaughtered some of our wounded men who were lying helpless on the field. They seemed to be worked up to a point where they were scarcely responsible for their actions, consumed with a blind lust for slaughter. It is only just to the



CAPT. A. STANLEY WILSON, M.P.,
Member for the Holderness Division of Yorkshire, who was taken prisoner, in December, 1915, from a Greek ship on the way to Messina, by an Austrian submarine commander.

Germans to say that this was not true in every case. Some prisoners have re-ported that they received great kindness from German Red Cross men. Thus one prisoner, telling of his capture in the opening attack at Mons on August 23rd, 1914, described how every man in his line was killed or wounded before the Germans pushed up:

One of the Red Cross men came up to me. Bullets were flying all around, but he took no notice of them. He spoke to me in English, and bandaged up my wound. He daged up my wound. He discovered that my other foot

MAJOK C. B. VANDELEUK,
1st Cameronians, who escaped, in December, 1914, from a prisoners'
camp at Crefeld, and was honoured by an audience with King George,
to whom he related details of his harrowing experience after his capture
near La Bassée in the previous October. was wounded, and bandaged it also. He gave me a drink, two packets of cigarettes and some matches, covered my feet with straw, told me to lie still so that the bullets would not get me again, and moved on to other cases. He was all right, that Red Cross man was.

Lafavette

MAJOR C. B. VANDELEUR,

This, however, was an exception. In too many cases the wounded were treated with the greatest brutality. One of the most appalling stories was told by a Canadian prisoner who was in the deadly angle outside Ypres, where the Canadians held back the German advance in April, 1915. For two days his company held their ground amid the most terrible conditions. Then they were obliged to retire. They carried all the wounded back with them to



a house somewhat in the rear, laid them in a cellar there, and after this was done set out to fight their way back through the Germans who were surrounding them. The man who told the story was one of the wounded left in the cellar. He related how:

We lost sight of our own men, and then the Germans rushed up to the house. There were two wounded officers among us who knew a little German. They called out that we were all wounded men under the Red Cross. The Germans took no notice. They poked their rifle barrels through the windows, and fired again and poked their rifle barrels through the windows, and fired again and again among us. I expected every moment that a bomb would be hurled in the cellar, finishing us all at once. After a time the firing ceased and we were ordered out. We had to crawl or drag ourselves out, or help one another as best we could. Broken legs and wounded bodies didn't matter. We had to get out.

They made us parade in a row. There were no ambulances or stretchers. Some of them angrily asked us what Canadians were doing taking part in this war. They ordered us to make our way to the dressing station some distance back. They threatened us with the points of their bayonets, and forced us on. My leg was broken and badly splintered. Two other men who could walk let me put my arms round their necks, and I travelled in this fashion, dragging myself along while I hung on to them. It seemed to me that I went for a mile or a mile and a half.

You ask me how I did it? I do not know. You can do many things that seem impossible, when you have to. At last I reached a stage when nothing could force me another yard. The Germans then let me and some others, who were as bad as I was, lie on the grass, while they went on with the remainder, and said they would send an ambulance for us.

an ambulance for us.

We were desperately thirsty. The only drink I had had for some time was water gathered from the pools formed by the rain, pools where the bodies of our dead lay, and where all the filth of

My mouth was like ashes. Water! A young fellow lying by me was in much the same state as myself.

Two German soldiers were passing. He called to them, "Water, water!" One of the Germans turned on him with a snarl on his face. "Wasser!" he said. "Wasser, Ja!" and he deliberately unslung his rifle, pointed it full at the young fellow, and shot him between the eyes.

fellow, and shot him between the eyes.

Here is the story of another prisoner:

I fought with our regiment at Mons and at two other places, and then in the Aisne district I was captured. I felt sure that we would be shot, as they called us "English swine," poked us with bayonets, kicked us, and nearly knocked one poor fellow's eye out with the butt-end of a rifle. One or two other English prisoners joined us later on who had been knocked about badly with bottles.

We were put in a church one night, where one mad German devil struck one of our chaps in the mouth with his fist, lossening his teeth and cutting his mouth badly. Our chap looked like hitting him back, when the German brought his revolver out and several other Germans their bayonets. Of course, they knew we were unarmed, the cowards!

were unarmed, the cowards!

I may say that when we captured some Germans we gave them the last bite of food we had in our haversacks, also tobacco, and treated them well. I could swear before God that this is truth.

These stories, and others equally shocking, carry conviction by the dispassionateness with which they are told, and they were amply substantiated as time went on and new evidence became available.



BOXING MATCH IN THE CIVILIAN INTERNMENT CAMP AT RUHLEBEN.

At the outset, and throughout the first winter, conditions at Ruhleben were shocking, and many of the captives died of want and hardship. The of mental and physical recreation they made their captivity just endurable.



BREAKFAST IN THE OPEN AIR AT TELTOW.

Breakfast in most of the German prison camps consisted only of "coffee" made from burnt barley, without milk or sugar, and any bread the man might have saved from the previous day. The bread was made from rye and potatoes, without any wheat or flour, and was heavy and unpalatable.

The prisoners, often wounded and unwounded alike, were herded in cattle trucks and sent back to Germany in the trucks that it was scarcely possible for a man to move. There they were left, often for four days, moving slowly down the country, without food, save sometimes a few loaves of bread thrown in among them, without water,

Unspeakable

enduring untold torments. People would come up to them at places, laugh at them, brutality— threaten them by pointing weapons at them, and call them every abusive name, of which "English swine" was the most common. Even

prisoners so badly wounded that they could only be carried back, were exposed to unspeakable brutality. One man who was wounded in his back, his side, and his leg, described how after capture he was taken to a building in Courtrai, turned by the Germans into a temporary hospital. The German doctors did little or nothing for the British prisoners, and as they lay there helpless and wounded, the Germans turned on them and abused them, calling them "swine," "pig-dogs," and the like. The wounded were ordered next day to walk down two or three long streets to the station. This was beyond the power of one of the wounded men, so a fellow-prisoner in the Royal Engineer corried him. Engineers carried him.

I shall not soon forget that walk. All the way along there were German soldiers who had come out to see the captured Englishmen.

German soldiers who had come out to see the captured Englishmen. They laughed at us, pointed at us, jeered at us, mocked us. Some French women tried to reach us to give us water, fruit, or chocolate. They pushed them back. One Frenchwoman did succeed in reaching me. They let her hand the fruit to me, and then a German soldier gave my hand a smart knock upwards, scattering it all! Then they hustled the woman back again.

You must remember that we were the first British prisoners that these men had seen. We were put in cattle trucks, and remained in them for three days, for most of the time without food or drink, on our way to Münster, our destination. At Brussels they handed us some bread, but it was so bad we could not eat it, much as we needed something. When we reached Germany people came into our trucks to bait us. Men would come with revolvers and hold them to our heads as we lay helpless, threatening to shoot

us. Women were worse than men. They knew a few words of English abuse, at any rate, and hurled them at us. One of their tricks was to snap their umbrellas smartly open in our faces.

Another prisoner in Burg, Saxony, wrote:

At intervals throughout the journey we would stop at a station of some importance, where ladies (save the mark!) of the German or some importance, where ladies (save the mark!) of the German Red Cross Society were in attendance with coffee, sandwiches, and cigars. Not for the prisoners. Do not think it! No, for the escort—whose capacity, by the way, was fairly astounding. Indeed, so far were these same ladies from understanding charity in our acceptance of the word, that at one station—Magdeburg—Davy heard one of them demand a solemn assurance that the coffee was not for the "Englanders," before she would hand a cup of the stimulating beverage to one of the escort. It is gratifying to be able to record that the instant the "ministering angel's" back was turned, the escort, whose heart though Teutonic was not made of granite, handed the coffee to his thirsty charges.

When the first British prisoners of war reached German towns they were the victims of tremendous outbursts of indignation. Great crowds waited for them. They were put as it were on exhibition for a time, paraded round the streets of the cities in carts, and left under guard at the railway-stations. The vilest stories had been spread abroad concerning them. The favourite one was that our men gouged out the eyes of German wounded. This tale was believed by great numbers of German people. The picks that are to be found in many British pocketknives-picks really meant for extracting

stones from horses' hoofs-were exhibited as the British weapons specially devised misrepresentations for taking out German eyes. We were said to use dum-dum bullets. The ordinary revolver bullet

was declared by the Germans to be a dum-dum, and there is every reason to believe that a number of British prisoners, more particularly cavalry officers, were shot in cold blood after capture by the Germans for having these bullets on them. The thing was a brutal outrage, contrary to every law of war and law of humanity. But the Germans stuck

Besides the military prisoners, the Germans had from the first numbers of British civilians. There were many



INDIAN PRISONERS AT LILLE. They are interested in a photographic negative of an engagement in which they took part.

British people in Germany at the time of the outbreak of war, people who had settled in Germany for business, holiday-makers, tourists, people visiting health resorts, and the like. There were many Germans in England. The Germans in England were given time to leave. Our Government gave them every facility for leaving, and went so far as to permit large numbers of able-bodied men of military age, Army reservists, to get back to Germany from other lands in vessels that came under the supervision of our Fleet. The Germans acted very differently. British vessels in German ports were prevented from leaving some days before the declaration of war. British people, except under special circumstances, were not allowed to leave Germany after war was declared.

Numbers of Englishmen, such as sailors at ports, and visitors, were arrested as spies before the war broke out, and were detained, often without trial. Others were kept under semi-arrest. Even old men in the sixties and Internment of

all Britons go back until some weeks after the outbreak of war; and on November 6th, all Britons of whatever position were arrested throughout Germany and placed in internment camps.

The main camp for civilian prisoners was at Ruhlebena race-course outside Berlin. The racing stables were turned into prisons. The buildings were strong and substantial, remarkably good for racing stables. On the ground, floor, there were a resulting the stables are large leaves. ground floor there were a number of loose-boxes, each intended for one horse. These loose-boxes were made into compartments for four, five, or more men. Those who were housed in the loose-boxes were comparatively well off.

Above the loose-boxes were lofts about two hundred and sixty feet long and thirty feet wide, with their roofs sloping downwards on either side, from eight feet in the centre to three feet high at the ends. The lofts were badly lit and poorly ventilated. Two hundred men were placed in each one of these; there they had to live and sleep. A description of life in these lofts, given by one returned prisoner, speaks for itself:

These lofts, built for storing hay, have undergone no alteration for the accommodation of men. The ventilators are four in number, two on each side; they measure each one foot square exactly, and let the rain in when come. let the rain in when open. There are also four very small windows on the sides; but as they are only twenty inches off the ground, it is impossible to open them during the night as men have to sleep close against them. The wall in which these windows are set being only three feet high, it will be seen at once that the loft is permanently dark, and that the inmates live in perpetual gloom, being unable to read either by day or by night. In the evening, after sundown, the lofts are illuminated by a half-dozen eight candle-power electric lights. This light is sufficient to move about by, but not

for any other purpose.

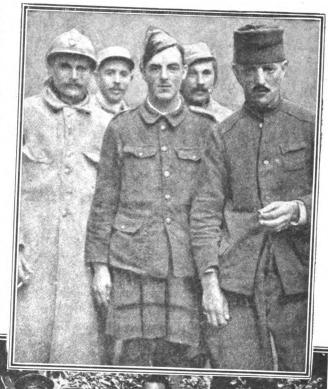
Hot water is only in the pipes from five to eight o'clock, and for the rest of the time the cold is intense. On some days it is impossible to keep warm. The camp contains many rich people—quite a large number of Eton and Harrow men, and several well-known professional musicians being interned—and money has been offered to cover, and much more than cover, any necessary answer is returned to these requests. Such treatment gives the impression that a deliberate attempt is being made to punish these civilians for—well, for not being German.

For sleeping accommodation, it has been said in the papers that each man has a bed to himself. Yes, in the loose-boxes which the American Consul sees, but the large majority in the lofts have nothing each man has a bed to himself. Yes, in the loose-boxes which the American Consul sees, but the large majority in the lofts have nothing of the kind. Here the prisoners have a cement floor. Each evening at eight o'clock they have to place two wooden blocks six for apart. Each block is four inches thick, three inches high, and five feet six inches long, resembling the joists beneath the floor of a house. On these two supports a flat piece of wood resembling a table top is placed. This forms the bed, and on it, placed crosswise, are four sacks stuffed with hay, straw, and shavings. On these four sacks five persons have to sleep. This bed is only the size of an ordinary double bed in England. A thin cotton blanket is given to everybody, but the wealthy interned members have purchased ordinary double bed in England. A thin cotton blanket is given to everybody, but the wealthy interned members have purchased good woollen blankets for everybody, in consequence of which these cotton ones have been taken away by the guards.

The food supplied to the men was the same as the food supplied in most of the German prison camps. Here and there there were slight improvements or variations according to the locality, but the general ration was as follows:

Early in the morning the men were served with a cup of coffee, the "coffee" being made from burnt barley (not coffee beans), without milk or sugar. During the morning the day's bread was issued, bread made from rye

and potatoes, dark, heavy, and unpalatable, and without any wheat or flour in it. The quantity of this bread was so inadequate that, as a prisoner said, one man could eat three men's daily portion at one meal. The noonday meal consisted of a dish of soup—bean soup, cabbage soup, barley soup—with a little piece of meat, usually horseflesh, sometimes preserved pork. The amount of meat varied with the camp. In some camps every man obtained varied with the camp. In some camps every man obtained





CHEERFUL MEMBERS OF THE ALLIES' "COLONY" AT CREFELD PRISON CAMP.

From left to right, standing: Lieut. the Hon. R. Bingham, R.W.F.; Lieut. C. Norman, 9th Lancers; Lieut. R. E. Hindson, R.W.F.; Lieut. R. Bernier, French Artillery; Lieut. Firth, 18th Hussars; Capt. J. G. Smyth Osborne, R.W.F.; Lieut. E. Wodehouse, R.W.F.; Lieut. G. Michnevitch, Russian Sapper; Lieut. H. C. H. Poole, R.W.F.; Capt. G. Edwards, Sherwood Foresters; Sec.-Lieut. McNeile, Coldstream

Guards; Capt. Jump, Royal Dragoons; Sec.-Lieut. C. Reynard, K.R.R.C.; Lieut. G. M. Evans, R.W.F.; Capt. Barrow, D.C.L.I. Sitting: Lieut. D. M. Barchard, R.W.F.; Lieut. C. G. H. Peppe, R.W.F.; Capt. C. C. Schneider, Sherwood Foresters. The first photograph on the page shows a group of French and British soldiers, including a Turco captured by the Germans. This was taken in Lille.

a small piece of meat; in others the prisoners cheered when any man in their party had a piece in his soup, so few came their way. The great complaint about the soup was usually its bad quality. It took even hungry British prisoners a long time to be able to tackle the meat. The soup was sometimes putrid, sometimes full of maggots, and sometimes spoiled in preparation. In the evening the men would get either some coffee or similar dishes of soup. The conditions about food were at their worst at the beginning. Some improvement was made later on, but it was generally true that the prisoner who had nothing but his German rations to maintain life with lived in a state of semi-starvation.

At Ruhleben the prisoners had at first to form up in each barracks every morning, and march along to the kitchens for their coffee, and wait there often in the

rain or snow, maybe for two or three hours, before their turn came. Some were employed during the day with different work—in erecting sheds or barbed-wire fences, or cleaning out the camp. The guards placed over them had apparently unlimited powers of punishment, which they used very freely.

This great community of Englishmen of almost every class and almost every circumstance gradually began to evolve its own organisation. The lot of the sick in the camp was very pitiful, so one prisoner, a London coal merchant, asked the authorities to let him have a house that he could turn into a hospital. He organised this



SCARRED BY WAR AND RACKED BY PRISON.

Hapless Canadians who were incarcerated at a prisoners' camp in Germany
Each face bore signs of privation, and the motley condition of their attire
is a further indictment of German inhumanity.



TWO DISTINGUISHED CAPTIVES.

Lieut.-Col. Bolton and the Earl of Stair, both of the Scots Guards, who were among the British prisoners detained at Crefeld, where the shameful conditions of confinement were eventually improved.

hospital with the utmost efficiency, and the comfort provided there undoubtedly saved the life of many a man. Another Englishman, Mr. Powell, was made captain of the camp, and after a time he took the entire charge of the food and of the camp organisation into his own hands, of course under the supreme control of the German authorities. He appointed different committees: a finance department, for the control of all camp funds and the distribution of money for relief; a sanitation department; an education department, for the control of schools, classes, lectures, etc.; a recreation department; for sports, concerts, debates, and theatricals; a health department, for care of the sick, the prevention of illness, and the distri-

the prevention of illness, and the distribution of relief in kind; a watch and works department, maintaining order in camp; a kitchen department, for all questions Organisation of prison life

concerning prisoners' food; and a canteen department, for the control of the camp canteens. Educational classes were opened. The prisoners started a monthly magazine. The poorer men tried to earn a little from the more prosperous by opening barbers' shops, by offering to clean shoes, by cobbling and the like.

The race-course at Ruhleben became the centre of a

The race-course at Ruhleben became the centre of a great community. But what a community! Here were hundreds of men taken without warning, most of them, from their wives and families—professional men with their careers broken; financiers, all of whose schemes had stopped; working men whose wives and families had to do as best they could while the husbands were in prison. There



UNDER THE "EAGLE'S" WING.

Two wounded British soldiers as they appeared in their hospital garb at Döberitz. Both had their hair cropped short after the manner of German militarism.

was the mechanic who had been sent over to finish a job in Germany just before the outbreak of war; the photographer who had visited Germany to complete his collection, and who had narrowly escaped being shot as a spy; the man who had visited Germany for treatment for his eyes or his heart; the master who had just started his summer holiday with a long-anticipated tour down the Rhine; the son of English parents who had lived in Germany so long that he had come himself to look like a German—all were there.

While in some of the hospitals wounded prisoners were badly treated, this was not universally true. Many of the German doctors in the civilian hospitals to which wounded men were sent behaved with humanity and decency, and treated them as they would have done their own people.

In the numerous military camps the discipline was stricter and more severe than in the civilian camp at Ruhleben. In some of them the conditions during the winter of 1914-15 were so bad that it would be difficult to paint them too darkly. Numbers of men had very little clothing, owing to their own having been stolen by their German captors. Their whereabouts were not immediately known to their friends in England, and consequently they had to rely almost wholly upon the German prison rations. Even when parcels began to be sent from England they were often stolen, or a large part of their contents taken away before they reached the man they were meant for. The discipline was brutal. The guards had

canes, which they freely used on the backs of the prisoners. Men were tied tightly to trees as a punishment, and left there for hours at a time, day after day. The guards would hit men over the head with their rifles, threaten them with their bayonets, and if they made the least show of resistance, would have them punished for attempted mutiny.

Thus at Schneidemühl on one occasion the British prisoners were deprived of breakfast because they were told there was not enough food in the camp for them. It was a rule at that time in this, as in many other camps, that when food was short the French and Russians were fed

first and the British went without. One of the British prisoners lingered around the cook-house. The German guard told him to hurry on, and struck him on the head

Injustice and cruelty

with a rifle. The man raised his hands to his head to protect himself as the German was bringing down his rifle again. The guard thereupon reported the man for resisting authority. The British prisoners were paraded, and the man was brought out, tied over a barrel, and severely beaten with sticks by two of the guards. When this was finished he was tied to a tree. One English prisoner standing in the ranks whispered a word of protest to the man standing next to him. Thereupon one of the guards came up and struck him across the face with the stick he held in his hand.

We have only one blanket to keep us warm (one private in the Somerset Light Infantry wrote), and it has been freezing and snowing for a week. I had to buy a pair of boots out of the money you sent me and a guernsey to keep me warm, as when I was



MEN WHO "DID THEIR BIT."

Three more British captives posing for their photographs outside a German prison ward. All were wounded in the war.

wounded they took my boots from me and made me walk barefoot, and kicked us into the goods shed at Mons Station. But you must not worry about me, as I can stick all their games, and I am quite as hard as they are.

At first in many camps the British prisoners were not required to work, but very soon they were put to regular tasks around the camps, and then to all manner of labour in the mines, on farms, and elsewhere. The German authorities even tried to induce them to engage on munition work, or work for the manufacture of war material for the

German Army. This they refused to do.

The result of the hardships and bad food, and the constant injustice, was to produce a feeling of deep resentment amongst the great masses of the British prisoners. On one occasion, at Sennelager, one of the large military camps, the prisoners belonging to the West Kent Regiment met together and demanded that they should see the commandant of the camp. "You're starving us," their spokesman told him. "If you want to kill us, why don't you line us up against the wall and shoot us? We're soldiers, and should understand that. But if you think

west Kents'
proud protest

you will break our hearts by starvation,
then you can't do it!" The commandant was not unnaturally very surprised
to get this message from prisoners, and

to get this message from prisoners, and all he could say was "Dismiss the men." This story is told by a British doctor confined at the time at Sennelager, who afterwards returned.

"They can't down us," became a motto of the men. At Döberitz, where many of the Naval Brigade from Antwerp were interned, they made themselves a camp coat of arms with the motto "Always merry and bright." At Quedlinburg, which was supposed to be a camp for wounded

men, the gaolers one day, to annoy the prisoners, called them up at 2.40 in the morning, and marched them out road-making. They were kept on without any food until five in the evening, and then were marched back. To show that they did not care, the prisoners began to sing "Tipperary" as they neared their camp. This camp boasted one prisoner, a man nicknamed "Little Tich." On one occasion the prisoners were paraded and kept standing in the sun for three hours as a punish-

ment. After about an hour, however, "Little Tich" sat down on the ground, despite orders. The guards at once seized "ay defiance" gay defiance

him, and he was taken before the commandant and asked to explain. "I got so sick of looking at you blessed Germans for an hour that I could not stand any more of it." He was sentenced to five days of bread and water in the cells for impertinence. His offence was, of course, inexcusable from a military point of view, but he was a hero to his comrades from that day.

A German doctor went up to a British prisoner. "Well, what do you think of us now?" he asked, in English. "Damned little," the man replied. "The more I see you Germans the less I like you." He was punished for insubordination. The British prisoners could not be "downed." Their gaolers could starve them, take most of their clothes away, man-handle them, try, by false stories, torturing rumour, and cooked news to make them believe that the British cause was finished, and still Tommy would retain his cheerfulness and present a smiling face. The Germans could not understand this. They declared that: "From first to last the British had been the most discontented and insubordinate of all their prisoners, and had caused continuous trouble by their rebellious spirit."



A REPRESENTATIVE GROUP OF THE BRITISH PRISONERS AT DÖBERITZ WHO COULD NOT BE "DOWNED."



In whatever conditions Englishmen may be placed, they will find means to play cricket. The civilians interned at Ruhleben were no exception,

sentries around, and with machine-guns mounted at either end, so that the whole place could be swept by fire in case of a riot. The punishment for attempts at escape varied. In some cases prisoners were shot, in others—probably partly depending on the commandant of the camp-they were let off with a comparatively light sentence. In December, 1914, one man, being taken to Aix-la-Chapelle, overcame his guard, seized his revolver, and fled. He was arrested later and shot. It was reported from Rotterdam in May, 1915, that ten British prisoners managed to escape when the backs of their guard were turned, while waiting

on the platform at a railway-station at Penalty for Louvain. They were recaptured shortly attempted escape afterwards, and were promptly shot on the station approach. Some British prisoners at Osnabrück attempted to escape by excavating

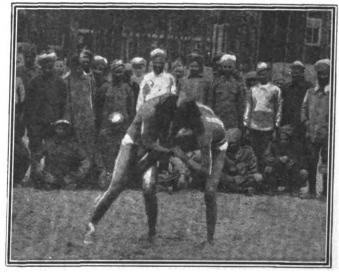
a tunnel under a wire entanglement around the camp.

They were, however, caught.

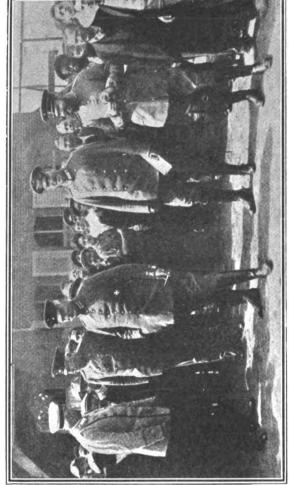
Gilbert H. Millar, a signalman of the R.N.V.R., an old Rugbeian, who was taken prisoner in the retreat from Antwerp in October, 1914, escaped from Döberitz, and walked to Warnemünde, a distance of one hundred and eighty miles. He travelled at night, avoiding the towns, and slept in the woods during the day. Reaching the coast, he walked several miles along the seashore, and at last secured a rowing-boat and set off, with some difficulty, for a point on the Danish coast twenty two miles distant. He had to elude five German guard-ships that were cruising off the coast. When half-way across he was picked up by a Danish train ferry. He was kept for some time in quarantine in Denmark, and then was allowed to return to England. Two men, Sergeant Burley and Private Haworth, who were captured near Ypres in October, 1914, escaped from a prison camp in Westphalia. Six British soldiers reached Holland in May after a thrilling experience. They were cut off from their regiment in the retreat from Mons. They crept through the German lines, and for nine months they were fugitives in France and Belgium, living in the fields and dug-outs. Then a farmer gave them civilian

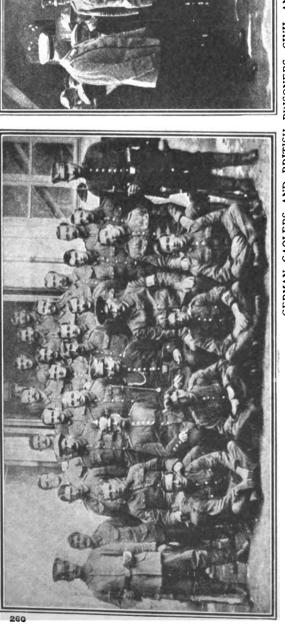
RETURNING TO BARRACKS.

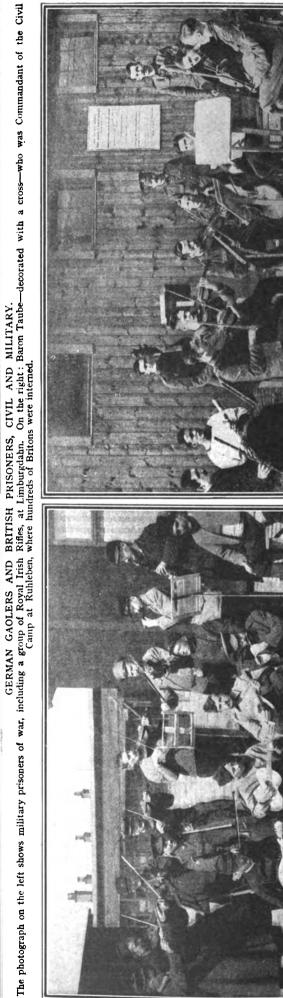
The racing stables at Ruhleben were converted into prison barracks. They were strong buildings, with loose-boxes on the ground floor and large lofts above. As stables they were excellent, but they were quite unfit for human habitation, especially the lofts, which were hardly ventilated and almost dark.



INDIAN PRISONERS WRESTLING AT WÜNSDORF. Our Indian soldiers who had the ill-luck to become prisoners of war accepted everything with Oriental philosophy. Wrestling was a favourite form of recreation among them.









"IN SWEET MUSIC IS SUCH ART: KILLING CARE AND GRIEF OF HEART."

The language of music is common to all nations. At Quedlinburg an orchestra was formed of British, French, Belgians, and Russians, and provided solace for many weary hours. Döberitz, too, had its orchestra of British captives, and they are seen on the right at practice in their rude music-room.

clothes. They worked for some time for him, under the noses of the Germans, before they contrived to cross the

Other prisoners who did not easily submit to the harsh discipline of the German guards were in some cases tried before courts-martial, and given savage sentences. John Bramwell, an old railway hand, was sentenced in the spring of 1915 to three years and three months' imprisonment for disrespect towards his superior in the presence of assembled troops and refusal to obey orders on two occasions. Two men at Sennelager, Eric Jennings and occasions. Two men at Sennelager, Eric Jennings and William Watts, were condemned, the one to eighteen months' and the other to fifteen months' imprisonment, for insubordination. The most severe case, however, was that of Private William Lonsdale, a former Leeds tramway conductor, who was sentenced to death, and whose sentence was subsequently revised to fifteen years' penal servitude.

On the morning of November 9th, 1914, several British prisoners at Döberitz refused to work, saying that they were ill. One of the German guards, a Landsturm man,

aimed his revolver at an English prisoner and other soldiers drove the prisoners out of their hut with the butt-end of their rifles. Lonsdale squared up to the Landsturm man, who was making as though he would shoot one of the prisoners, struck him on the chest, and tried to hit him in the face. A German sergeant-major, who just then came upon the scene, drew his sword, and struck Lonsdale several blows on the back.

The English soldier was arrested, and was subsequently tried by court-martial, and sentenced to ten years' imprisonment. The president of the court, dissatisfied with this penalty, ordered that Lonsdale should be tried again, this time on a charge of aggravated assault. A fresh trial was held, and Lonsdale was sentenced to death. This outrageous retrial led to many protests, not only in England, but in Germany itself. Thus Dr. Edward David, the German Socialist deputy, declared: "I cannot maintain silence with regard to the death sentence passed upon the English prisoner of war at

Döberitz Camp, and I hope that the great majority of German people share my feeling."

An appeal was made to a higher court against the sentence, and it was reduced to twenty years imprisonment. And then came various trials and retrials, but in the end the sentence was fixed at fifteen years' penal servitude, and Lonsdale was sent to the fortress prison at Spandau.

Writing to his wife on one occasion, Lonsdale asked her to tell one of his soldier chums that he had better put a bullet

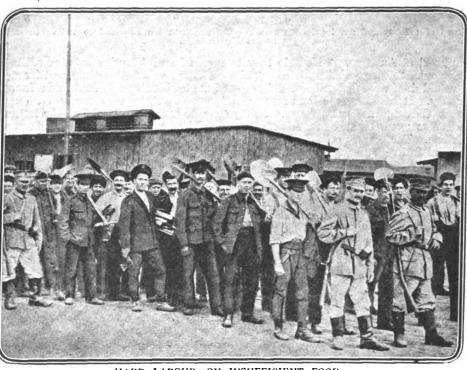
through his brain than be taken prisoner. "Death," he added, "is far preferable to what I have gone through. If my time Death better than a German prison were to go over again, I would never be a prisoner of war—I would be with my comrades on the pit hills in Flanders. They have tried several ways to kill me. Now they are trying to starve me because I am English. I only get half as much to eat as the Russian prisoners." Later on he wrote from Spandau: "My fifteen years will soon pass away; only another seven hundred and seventy Sundays. Not many. I only count the Sundays.

I have no time to trouble about the week-days-too busy working. Kiss my children for me, and never let them know that their father is such a bad man; that he is doing fifteen years for striking a blow in self-defence.

One large camp was at Schneidemühl, where there was accommodation for 40,000 prisoners of war, most of these being Russians. Life here was very hard indeed during the first winter. The place Russian prisoners at

was bitterly cold, and the accommodation Schneidemuhl

exceedingly poor. The arrangement of the camp was so bad that epidemics of typhus and of cholera broke out in the spring. At first the dead were buried in blankets. Then the Russian prisoners cut down trees, made coffins, and blacked them over. There was a hospital, a deep trench cut in the ground, where the sick men were laid out in lines on straw to recover or die, as might be. There was no nursing, save by Russian orderlies. The German doctors evdently feared to come, and left the work to some Russian prisoner doctors, who did splendidly, but who were hampered by an almost total lack of medicines. The treatment of the sick in this camp would have been



HARD LABOUR-ON INSUFFICIENT FOOD.

British prisoners were put to regular tasks around the German prison camps and to all manner of labour in the mines, on farms, and elsewhere. They refused to undertake munition work, which their gaolers actually tried to induce them to do.

unworthy of the most barbaric tribe, and about 1,600 men died from the epidemics. After this, many improvements were made in the camp. Better commandants were put in. The severity of the rules at Schneidemühl may be gathered from two regulations passed for the prisoners, one that there must be no concerted singing—that is no singing together—and the other, that games were forbidden. After a time, however, both rules were ignored, in some of

the lagers at least.

Six hundred members of the Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve and Naval Reservists were sent to the town of Döberitz, in October, 1914, to a camp formed there. And then others began to arrive, and by April the camp contained some 8,000 prisoners, 4,000 British, 3,000 Russians, and 1,000 French. These were first housed in tents, and afterwards lodged in wooden huts, each hut, about thirtythree yards long by thirteen yards wide, holding one hundred men. The camp proper was divided into four blocks, with forty barracks and ten tents. One American visitor questioned some of the British sailors, who had been

Digitized by Google



"IN DURANCE VILE." Group of military and naval prisoners at Giessen, where from ten thousand to twelve thousand prisoners were confined.

captured at Antwerp. "How do they treat you here?" he asked. "Rotten, sir," said one. "Heaven knows what I would do if my folks at home did not send me food and

money. It has saved me from starvation."
At Giessen, in Upper Hesse, from 10,000 to 12,000 prisoners were confined—Russians, French, Belgians, and British. The camp consisted of fifty barracks, with administrative buildings, and it was in many ways an improvement on some of the others. The British prisoners were, however, regarded here, as elsewhere, as the most hated

of all. Thus one correspondent of the "Giessener Anzeiger," in describing the various classes of the prisoners, after a "Beasts behind iron bars" visit to the camp, divided them as follows:

"The French, who go their way with friendliness and politeness, fare the best. The Russians are regarded with a grateful feeling of superiority. 'Thank God we are not as they.' But the English receive something of the regard which is given to wild beasts behind iron bars. There is not much goodwill in the looks which examine their conceited, smooth-shaven faces.

As a result of the work and the visits of the American Ambassador at Berlin, and his representatives, improve-

ments were made in a number of camps. The returned prisoners, coming back to England, had many stories to tell of the way the camps were "window-dressed" when visiting commissions arrived. On one occasion a body of Scandinavian investigators went around the camps. Their visits were all carefully prepared for. The British prisoners at one place were given good shirts on the morning of the arrival of the commission. Decent meals were served out to them that day, with some real meat. The camp was cleaned up, and the prisoners were given a football, and invited to show the visitors how Englishmen kept up visitors now Englishmen hep of their spirits under bad circumstances. "We all wished," said one returned prisoner, "that commissions would come and visit us once a week.' In another case prisoners were housed

in leaking tents, and bedded on straw, which became soaked from the rain that penetrated through. One day—late in the evening— they were suddenly marched out from their tents into some newly-erected huts. They were given clean shirts, were afforded opportunities to wash, and had camp beds to lie on. The next day a distinguished visitor arrived. was taken round the camp by high officials, and expressed himself as fully satisfied by what he saw. He had scarcely left the grounds before the prisoners were ordered to take their shirts off, and were marched off to their tents again. Yet, despite sub-terfuges such as these, all were agreed that the investigations as a whole did good, and in some cases a great deal of good.

One German prison camp which had a very bad reputation was at Wittenberg. A number of British

prisoners captured in the fighting around Mons were sent to this camp, and for months nothing was heard of them. No communication from them got through to England, and they received no letters. In the autumn of 1915 an they received no letters. In the autumn of 1915 an attaché of the American Embassy at Berlin, Mr. Lithgow Osborne, visited the camp, and his report was so condemnatory that Mr. Gerard, the American Minister, decided to make a personal inspection.

"My whole impression of the camp authorities at Wit-

my whole impression of the camp authorities at wittenberg was utterly unlike that which I have received in every other camp I have visited in Germany," Mr. Osborne reported. "Instead of regarding their charges as honourable prisoners of war, it appeared

to me the men were regarded as criminals, whom a régime of fear alone would keep in obedience. All evidence of kindly and human feeling between the authorities and the prisoners was lacking, and in no other camp have I found signs of fear on the part of the prisoners that what they might say to me would result in suffering for them afterwards.

Mr. Osborne went on to tell how, when he inquired among the prisoners who were drawn up in line, he was informed that practically no overcoats had been given



WITH THE INDIANS IN GERMANY. Mohammedan Indian prisoners about to prepare dinner in accordance with the rites of their religion in the camp at Wünsdorf, near Zossen, in Brandenburg.

out by the authorities, and that ten overcoats which men had had sent from England had been taken from

their owners and given to other British prisoners who were going to working camps.

"From many of the men I heard complaints," Mr. Osborne added, "that one of the watchmen had a large and fierce dog which he took inside the barracks, and which had attacked and torn the clothes of several of the prisoners. I suggested to the commandant that it was unnecessary to bring the dog inside the compound, particularly as I had never heard of it being done in other camps. He replied that he considered it necessary and that this could not be changed, as the prisoners were in the habit of remaining up late at night, keeping their lights burning, playing cards, etc. I had also heard several complaints regarding one of the German soldiers in the bathing-house, who had struck with his closed fist several of the prisoners, including one man with a crippled right arm, with whom I had spoken, for being slow in getting dressed. The commandant, however, did not wish to make any investigation in regard to the offender.

Reports from Shortly after the issue of this report exchanged prisoners a number of hopelessly wounded prisoners in Wittenberg camp were exchanged and sent back to England. Their accounts of the conditions that had existed there supplemented the American report, and surprised even those familiar with the treatment of British prisoners in Germany. When taken to Wittenberg in the autumn of 1914 they were subjected to the harshest treatment. The guards over them seemed to delight to inflict pain. Men told how the guards were accompanied in their rounds by police dogs, great brutes which they would occasionally set on the prisoners for their own amusement. They were armed not only with swords but with substantial lengths of solid rubber piping, which they used to beat men with. The food in the camp was shocking. The place was excessively dirty. There was scarcely any means of keeping clean, and for months the men had no soap. No parcels arrived and no communications went out. Ill-clothed, ill-fed, and man-handled on any excuse, it seemed as though the aim of the authori-



Four British wounded prisoners who were sent back to England, being unfit for further service. One has a model of a boat made in his leisure time in prison.



"TAKE AND BREAK US: WE ARE YOURS, ENGLAND, MY OWN!"-Henley. The great jubilation of the seventy-three British prisoners who were sent back to England after many months of privation and suffering in Germany is only faintly detected in these photographs. Nearly all of them arrived in a state of indescribable wretchedness, and some were still suffering from wounds a year old. The three photographs on this page were taken after they had been equipped in clean hospital dress.

A POLYGLOT PRISON PARTY Group of allied prisoners, among whom were Scottish, French, Belgian, and Russian soldiers.



SEA-POWER IN FETTERS Prisoner members of the Royal Naval Division, whose con-finement at Döberitz must have proved even more irk-some than that of their soldier compatriots

from his treatment, walked into another compound; the sentry there deliberately shot him. Floggings in the camp were so frequent that they almost passed unnoticed, save by their unhappy victims.

At the beginning of 1915 the filthy conditions of the camp brought on an epidemic of typhus. The bullying guards then showed

what cowards they were. They fled from the inside

of the camp, leaving the prisoners to themselves to do as best they could. The German sentries, with loaded rifles, guarded the outer lines. Food was sent over for the prisoners through a chute. It was left to them to fight the epidemic without

medicines or any proper means of nursing or doctoring.
Six medical officers of the British R.A.M.C., prisoners in Germany, hearing of the deplorable condition of the camp, volunteered to go there to doctor the sick. Five of them were attacked with typhus almost as soon as they arrived, and three of these died. The sixth of the party did his best, and a splendid best it was. He asked for volunteers from among the other prisoners of war to nurse the sick. Volunteers gladly came, and nearly all of these volunteers at once took the disease, many of them dying. In the end the typhus was stamped out, but not before large numbers of men, Russian, French, and British, had succumbed; the number of British deaths being officially reported at fifty-nine.

When Mr. Gerard visited the camp, great improvements had been made as compared with the winter, but even then

things were sufficiently bad, for the American Ambassador's horror at what he saw was evident in every line of his report. The result of Mr. Gerard's visit was to bring still further modifications in the harsh treatment of the men, but it would be a mistake to suppose that even the improvements effected were all that were necessary. The condition of the Wittenberg men when they arrived in England in their ragged garments sufficiently told their tale.

In December, 1915, a volume of correspondence between the Foreign Office and the American Ambassador concerning the treatment of British prisoners of war in Germany was published. One part of this correspondence which attracted special attention was a reply by the German military authorities to the report by Major C. B. Vandeleur, concerning his brutal treatment when a prisoner of war, which is referred to earlier in this chapter.

The German military authorities replied that Major Vandeleur's statements were partly untrue and in part immeasurably exaggerated. The Germans admitted that there was bitterness of feeling among the German troops against the British. "They respected the French on the whole as honourable and decent opponents, whereas the British mercenaries had in their eyes adopted a cunning method of warfare from the very beginning, and when taken prisoners bore themselves with an insolent and provocative mien.'

Some other extracts from this reply show

Lying German

reply

even better than the reports of the British prisoners them-selves the hatred entertained for them by their captors:

"It is, with a few exceptions, untrue that British orderlies were afflicted with lice. Only three of them have suffered from scabies. The truth is, however, that the British private soldiers, like the Russians, but in distinction from the French and Belgians, always arrive

in the internment camps filthy and lousy in the highest degree, and have to be freed from vermin with the greatest

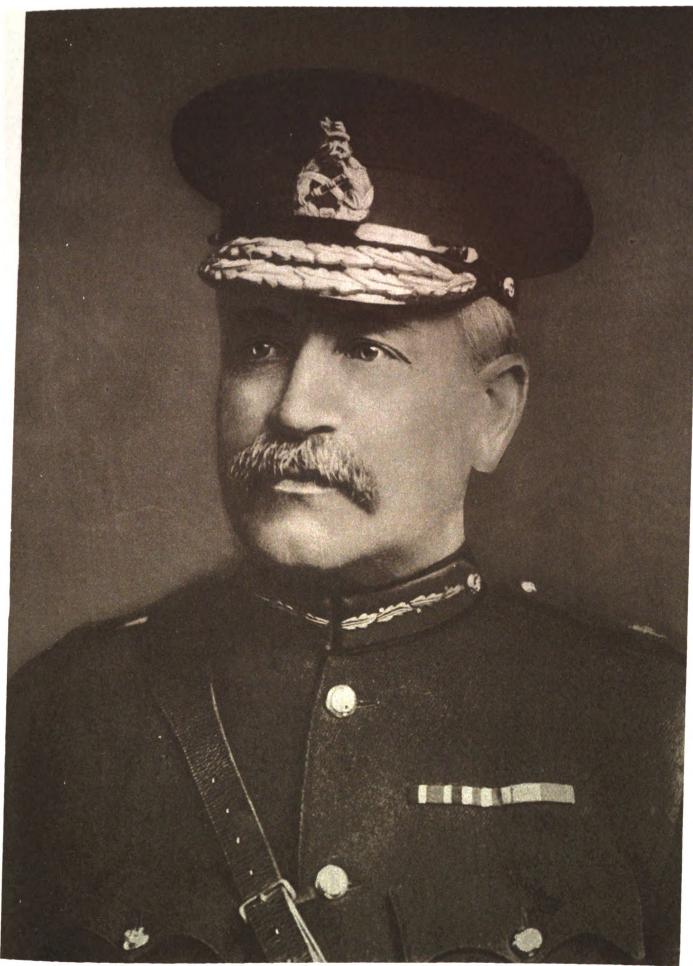
trouble. The British rank and file are sufficiently fed.

None of them have been in a 'half-starved condition.'

"If it is a fact that British soldiers were especially employed and the support of the s

ployed on disagreeable work, the cause thereof is explained by the following facts: Prisoners of war are put to particular work in accordance with their particular training and ability. Most French and Russian soldiers have learned a handicraft or something of the sort, belonging as they do-as the result of universal military serviceto some one or other civilian trade, and can therefore be

Digitized by Google



Gen. Sir Charles C. Monro, K.C.B., British Commander=in=Chief in the Mediterranean.

HH 265



Before the battle: French soldiers resting en route for the zone of operations near Strumnitza.



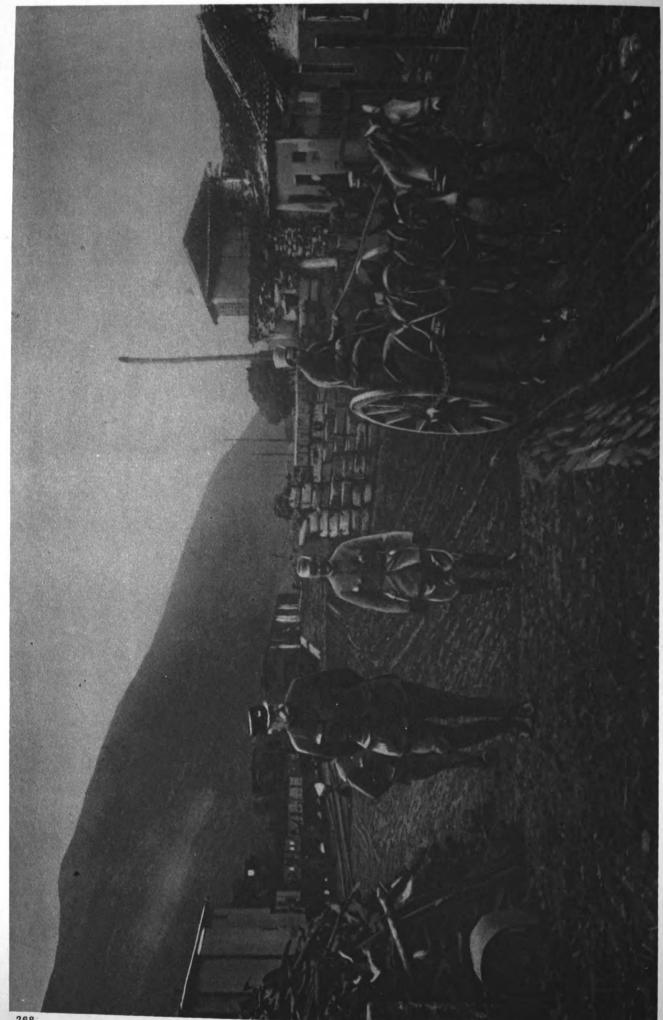
Imperial Britain in the field of classic combat: Mule=drawn artillery leaving Salonika for the hills



French infantry moving to the front from Salonika to the accompaniment of a Greek band.



La Belle Alliance in the Near East: British soldiers watching their French comrades marching by



General Sarrail, who commanded the French Army in the Balkans, going up to the firing front from Strumnitza.

PRISONERS' PICK-A-BACK.

Two lonely but well-groomed British captives in Germany. Private A. R. Boulter, Coldstream Guards, and Private G. Slythe, Northumberland Fusiliers, at Döberitz.

employed accordingly; in their work they are mostly handy, willing, and industrious. The soldiers of the British standing paid Army, on the contrary, have usually learnt nothing, and are fit for no particular employ outside the care of horses and farm work; they are besides frequently lazy, arrogant, and obstinate. Even those of them who know a little German pretend not to.

"British officer prisoners of war seem to find it disagreeable to be put together with Russian officers. The German Government see no reason whatever why any separation should be made among captured enemy officers in their quarters. Since England does not blush to use coloured troops of all races against Germany in the present war, British officers must not be surprised if they are brought into close contact in prison with their comrades-in-arms of other nationalities."

Organised aid for When the lot of the prisoners in Germany became fully known, a number of organisations sprang up throughout Britain to aid them. Regiments raised funds for their men. Some counties took the work in hand for men born

men. Some counties took the work in hand for men born in their counties, and many philanthropic bodies did the same. The Canadian prisoners were cared for by a special branch of the Canadian Red Cross, and men from the Antipodes by their own special bodies. These various organisations were grouped together with a central body, the Prisoners of War Help Committee, with offices in Southampton Street, Strand, London, and did admirable and very practical work. The aim of many of the societies was to send a parcel of food to each of the prisoners weekly, the

parcels consisting mainly of meat, biscuits, tea, and other solid foods. The British prisoners complained that they missed white bread as much as anything. Efforts were made to send white bread from England, but in consequence of the time taken for parcels to reach Germany—from two to three weeks—most of the bread sent from here arrived in a mouldy state. An international organisation in Berne then arranged for the regular despatch of bread from Switzerland to the prison camps, when paid for from England.

Bad as was the lot of our prisoners, there was universal agreement that the lot of the Russian prisoners of war was infinitely worse. The hundreds of thousands of these crowded into Germany were treated in many camps with the most incredible harshness. They were given a minimum of rations, and were reduced to such a state from sheer hunger that men would risk their lives for a mouthful of bread. Starved, beaten, ill-housed, their condition was an indelible disgrace to Germany. It must be remembered that in the conscript Russian Army there were not only peasants, but men of culture and education. British prisoners returned from Germany, describing what they

saw, had terrible tales to tell of men they knew, able to speak several languages, men of refined tastes and good training, treated worse than wild beasts.

So vastly different was the treatment meted out to German prisoners of war and civilians interned in England, that popular indignation was aroused, for which it cannot be said there was not justification. Officers lived in conditions of luxury, which many of them had not known at home, and liberty to wander out of bounds was the only thing of which they were deprived. There was no question of "reprisals" being exacted; it would have been alien to the national temper to commit iniquity in return for

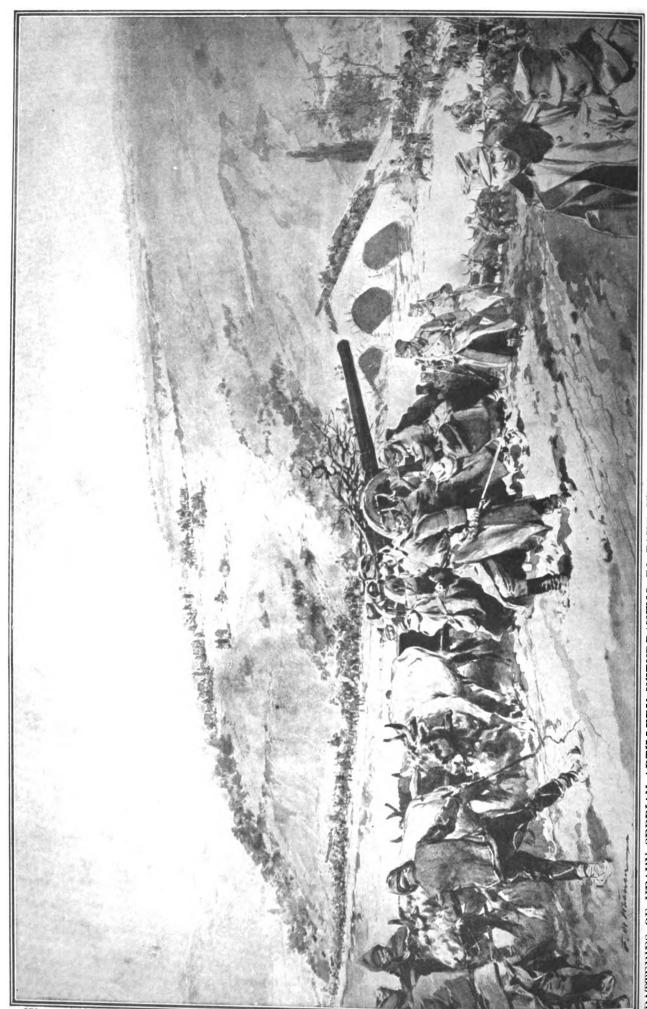


BRITAIN'S DAY AT RUHLEBEN.
An anxious queue of interned civilians lined up at Ruhleben to receive parcels from home. The conditions of life at this camp, even for civilians, were such that a supply of food from England was very welcome, not to say an absolute necessity.

iniquity; but equal treatment of captives on both sides was another matter, and many people feared that the leniency of the British method was only misunderstood by the German prisoners as being due to some anxiety to conciliate them in case the war should take a course unfavourable to the Allies; and further it was pointed out that the leniency was in the nature of a political blunder, since it tended to perpetuate the spirit of the Germans which had been a considerable factor in the deliberate provoking of the war. But no change was made, and the prisoners in this country continued to live in conditions for which "humane" was far too mild a term.

The difference in condition between the German prisoners of war confined in Great Britain and the British prisoners of

war confined in Germany was never so strikingly shown as when the hopelessly wounded on either side were exchanged. The German prisoners from here, arriving in Holland, were well fed, well clothed, in whole, good garments, with sound boots on their feet, with complete suits, good underwear, and good caps. The British prisoners coming back from Germany into Holland were haggard wrecks, often clothed like scarecrows, with odd garments, rags of every kind, often with little or no underwear, men whose appearance excited pity in all who saw them. They were a vivid illustration of what the much-boasted "Kultur" of Germany means, and how it works out on helpless objects of German tyranny.



BATTERIES OF HEAVY SERBIAN ARTILLERY WITHDRAWING TO TAKE UP POSITIONS IN ANOTHER PART OF THE LINE DURING A RETREAT.

During a retreat—such as the great Kussian retirement in the summer of 1915 and the Serbian with.

This spirited drawing shows the Serbians hauling their heavy guns out of the dauger zone by bullocks, while lighter weapons on the heights are engaging the advancing enemy.

Digitized by Google



## SERBIA'S GLORIOUS RESISTANCE AND THE FALL OF NISH.

## By Robert Machray.

Fourth Invasion of Serbia begins by Germans Shelling Semendria—How Germany Prepared—Von Mackensen in Chief Command, with Von Gallwitz the German and Von Kövess the Austrian under him—Strength of the Austro-Germans and Serbians—Menace from Bulgaria—Serbia's Desire to Forestall It—Landing of the Allies at Salonika—King Peter's Pathetic Order of the Day—Serbia's Great Spirit—First Austro-German Efforts to Cross the Frontier Rivers Repulsed—Splendid Defence of Belgrade—Enemy Across the Danube—Belgrade Evacuated amid Terrible Scenes—Progress of the Invaders—Old Marshal Mishitch Wins a Battle—Von Mackensen's Advance up the Morava—Semendria and Pojarevatz Captured—Bulgaria Attacks Serbia without a Declaration of War—Serbian Forces on the East—Bulgarians Three to One—Heroic Serbian Resistance to Overwhelming Odds—Action by the Allies—Great Britain Offers Cyprus to Greece to Intervene, but Greece Declines—French Troops Moving up' the Vardar—Desperate Effort of Serbians to Check Bulgarians—Bulgarians' Rapid Advance—The Railway Cut—Uskub Taken—Austro-Germans Pressing Slowly South—Serbian Policy of a Fighting Retreat—Exodus of Civil Population—Fall of Kragujevatz—A Victory for Gallant Shumadians—Bulgarians Take Frontier Towns on North-East—Navigation of Danube Open to Enemy—Magnificent Defence of the Serbian Passes—Allies Bombard Dedeagach and Varna—Pasich Appeals to Great Britain—Depressing Statement in British Parliament—France to the Rescue—Further Enemy Progress—Fall of Nish.

LTHOUGH the portentous bearing of the fact was not generally perceived, German

shells bursting on September 21st, 1915, over Semendria, the

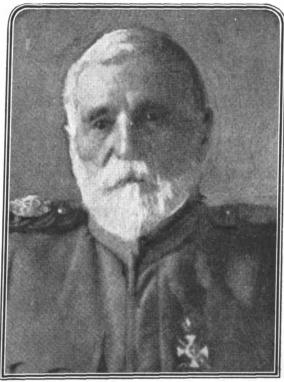
fortified town on the southern shore of the Danube which the Serbians call Smederivo, announced the beginning of the fourth invasion of Serbia, and marked the opening of a new and extremely important phase of the whole colossal world-conflict. Up to that date neither German guns nor German soldiers had taken part in the attacks on the little Slav kingdom, the first, second, and third invasions having been exclusively the work of Austria-Hungary—with disastrous consequences, as events had proved, to the Dual Monarchy. In the view of the German leaders the time had come for Germany herself to make a decisive appearance on the scene, and the rain of projectiles on Semendria, on that last day of the third week of September, was the earliest definite indication of what was in their mind.

With her usual foresightedness

conceal them until she was ready to strike and circumstances promised favourable developments. She thought

the situation now was propitious. She felt safe in the western theatre of the war, because she believed that the French and the British were held by her strong defensive lines. The strong defensive lines. The success of her great offensive in the eastern theatre had, she imagined, reduced the Russians to impotence and removed all danger in that quarter. Nor was she apprehensive with respect to the Dardanelles, for there her allies, the Turks, led by officers of her own, kept stationary the forces of the Entente. The Serbian field lay open and inviting; and Germany, having made certain of the active co-operation of Bulgaria and the non-intervention of Greece (as was related in Chapter LXXXIV.), commenced operations on a large scale.

Under cover of her tremendous campaign against Russia, Germany gradually, and in such a manner as to avoid attention, had railed considerable bodies of troops to Southern Hungary during the summer. Rumours were current later that she was assembling a formidable army north of the Danube with a view to the conquest of Serbia,



GENERAL PUTNIK.

in military affairs, Germany had laid her plans well in advance, and she took good care to



ROUGH WEATHER FOR ROUGH DAYS OF WAR.

In the early days of the allied occupation of Salonika heavy gales were prevalent, and these to some extent hampered military operations. This photograph shows the condition of the quay in December, 1915, with a transport waggon moving forward to the base.

but she effected the concentration of her forces, and those of the Austrians which were to be combined with her own, in that area practically in secret. The general in chief command was Marshal von Mackensen, who had shown conspicuous ability in Galicia and Poland, and one of the ways in which Germany hid her designs was to cause his name to be published in her official communiqués of actions on the Russian front weeks after his energies had been transferred to the new theatre. The Serbians themselves had got wind of the projected offensive, and as far back as July had begged the Entente Powers to despatch sufficient men to their aid, but for one reason or another their appeal then was made in vain. Help, when it was sent, arrived too late, and in any case was inadequate.

When the storm broke in full fury over the north of Serbia, and the dispositions of the hostile forces were disclosed, it was found that the Austro-Germans under

French soldiers from the base at Mudros, fully equipped for the Balkan front, waiting on the quay at Salonika for the train to convey them to the firing-line. The steel helmet was used almost universally in the French Army.

Mackensen were divided into two armies in close contact with each other. One army was commanded by General von Gallwitz, who had distinguished himself by forcing the passage of the Narew two months before, and its composition was wholly German. The other army was led by General von Kövess von Kövesshaza, an Austrian soldier, and was partly Austrian and partly German, the former predominating. Gallwitz covered the line of the Danube from Orsova on the east to a point opposite Semendria on the same river, where he joined up with Kövess, whose troops thence extended along the Save and part of the Drina. Farther up the Drina an Austrian army was in position near Vishegrad.

The three armies consisted of at least twenty divisions, and their total strength was well above 300,000 effectives. Ten divisions were German, mostly war-hardened men withdrawn from the other fronts. Re-

membering their previous bitter experiences at the hands of the Serbians, the Strength of the invaders Austrians put some of their best infantry

into the field. Mackensen's famous drive through Galicia had been triumphant owing to the overwhelming power of his artillery, and he now had upwards of 2,000 guns, many of them pieces of large calibre. His intention was to beat down and smother the Serbian resistance by sheer weight of metal, and then to advance in force. His first great task was the crossing of the rivers, and he relied on his artillery for its accomplishment.

Ever since their superb repulse of the Austrians in December, 1914, the Serbians had anticipated a renewal of the attack on them, and Marshal Putnik and his Staff had taken all the measures that were possible in the circumstances to meet it. At the start of the fourth invasion their Army mustered some 310,000 combatants, the vast majority of whom were well seasoned in war, and they had guns and munitions proportionate to the size of their forces, except that they were short of heavy artillery such as the enemy possessed. If they had been called on to face only the Austro-Germans and Austro-German artillery they might, and probably would, have repeated the



A STUDY IN PHYSICAL ENERGY.

Setbian convoy passing through a snow-covered mountain pass. Laboriously the big guns were dragged along these bleak, muddy byways, principally by the aid of bullocks, supplemented by the physical strength of Serbian soldiers.

splendid victories of the Jadar, Matchkokanen, and the Suvobor Ridges, which respectively were the turning points of the other invasions. The force opposed to them was not too great in numbers, and if it had heavier guns this advantage was in a measure offset by the strong, natural detensive positions held by the Serbians. The entry of Bulgaria into the conflict made all the difference.

It was with the object of resisting assault on the north, the north-east, and the west that the Army of Serbia had been disposed and the Serbian fortifications constructed and organised; the south-east—the Macedonian frontier and some distance north of it—was but little protected, and hence was easily vulnerable by any strong force. In other words, the position of Serbia, as a whole, was such that it could be turned, in military phrase, from the south-east. Unless this fact be grasped, it would be impossible to understand Serbia's desperate situation when Bulgaria joined the Austro-Germans in attacking her, or appreciate fully her glorious resistance of their combined efforts.

At the outset of the fourth invasion the line south of the Save and the Danube was held by three Serbian armies, comprising seven and a half divisions, or about 150,000 men—nearly half of the whole military

Disposition of Serbia's armies men—nearly half of the whole military strength of Serbia. On the west the First Serbian Army, of three divisions, which was commanded by the veteran Marshal

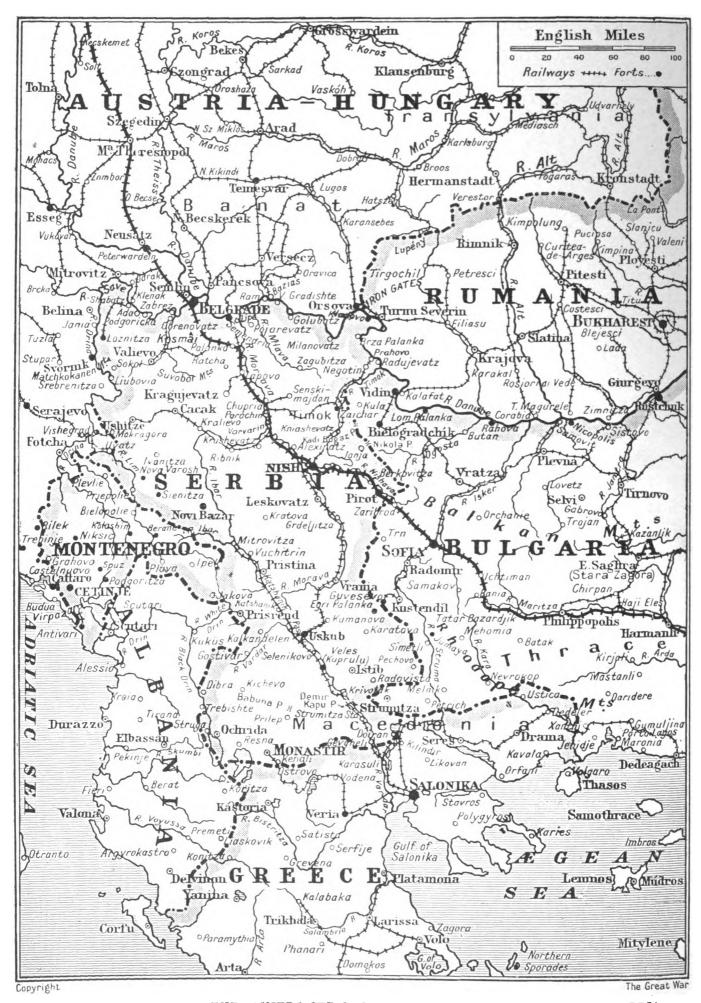
Mishitch, occupied the angle between the Save and the Drina, with its headquarters at Shabatz. Next, eastward, came a force of a division and a half, under the leadership of General Zivkovitch, which was styled the Army for the Defence of Belgrade, a title that sufficiently indicated where it was placed. Farther east, and stretching towards the frontier of Rumania, lay the Third Serbian Army, of three divisions, with General Jourishitch at its head; it was based on Pojarevatz, and the all-important Valley of the Morava was its special charge. To oppose the Austrians concentrated in the vicinity of Vishegrad, Serbia had the "Army of Ushitze," of less than two divisions, under General Goikovitch, and the town of Ushitze was its centre. It was upon these four armies, with some portion of the



DURING THE GREAT SERBIAN RETREAT.
Unique dug-out used by Serbian snipers—a sentry keeping guard while some Serbian officers were finding the range for artillery.

"Army of the Timok," a force which was based on Zaichar, on the eastern frontier, some twenty miles from Vidin, in Bulgaria, operating along the Danube towards Orsova, that the Austro-German invaders fell, the odds in favour of the latter being more than three to two. The rest of the Serbian Army was deployed on the east facing Bulgaria, and had it not been for the menace from that country Serbia could have met her Germanic foes on fairly equal terms. As it was, Serbia felt compelled to keep more than 100,000 men to watch Bulgaria, with respect to whose aggressive intentions she had no illusions. It was something more than a coincidence when, at midnight of the day on which the Germans began shelling Semendria, King Ferdinand ordered the mobilisation of the Bulgarian Army.

For the ensuing fortnight the Austro-Germans were unable to show any real progress. They made several attempts at crossing the rivers—seven, it was reported, over the Danube alone—but every one was repulsed with



MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE AUSTRO-GERMAN AND BULGARIAN INVASION OF SERBIA.

heavy loss; in an effort to gain the southern bank near Semendria a whole battalion was destroyed. Towards the end of September their aeroplanes flew daily over Serbia, reconnoitring the Serbian positions, and dropping bombs on Pojarevatz, Kragujevatz, and other places of importance; one of their aeroplanes sailed round Nish, and then went on into Bulgaria. Meanwhile, Bulgarian troops were assembling on the frontier, and Serbia, knowing full well the desperate nature of the situation with which she would shortly be confronted, sought to forestall it, at any rate in part, by obtaining the consent of her Allies to attack the Bulgarians while their mobilisation was incomplete, but received an answer that led her to believe that the action contemplated was regarded with disfavour.

In all probability this was Serbia's last chance gone. When some weeks later this was understood, the subject was brought up in the House of Commons, and Lord Robert

strategy

Cecil, speaking on behalf of Sir Edward Diplomacy fetters Grey, admitted that the Serbian Government had expressed the opinion that the

right military policy was to attack Bulgaria before her mobilisation was completed, but stated that the British Foreign Secretary had replied that all the political and diplomatic arguments were against this proceeding, and he felt unable to say whether strategic considerations should override them. Serbia, at all events, was under the impression that permission had been refused, and governed herself accordingly, with results that were most disastrous to herself, and extremely embarrassing, to say the least, to the Entente Powers.

On September 23rd, Greece, then still under the guiding hand of M. Venizelos, mobilised her Army as a precautionary measure in face of Bulgaria and in support of Serbia. At the request of the great Hellenic Minister, France and Britain agreed to send to Salonika 150,000 troops to make up for an equal number which, by the terms of the Serbo-Greek treaty for mutual defence against Bulgaria, Serbia would have provided had she been able to do so. This force began landing on October 5th, but on that very day Venizelos was compelled to resign because King Constantine disapproved of his pro-Entente policy. It was arranged, however, that under "protest" from Greece the troops of the Entente should continue to disembark with a view to assisting Serbia. The hopes of many Serbians ran high on hearing this, and Nish and several other Serbian towns made themselves gay with flags in honour of the coming of the Allies.

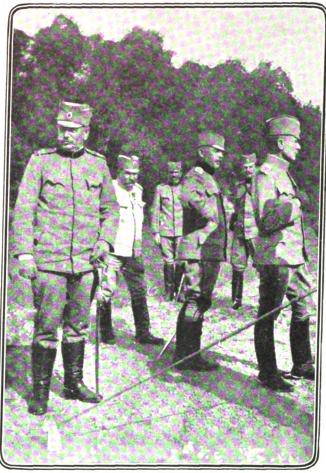
But the transference to Salonika of a powerful Franco-British army was an operation which required a considerable length of time, and this was precisely the intractable factor in the situation, with the Austro-Germans shelling the trenches along the frontier rivers of Serbia and the Bulgarians massing on her eastern boundary. The more

intelligent Serbians must have known how matters stood, but the whole Serbia solid on resistance Serbian people, from the sovereign to the poorest peasant, had irrevocably resolved that, whether help came or not, they would resist to the uttermost. The determination of the nation found "It was eloquent voice in the words of M. Pasich: better to die in beauty than live in shame.

King Peter, on October 2nd, issued an Order of the Day which gave utterance to the feelings of himself and his subjects. He was well aware, he said, that every Serbian was ready to die for his country. As for himself, he lamented that old age prevented him from fighting in the ranks or leading his armies in this struggle for life or death. "I am an old man," he went on pathetically, "who can send only his blessing to his soldiers, to the people, to the women and children. . . If this fresh struggle should end in defeat, it will be a glorious death for us all."

It was in this spirit of absolute devotion that the Serbians defended their country against overwhelming odds, and the fight they made was one of the finest in all history.

For three days and nights prior to October 6th the Austro-Germans, seeking to reduce the Serbian entrenchments to dust, heavily bombarded the whole Serbian line on the Danube, the Save, and the Drina, and under cover of their fire made further and more persistent attempts to get across these rivers, but the Serbians drove them back at all points. Fighting raged most fiercely at Ram, Dubrovitza, and Semendria, on the Danube; in and about Ciganlia, the "Island of the Gipsies," at Obrenovatz, Shabatz, and Jarak, on the Save; and at Badovintse, on the Drina. Von Gallwitz directed a tremendous bombardment upon Ram and Semendria, the two fortress towns which guarded the approaches to the Morava Valley. On October 5th hundreds of shells were poured on this sector from the largest guns and howitzers of the enemy, yet the brave soldiers of Jourishitch, whose army was



"ARISTOCRATS OF THE BALKANS."

General Nisitch and his personal Staff, among whom will be seen, on the extreme left, Colonel Vositch. This snapshot was taken by a British nurse with the Serbian Red Cross.

composed for the most part of men of the second Serbian ban, held their ground, in spite of the fact that their own artillery was outclassed.

But Belgrade itself, which the Austrians burned to recapture after their ignominious expulsion from it ten months before, was the scene of the hottest of the struggle. Here the Army of the Defence of Belgrade, assisted by the Naval Missions of France, Britain, and Russia—in all, about five or six hundred men, with naval guns, who had been in the city for some months protecting the river front-offered the most strenuous resistance to the attacking forces of Von Kövess. For one whole day the British Naval Mission, which was commanded by Rear-Admiral Troubridge, swept with their guns the great lake-like expanse, formed by the junction of the Save and the Danube, on the northern side of the Serbian capital, and



MONTENEGRIN SHARPSHOOTERS ADVANCING TO COMBAT THE AUSTRIANS IN THE MOUNTAINS.

Following their emblem of liberty, this body of King Nicholas's soldiers were on their way to the zone of operations. Civilian members of this Spartan race, among whom are a sprinkling of women and children, watched the fighters pass in silent admiration.

sunk every enemy craft, including two gunboats, that came in sight. On the afternoon of October 5th the Austro-Germans greatly augmented their fire in volume and destructiveness, employing several of the famous Austrian 16 in. howitzers. They were not content to shell the fortress of Belgrade and the neighbouring positions at Zamar, as was perfectly legitimate, but they threw large quantities of projectiles, including inflammatory bombs, upon the hospitals and on the open town, in which dwelt the civilian population.

It was a characteristic exhibition of German "frightfulness." In a semi-official communiqué the Serbians stated that the enemy, having been unable to demoralise by his fire their troops in their positions on the Danube and the Save at Belgrade, endeavoured to destroy the city systematically, and annihilate its inhabitants by pouring thousands of shells on the open town. They declared that the bombardment was carried out methodically with the object of killing as many persons as possible and of creating a panic, and that the Austro-Germans, to further their own diabolical ends, placed, before the shelling of the city began, a curtain of fire upon the suburbs and on the roads leading into the surrounding country, so that those who tried to flee might be destroyed or thrown back again. At Belgrade, as in other areas of the war, the enemy showed himself unendingly capable of any and every enormity.

Proud of their capital, the Serbians wished to preserve it from complete ruin, and, according to their own official statement, their troops for this reason evacuated it on

Austro-Germans across the rivers

October 8th. But on October 6th and 7th the Austro-Germans, notwithstanding the valorous opposition of the Serbian armies, had effected the crossing of the rivers

at several places, including Belgrade. After desperate fighting, the Serbians on the 6th threw back to the opposite bank of the Save the forces of Kövess which had got across at Jarak, Progorska Island. and Zabrez, but the enemy came on again and succeeded in making good his footing on the south side. On the same day he captured Gipsy Island in the Save, a short distance from Belgrade, and contrived to land under the Lower Fortress and on the Danube Quay in the city itself. All his men at the Lower Fortress were either captured or killed, but the Serbians

were unable to expel him from the quay. During that day the struggle was of the most determined and sanguinary character, and cost the enemy enormous losses.

Next day the Austro-Germans made further progress, their heavy guns playing havoc with the Serbian defences, and enabling them to overcome all opposition at more points on the rivers, among them being Ram, on the Danube. On October 8th the Austro-Hungarian troops of Kövess penetrated into the northern part of Belgrade, and took by storm the Citadel, an obsolete work in the same quarter of the town. Earlier in the morning the German soldiers attached to Kövess's command, who had landed west of the city and taken

the heights in that district, fought their way to the Konak, the Royal palace, completed in 1894, which lay in the

centre of the capital, captured it, and hoisted over it the flags of Germany and Austria-Hungary. Belgrade now lay at the mercy of the invaders, but their work was not yet finished.

The Serbian troops had resisted magnificently, but the multitude of big guns had been too much for them. Their own gunners served their artillery until it was overwhelmed; the men of the French, British, and Russian Naval Missions fired until their pieces were destroyed by the heavier metal of the enemy. Everyone made a gallant, if ineffectual, stand. According to the testimony of the enemy, not a Serbian flinched, and correspondents of his newspapers admitted that the stubbornness of the resistance he encountered far exceeded his calculations. In the afternoon of the 8th, General Zikovitch, thinking to save from destruction what was left of the city, ordered his troops to retire upon the fortified positions lying immediately to the south.

But Belgrade was not yet in complete occupation by the Austro-Germans, and that night saw some of the grimmest and most terrible scenes of the war. Parties of stragglers who were unable to join in the withdrawal of the main body of the soldiers still fought on, preferring death to surrender. Large numbers of the citizens had made good their escape from the doomed town during the bombardment, but large numbers were left, and many of these joined the stragglers in their struggle against the foe. Men, women, and even children contested with

Digitized by Google

the utmost desperation the possession of every street. All through the hours of that night the hopeless fight went on, raging from house to house, from terrace to terrace, the Serbians using bombs and any weapon that came to their hands to defend themselves and strike a blow for their beloved city and land. When morning

came Belgrade was a charnel-house, and much of it was in ruins, particularly in the outskirts, on which the bombardment had had the most devastating effect.

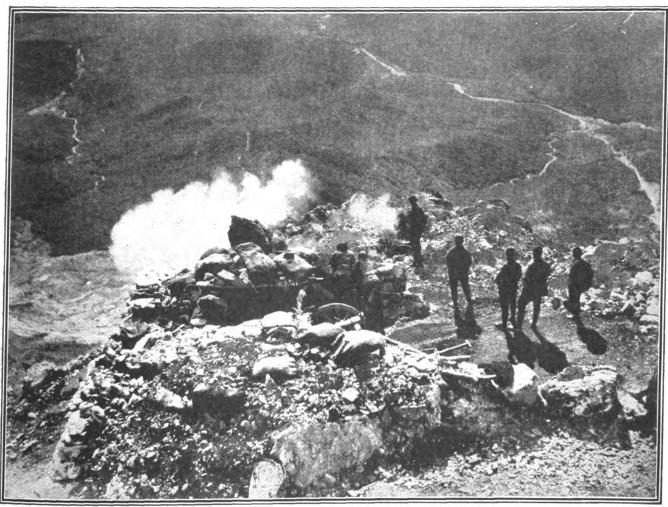
Belgrade was not, properly speaking, a fortified place, and was incapable of prolonged resistance. But its fall caused immense rejoicing in Berlin and Vienna, which were illuminated in celebration of the event, and Mackensen, as its conqueror, was extolled as a general only second to Hindenburg. This joy, however, was decidedly modified when it was learned that it had been captured at a great cost, and that the booty obtained in it was comparatively insignificant, the official list specifying nine naval guns, twenty-six unmounted field-guns—all of these pieces had been destroyed or rendered useless—ten officers, and "more than six hundred prisoners," who, no doubt, were wounded men. The Serbians at Nish, the war capital of their country, declared that its occupation by the enemy gave him no gain from the military point of view; but, all the same, its possession by him had a high political significance which was not lost on the Balkans.

What happened at Belgrade was typical of the fighting all along the line of the three rivers. Everywhere the Austro-Germans were met with the most tenacious courage by the Serbian forces, who repulsed them, but in the end were compelled to give ground.

On the eastern riverine front the enemy, on October 7th and 8th, crossed the Danube between Gradishte and Semendria, near the village of Zatagna and the small fort of Kostolatz, but here he was held. He succeeded on the 8th in taking Ram, which he had been bombarding for days, and tried with his heavy guns to batter a way southward of it, without making any advance. After a "hurricane fire" he attacked in force the village of Petka, and was driven back with considerable losses. He endeavoured to cross near Semendria from the island of the same name lying opposite the mouth of the Morava. Believing that he had shelled the Serbian trenches and their defenders out of existence, he sent his troops forward in lighters holding fifty men apiece, but when they approached the bank the Serbians, who were very much alive, gave them such a hot reception that they speedily retired, many of the lighters being sunk and their occupants drowned.

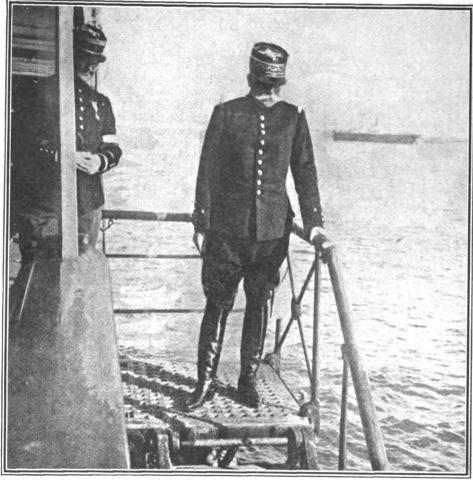
On the western riverine front, on the same dates, the Austro-Germans were checked between Obrenovatz and the village of Kratinska on the Save, failed in three night attacks on the Serbian positions near Zabrez, and were repulsed before Drenovatz, north-west of Shabatz.

In this area the enemy was opposed by some of the finest soldiers of Serbia, the splendid Shumadia Division being amongst them, and their commander, able old Marshal Mishitch, who had won great fame for his generalship



THE WHITE SMOKE OF WAR IN THE BLACK MOUNTAINS.

Montenegrin gun in action against the Austrians. From the outbreak of the war the hardy soldiers of King Nicholas played no small part in the struggle with their hereditary foes. The whole Army was under Serbian officership. Is it to be wondered that the Montenegrins were able to battle against superior odds when one contemplates the natural condition of their country?



GENERAL SARRAIL.

Commander of the Allied Forces in the Balkans leaving the flagship of Admiral de Bon to land at Salonika.

during the third invasion, was the man to get the most and the best out of them. He also had charge of the defence of the Lower Drina, and opposite Badovintse several times repelled the Austrians with great slaughter.

Success attended Marshal Mishitch in a fierce battle at Zabrez on October 10th. In the afternoon the Austrians heavily bombarded the Serbian positions, using asphyxiating projectiles, in the expectation of throwing the Serbians into disorder, and then charged in masses. But the Serbians were not caught unprepared. Donning special masks, they hurried from their trenches to meet the advancing foe, whom they compelled to retire in confusion, some of the enemy's troops taking refuge in flight across the Save. The Austrians re-formed, and three hours later again came on under cover of a hail of gas-shells, but the Serbians once more were equal to the occasion, broke the Austrian ranks, and pursuing them for some distance captured many prisoners.

In spite of this and other Serbian victories in the region of the three rivers, the advantage, generally, lay with the invaders, for they had forced the crossing of the frontier. On October 11th Berlin Headquarters announced that on

Serbian frontier forced the front between Gradishte and Shabatz, more than a hundred miles as the crow flies, the passage of the Danube and the Save had been completed. And at two

Save had been completed. And at two or three points on the Drina the Austrians had reached its eastern side. In the meantime the enemy brought up large reinforcements, and continued a vigorous offensive east, south, and west of Belgrade, in a wide, sweeping movement along the whole front.

Mackensen concentrated his main effort on the east in securing possession of the Morava Valley and its railway. Near Semendria, Gallwitz's right wing was in touch with

Kövess's left, and the plan was that together they should fight their way up the Morava, one taking its east bank and the other its west; but before they could make any progress the fortresses of Semendia and Pojarevatz had to be taken. For more than a fortnight the former had constantly been subjected to a severe bombardment, to which it replied with energy; but here again the Serbian guns were over-mastered. After being driven back near Ram, and repulsed on the sector between the Morava and the Mlava, a stream flowing a few miles east of the other, with a loss of four guns and four machine-guns, the Germans, under Gallwitz, had by October 10th made good their advance towards Semendria, which they occupied on the following day, the Serbians falling back on Pojarevatz. A desperate engagement took place at Lipe, near the fortress, which resulted in a victory for the invaders; but, thanks to Serbian bravery, at tremendous expense, the battlefield being thickly strewn with their dead. In no other encounter up to that time had the enemy suffered such terrible On the 12th the Germans losses. attacking began Pojarevatz, pounding it with their heavy guns, and two days later, having stormed the works on its south side, captured it, while the Serbians

Bulgaria

declares war

retired to the hills lying to the east. Mackensen had thus taken the first steps towards the accomplishment of his objective.

From Orsova west as far as Gradishte the left wing of Gallwitz made no advance, and attempted none, for a reason that presently appeared—it was waiting on a certain development—to wit, Bulgarian intervention. While

the bitter struggle for the possession of the mouth of the Valley of the Morava had been going on, what Serbia had feared had already taken place. On the

feared had already taken place. On the day of the fall of Pojarevatz, Bulgaria declared war upon her; but, on the pretext that the Serbians had attacked her, she had begun operations on the 11th by assaulting Kadibogas, in the direction of Kniashevatz, north-west of Nish, and other Serbian positions on the eastern frontier. Serbia, with armies of about 200,000 men, had been holding on the north and west a line three hundred miles in length. Now she was called on to defend a line of equal extent on the east, and had not many more than 100,000 men available for the purpose. The task was beyond her.

On Serbia's eastern boundary Bulgaria had assembled two large armies, and at the same time had sent a third army to watch the frontier of Rumania, of whose intentions she was not sure. Of the two armies which were to operate against the Serbians, the First Army, under the command of General Bojadieff, had a strength of 200,000 combatants, and it was concentrated on the north from Vidin to Zaribrod, so as to threaten the Valley of the Timok and the part of the Belgrade-Sofia railway running through Pirot to Nish. The Second Army, which was led by General Teodoroff, was only half as large as the first, but it was designed to operate in Macedonia, a country many of whose inhabitants were Bulgarian or in sympathy with



LEADERS OF FRANCE IN THE LEVANT.

General Sarrail, in supreme command, leaving the camp at Salonika for the

Serbian frontier.

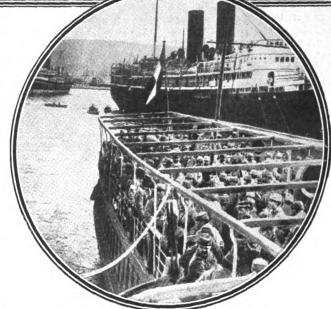
Bulgarian ideals, a region, moreover, that was practically unfortified. Uskub was its chief objective, both on account of the strategic importance of that place as a railway centre, and as a point from which a wedge might be driven in between North and South Serbia. The main body of this force assembled at Kustendil, and its left wing extended down to Strumnitza (or Strumitza).

Serbia, well aware of these facts, appealed to the Allies for speedy assistance, and pending its arrival determined to make, as in December, 1914, a superhuman effort. But the dice were heavily loaded against her. From the start of the Austro-German invasion defensive warfare had been imposed upon her because of the menace from Bulgaria. "Let our Allies look after the Bulgarians."

Retreat imposed upon her because of the hichaes homelagaria. "Let our Allies look after the Bulgarians," said a Serbian officer, "and we shall go to battle singing." With the Bulgarians, however, on her hands, defensive fighting was more than ever necessary.

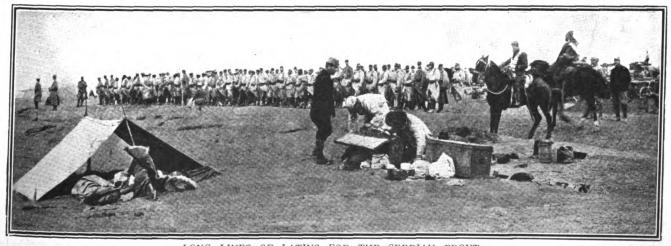
Serbia did not lose heart; on the contrary, she faced the situation with magnificent courage; but her Staff knew that a policy of retreat, with constant rearguard actions to delay the enemy's advance, had become essential until the arrival of the expected forces of her friends.

On the eastern frontier Serbia had three armies. On the north lay the "Army of the Timok," with Zaichar as its base, and it was commanded by General Zikovitch shortly after the fall of Belgrade, but it was strong neither in men nor artillery. South of it came the Second Serbian Army, of three divisions of the first ban, and attached to it was Serbia's division of cavalry. It was led by Marshal Stepanovitch, a soldier celebrated for victories won in



THE EVE OF THEIR NEW ADVENTURE. French infantry disembarking from a transport to go ashore at Salonika. Never since the days of the Romans did Thessalonika, or Salonika, enjoy such world-prominence as it did during the twentieth-century upheaval.

earlier wars, and in whom his men had implicit confidence. This army was Serbia's second strongest force, numbering nearly 80,000 effectives. It was based on Pirot, and the defence of the trunk railway was in its hands. Lower down, the Serbians had a small force, known as the Detachment of the Southern Morava, with headquarters at Vrania.



French forces breaking camp on the outskirts of Salonika, prior to moving up to support the Serbians. They looked a fine body of infantry, rather bigger than the usual run of French soldiers, and some figures in the line will be seen to stand out conspicuously tall.

In Macedonia, at Uskub, Veles, along the Vardur, and on to the Greek frontier there were bodies of troops stationed under General Bojovitch and Colonel Vassitch, their total

strength being upwards of 25,000 men.
Serbia's cry to her Allies for help did not fall on deaf ears. On October 12th Greece had definitely declined to assist Serbia as against the Austro-Germans; but the Entente Powers still strove hard to get her to change her mind, Great Britain going so far as to offer Cyprus to her as a gift if she would cast in her lot with the Serbians. The Greek King, who, since the second dismissal of Venizelos, was in full, though unconstitutional, control of the destinies of his country, rejected the offer of Cyprus, and would listen to no entreaties or arguments, but persisted in declaring his intention not to depart from the attitude of "benevolent neutrality" which he had taken On October 15th France and Great Britain declared war on Bulgaria, and announced a blockade of the Bulgarian war on Bulgaria, and announced a biockade of the Bulgarian coast on the Ægean. For some days the Allies had been rushing troops by railway up the Vardar Valley beyond the Greek frontier, and on the day of the declaration of war French troops were attacked at Valandovo, by the Bulgarians, who were defeated and thrown back. The French, who were commanded by General Sarrail, gradually

Movement of the Allies

made their way northward along the railway as far as Krivolak and Gradsko, a few miles south of Veles, but their numbers were insufficient to make any

change in the general situation of Serbia, daily becoming more critical, nor even to effect a junction with any of the Serbian forces.

It was on the east particularly, as was natural in the

circumstances, that the situation at this time developed most unfavourably. Conscious of their numerical superiority, and spurred on by feelings of hatred, jealousy, and revenge, the Bulgarians pursued their campaign with tremendous vigour and without mercy.

On the north-east, a difficult country of hills and valleys with indifferent roads or no roads at all, Bojadieff at the start, by bringing into action greatly superior forces, got across the Lower Timok, and dividing his army into two main

groups sent one against Negotin, Zaichar, and Kniashevatz, and the other against Desperate Serblan Pirot, but his advance was stubbornly opposed. On October 15th the Serbians

defence

repulsed three strong Bulgarian attacks east and south-east of Zaichar, and many fierce encounters, with the fortune of war now on one side, now on the other, took place east of Kniashevatz, and in the St. Nicholas Pass. Next day there were great struggles around Svinski Vis, which changed hands several times, but north of Kniashevatz the Bulgarians made progress, and on the 19th lay before Negotin. Towards Pirot Bojadieff succeeded in moving forward, but slowly; after capturing Vraje on the frontier he was held up by the Serbians under Stepanovitch, who repulsed and counter-attacked him with the utmost energy, making him pay dearly for every step he took up the Nishava Valley.

Dr. Momchiloff, President of the Bulgarian Parliament, who was present with the Bulgarian troops during these days, described the fighting between the Danube and Pirot as the most desperate in all Serbia, every yard of ground being contested with fury in savage hand-to-hand encounters in which quarter was neither asked nor given.



THE RED FLOWER OF TEUTONIC CULTURE: FIRE FOLLOWING THE SWORD THROUGH POJAREVATZ.



WITH THE MEN OF SIR BRYAN MAHON'S COMMAND IN THE BALKANS: CROSSING A RIVER NEAR DOIRAN, ON THE GRECO-SERBIAN BORDER.

Serbian civilians as well as soldiers took part; in the Serbian trenches women, children, and aged men fought the Bulgarians with bombs and grenades, using them like experts; in every Serbian village the inhabitants attacked the invaders with similar missiles, and every house and cottage was a miniature fort. According to this Bulgarian witness, the civilian population, urged by despair, showed themselves more stubborn foes than the Serbian regulars, and the fighting in all this area was far more terrible than any ever known in the most envenomed of former Balkan wars. But behind these statements lay the tragic fact that in this region the war

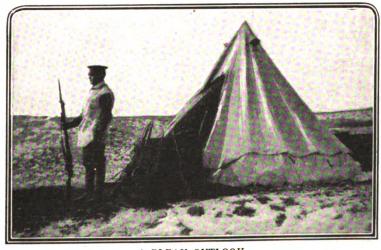
on the Bulgarian side was one of extermination, ancient animosities being quenched in blood and fire.

On the south-east, in Macedonia, the Achilles' heel of Serbia, Teodoroff and the Second Bulgarian Army had much easier work, and achieved success with correspondingly less effort. In this district the Serbians had no armies large enough to withstand a Bulgarian advance in force, nor were its people Serbian in any great degree or genuinely friendly to them, the whole province being infested with Bulgar

comitajis, ready to turn on them at the first opportunity. Yet a large part of the vital railway from Belgrade to Salonika, via Nish and Uskub, passed through this section, several miles of it running close to the frontier. It was this portion of their country that the Serbians had expected the Greeks to defend, but the Greeks had failed them. Teodoroff's first business, of course, was to get astride the railway.

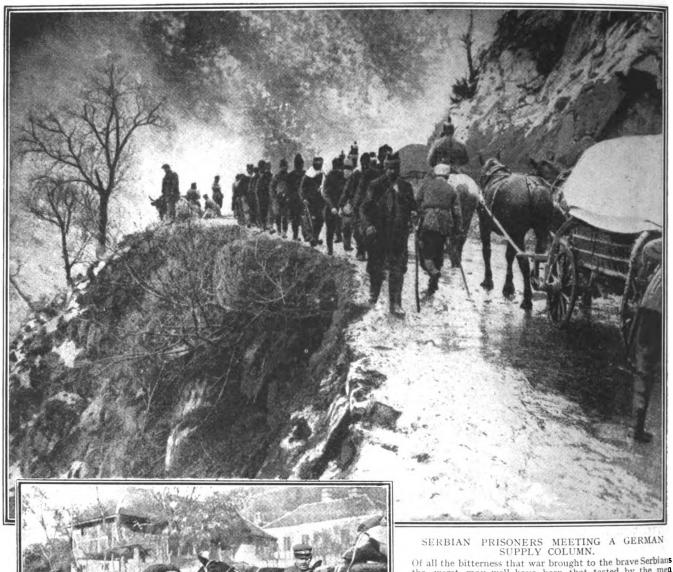
Detaching a strong force from his main body, he struck at the railway between Vrania and Zibeftcha, dominated the line with his guns, and cut it. The small number of Serbian troops, called the "Regiment of the Southern Morava," fought him stoutly, but could not prevent him from cap-

Morava," fought him stoutly, but could not prevent him from capturing Vrania on October 17th, 1915. On the same date Teodoroff took Egri Palanka, after having marched from the railhead of the Kustendil-Sofia railway, forced the pass on the frontier, and gained the highway en route for Kumanovo and Uskub. Farther south he penetrated the valley of the Bregalnitza in what the Bulgarians officially characterised as a lightning advance, capturing the important strategic point, Sultan Tepeh, and the town



A BLEAK OUTLOOK.

British sentry, wearing his winter coat, on duty at a corner of the Greco-Serbian frontier where the railway from Salonika turns eastward.



Of all the bitterness that war brought to the brave Serbians the worst may well have been that tasted by the men shown in this photograph as, captive and disarmed, they passed over their own familiar mountains and watched their conquerors march on to further triumphs.

was not rapid, because the hilly ground over which they moved had been organised step by step by the Serbians, one line of trenches stretching behind another, and the Serbian soldiers, instead of weakening as the enemy anticipated, did not cease to defend their positions with the most heroic endurance. Austrian reports agreed that neither the Russians nor the Italians could be compared in

contempt of death and unflinching bravery with the Serbians. Immediately after the capture of Belgrade, Kövess attacked the heights south of the capital, and after three days of intense fighting took Mount Avala, an eminence over 1,600 feet high, ten miles from the city, on October 18th. Farther to the west, Obrenovatz fell into his hands on that day, and

Shabatz three days later, both important gains. But the chief line of the enemy's advance southward lay along the Morava, his other movements being co-ordinated

with it. Subsequently to the fall of Semendria and Pojarevatz, he assaulted the mountainous country of the Podunavlie, and after heavy loss drove the

Von Gallwitz's costly advance

Serbians out of it. Gallwitz here had an exceedingly difficult task, the ground, rising in rocky step-like formation, offering distinct advantages to the defence, but his heavy artillery enabled him to progress, though very slowly. By October 23rd he had reached the southern bank of the Jasenitza, near Palanka, and had passed Rakinatz on the road to Petrovatz on the Mlava. About the same time his

ANKLE-DEEP MUD IN A SERBIAN VILLAGE. Even in the populated districts the roads in Serbia were very bad. A Ge Cross detachment passed through some villages ankle-deep in mud. A German Red

of Kotshana, taking twelve guns. Pressing on through Ishtip, he occupied the portion of Veles, otherwise called Kuprulu, lying on the east side of the Vardar, on October 20th, thus cutting the railway again, and checking the advance of the French. Northward, he took Kumanovo on the same day, and after a violent battle, in which the Serbians under General Bojovitch performed miracles of valour against an overwhelming superiority of the enemy, captured Uskub on the 22nd. Bojovitch retired fighting to the Katshanik Pass, north of Uskub, the prolonged defence of which, together with the defence of the Babuna Pass, south-west of Veles, was one of the most memorable features of the struggle in Serbia, having the effect of preventing for some time the complete cutting off from each other of the Northern and Southern Serbian Armies that had been Teodoroff's purpose.

While these grave events were taking place in the east and south-east of Serbia, the Austro-Germans continued their advance from the three rivers in the north, but it left wing, having shelled Tekia into ruins, crossed the Danube near Orsova, and took the heights overlooking the river. On the extreme west three Austrian battalions got across the Drina at Vishegrad. It thus might be said that the whole three-rivers' front of Serbia was in the enemy's possession, but it had been an expensive venture, his losses being put at from 70,000 to 80,000 men, of whom 25,000 had been killed, while the Serbian casualties were nothing like half so severe.

Marshal Putnik was steadily carrying out his policy of a stubborn fighting retreat, holding his ground as long as possible, causing the enemy everywhere

The Serbian exodus

retreat, holding his ground as long as possible, causing the enemy everywhere the heaviest losses, and avoiding anything in the nature of a general engagement. But his plans were greatly impeded by

the exodus of practically the whole population of the northern area. The flight southward of the civilian inhabitants began with the fall of Belgrade. Deep in the memories of the Serbian people had been cut the impression made by the horrible atrocities and indescribable outrages which the Austrians had perpetrated in the previous invasions, and their alarm naturally was poignant when the fourth invasion looked like entailing upon them a similar programme of horrors unspeakable.

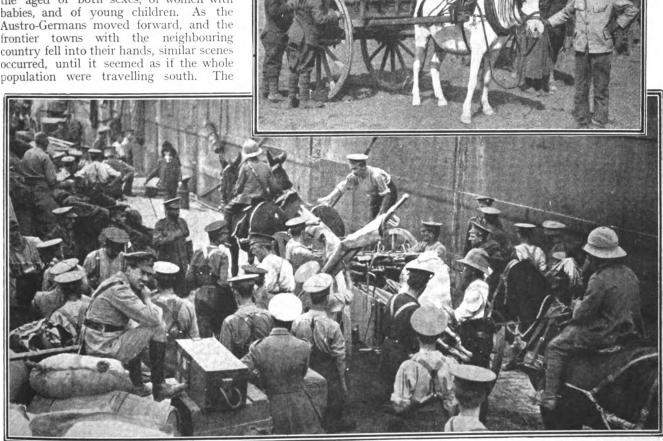
Braving the merciless rain of shells, which the Germans wantonly threw around Belgrade, multi-

tudes of its citizens managed to get away—a few by rail, others in ox-carts, or in some sort of conveyance, but the vast majority on foot. The weather was bad, rain fell heavily and incessantly, the roads were deep in mud, and the miserable plight of these poor creatures was most pitiful. As every man and boy who could fire a rifle or throw a bomb was in the fighting-line, these fugitives consisted of the aged of both sexes, of women with babies, and of young children. As the Austro-Germans moved forward, and the frontier towns with the neighbouring country fell into their hands, similar scenes occurred, until it seemed as if the whole population were travelling south. The

agony of Serbia, it might have been thought, had come full upon her, but it was to deepen with every day that passed. The world had never been the theatre of a darker, sadder tragedy.

Gallwitz and Kövess kept on with their slow but persistent advance from the north, the Serbians retiring in good order and with undiminished moral. During the fourth week of October Gallwitz stormed the commanding heights east of Banitzina, south of the Jasenitza, captured after severe fighting Livaditza and Zabari on the Morava Plain, and occupied the region south of Petrovatz. By the 28th he had gained Svilajnatz, beating down the Serbian resistance by sheer weight of men and guns, and on the 30th was within a day's march of Kragujevatz, the seat of Serbia's principal arsenal, and in former times the national capital. Situated on the Lepenitza, a tributary of the Morava, it lay about half-way between Belgrade and Nish, on a branch line of the main railway joining these two cities, and had about 19,000 inhabitants. It was a place well worth defending, but the Serbian Army, in accordance with the instructions of its Commander-in-Chief, on November 1st evacuated it, after destroying the arsenal and all its military stores.

The Serbians did not, however, withdraw from it without first giving the enemy a taste of their quality. The glorious



HURRYING TO THE HELP OF SERBIA: MEN AND HORSES ON THE QUAY AT SALONIKA.

Salonika was the scene of feverish activity when the Allies hurried to the help of Serbia. The harbour facilities were inadequate for rapid debarkation, and the quayside was congested every day. Above: British soldiers unloading baggage from a Greek Army transport cart.



PARTICIPANTS IN THE BOMBARDMENT GREAT BELGRADE

Serbian artillery with masked guns in action against the Germans at Dedinje, west of Belgrade. In oval: An Austrian monitor which shelled the Serbian capital, and, later, was sunk by British guns.

Shumadia Division, which had been constantly engaged,

now in one quarter of the field, and now in another, and which was recruited from this district, was entrenched on the hills to the north of the town, and, sick of constantly retreating, begged

their commander to obtain permission to attack, which, to their delight, was granted. The day was wet, and through the clouds of mist which shrouded the hills, the gallant Shumadians, eager for the fray, fell with indescribable effect on the Germans, who, now accustomed to the purely defensive tactics of the Serbians, looked for nothing of the kind, and taken by surprise were thrown into disorder. Even when he sent up rein-

forcements to his reeling ranks, so that his strength presently was two divisions and a half, the men of Shumadia, though the ravages of war had by now materially reduced their numbers, were not to be denied. Fighting with irresistible fury they drove the Germans before them for a considerable distance, taking 3,000 prisoners and several guns, while the field was littered with hundreds of German dead. Then, having

had this revenge, the Shumadians retired. Fury of the There is not the least doubt but that Serbia would have triumphed over her Shumadians foes if she had had anything like a chance.

On the right of Gallwitz, Kövess had simultaneously advanced his forces, marching along the railways from Belgrade and Obrenovatz towards the Western Morava, and constantly in contact with the Germans in the Morava region itself. South of Belgrade the Serbians resolutely defended the Kosmai positions, but had to yield before the enemy's heavy fire. On October 25th Kövess reached Ratcha south of Palanka on the right side of the Morava Ratcha, south of Palanka, on the right side of the Morava, and after severe fighting arrived at Gran Milanovatz on the 30th, and at Cacak (Tsatsak) on November 1st, both

places being a few miles west of Kragujevatz. He had now struck the Western Morava and the railway passing along it eastward from Ushitze to the Belgrade-Nish railway. Farther west his cavalry, on October 26th, had occupied Valievo on the Upper Kolubara, and one of his divisions crossed the Maljen Ranges, which had been the scene of the Austrian rout in the previous year. Farther west, but more to the south, the Austrians, who

had pushed on from Vishegrad, entered Double attack on Ushitze on November 2nd, and soon joined up with Kövess.

In the beginning of November Mackensen could say that he was in possession of Northern Serbia, west of the Morava, and was holding for some distance the country on the east of the main river, almost in a straight line with that on the opposite side. But so far it had not been much

more than a conquest of territory, for he had not brought the Serbians to a great battle, which might have been decisive, nor had he captured many prisoners and guns, while, on the other hand, the Serbian Army remained intact and full of fight, awaiting the assistance of the Allies, and hoping that all might still be well. Yet what had taken place on the north-eastern and south-eastern frontiers, in addition to the retreat before the Austro-Germans, might have filled it with dismay.

Nish

During this time Bojadieff, at the head of the First Bulgarian Army, was attacking with success the Serbians in two directions, one along the Timok against Kniashevatz,

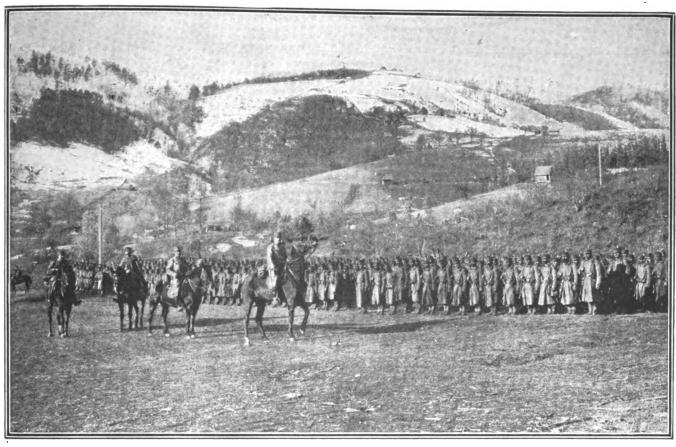
Zaichar, and Negotin, and the other along the Nishava against Pirot. Both efforts threatened Nish, but the more northerly had also the purpose of effecting a junction with the left wing of Gallwitz, which was advancing from Tekia, in the north-east corner of Serbia. object was speedily This





IN THEIR TRENCHES BEFORE GREAT RETREAT. SERBIAN INFANTRY

A Serbian first-line trench, screened from aircraft with branches, at Semendria. Above: A Serbian infantry position along the first-line by



The Austrian troops when mustered after Divine service in the open air presented a most picturesque sight against the tree-clad, snow-powdered background that sloped upwards and away to the far mountain ranges.



"In Montenegro one does not ask how far, but how long," one of the British nurses said. The Austrians, as they rested on their marches over the mountains, must often have realised the point of the remark.

WITH THE FORCES OF FRANCIS JOSEPH IN MONTENEGRO.



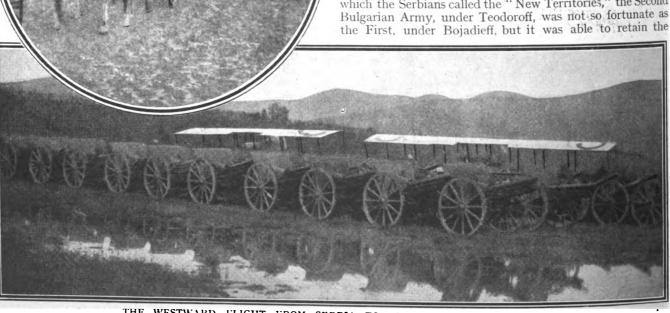
A BRITISH HOSPITAL UNIT IN RETREAT. One of the heroic British women of the Red Cross Mission in Serbia on the the road to Tutijne during the tragic retreat. The waggons were ramshackle and worn by constant hauling over rough country.

realised, for on October 23rd Bojadieff, here encountering very inferior numbers, took Negotin and Prahovo, the latter a port on the Danube, a few miles north of the former. This meant, when Kladovo was captured on the 25th, that the Serbian bank of the river, and the navigation of the Danube on that side, had passed to the enemy, who forthwith proceeded to utilise it, after clearing away mines, some of which were of Russian origin. Lower down, the Bulgarians, who were in overwhelming strength, occupied both Zaichar and Kniashevatz on October 28th, subsequent to many sanguinary and stubbornly contested battles, in which victory was often in doubt and fortified positions had to be stormed and stormed again several times.

It was much the same story of desperate resistance overcome by immensely larger forces in the Nishava Valley, though in this district the Serbians put up, if such a thing were possible, an even sterner and more stubborn fight. The fourth week in October opened well for them by their recapturing positions on the right bank of the river that had been lost on the previous day, and by their repelling hot assaults on the other bank. But on

October 26th-27th they were compelled to abandon the commanding Drenova Government removed Glava height, fifteen miles north-west of from Nish Pirot, and on the 28th Pirot had to be evacuated, but not till after a battle of extraordinary intensity, in which they demonstrated their heroic quality to the full. With Pirot on the south and Kniashevatz on the north, both in the possession of the Bulgarians, the threat to Nish had become most direct and ominous, and the removal of the Serbian seat of Government from that city to Kralievo showed the gravity of the situation. King Peter, who had arrived in Nish on the 23rd, was present during some of the fighting in front of Pirot, and deploring his inability to take an active part, encouraged his brave soldiers, though they needed no spurring, to do their utmost.

In the south-eastern area, or Macedonia, the region which the Serbians called the "New Territories," the Second Bulgarian Army, under Teodoroff, was not so fortunate as



THE WESTWARD FLIGHT FROM SERBIA TO THE ADRIATIC SEABOARD. A section of the cavalcade of varied humanity—soldiers, British Red Cross workers, peasants, children—on the road between Kralievo and Rashka, and ou the way to Podgoritza, in Montenegro. At foot: The arrival of French aeroplanes at Kralievo. The Serbian guns shown in the foreground were destroyed; nothing it was possible to render useless was left in a condition to be of service to the enemy.

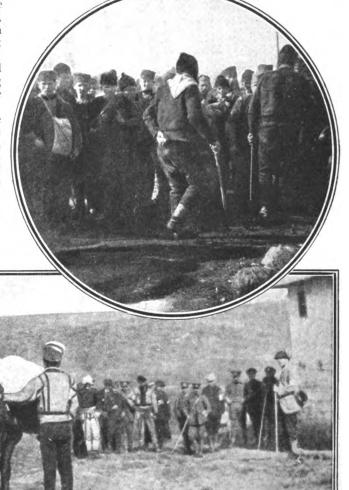
ground which it had conquered earlier. After its occupation of Uskub, it advanced to the Katshanik Pass, and by violent attacks with great forces, drove the Serbians, under General Bojovitch, from some part of the defile on October 28th, but when, a little later, the Serbians received reinforcements in the shape of two regiments of the Morava Division and two of the Drina Division, Bojovitch counterattacked, and by sheer dint of the hardest fighting, recovered and held the most important positions in the pass, continuing to hold them although the Bulgarians, who did not lack courage, came on again and again, all their efforts, day after day, being repulsed with great losses. Vassitch, a gallant soldier if ever there was one, meanwhile was fighting some miles to the south, with a considerable measure of success, which a considerable measure of success, which might have turned into something decisively favourable if the French had been able to co-operate with him more closely than they were. October 22nd, after an extreme struggle, he recaptured Veles, which he retained for a week, steadily driving back all Bulthe conflict became too unequal, and he

garian assaults. On the 29th, however, As every man and boy capable of bearing arms was fighting, the Montenegrin women repaired the conflict became too unequal, and he the roads for the passage of the Army.

had to evacuate the town once more, Final evacuation and withdraw to the Babuna Pass, the narrow defile, known as the Iron Gate, of Veles over which the highway went from

Veles through Prilep to Monastir, the considerable city that he had wrested from the Turks in the First Balkan War. At the opening of November, 1915, the Serbians were still holding the pass, and still were preventing the driving in of the wedge that was to sunder the Southern from the Northern Armies of Serbia.

Although the Serbian main armies in the north were still intact, and the small Serbian forces in Macedonia were holding back the Bulgarians, it had been evident for days that Serbia was in danger, as the movements of her enemies on all sides threatened her with envelopment. She herself declared that she could go on resisting and delaying the enemy, but she appealed once more for instant assistance. On October 20th Italy declared war on Bulgaria, but beyond increasing the pressure in her own campaign against Austria, and in that way reducing the pressure elsewhere, she did not directly attempt to help the Serbians. The



SCENES IN THE TRAGEDY OF SERBIA'S FLIGHT BEFORE THE INVADER. In their dreadful retreat from Serbia the British Mission ran out of all their own supplies of food, and practically nothing was procurable at the Albanian cafés. In circle: Serbian refugees mustered on the roadside. The determined spirit of the people can be seen in all these youthful faces.



LUXURY IN TRAVELLING THROUGH SERBIA.

To ford a river in a cart was to make a luxurious crossing. On the retreat the British nurses had to wade through many streams, sometimes waist-deep in water.

other Allies, besides the landings at Salonika of additional troops, sent on as quickly as possible to the Franco-British front in the southeast corner of Serbia, instituted a bombardment of the Bulgarian coast on the Ægean on October 21st, in which British, French, and Russian ships took part. Dedeagach, on the Gulf of Enos, and a junction on the railway connecting Salonika with Constanti-

nople, was shelled for some hours, and serious damage done to its harbour works. railway-station, and shipping, care being taken to avoid firing on non-military points.

There was a great panic in the town, and the soldiers in the barracks fled for their lives. On the 28th, Russian vessels, in spite of the danger they ran from submarines and mines, bombarded Varna, on Bulgaria's Black Sea coast, with notable effect. On land the French troops in Serbia routed a force of Bulgarians at Rabrovo on the 23rd, and pushed up to Krivolak, where the enemy attacked without success on the 30th. On November 2nd the French were at Gradsko, at the confluence of the Vardar and the Tserna, and began entrenching at Kavadar, with a view to getting into touch with Vassitch, at the Babuna Pass, or at some other place on the farther bank of the Tserna.

How Serbia was enduring the strain of these terrible days when her fate was trembling in the balance was shown in a telegram sent to London by M. Pasich, the Serbian Premier, in which he said:

"Serbia is making superhuman efforts to defend her existence, in response to the advice and the desire of her great ally. For this she is condemned to death by the Austro-Germans and Bulgarians. For twenty days our common enemies have tried to annihilate us. In spite of the heroism of our soldiers, our resistance cannot be expected to be maintained indefinitely. We beg you, the many friends of Serbia in England, to do all that you possibly can to ensure your troops reaching us that they may help our Army, and that we may defend together that common cause that is now so gravely menaced."

Throughout Great Britain these urgent words created a painful impression, which was not diminished when on October 27th, the day of their publication, the British public also saw in their papers a report of a speech Lord Lansdowne had delivered

in the House of Lords the day before. In this he stated that the British, in answer to Serbia's cry for help, had landed at Salonika a force of only 13,000 men, but that a larger force, put under orders at the same time, might or might not, according to circumstances, go there, the circumstances at the moment being that the progress of the campaign in Northern Serbia had been such as to render it highly improbable that the Serbian Army would be able to withstand for any great length of time the attack to which it was exposed from the Austro-Germans in the north, added to the stab in the back it had received from



"O'ER MOOR AND FELL, O'ER CRAG AND TORRENT."

At Berane a bridge was washed away, and the river had to be crossed in a punt hauled by ropes. In circle: Exhausted Austrian prisoners resting by the roadside.



AN EVERYDAY SCENE DURING THE GREAT TEUTON OFFENSIVE IN THE BALKANS.

Unable to keep up with the retreating Serbian Army, these aged refugees fell into the hands of a patrol of Austrians, who conducted them to the enemy camp for interrogation.

Bulgaria. From these melancholy expressions, which were based on the considered opinion of the British General Staff, it could not but be gathered that effective assistance for Serbia—at all events, from the British—was unlikely. However, in the House of Commons next day Mr. Tennant Under-Secretary of State for War, announced that the British troops in Serbia were co-operating with the French on the Greek frontier.

In France a very different view prevailed as to what should be done to help Serbia. Consequent on the resignation of M. Delcassé, who disapproved of the

prosecution of the Serbian adventure, the members of the Cabinet of M. Viviani to Salonika handed in their portfolios to the President, but M. Poincaré immediately found a new Prime Minister for France in M. Briand,

the ex-Socialist and a former Prime Minister, whose strength of character had been conspicuously demonstrated by his handling of the great railway strike in Paris some years previously. Associating with himself M. Viviani and other ex-Ministers, M. Briand formed a Cabinet of exceptional distinction. This was on October 28th. On the following day General Joffre was in London, and it was said that he was in favour of vigorous action by the Allies on behalf of Serbia. His arguments may have been sufficiently convincing to induce a change of mind in the British Government. At all events, they forthwith resolved that large additional forces should be quickly despatched to Salonika, apparently having come to the conclusion that it was not yet too late to save the Serbians from subjugation.

While these and other reinforcements were being got ready and sent to the scene, attempts continued to be made by the Allies to get Greece to act in a manner more favourable to their purpose. Among other things they desired better facilities for the moving of troops by rail. But after the rejection of the offer of Cyprus, it came out that Greece had decided not to depart from what she called her benevolent neutrality in any way, unless

and until the Entente Powers concentrated armies in strength sufficient to check the progress of the Austro-Germans, with whom otherwise she was determined at all costs to avoid an encounter. Her attitude, in fact, towards the Allies became stiff, if not positively hostile, and the Greek people, always and notoriously a fickle race, and now vastly impressed by the success of the enemy in Serbia, sympathised less and less with the Entente.

And all the time the invasion of Serbia was steadily running its course, with results which only too surely indicated how desperate the plight of the little country was becoming, notwithstanding the superhuman efforts of which M. Pasich had very truly spoken.

With scarcely a halt at Kragujevatz, where they were disappointed to find no large amount of booty, the Austro-Germans crossed the Cacak-Kragujevatz road, and

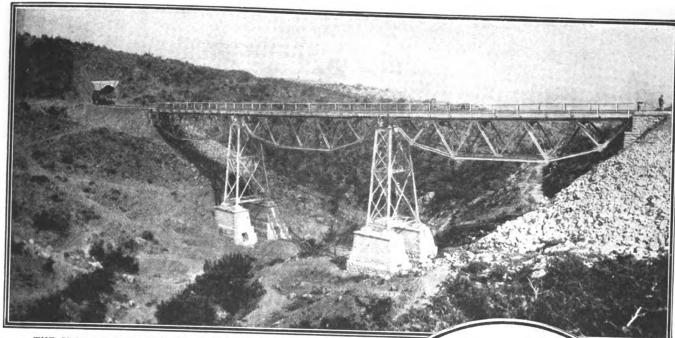


PRECIOUS STORES BEING CONVOYED TO THE REAR.

Kralievo was a point on the main line of retreat to Podgoritza, and incessant streams of Serbians and convoys of Serbian stores passed through its rough-paved streets.

KK

MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE OPERATIONS IN THE BALKANS AFTER THE OCCUPATION OF SERBIA BY THE AUSTRO-GERMANS AND BULGARIANS.



THE IRON WAY IN THE ROCK-GIRT BALKANS. Railway bridge on the Monastir line within a short distance of the city. This photograph gives a graphic idea of the nature of the Balkan country, in which ten nations were locked in deadly combat. Deep ravines, rugged mountain passes, stunted vegetation—such was the scene of the Near Eastern theatre of war.

marched south on both sides of the Morava. Kövess moved over the Posetza, and the Germans entered Jagodina on November 3rd. The passage of both banks of the Western Morava was forced at Kralievo, and that town, from which the Serbian Government had withdrawn in time, occupied on the 5th, being captured by Brandenburg troops after terrible fighting in the streets. Here the enemy laid claim to his first big capture of guns—one hundred and thirty, but most of the pieces were of obsolete pattern, and the remainder had been rendered unserviceable. Next day, or a day later, he was in Krushevatz, making prisoner, according to his own account, 3,000 unwounded Serbian

soldiers, besides 1,500 wounded in the hos-Austro-Germans pitals. The whole of the line of the Western Morava was now in his possesjoin Bulgarians sion. To the east of the Morava Gallwitz

pressed on, took the series of heights south of Lugotznir, by storm, after the usual fierce struggle with Serbian rearguards, and on November 4th seized Parachin, on the Belgrade-Nish railway, from which a branch line extended through the hills to Zaichar. He was now very near the Bulgarians, who, as already narrated, had taken the last-named town, and on November 5th their armies joined up at Krivivir, a village lying midway between the two places. They were then about thirty miles north of Nish. On the same day German troops, by a surprise night assault, captured Varvarin, on the main railway south of Parachin.

Other forces of Bojadieff, and these the most important under him, continued their advance in the direction of Nish, both southerly from Pirot and northerly along the road from Kniashevatz. They had got within a short distance of the Serbian war capital, and were in immense strength as compared with the Serbians. On November 2nd, at the village of Syrlig and on the Kalafat Hill, six miles from the city, a violent battle began, which Serbian heroism caused to last for three days, marked by the most determined and bitter fighting, the heaviest Bulgarian attacks being repeatedly repulsed with frightful slaughter, and many successful Serbian counter-attacks made. But owing to the dominatingly larger number of the Bulgarians, whose big guns wrecked the Serbian forts and trenches, and damaged Nish itself, the end was inevitable. The Serbians with decrease the relationship and order and withdrew from the city on the 5th in good order, and Bojadieff occupied it; and here he found, it was said, still flying the flags to welcome the Allies who had never come,



A TEMPLE OF MARS NEAR THE VARDAR. Dominating Uskub and the Vardar Valley, these buildings were utilised for barracks, hospitals, and various military purposes.

but discovered little plunder, the hundred guns he claimed to have captured being of no value.

In some respects the loss of Nish was one of the worst of the blows which a hard fate had dealt Serbia, for, if the city was only of subsidiary military importance, its fall had a decided political effect, coming second to that of Belgrade. The German newspapers described its capture as one of the greatest events of the war.

But the Bulgarians did not by any means have it all their own way in every quarter of the field at this time, for while Bojadieff was entering Nish in triumph, his colleague Teodoroff in the south-east was not only making no progress but was even suffering defeat. At the Pass of Katshanik, by which entrance was effected from Uskub to the historic Plain of Kossovo, the Serbians, under Bojovitch, with dauntless courage daily rolled back every attack. But it was in the Babuna Pass that Serbian heroism most fully flowered. The sublime spirit in which this position was defended was nobly expressed by Vassitch when he declared that his soldiers would continue to fight desperately to the end, and that all Serbians would await without desertion at the foot of their cross the hour of their crucifixion, making the root of their cross the root of their sacrifice live as an example to future generations.



## THE GLORIOUS AND TERRIBLE CAMPAIGN OF THE MESOPOTAMIAN ARMY.

Why Neither Turk nor Briton Ventured Far into Babylonia—A Region of Flies, Mosquitoes, and Deadly Tropical Diseases—Our Soldier-Sailors of the Bellum Brigade—Boating Infantry and Steaming Cavalry at the Battle of Noriolk Hill—Having Learned the Art Raids, and Desert Thirst—The Bedouin Chief, the Sheep's Tails, and a Little Dynamite—Disastrous Change in the British Plan of Campaign—Four Indo-British Brigades are Launched Against the Forces of the Ottoman Empire—Magnificent Skill, Heroism, and Endurance of General Townshend's Men—Splendid Deeds of the West Kents and Hants Territorials at the Battle of Nasinyeh of our Attack on Kut-el-Amara—Incomparable Marching Feat of General Houghton's Brigade—Fine Frontal Attack by Mahrattas Combat with a Turkish Brigade—Owing to Sufferings from Thirst, our Marching Wing Fails to Encircle the Enemy—Turks Retire our Troops to Retire, and they Fall Back with Heavy Losses on Kut-el-Amara.

T

HERE is nothing of the romantic atmosphere of the "Arabian Nights' Entertainments" remaining in the region between Bagdad

and the Persian Gulf. In ancient times, it is said, a cock could

hop from house to house from Basra, the city of Sindbad, past Babylon and Seleucia, to the capital of Haroun Al-Raschid. But since the Mongol, the Turk, and the nomads of Arabia swept over the most fertile country on earth, the tract between the Tigris and the Euphrates has lapsed into desert sand and riverside jungles of cane-brakes, where the Mesopotamian lion ranges. Instead of being a land of vines, orange groves, and rose gardens, Babylonia has become one of the most desolate wastes in Asia, and the reason why neither the Turk at Mosul nor the Briton at Koweit succeeded in occupying the wilderness was apparent to our troops in the spring of 1915. In April the commander of the Indian Expeditionary Force, Sir Arthur Barrett, fell so seriously ill that Sir John Eccles Nixon had to take over his command. The following month many men of the British regiments began to feel unwell, and when the full heat of the summer smote the Indo-British force the sufferings of the white men were extreme. Among them were the 2nd West Kents, the 1st Oxford and Bucks, the 2nd

Norfolks, 2nd Dorsets, 1st Hants, the 1st Territorial Battalion of the Sussex Regiment, some of the 25th Royal Fusiliers (Frontiersmen), and the 4th Rifle Brigade, with others.

Among the Indian troops were the 20th, 22nd, 24th, 66th, 67th, 76th, and 90th Punjabis, 120th Infantry, 104th Wellesley Rifles, 103rd Mahrattas, 110th Light Infantry, 117th Mahrattas, 7th and 11th Rajputs, and 1st and 2nd Battalions of the 7th Gurkhas. Among the mounted troops were the 7th Lancers, 16th, 26th, and 33rd Cavalry, and Royal Horse Artillery (S Battery), and others.

that of the Punjab, yet the Indian troops suffered almost as much as the British troops. This was due to the fact that the steaming marshlands of the great rivers not only gave a trying, humid quality to the burning tropical sunlight, but also the vast stretches of stagnant water, full of rotting refuse, formed the breeding places of an absolutely incomparable swarm of mosquitoes, biting flies, and vermin. These biting and blood-sucking insects were the main defenders of the legendary site of Eden, of the river-lands of Ur, where Abraham pastured his cattle, and the desolate yellow mounds representing all that remained of the hanging gardens by the Euphrates, where Alexander the Great died. Alexander had been able to conquer

The heat was not much worse than



GENERAL SIR JOHN ECCLES NIXON, K.C.B., who took over the command of the Indo-British Expedition to Bagdad in April, 1915, when Sir Arthur Barrett fell seriously ill.



General Sir Bryan Thomas Mahon, D.S.O., commanding the British Force in Serbia.

LL 293

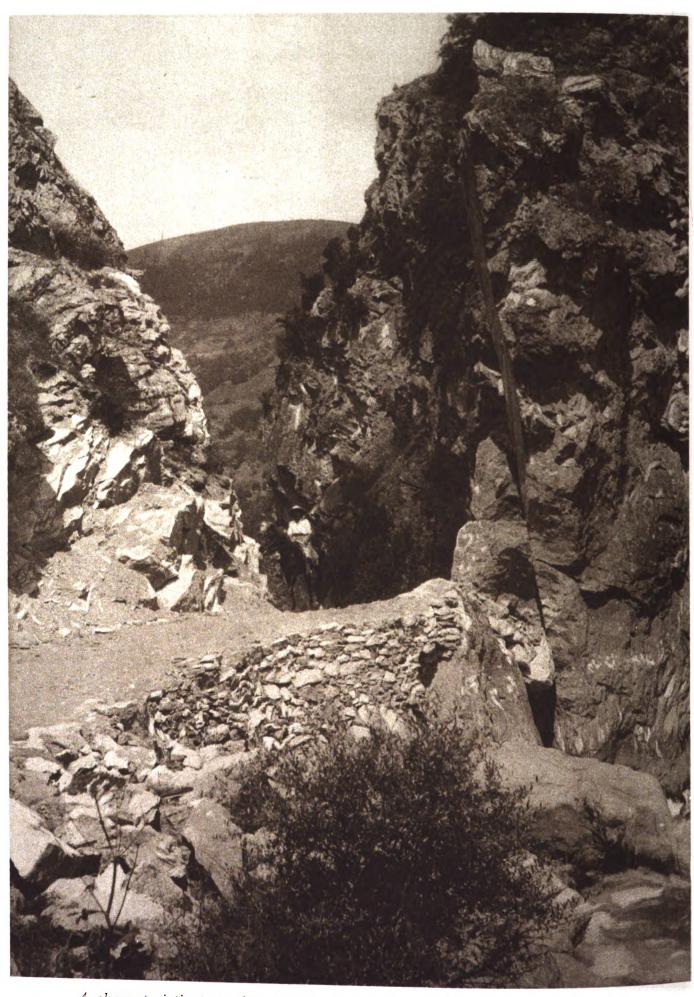


294



King Peter rode until exhausted, when he exchanged the saddle for a stretcher. "I must stay till the end," he said.

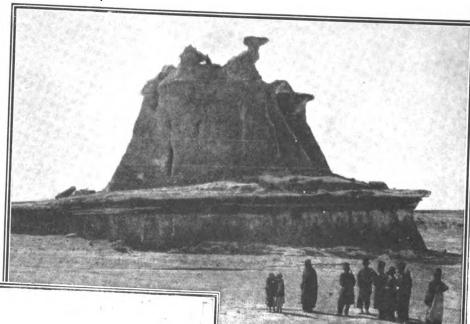
Digitized by Google



A characteristic pass through the Serbian mountains to the west of Uskub.

all emperors, kings, and chieftains between the Mediterranean and the Indian Ocean, but at the height of his power and his glory he had been stung by a gnat, and infected with a deadly fever.

It was the insect-borne diseases of the immense river marshes which had for nearly three centuries stayed the march of both Turk and Briton. Only the Bedouin, after being naturally vaccinated for some thousands of years by the plague-insects of the swamps, was able to drag out a wretched existence amid the ruins of the earliest civilisation in the world. His children were infected with all the diseases of the region in infancy, but their inherited constitution had been so toughened that what killed stranger adults troubled





TRACES OF EUROPEAN INFLUENCES IN AN ASIATIC TOWN. The front at Bushire, which was occupied by the British as a protest against the failure of the Persian Government to punish the tribal chiefs whose rising was instigated by German agents. The ruins on the left are those of an old Portuguese fort, and the British Consulate is seen on the right.

them as lightly as chicken-pox does our children. In the same way the yellow fever of Central American ports only produces in native children a slight and passing disturbance. When, after some three hundred years of fairly friendly relations, the Briton and the Turk clashed at last in war round the Persian Gulf in the decisive struggle for the overland route to India both the decisive struggle for the overland route to India, both of them suffered less from each other's weapons than from the deadly little pricks of the insect defenders of the land.

The flies produced dysentery and typhoid, Insects v. while the mosquitoes began by injecting the malaria germ; when this was kept down by means of quinine, they pro-

our base hospital with patients, who had to be taken to India to recover.

Many of our troops at last went through the campaign in a state of absolute nudity, protected by mosquito-nets. with mats of woven reeds over their heads, as a slight shade against the flame-like sunshine. But they could not get away from the flies; a man could not eat his food without SINGULAR NATURAL FORMATION AT DAYIR, IN SOUTHERN PERSIA.

This curious structure, seemingly the product of some untutored sculptor's imagination, was built by Nature out of mud and salt.

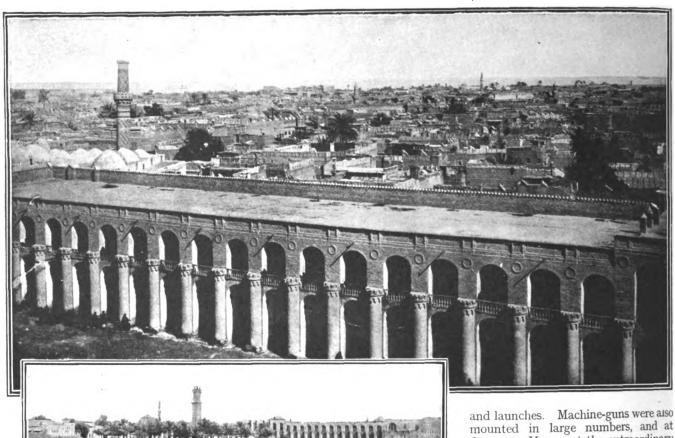
eating flies. A piece of white bread became black before it reached one's mouth, and the inevitable result was some kind of dysentery. And such was the effect of the heat that a body of vigorous troops in the prime of life, marching at the top of their powers, seldom did more than eight miles a day. By this time they lost so much of the fluid of their blood that, though they emptied their water-flasks, they were tortured by thirst, and suffered like men in the last stages of kidney disease.

The campaign in East Africa was not exactly a picnic, but that in Mesopotamia was a nightmare. It would have been absolutely impossible for the Indian Ex-

peditionary Force to have done more than hold on to Basra and guard the pipe-line of the Admiralty oil-fields in Persia but for the help given to our soldiers by our sailors. The men of the Royal Indian

Marine, the Royal Navy, and the Royal Naval Reserve transformed the cam-An amphibian paign into the most adventurous example of amphibious warfare in our history.

Owing to their foresight, inventiveness, and resource, the army was practically transformed into a naval force that operated upon rivers, across stretches of flood-water, and through reed-grown marshes, haunted by the wild beasts of Babylonia. Every form of craft was employed, from the most primitive punt to the latest type of oil-driven vessels. There were three old sloops, which had been doomed by the Admiralty to destruction when the war broke out, but which were saved to perform great work in the river battles. There were flat-bottomed Irrawaddy paddle-steamers, in which Sir Harry Prendergast had conquered Burma, and which were brought across the ocean in their old age to bombard the Turkish trenches at Kut-el-Amara. Motor-boats, light-draught river-motors which had seen service off Belgium, the Dardanelles, and German East Africa—sailed round the Garden of Eden by "Temptation Square" and "Serpent's Corner." Then there



GENERAL VIEW OF BAGDAD, WITH THE TURKISH BARRACKS BELOW.

Like most Oriental cities, Bagdad, with its domes and minarets, its strong lights and shadows, and its palms and tamarisks, presents a picture that delights the artist. The building in the foreground of the upper picture is part of the Turkish barracks, of which the front elevation is shown in the lower photograph.

was an aeroplane which had flown at Singapore, and had afterwards shed its wings and become a launch with an aerial propeller, moving down the river with a series of detonations like a badly-firing motor-bicycle, and spreading dread among the Bedouins. There were tug-boats (mounting 4.7 in. guns), horse barges, and the Mesopotamian steamers belonging to the Lynch firm. But the foundation of our operations was the bellum—a native punt, which can carry ten armed men over a foot of water. A great flotilla of bellums often fought our strange infantry battles, while the steam-driven and motor-propelled vessels scouted in advance and acted like a cavalry division.

Sir John Nixon began his part of the campaign by turning his soldiers into sailors. For some weeks in the spring the

whole brigade stationed at Kurna was
engaged in learning the art of navigation in bellums. This type of boat
has a length of about thirty-five feet

and a beam of two and a half feet; it is propelled in shallow water by poles, and in deep water by paddles. Two men were required to work it, and as it was likely they would both be shot down when the action opened, all the men in the flat-bottomed craft had to learn how to punt and paddle, so as to be able to look after themselves if their boatmen fell. It was also at this time that a considerable part of our field artillery was put on the water, and, by great feats of carpentry and smith work, mounted on rafts, sailing-boats, tugs,

and launches. Machine-guns were also mounted in large numbers, and at dawn on May 31st the extraordinary new Indo-British navy moved out to attack.

In front of the hundreds of riverboats were the three sloops Clio, Odin, and Espiègle, each with six 4 in. guns, and the Royal Indian Marine steamer Lawrence, with the rafts and boats containing field-guns. This remarkable squadron had to steam through something that was neither land nor water,

but a tract of mud thinning into a liquid form, while retaining the appearance of land by reason of the reeds growing out of it. The progress of the boats was much impeded by the

reeds, and the Turks, with their Kurdish levies and German officers, entrenched on the low hills to the north, had

Norfolk Hill

a magnificent target. But their 6 in. field-guns used only the old segment shells, sold by our Government to the Ottoman Empire soon after the South African War. These shells made a noise, but did very little damage. What was more important, the Turks had no machine-guns, and their musketry fire was not good. After our steamer squadron had bombarded the enemy trenches, the newly-made sailor-soldiers of the bellum brigade—2nd Norfolks, 110th Mahratta Light Infantry, and 120th Rajputana Infantry—beached their boats among the reeds, then squelched through the marsh and charged with the bayonet up the high, dry ground. The entrenched Turks, on the hill now known as Norfolk Hill, put up a good fight, but they were rushed and shattered, and the enemy troops in the other six positions fled in disorder up the Tigris to Amara.

Some of them were cut off in the marshes, but the main force could not be pursued; for an ingenious German engineer, who had been working on the river when war broke out, blocked the stream by sinking a line of large barges, and laying mines around them. It took our men two days to clear away the mines and the wrecks. On the evening of June 1st our steamers worked through the obstruction and puffed away in pursuit of the enemy. It was expected that the Turks would make another stand

Digitized by Google

at Amara, which lies 87 miles above Kurna. Amara has a population of ten thousand, and is the most important place between Bagdad (which is 370 miles up-stream) and Basra (which is 130 miles down-stream). The Turks, however, were too deeply alarmed by our amazing boating army and its gun-rafts and machine-gunned bellums. We were exercising all the extraordinary advantages of seapower in the heart of a desert, hundreds of miles from the sea. Had the enemy made a stand at Amara we could have sailed by him, have landed well in his rear, and have cut his line of communications. It was necessary for him to counter the naval tactics of our army by constructing a miniature system of Dardanelles forts on both banks of the river, with some powerful long-range guns capable of sinking the largest ship we could bring up-stream. The Turkish commander, Nuredin Pasha, therefore kept his men on the march until they reached Kut-el-Amara, near Bagdad, where the great cross-desert canal, Shat-el-Hai, runs from the Tigris to the Euphrates at Nasiriyeh. Here he built a formidable system of fortifications which Sir John Nixon's men afterwards found very useful.

With the advance to Amara, the original plan of our Persian Gulf campaign was concluded. We had safeguarded our Admiralty oil supply, and had swept the

enemy far back from our sphere of influence along the Gulf. We had, moreover, captured the port of Mesopotamia, Basra, and had put a complete end to the river commerce of Bagdad, Mosul, and other towns. So far as India was concerned, the danger

of any Turkish movement was restricted to Kurdish raids across the mountains to the north. These raids led into the northern provinces of Persia, which were under Russian influence; and the Russian army in the Caucasus, possessing quick and easy transport across the Caspian Sea, was excellently situated to meet any menace. So when the very hot weather came our Indian Expeditionary

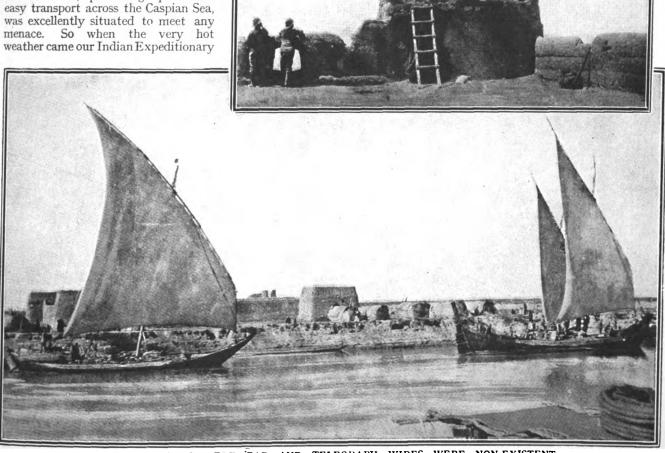
Force merely stood fast on the ground it had won, and consolidated the newly-conquered territory. With the capture of Amara, we had 136 miles of river communications to maintain between that town and Basra. And though the Turks had been pushed back, there

were large numbers of armed Arabs scattered about the country. Some of them were friendly to us, for the simple reason that they wished to be on

reason that they wished to be on the winning side—and we looked like winning—but many of them had helped the Turks, and, under the influence of their priests, they continued to snipe our advanced detachments and raid our stores.

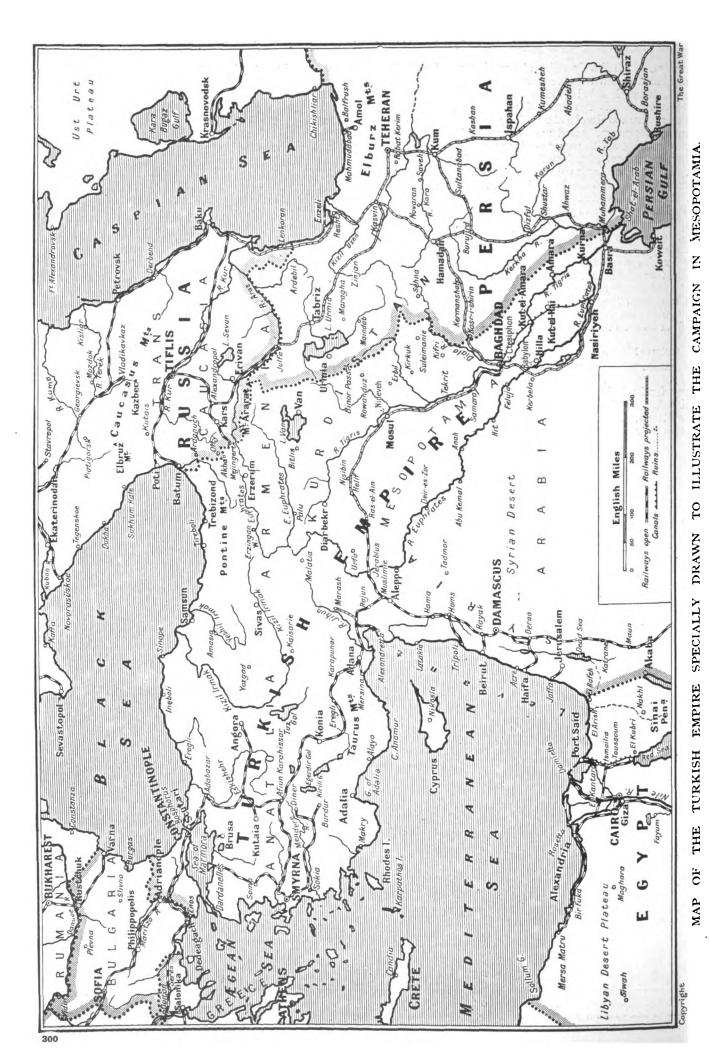
At Basra things settled down so quietly that the British engineers began to transform the city of Sindbad the Sailor. Dikes were cut to control the flood-water, the creeks were bridged, and roads made through the pathless marshes.

Then a large scheme of town-planning was put into execution, in preparation for the day when Sir William Willcocks would dam the Tigris and Euphrates, and, by a vast system of irrigation, transform Babylonia into one of the great wheat-fields of the world. A beginning was made in establishing law, order, and industry by taking considerable tracts of land from the local owners. Much to the surprise of these Arab merchants, their land was bought from them at a fair price, instead of being seized by force, according to the immemorial custom of all other conquerors. Customs were established, and trade encouraged in every way; and what with the institution of



WHERE ROADS WERE BAD AND TELEGRAPH WIRES WERE NON-EXISTENT.

Mahailahs (a kind of wherry) passing Kumait Fort with supplies for Kut. The Mahailahs are towed by men by means of ropes attached to the mast-head. Above: Indian signallers using the heliograph during the fighting near Bagdad.



Digitized by Google

settled and progressive government, the improvement of land and water communications and the public health system, the benefits of British occupation were brought home to the townspeople.

The result was that some of the Arab tribes began heartily to work for the new government, and did much to relieve our troops when the terrible heat was seriously telling on the white men. Not a shot was fired for months, and though it was believed by our soldiers that large

The Garden

quantities of firearms had been concealed by the Turks in the mosques, every Arab in the towns except the mullahs, was friendly. There was very little quarrelling

friendly. There was very little quarrelling or crime, and though our men still went about armed, they were never attacked. The hardest task that fell to our home regiments was that of guarding the date gardens and marshes in the Garden of Eden. Despite all scraps of archæological information doled out to them, the units of the garrison at Kurna refused to believe that the swampy land at the junction of the two great rivers was once so fertile, healthy and beautiful a spot that civilisation was born there, and the legend of its glory travelled down the ages to the Hebrews. The garrison only gave way to the general opinion of the army so far as to name some of the more

as to name some of the more important thoroughfares "Serpent's Corner," "Temptation Square" and "Adam and Eve Street." But with the steaming marshes around them, in which a few of the most wretched fishermen on earth won just enough food to beget children to share their misery, with a furnace-like air, buzzing all day with biting flies and humming all night with stinging mosquitoes, the unfortunate British soldiers guarding the paradise of the Sumerians reckoned that they could have given Dante and Milton some vivid information about the conditions of life in the infernal regions.

This garrison work, though unexciting, was almost a relief after a skirmish in the desert. In the desert at times the temperature was up to 130 degrees in the small tents, and on very sultry days the sandstorms came. A dense khaki-coloured cloud rose on the horizon, and then rolled towards the encampment. The men rushed about strengthening their tent-pegs and ropes, and collecting all the loose kit; but often no preparation was adequate to meet the storm. The tents were blown down like packs of cards, and all had to hide their heads under tent-flaps, bedding, or boxes, as it was impossible to face the blasts of cutting sand. In violent tempests the sand made a black darkness which lasted for hours. When the storm passed, and the troops emerged, shaking themselves like dogs coming out of water, their eyes were bloodshot, their mouths and nostrils coated thick and black with sand and mud, and all their bodies were a mass of sand.

It was in these circumstances that the work of chasing down hostile Arab tribes and burning their camps had to be carried out. The actual conflicts with mounted bands of Bedouin guerillas were not much of a trial. As the Bedouins usually had no guns, they scattered among the dunes when our men offered battle, and our reconnoitring aeroplanes were hard put to it to trace the lines along which they were going to again concentrate. The Indian cavalry, with a section of horse artillery concealed behind them, managed at first by feighing a flight and leading the unsuspecting Bedouins towards our guns, to ambush some of the more daring Bedouin parties. But the Bedouin, being a born guerilla fighter, mounted on a fine desert horse, soon learned all the tricks of our cavalry, and had to be hunted down by converging columns of infantry. Infantry, however, had been hunting down the Bedouin for some ten thousand years; and when the Indo-British troops took up the work which Turk, Mongol, Persian, Assyrian, Babylonian and Sumerian had been unable to accomplish, the son of the desert resorted to his ancient tactics.

He retired deep into the sandy waste, where he could water by springs known only to himself. There he tried to outfight us by his last and most terrible weapon of defence—thirst. Our men had some narrow escapes from



THE "CITY OF THE CALIPHS."

Impression of a corner of Bagdad, showing, in the background, the pontoon bridge across the Tigris crowded with Arabs in their picturesque Oriental costumes.

the most awful of deaths. On one occasion a strong column of our troops was set the apparently easy task of rounding up some Bedouins whom our airmen had discovered camping only ten miles away. The men marched all night through the hot desert, charged the Arabs early in the morning, burned their tents, and hunted them over the sand-ridges for miles, and then returned to the captured camp

An awful march

for food and water. By this time the sun was terribly fierce, and the men, having emptied their water-bottles while march-

ing in the hot night, were exhausted. And no water had been brought for them. It had apparently been thought that, as the river was only ten miles away, the column was in no danger of dying from thirst.

At seven o'clock in the morning the troops began their march back to the river. But after covering only two miles the situation became desperate. The men began to stagger out and drop with exhaustion, and every hundred yards they went things looked blacker and blacker. At

when studying the operations in Babylonia during the season between May and September. Many of the Indian troops came from the desert regions in North-West India. yet even they could not march in the strong sun of the Mesopotamian summer through ten miles of waterless sand. In fact, as we have seen, they could not walk five miles when their water-bottles were empty. The heat from the sun above and from the scorching sand beneath dried up the blood in the body, and produced a condition of hallucination which quickly merged into coma, ending rapidly in death. Men did not sweat in the desert. Even with a good water supply they had not enough fluid blood to produce perspiration. They simply dried up. It was only in the steaming marshes and along the steaming rivers that a man could, by drinking much water, enjoy the luxury of perspiration. In daylight desert marching in the summer the human body just dried up; and a corpse, when left on the sand, baked. Practically all marching had to be done by night; and even then the heat in the sand so penetrated to the feet that an

average progress of half a mile an hour was very good going. Eight miles in twenty-four hours was quite as much as any general could expect if he wished his men at the end of the eight miles to be in a condition to lift and fire a rifle. So we had to follow the immemorial custom of warfare in the land of the great rivers, and campaign in winter

and rest in summer.

But the Bedouin, lean from the heat, and with a skin that resisted the flaming air, maintained his raids against our forces. There was a large and powerful Arab tribe, led by a picturesque fighter whom our soldiers called "Jamie." The tents of Jamie were pitched along the Euphrates between Basra and Nasiriyeh. Our pickets in the outpost line were attacked nearly every night, and the bullets sent by Jamie's men penetrated into the farthest corners of the camp. We had a good many casualties owing to these raids, but Jamie was a very sportsmanlike character. One night some of his men, evading all the pickets and guards, got into our slaughter-house, where the carcases of three hun-



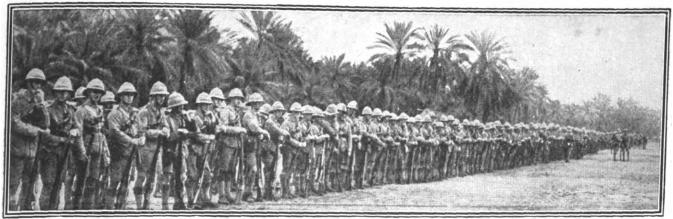
WHERE "SULTAN AFTER SULTAN, WITH HIS POMP, ABODE."

On November 19th, 1915, General Townshend's Division attacked the Turks at Ctesiphon, eighteen miles from Bagdad. After sanguinary fighting, the position was captured, together with about eighteen hundred prisoners. This photograph shows the ruins of the great palace erected by Chosroes I. at Ctesiphon.

the end of four miles, when the sun was high and all the air was aflame, the column had to stop: The men—mostly Indians, and accustomed to tropical heat—could not get any farther. Some of the British officers, who had been very careful with their water-bottles, gave their last drop to Indian officers and other bad cases. Then the general ordered tents to be pitched, and sent his Staff and cavalry to bring water from the river. Meanwhile, the column was in an awful condition, the agony of many of the men being dreadful to witness. One British infantry officer, feeling he was about to die, thought he would make a struggle for it. He strung water-bottles round his neck and around the camp mules, mounted one of the chargers, and made for the river. He could not afterwards tell how he reached it. He was half unconscious. But the animals found the water, and the officer rolled in it on his charger, drank up something that was more mud than water, and filled With his refreshed pack of mulcs he regained the bottles. the camp before the cavalry arrived, and saved many lives.

This extraordinary story must always be borne in mind

dred sheep were hanging, and cut the tails off all the sheep to show that they had The conversion of been there. Unfortunately, Jamie was Jamie not fully aware of the resources of civilisation. The officer in charge of the slaughter-house rather hinted to his men that they need not be more careful than they had been; and the result was that eight more of Jamie's men got through the pickets and crawled to the building. But there were dynamite mines outside the door, and all eight raiders were killed. Soon afterwards two of Jamie's villages were stormed and burned. and Jamie himself began to think that he had better get on the winning side. The fact was that aeroplane reconnaissance had greatly altered the conditions of desert warfare, and as our force also employed armed motor-cars in places where the sand was fairly firm, even the Arabian horse was often outpaced and run down. The use of portable wireless instruments by airmen and troops increased the difficulties of the elusive Bedouin, and made him less elusive than ever he had been before.



A rest on the road almost within sight of the goal. After months of marching and fighting, our troops got within sixteen miles of Bagdad before lack of water compelled them to retire.



A transport on the flooded Shaiba-Basra road. While want of water caused the troops acute distress at some points of the march, excess of it elsewhere caused them infinite trouble. The Shaiba road is generally flooded, the water varying in depth from three inches to six feet.



Machine-guns manned by Indians in action in the desert. India's reply to the Kaiser's appeal to Mohammedanism was all the "more german to the matter," because she did "carry a cannon by her side," and used it most effectively—in defence of the British Empire.



By boats over the desert that lies before Bagdad. Another illustration of the discomforts and difficulties that attended the march to Bagdad. The desert was often flooded, and the troops had to wade through thick mud to the boats.

WITH HORSE AND FOOT ACROSS THE BLAZING SANDS AND FLOODED ROADS OF MESOPOTAMIA.

303

The upshot was that even in the heat of the summer the work of daunting and disarming the hostile tribes went on at a surprising speed. And as our armed vessels had a range of over a week's march down both the Tigris and the Euphrates, and the steamers were able to tow large flotillas of troop-filled bellums and barges to any point at which the hostile Arabs assembled, not only was the pacification of the occupied territory ensured, but fardistant raiding tribes could also be unexpectedly attacked. During this phase of the campaign the Turks had no flying machines, while our Indian Expeditionary Force had both aeroplanes and seaplanes. The eyes of Britain watched all the enemy's movements, and his remote entrenched camps were bombarded in a manner that shook the nerves of the Turkish, Kurdish, and Arabian troops. We lost a few machines, owing principally to engine trouble, arising from the flying sand, and perhaps from the extreme heat. On the other hand, there were some fine rescues of distressed airmen, such as that undertaken by Staff-Sergeant C. B. Heath, of the Australian Flying Corps. He helped to pole one of the long flat-bottomed boats—bellums—for twenty-eight miles, in order to bring back two aviators who had been forced to descend in enemy country. Sergeant Heath worked for twelve hours in the terrible heat of full summer, and effected a rescue.

About the beginning of July, 1915, the Mesopotamian campaign against the Turkish forces guarding Bagdad was undertaken. This was a profound

was undertaken. This was a profound change of policy, for which several reasons

Prince Reuss XXXI. may be discerned. In the first place, our position in regard to Persia was becoming difficult. The German Ambassador at Teheran, Prince

position in regard to Persia was becoming difficult. The German Ambassador at Teheran, Prince Reuss XXXI., was intriguing with various Persian politicians and Persian tribes, and was suborning the armed police and their Swedish officers. The police system had been established by Russia and Britain, with a view to keeping the highways free from brigands, and Swedish officers had been selected in order that neither Russian nor British interests should be especially favoured. It was not foreseen that some of these Swedes would so misuse their position as to transform their large force of 6,000

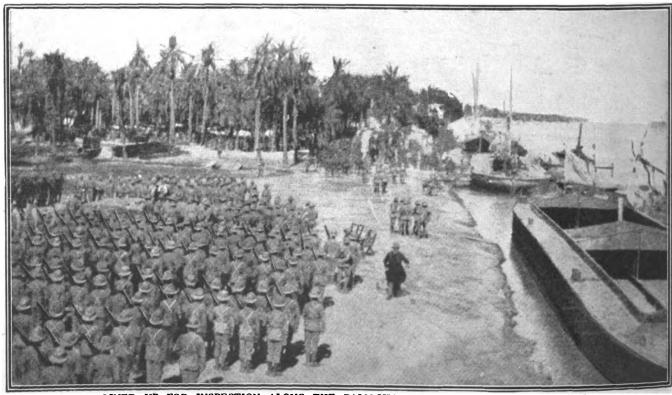
armed men into an instrument of German ambition. But the intrigues that were going on in July among the gendarmerie, and among the mountain tribes on the Turco-Persian border, caused considerable suspicion. The Russian army in the Caucasus was apparently at a standstill, and part of the Turkish forces was extending towards the Persian highlands to co-operate with the mountain tribes and Swedish-led rebels.

The condition of the main Russian armies in Poland encouraged the Turks and the conspirators in Persia to plan a swift and complete Persian conquest,

which would enable them to bring overwhelming forces against our Admiralty oil-fields and pipe-line, and then drive in

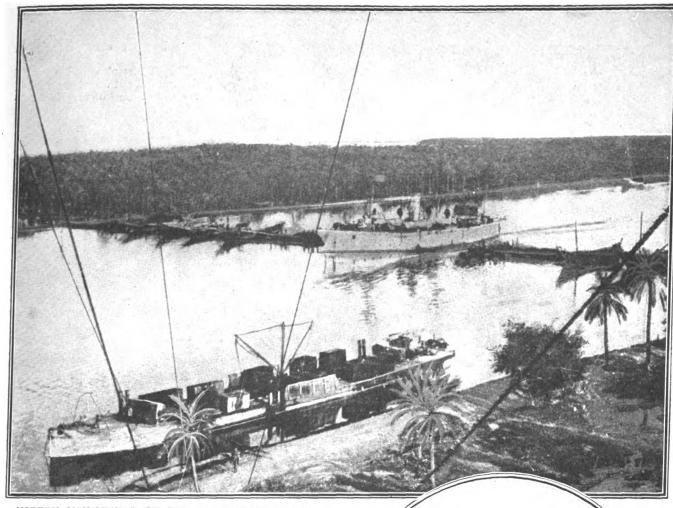
on the flank of our Indian Expeditionary Force. Not only was this vast conspiracy to be countered, there was also our failure in the Dardanelles to be retrieved by some showy achievement which would restore our prestige throughout the Orient. It is, however, extremely improbable that Sir John Nixon planned the new campaign on his own initiative. His forces were utterly inadequate to the proposed task. A garrison was needed in the north to protect the oil-fields and pipe-line; troops were required for the occupation and defence of the string of towns running from Amara to Koweit; so that not much more than a division of Indian and British troops, with a brigade or so as a reserve, was disposable for an attack against the Turkish army in Mesopotamia.

General Townshend, who commanded the division, was set a task harder than that which Clive or Wellesley had carried out in India. With a tiny force, consisting two-thirds of native troops and one-third of British troops, he had continually to attack an enemy who possessed overwhelming numbers. The enemy was, moreover, well equipped, armed with guns of superior power, directed by German officers, and entrenched in difficult positions with all the skill of which German engineers were capable. The British politician was at his old game—trying to conquer a powerful empire by means of an utterly inadequate force. At the Dardanelles we had first thrown at the Ottoman Empire—which had six hundred thousand men under arms



LINED UP FOR INSPECTION ALONG THE PALM-SHADED BANK OF THE EUPHRATES.

British troops on church parade at Kurna, at the junction of the old channel of the Euphrates with the Tigris. The Turks put up a determined fight hereabouts during the summer of 1915, but surrendered when heavily attacked on the flank.



MODERN MAN-OF-WAR ON THE IMMEMORIAL TIGRIS. The cruiser Odin arriving at Kurna, and going through the pontoon bridge which was temporarily "cut" to admit of its passage. An idea of the tropical vegetation which abounds in the neighbourhood of Britain's Mesopotamian war may be gathered from the dense mass of palm-trees on the farther bank.

—a single army corps, shipped in disorder, and unprovided with the heavy howitzers needed in the siege battles of modern times. When this operation had failed, and the Ottoman Government was reported to be waiting only for equipment in order to arm a million men, the British Cabinet sent General Townshend to operate on the other side of the Ottoman Empire and capture Bagdad, in a zone where the Turks were believed to have large forces.

From the nature of things the advance on Bagdad was doomed to failure. General Townshend's only chance of success was to defeat the Turks before their reinforcements

A miracle of heroism arrived. These reinforcements began moving from the Caucasian front towards the middle of September, when the first heavy snow fell on the high mountain

passes, and so strengthened the natural obstacles against the Russian advance that some of the troops could extend eastward in Persia, while others came down the Tigris. Before we could approach Bagdad we had to defeat a large Turkish force on the Euphrates at Nasiriyeh, which lay in a position to cut across the rear or take in the flank the advance we designed to make high up the Tigris. Then at Kut-el-Amara, at the junction between the canal connecting the Euphrates and the Tigris, General Townshend's small force had to meet the main Turkish army when it was strengthened by the force from Nasiriyeh. And all this had to be done in the season of intense heat, when neither the Indian nor the British troops could get along without water, and even then could get along only very slowly, and with much suffering. Having regard to the conditions under which the campaign was fought—the almost general outbreak of disease, the exhausting heat, sleepless, insect-haunted nights, and the bad diet of bully beef and Army biscuit



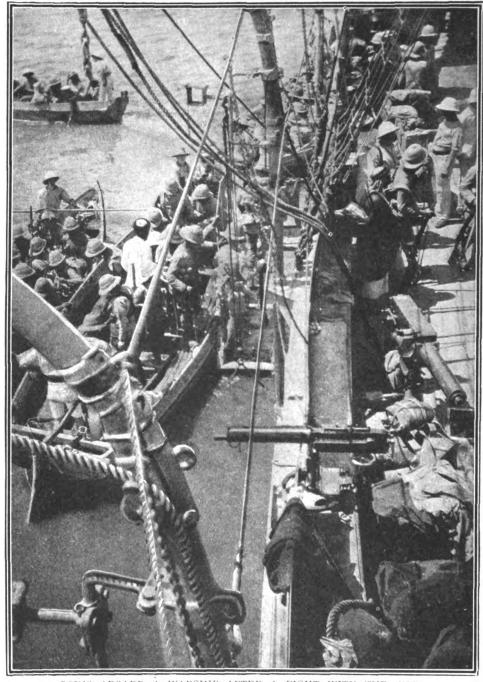
THE PONTOON BRIDGE AT KURNA.

This bridge was destroyed by the Turks with the aid of a floating mine.

A British soldier is seen coming across with an Indian comrade.

supplied for this tropical campaign—it will be the considered judgment of the nation that General Townshend and his men performed a miracle of endurance and heroism. Indeed, we are inclined to maintain that the men who fought in the First Battle of Ypres and in the landing battles of Gallipoli scarcely showed such superhuman endurance as the columns that crawled to victory in Mesopotamia when they were dying of thirst.

The opening episodes in the Bagdad campaign showed how easily our men could have won the decisive battle if they had been properly reinforced from India for the closing effort.



GOING ABOARD A WARSHIP AFTER A FIGHT WITH THE FOE

Campaigning was made comparatively comfortable for some of the troops who fought sufficiently near the Tigris to permit of their being re-embarked after an engagement on the warships that conveyed them up that river.

The Turkish force which had been beaten at Shaiba had retreated down the Euphrates to Nasiriyeh, and had there been joined by strong reinforcements, who brought more artillery, including three heavy siege-guns, transported from Adrianople. The Euphrates route, by which the Turks had made their previous attack on Basra, was the only practicable line for an advance during the flood season. The town of Nasiriyeh was also important as being the capital of the warlike Mustafik tribe of Arabs; and its junction with the cross-desert canal of Shat-el-Hai, running towards the Bagdad region, greatly increased its military importance. The capture of the town would prevent the enemy from advancing on Basra by the Euphrates route, with the result that in the season when the Tigris was in flood our position would be absolutely secure. The enemy, however, had taken great pains with his defences. His army was entrenched on both sides of the wide river, with long lines of very strong entrenchments. extending for about a mile on either bank

The Turks also had powerful detachments thrown out along the old channel of the Euphrates which runs through that vast sheet of water, Lake Hamar, to the junction with the Tigris at Kurna. There was a good deal of skirmishing round Lake Hamar between our armed motor-boats and steamers and the Thorny-croft-built warships which the Turks employed. This river fight-ing had been proceeding since December 9th, 1914, when the capture of Kurna opened the old Euphrates channel to our ships and gun-tugs. The Arab snipers were gradually cleared from the great lake, and then, at the beginning of July, the Hampshire Territorials set out in a steamer to clear the Gurma Safha River, a stretch of the old Euphrates, running south - west to Lake Hamar, above the new channel.

In a fierce fight on July 5th along the Gurma Safha, Private H. W. Elkins distinguished himself by returning at a critical moment to the steamer for ammunition, and taking it, under heavy shell and rifle fire, to the firing-line. Private H. G. Wooldridge, another Hants "Terrier," also showed remarkable courage; on being knocked down by the blast of a shell and badly wounded in the shoulder, he went on fighting until ordered back to the steamer by the medical officer.

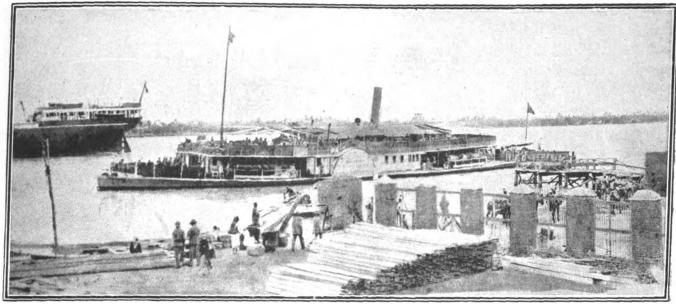
After fighting through the enemy's advanced position below Hamar Lake, our wonderfully-mixed flotilla arrived, at the end of the third week in July, at a distance of about seven miles from Nasiriyeh. The division was then split up. Two brigades were landed on the right or westerly bank, while to the other brigade was assigned the task of working through the groves of date-palms on the left bank. As a reserve, a fourth brigade was brought

down from Amara, and held ready for The Battle of action in river-boats. Each of these boats had four guns, and pushing slowly Nasiriyeh up the river it covered with its fire

our troops on either bank, and silenced some of the enemy's guns that tried to shell our flotilla. The reserve brigade did not come into action, so complete and rapid

was the success of the division.

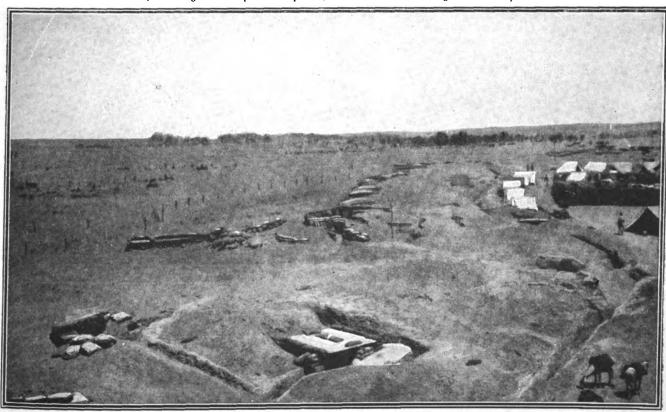
The battle began about half-past four on the morning of July 24th, 1915. For half an hour the brigades had been moving forward; but before the infantry charged, all our howitzers, field, and mountain guns bombarded the enemy's foremost trenches with high-explosive shells. For a full hour our batteries continued to smash up the enemy's entrenchments and gun positions; and then the 2nd West Kents advanced through the date groves, while gight of our machine and the stations. eight of our machine-guns, with the supporting battalions, covered the advance by rapid fire on the opposing trenches



On the rivers, flood-waters, and reed-grown marshes of Mesopotamia every form of craft was utilised. The river steamer shown above, and used for the passage of troops and supplies, was protected with armour-plates and sand-bags, and carried a gun on deck.



Indian mountain battery crossing the burning sands of the legendary site of Eden. So great was the heat that vigorous troops in the prime of life, marching at the top of their powers, seldom did more than eight miles a day.



How the heroes of the march to Bagdad entrenched themselves against Arabs and Turks. The belligerents, European and Asiatic, suffered less from each other's weapons than from the deadly little blood-sucking insects, which proved the real defenders of the land, INCIDENTS IN THE AMAZING CAMPAIGN BETWEEN THE TIGRIS AND EUPHRATES.

Despite this covering fire, however, the West Kents were met by a terrible fusillade that swept their front lines. An officer in one of the regiments that was maintaining a covering musketry fire said the most magnificent sight he had ever seen was the West Kents going on under the enemy's terrific fusillade, and manœuvring as if they were on parade. As soon as they got up to the Turkish trenches, they wheeled round to the right, and, while their comrades stopped firing for fear of hitting them, they leapt into the

trenches and were lost to view.

As they disappeared they got to work with the bayonet, and in a short time the spectators watching the game of life and death saw the Turks running as if the devil himself were after them. So the brigade opened fire again at the fugitives. Sergeant W. Wannell and Company-Sergeant-Major A. G. Elliott, both of the 2nd West Kents, were the first to reach the enemy's trenches. They each led several bayonet charges in the close fighting which followed the attack, clearing trench after trench with steel and bullet. Sergeant Wannell also showed himself a remarkable bombthrower, and Company-Sergeant-Major Elliott, after heading charge after charge, helped to rescue a wounded comrade under fire. When Lieutenant Hill was wounded, yet still fighting with his sword against a throng of enemies, Private Howe leaped to his help and, by shooting one Turk and bayoneting four others, saved his officer's life. Two others of the West Kents—Private E. T. Bye and Private W. Bridger—distinguished themselves in tending the wounded and searching for them under the enemy's fusillade.

Company-Sergeant-Major E. J. Newbrook was a fine fighter.

Badly wounded during the first attack, he remained directing his party till the close of the day's operations. Many soldiers have done this sort of thing Magnificent West Kents

in France and Flanders; but the climate in Mesopotamia in the fourth week of July was a trying one for a severely wounded man to keep fighting in until evening fell. In the Ypres battles the 1st West Kents—the regiment that never lost a trench—won the highest honours in the Army; and at Nasiriyeh, in Babylonia, the men of the 2nd Battalion showed themselves of the same grand cast of character.

After the West Kents wheeled and jumped into the Turkish trenches, the rest of the brigade advanced to support the attack, carrying all the ammunition they could collect. The brigade wheeled in the direction taken by

its leading battalion, and picking their way through mounds of dead Turks, the men emerged into an open space where the Kentish heroes were taking cover by a low bank, and firing at the enemy in the date groves.all around them. By this time the West Kents were using their last cartridges; but a battalion of Sikhs gave them some ammunition, and reinforced the firing-line by the low bank. Soon afterwards the order came to take two loopholed towers from which the enemy was maintaining

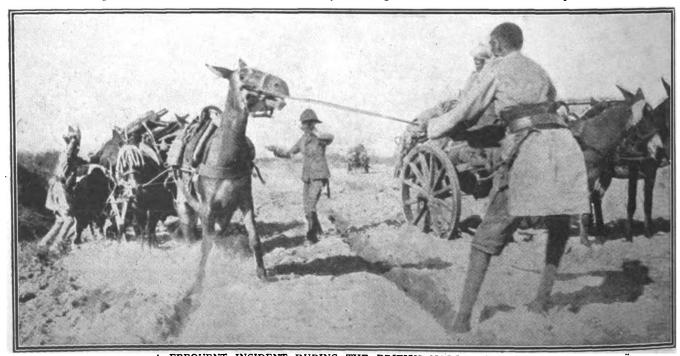
a heavy fire. A double company of Sikhs and some twelve of the West Rout of the Kents cleared the Turks out of the

trenches on their right, and then shouting out "Hurrah!" like boys at a picnic, they stabbed their way along a communication sap, and took both towers in fifteen minutes.

Turks

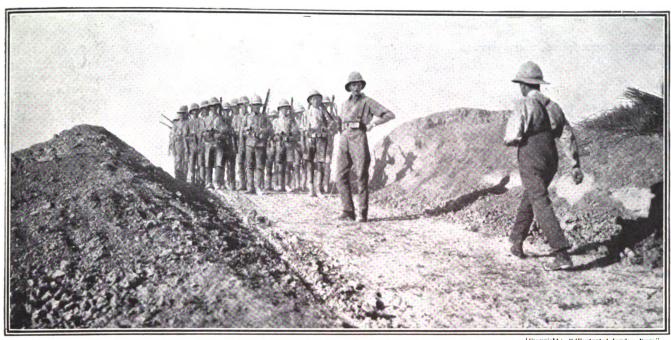
The Turks lost many men, for they fought with matting over their trenches to keep the sun out, and the Kents and the Sikhs stuck them with the bayonet through the matting while they were firing up rather wildly, without being able to see clearly what was happening over their covering. After capturing the towers and a considerable number of prisoners, the Sikhs and the handful of white men had ten minutes' rest, which they spent in binding up their wounded and putting them in the shade of the towers. Then the small force fought the Turks out of another long line of trench, running down to the edge of a creek which formed the extreme left of the Turkish position. Here there was a village with another couple of towers, and these were also stormed after long, terrible bayonet work above the last mat-covered trench. By this time the division had won the battle. The Turks could be seen running away on the left, and the Sikhs and the West Kents were signalled to hold the ground they had won, and not to advance any farther. So, posting guards, they slept by the last two captured towers that night.

Across the river our troops were equally successful. The Hants Territorials shared the honours of the day with the West Kents; for, despite the fact that the enemy's position was protected by barbed-wire entanglements, the Territorial battalion made a splendid storming charge. Two men-Private N. W. Player and Private J. Hillraced in front of their line, and were the first to enter the Turkish trenches. There they fought with a skill and courage that made them a fine example to all ranks.



A FREQUENT INCIDENT DURING THE BRITISH MARCH TO BAGDAD.

Mule team in difficulties on the scorching desert sands that had to be traversed by the troops and supply columns during the memorable campaign in Mesopotamia.



Copyright: "Illustrated London News."

BRITISH HEROES OF THE DESERTS AND MARSHES ALONG THE TIGRIS.

British troops, in sun-helmets and shorts, going on picket duty in Mesopotamia. On December 8th, 1915, the Turks began a fierce onslaught on the Indo-British position at Kut-el-Amara. They attacked persistently for three days, but without success, and their losses numbered thousands.

Another private of the Territorial battalion—E. G. Verrall—was wounded early in the battle after giving a fine exhibition of resourcefulness and daring bravery. Lance-Corporal R. Snow, who was in charge of a machinegun, kept his weapon in action under a heavy shell and rifle fire. So terrible was the work he did among the enemy that the Turkish batteries singled him out as a target. They caught him at last with shrapnel, after he had been working his machine-gun for two hours; but in spite of his injuries the corporal continued to work his gun with steady and deadly skill for another hour, until it was put out of action by a Turkish shell. Another non-commissioned officer who won military distinction in the Battle of Nasiriyeh was Staff-Sergeant P. T. Wells, of the 2nd Cameron Highlanders. At a critical point and period

in the attack, when the Turks were still unshaken, Sergeant Wells led his platoon with remarkable ability and coolness until he fell at last severely wounded.

Among the naval men who especially distinguished themselves was Lieutenant - Commander Seymour. He was in charge of the armed launch Shushan, and working her gun himself in difficult circum-stances, he sank an armed Turkish patrol-boat. Lieutenant Hugh Fortescue Curry, R.N., was in command of the stern - wheel steamer Muzaffri, and when our men on the right bank of the Euphrates were running short of cartridges, he landed under fire from the Turkish guns, and supplied the soldiers with ammunition. Lieutenant William Vesey Hamilton Harris,

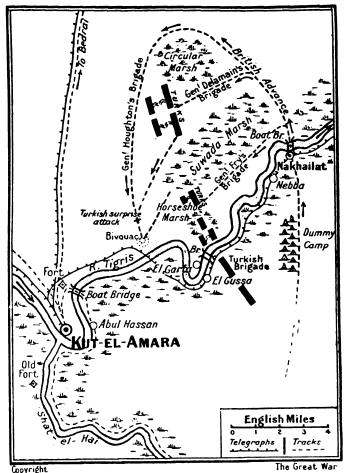
R.N., while steaming along the river in the armed launch Sumana, observed that our troops had got into a very awkward position. There was a wide creek between them and the enemy, and both the mud and the water were so deep that they could not cross. The Turks were sweeping the creek with heavy gun and rifle fire, and it looked as though this part of our attack would be completely hung up. But Lieutenant Harris, with the ready ingenuity that marks the British sailor, jumped into a barge, and poled it into the creek. There, with shells bursting above him and bullets singing around his head, he turned the barge crosswise, and thus made a bridge for the troops. The Shushan, the Sumana, and other armed launches were uncommonly powerful vessels, because they had each in tow horsebarges containing a 477 in. gun. Most of our artillery was

floating on the river, and if Turkish marks-manship had been good, the enemy's shells might have done a great deal of damage to our floating batteries. But our gunners had the whiphand of the enemy all the time, and in our large but frail flotilla the guns were worked so quickly and so exactly that the Turkish batteries were silenced before they did much harm.

At the turning-point in the battle, the Shushan pushed up to the point where one of the main creeks entered the river, and so shelled the Turks that they broke and fled. At half-past five in the afternoon the Mejidieh steamer, from which the general and some of his Staff officers worked, reached this point, and soon afterwards the enemy's camp



GENERAL SIR JOHN ECCLES NIXON, K.C.B.
From April, 1915, to January, 1916, Commander-in-Chief in Mesopotamia.



GENERAL TOWNSHEND'S LINES OF ATTACK ON KUT-EL-AMARA.

From the Dummy Camp on the north bank of the Tigris two Indo-British brigades made a great surprise trek round the marshes on the northern bank and almost encircled the fleeing enemy.

was occupied, all the remaining Turks bolting towards the north. At the junction of the river and the creek the Mejidieh found four 15-pounder Turkish fieldguns commanding the lower reaches of the river. If the Indo-British force had not pushed through that evening, it would have had a tough nut to crack next morning. The river was two hundred yards wide, and another wide creek served as a moat to the Turkish position. After the battery had been discovered and silenced, Lieutenant Seymour pushed ahead in the Shushan launch and reached Nasiriyeh.

The riverside town of two-storied mud-brick houses was fluttering with white flags, and it was just beyond the

Peace and War at Nasiriyeh

town that Lieutenant Seymour spotted two Turkish Thornycroft-built patrolboats, one of which he sank with a 4.7 in. shell. As the Shushan returned past the

town she was fired on from the white-flagged houses. Had our troops practised German methods, they might have been tempted to sack and burn the capital of the Mustafik tribe. As it was, the British and Indians camped in tents outside the town for the night, and on July 25th some of them went to the bazaar and peacefully bought what fresh fruit there was for sale. Nasiriyeh was found to be a well-laid-out town, but its sanitary conditions were so bad that our troops camped in tents outside till our engineers had cleaned up the worst filth. By the end of the month the extraordinary heat and the arduous exertions of the division had told so heavily on both officers and men that ninety-five per cent. of the force was in quite an exhausted condition.

The Turkish Commander-in-Chief, Nuredin Pasha, whose base was at Kut-el-Amara, had despatched a large body

of reinforcements along the Shat-el-Hai Canal. If this force had arrived during the battle, our sun-smitten, overworked division would have been compelled to retire. Even if the Turks had collected the fugitives from Nasiriyeh, and quickly attacked our exhausted men, the situation would have been full of peril for us. Happily, things fell out otherwise. The fresh Turkish troops met the routed army of the Euphrates, and were so impressed by the tales of the terrible valour of the British and the Indians, that they, too, turned tail, and hastened back to Kut-el-Amara. We captured some fourteen guns and a thousand prisoners, at the cost of a casualty list of five hundred officers and men. The work of our guns was dreadful; our shells absolutely smashed the hostile trenches, and nine hundred Turkish corpses were found in a small area.

But the work of fighting in a temperature of 130 degrees in the shade was not so distressing as the task of cleaning up the mess and filth of the Arab town—which engendered every tropical disease—and making it less of a death-trap. The barracks were uninhabitable, and must sadly have brought down the strength of the Turkish troops who had lodged there. By the first week in August our men were encamped in tents in the town, and were living in comparative comfort, though in extreme heat, and sorely troubled with flies. Towards the end of the month, when Nasiriyeh had been cleaned and garrisoned, the larger part of the force had another long voyage on steamers and barges, with only grass mats shading them from the sun. They went back to Amara in an attire resembling that of the soldiers in Mr. Rudyard Kipling's tale of the taking of Lung-Tung-Pen.

tale of the taking of Lung-Tung-Pen.

The men left behind at Nasiriyeh, to keep the warlike Arabs in order, had a source of consolation similar to that of the garrison of Kurna, though, like their comrades, they did not appreciate it. According to the map illustrating Sir William Willcocks' last paper on Mesopotamian irrigation, the country immediately north of Nasiriyeh, and lying between the Euphrates and the Shat-el-Hai. was the primitive Garden of Eden, where the Sumerians and

Akkadians built up the first great civilisation of Babylonia. This happened ten thousand years ago, and the British garrison, suffering from heat, dysentery,

and fever, stared through the date groves at the barren desert beyond the river, and wondered why intelligent human beings ever chose such a place in which to live.

Meanwhile, General Townshend, based on Amara on the Tigris, was working his ships up the great northern river and getting on friendly terms with the powerful tribes of the Beni Lam Arabs. These warlike Bedouins held most of the land between the Tigris and the northern mountains. They had also won considerable territory on the southern side of the river, where the vast sandy steppes, with patches of camel-thorn, extended for hundreds of miles. On the southern side of the river, in the desert waste between Amara and Kut-el-Amara, were other great confederations of fighting Bedouins, such as the Abu Mohammed tribes, who wandered in their black tents round our river base, with the Abu Dir Diraye Arabs and the Makusis tribes, the last being camped around Kut-el-Amara, and fighting as light cavalry on the side of the Turks. All these nomads, who had battled for ages among themselves for the spring pastures along the rivers, were starkly independent Ishmaelites, caring neither for Turk nor for Briton, but possessed with a love for fighting and a very keen eye to the main chance of winning booty.

Most of their mullahs were inclined, for religious reasons, to urge their countrymen to fight against the infidels, and help the Ottoman Caliph. On the other hand, our nation enjoyed a high prestige in Mesopotamia, and especially round Bagdad. There must have been thousands of Arabs who proudly called themselves "Ingliz" and professed to be our fellow-subjects. This they did in the hope of escaping the attentions of the Turkish tax-collector and

claiming the aid of the British Consul at Bagdad when they got into trouble. A British firm of shipowners, Messrs. Lynch, had maintained for many years an important traffic along the great river, and their steamers were, despite all fantastic German claims to the commerce of Bagdad and the Persian Gulf, the great trading vehicles of Mesopotamia.

Our victories on the lower rivers had made the sheikhs of the Beni Lam inclined to enter into a league with us; for, as some of their principal rivals had sided with the

Co-operation of the Beni Lam

Turkish army, the Beni Lam had little to win if we were defeated, but they could look forward to acquiring new grazing

grounds if they assisted us against the other Arabs and against the Turks. From our point of view the trouble was that the Bedouin looked on battle as a sport, and quickly rode away from the conflict if he met with a slight reverse. Fighting was more a pastime than a struggle to the death with the Bedouin. In many famous engage-ments between tribe and tribe, the dead could be numbered on one hand, and the wounded scarcely amounted to more than a score. The Bedouin did not like turning his winter sport into a deadly contest, and, trusting to the fine quality of his horse, he galloped away under the shelter of the sand-ridges when matters began to look serious.

The light Arabian cavalry was useful only after a battle was won. Then the Bedouin horsemen would readily ride down the beaten fugitive infantry. As a rule they did not mind who was beaten, so long as they could pursue; and at the Battle of Shaiba the defeated Turks had been attacked by their own Bedouin cavalry. All the Bedouin wanted was the rifle, ammunition, and other warlike spoil of the man he could kill without much risk to himself.

So long as the British force advanced victoriously,

General Townshend could count upon most of the Bedouin horsemen turning upon the Turk, in order to kill and rob him, and in order to make friends with the conqueror. Nevertheless, there were considerable bodies of sniping and raiding Arabs who continually pestered our expedition, and remained fairly faithful to the defeated and retreating troops of the Caliph. A fighting league with the great warlike confederation of Beni Lam enabled us to use a long stretch of the Tigris with little danger from musketry fire on both banks, and for a still longer stretch of the Tigris the northern bank was peopled with friendly Arabs. In these circumstances Sir John Nixon, as Commander-in-Chief, with the British Resident in the Persian Gulf, Sir Percy Cox, and Major-General Townshend, commanding the fighting division at Amara, entered into an alliance with the Beni Lam Arabs.

The advance towards Bagdad began as soon as the intense summer heat moderated in the middle of September. Our motor-boats explored the Tigris over the great distance between Amara and Kut-el-Amara. This work, indeed, had

been going on for nearly ten months, and had been undertaken with increasing The advance towards vigour when the flood-water from the Bagdad

melting snows in the Caucasus had sub-sided. The captains of the Lynch steamers, who had studied the Tigris for years, could not give full information about its navigation; for the great winding stream was restless in its bed, and in every flood season it changed its shoals and sandbeds, tore away its mud-banks, and altered its course in small or large ways. Only actual reconnaissance could reveal if certain marshes dried in the summer sufficiently to enable troops to ford certain difficult creeks. Steamers had to be prepared to find a newly-made mudbank in the river blocking the line of advance, and the



LEADERS OF THE INDO-BRITISH EXPEDITION IN MESOPOTAMIA.

General Sir John Eccles Nixon, K.C.B., and officers of his Headquarters Staff. After capturing Kut-el-Amara at the end of September, 1915, a portion of Sir John Nixon's force, under General Townshend, reached Ctesiphon, eighteen miles from Bagdad. There, after its memorable march over the sands and swamps along the Tigris, the expedition suffered its first reverse.



A CITY GATE ON THE ROAD TO BAGDAD.

One of the double-entried gateways of the city of Zobeir, a few miles south-west of Basra on the Tigris.

disposition of the riverside tribes, many of whom were in the habit of firing, even in peace time, at the Lynch steamers, could only be ascertained by steaming past their territory.

In the last week of September, 1915, our forces were safely transported to the neighbourhood of Kut-el-Amara. We had still only a single weak division, with a brigade in The Turks were three divisions strong, with a large medley of mounted Bedouins acting as light cavalry. In their position near Kut-el-Amara, about ten miles from our new camp, Nuredin Pasha's troops were deeply entrenched behind barbed-wire entanglements, and were supported by heavier artillery than we could bring up the

On September 23rd two of our Plan of brigades moved close to the enemy until attack altered they came within sight of the hostile tents.

Our principal camp was then pitched on the south bank of the Tigris. Our steamers took up a position ahead of our tents, and laid their guns along the ground between the armies, ready to smash up any surprise attack. It is worthy of note that even in the short march of eight miles in the direction of the Canal of Shat-el-Hai, some of our men still dropped out through the heat. Though the summer was nearing its close, the sun was still very fierce,

and the trying climatic conditions were to have an important bearing on the result of the battle. The two brigades demonstrated against the enemy on September 25th, but it was then discovered that the Turks had placed mines all over the south bank of the river. Thereupon General Townshend altered his plan of attack. On the night of September 27th the two brigades crossed the river by a flying bridge, leaving their tents standing, as a dummy camp to delude the enemy. A Turkish division remained facing our empty tents, and it was the absence from the real battlefield of this enemy force,

enem∀

during the critical period of the struggle, that enabled us to win the victory. Had Deceiving the all the Turkish forces been concentrated on the north bank of the river, our attack would almost certainly have failed. The enemy's position was of great natural strength, and his

entrenchments were almost impregnable. Between the town of Kut-el-Amara and the hamlet of Nakhailat, the Tigris makes a sudden southward bend. A little north of the bend was a swamp known by its shape as the Horse-shoe Marsh. Then north of this marsh was a patch of firm ground; and beyond this ground, still going northward, was a larger swamp, known as the Suwada Marsh. North of the Suwada Marsh was another narrow strip of firm ground, with a third swamp north of it, which we may call the Circular Marsh. The Turkish entrenchments extended between the river and the Horseshoe Marsh, and continued between this and the Suwada Marsh; and were further prolonged from the Suwada Marsh to the Circular Marsh. The heaviest Turkish artillery was sited near the river behind the Horse-shoe Marsh, close to a place known as the Hundred and Twenty-South of the Tigris the enemy's entrenchments one Tents. stretched for some miles opposite our abandoned tents. The river was blocked by a line of sunken dhows and a line of taick wire just above the water.

The Turks, directed by German engineers, had spent months in fortifying their positions. Their trenches were ten feet deep, with bomb-proof communication trenches, overhead cover, and high wire entanglements. fronting which were wolf-pits, with pointed stakes at the bottom, and dynamite mines concealed beneath the sand. Moreover, all the Turkish guns were so dug in as to make useless anything but a direct hit with a howitzer shell. Our five days' operations were very trying, as it was distressingly hot in the day-time, though very cold at night; and the sand-flies prevented our troops from getting any sleep in the short time they could snatch for a rest.

During daylight and darkness on September 26th, 27th, and 28th, a column, under General Fry, gradually worked up to within four hundred yards of the Turkish wire entanglements round the Horse-shoe Marsh. The troops went forward slowly and carefully, digging themselves in under continual shell and rifle fire. Our guns in the open could not silence the Turkish artillery, which plastered our trenches and tried to curtain off our troops

during their swift, short forward rushes. Luckily, the ground lent itself to our Feint attack at Horse-shoe Marsh attacking operations, as every hundred yards or so there were deep dry ditches, which gave good cover. Still more luckily, the Turkish shells

were of very poor quality. The segment shells, which we had sold to them after the Boer War, did as little damage to us as they had done to the Boers, while the shrapnel was so bad that our men went through bursts of it, and were only wounded if they were struck by the fuses and cases. The attacking brigade only had ninety casualties all told, during its task of holding the enemy round the Horse-shoe Marsh and by the river.

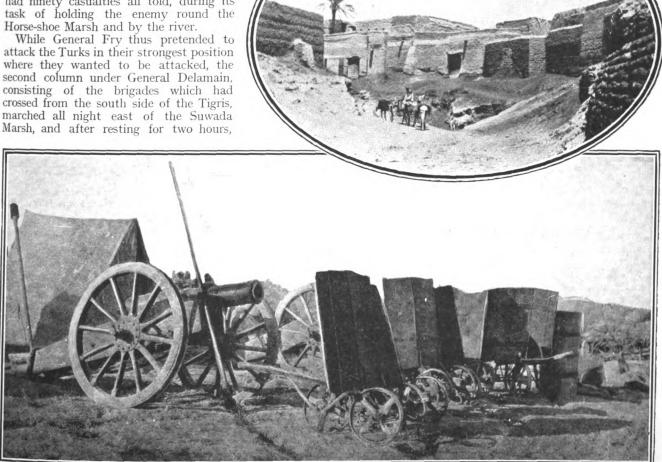
attack the Turks in their strongest position where they wanted to be attacked, the second column under General Delamain, consisting of the brigades which had crossed from the south side of the Tigris, marched all night east of the Suwada

reached their new attacking position at a quarter to five in the morning of September 28th. The position at which they arrived was a neck of dry land between the Suwada Marsh and the Circular Marsh, where the Turks had con-

structed their most northerly entrenchments. General Delamain's column Turks taken by moving cautiously over ground which had surprise been only partly examined by one of our

sapper officers, advanced for a mile between the marshes, and then came in full view of the enemy's trenches. But our airmen and one of our scouts had found that, right to the north of the last swamp, the Circular Marsh, there was no enemy position. So, before opening the decisive struggle, General Townshend detached part of the force under General Delamain, and, placing it under the command of General Houghton, directed it to march round the Circular Marsh northward, and make a flank attack on the Turkish entrenchments that barred the advance of General Delamain's troops.

The general's design was to outflank the enemy with General Houghton's column, and then to combine this column with General Delamain's column, and make another outflanking swoop on the enemy's main system of works around the Horse-shoe Marsh. It may seem extraordinary that Nuredin Pasha and his Staff of officers should have left their northern flank exposed to a turning



WHERE EAST JOINED ISSUE WITH WEST NEAR THE "CITY OF THE CALIPHS." Tows used by the Turks to convey ammunition, with metal shield attached to afford some protection under fire, and a muzzle-loading This primitive weapon, with the trolleys, was captured from the enemy at the Battle of Essinn. In oval: An old-world scene within the walls of Zobeir, near the Persian Gulf.

movement round the Circular Marsh. But the Turkish commander and his German advisers knew their business. The open road round the Circular Marsh seems to have been designed as a trap. There was a Turkish brigade hidden behind some ridges near the northernmost marsh; and so well was it concealed that our reconnoitring airmen do not seem to have suspected its existence. But, on the other hand, General Houghton's column set out in the darkness and moved so quickly round the marsh that the Turks were taken by surprise when it appeared

Turks were taken by surprise when it appeared.

At 8.20 a.m. General Houghton was able to send a wireless message that he had reached the left rear of the Turkish lines. Thereupon, the skilfully-divided brigados of General Townshend's division gave battle. Along the river our flotilla of armed steamers, launches, tugboats, and horse-barges had been bombarding the Turkish main position since daybreak on September 27th. Our river fleet, headed by H.M.S. Comet, first tried to dash in close to the bend in the stream, and work their guns at short range. But the Turks spotted the masthead and wireless aerials, and they dropped their shells so close that our vessels retired and struck their topmasts. Our

at some distance behind our fighting-line. But our holding troops were more seriously menaced in another direction, as early in the day the Turkish division south of the river discovered that our camp there was a dummy affair, and about nine o'clock in the morning it crossed the Tigris by a flying bridge and entered fiercely into action.

The larger part of this fresh division was directed beyond the Horse-shoe Marsh, in a counter-attack against General Delamain's column. This column, operating between Suwada Marsh and Circular Marsh, began

its assault at 8.20 a.m. All our available Heroism of artillery between the marshes was con-Mahrattas and Dorsets centrated against a small portion of the

centrated against a small portion of the enemy's front, and, covered by the fire of the guns and the Maxim and musketry fire of their supports, a double company of the 117th Mahrattas made a desperate rush on the Turkish trenches. Nearly half the gallant Indians were put out of action; but the remnant went on, undaunted by the terrible losses, and, leaping into the enemy's deeplydug line, bayoneted their way along it. A double company of the 2nd Dorsets was then hurled at the enemy's



GENERAL TOWNSHEND AND STAFF IN THE TIGRIS VALLEY.

General C. V. F. Townshend, C.B., D.S.O., the indomitable commander of the force which advanced through the reputed Garden of Eden to Ctesiphon, eighteen miles from Bagdad, riding with his Staff. General Townshend is a descendant of the Marquis Townshend who fought with Wolfe at Quebec.

batteries on shore co-operated at high pressure with the guns of the river fleet, and the daring lieutenants commanding our armed launches crept closer and closer to the enemy's field batteries and succeeded by noon in killing or scattering the Turkish gun-crews. Our ships were hit several times, but no vital damage was done to them. There was, however, one big Turkish gun that could not be silenced. One of our shore batteries managed to get

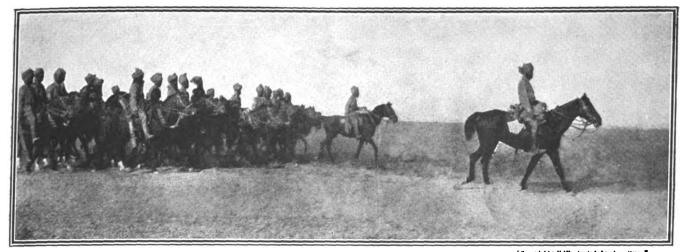
be silenced. One of our shore batteries managed to get within range by galloping closer. The 
Dummy camp discovered killing two gunners and wounding several others; but that was the last shot the big

gun fired, for our gunners got a shower of shells dead on it.

In the meantime, General Fry's brigade remained in front of the Horse-shoe position, under a violent fire all day long. A constant stream of shells burst, some one hundred yards behind the troops, coming from a group of hostile quick-firers, which seemed to be worked by German gunners. Whoever they were, they were certainly good artillerymen. They maintained a speed of fire like that of a huge Maxim. Having, however, no airmen to spot for them, these enemy gunners placed most of their shells

trenches, and when by furious fighting they also had secured a hold, the rest of the battalion followed. The sappers were consolidating the captured position when the leading troops of General Houghton came into action round the rear of the Circular Marsh. All the enemy's northern flank had been stormed in a frontal attack by a battalion and a half of Mahrattas and Dorsets! But the Turks still held courageously to their southern flank, from which they sent a devastating fire against our men.

Hurrying into action from his position of advantage, General Houghton threw the Oxfords forward with the other battalions of his wearied brigade, and in an action that lasted from half-past ten to two o'clock, the encircled Turkish force was either destroyed or captured. Concealed in their ten-foot ditches, the Turkish soldiers fought with grim determination, and as our troops had to work above the mat-covered trenches in the scorching sunlight, they were much fatigued by their exertions. General Houghton's men, in particular, had been marching and fighting since the previous morning, and had had no water since the previous evening. They had just carried out a forced march of five hours round the Circular Marsh, and



INDIAN CAVALRY PATROLLING THE DESERT NEAR KUT-EL-AMARA. The force which, under General Townshend, inflicted a severe defeat on the Turks at Ctesiphon, included a large proportion of Indian troops.

They were obliged to retire to Kut-el-Amara, owing to the arrival of strong enemy reinforcements.

heating.

while they were fighting down their trapped enemy, a scorching wind, laden with dense clouds of dust, swept the General Delamain's men, who had also made a night march from the dummy camp on the other side of the Tigris, were likewise exhausted from want of water. By the time they had taken the enemy's position, with several guns and many prisoners, they were completely exhausted. The commander of the united victorious columns, General Delamain, hoped that by marching round the back of the enemy's position, between the river and Suwada Marsh, he could reach the Tigris at one of its bends, and there water his troops and horses before he again engaged the enemy.

Tropical heat and terrible thirst

General Houghton's long-enduring troops were already making steady progress southward to the west of the

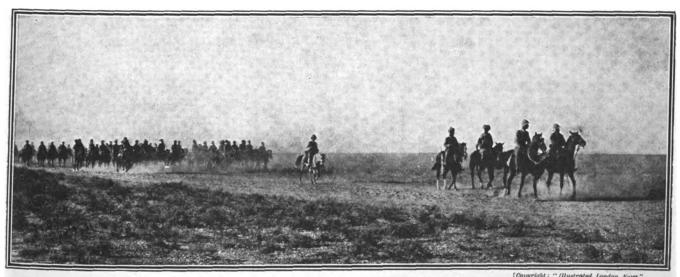
Suwada Marsh. Early in the afternoon the Turkish division that had crossed the river at nine o'clock in the morning opened a furious counter-attack against the wearied brigade, while a force of Turkish cavalry tried to make an outflanking charge. But both infantry and horsemen were beaten back by our little flying column, though it was worn out by long marching in the tropical heat and consumed by a terrible thirst. After beating off first the Turkish infantry and then the Turkish cavalry, General Houghton's troops still struggled on southward towards the river, a mile or more in the rear of the main Turkish entrenched forces round Horse-shoe Marsh. But when the men had almost reached the water and completely

encircled the enemy, the heavy Turkish batteries near Kut swept the ground with a storm of shrapnel. General Houghton's column had to draw back, away from the water for which it was thirsting, and rejoin General Delamain's force on the western edge of Suwada Marsh. Both columns were then in the desperate position of Coleridge's Ancient Mariner, with "Water, water everywhere, nor any drop to drink."

The stagnant marsh water was so foul that, though our men felt that they could risk any disease for a long drink, they could not, happily, bring themselves to swallow it. Still, even the marsh water was, at dire need, good enough to pour into the jackets of our machine-guns and keep them from Water only for running out of action through overthe guns

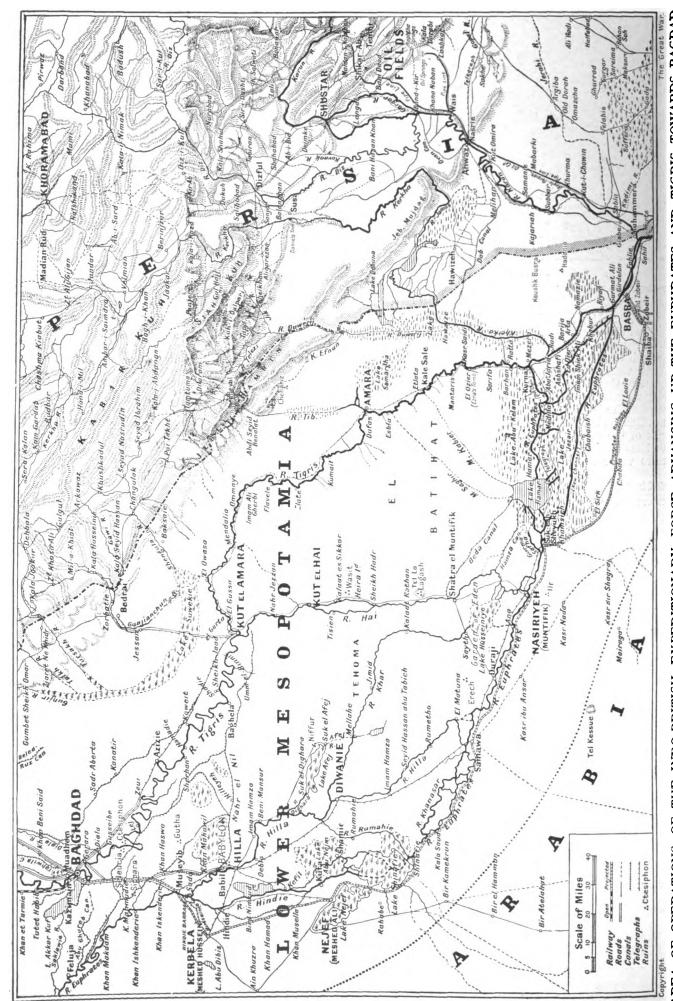
By this time the men had been marching and fighting for thirteen and a half hours, and after General Delamain's force had gone to the assistance of General Houghton's column, most of the troops had to be given a rest. They rested until five o'clock, and then the commander of the wonderful division, General Townshend, ordered by wireless a combined attack on the formidable Horse-shoe lines. General Fry's column, which had been making only very slow progress towards the Turkish centre, was ordered to wait until General Delamain's column got right on the enemy's rear.

Meanwhile, the two brigades under General Delamain and General Houghton wearily tramped along the south-



VICTORS ON A FIELD OF ANCIENT HISTORY. Indian cavalry, with their British officers, riding in the desert near Kut-el-Amara. Fighting side by side with British troops, the Indians won high praise from General Townshend.

Digitized by Google



AREA OF OPERATIONS OF THE INDO-BRITISH EXPEDITIONARY FORCE ADVANCING UP THE EUPHRATES AND TIGRIS TOWARDS BAGDAD. From the great desert triangle of Kut-el-Amara. Nasinyeh, and Basra, with its connecting river and canal lines, the heroic little Indo-British Division, commanded by General Townshend, tried to capture Bagdad and link with the Russian columns advancing into the Persian highlands on the north.



AN ORIENTAL VENICE: BASRA, A picturesque scene at Basra, situated near the River Shat-el-Arab, about fifty miles from the Persian Gulf. Palm-trees grow here in great and beautiful profusion. The boats seen in the photograph are the principal

CITY OF "THE ARABIAN NIGHTS." conveyance in this Venice of Arabia. Basra's chief exports are dates and attar of roses. Basra fell into British hands on November 21st, 1914, General Barrett with two hattalions taking possession of the city.

west edge of Suwada Marsh, and struck out once more towards the river, behind Nuredin Pasha's main position. Then occurred the most dramatic and extraordinary incident in this eventful day of tropical battle. A Turkish force of five battalions, with four guns, which had probably been detached to guard against General Houghton's out-

flanking movement, abruptly appeared through the dust or mirage which had been hiding it. The Turkish column, when seen, was marching parallel with the

when seen, was marching parallel with the British column, about a mile westward, slightly behind our troops. The effect of this surprising menace was electrical. With amazing rapidity, both brigades, which had seemed about to drop and die for want of water, wheeled to their right, and started to the attack as if it were morning, and they were fresh from sleep and breakfast. In one long, splendid charge, during which they hardly fired a shot, they broke in among the Turks with the bayonet, routed them in a single violent effort, captured all their guns, and shot them down as they fled in the gathering darkness towards the bridge of boats.

It was all over in an hour, and our exhausted troops, overtaken by the night, dropped down on the scene of their victory for a cheerless bivouac. Owing to the darkness and the absolute fatigue of the parched troops and horses, the encircling movement, which had begun at five o'clock in the afternoon, could not be completed. Nuredin Pasia was able in the night to evacuate his fortress, and move his troops across the bridge of boats to the southern bank of the Tigris. From there the Turkish force went by forced marches across the Shat-el-Hai, and on to Azizie, where another system of fortifications had been constructed

General Barrett with two battalions taking possession of the city.

for the defence of Bagdad. According to Bedouin rumours,
Nuredin was greatly perturbed at the thought of being
overtaken by our troops with their river transport. The

first day he marched his men thirty-five miles towards

Bagdad, and the following day they had to do thirty miles in twenty-four hours. This was no bad marching feat, even for Turkish regular troops, at the heated end of a Mesonotamian summer

Mesopotamian summer.

Undoubtedly the impossibility of obtaining, on the spot, means for watering the two British brigades, which marched through or round the swamps almost to the enemy's rear, robbed General Townshend of a grand, decisive victory. His planning of the battle was as great a feat as stood to the credit of any British general in history; and his troops, in their qualities of endurance and fighting power, were as magnificent as any mingled force of Sepoys and Britons that Clive or Wellesley handled. A single Indo-British division had outflanked three Turkish divisions. The manœuvre against such heavy odds was a classic piece of strategy. Nothing but lack of water, in

the critical afternoon of September 28th, prevented our small force from surrounding and capturing an enemy of three times

their strength, and conquering the whole of Mesopotamia as far as Bagdad by one swift blow. As General Townshend seems to have made his plan of battle on the spur of the moment, when he found the enemy was too strong on the south bank, and marched his main force across the river and around the marshes, the need for the large number of water-carts required to water two brigades could not have been foreseen. Moreover, such a number of water-carts was not to be had hundreds of miles down the river at



IN AN INDIAN STRONGHOLD AT THE BATTLE OF SHAIBA. Indians, wearing their newly-adopted shorts, firing on the Turks from behind a high breastwork built of earth and sand-bags.

our principal base. The officer who arranged the expedition had relied upon the troops operating always close to the water under the protection of the armed boats. But if General Townshend had fought in this manner at Kut-el-Amara he would have had to confine himself to frontal attacks against a strongly-entrenched enemy, and with his single division he would not have pierced the enemy's lines.

The Turks got away easily, and in good order. During the night the senior naval officer, Lieutenant-Commander Cookson, decided to clear the obstruction in the river and give chase to the fleeing Turks. When his ship, the destroyer Comet, with two smaller vessels, rounded the headland, the enemy opened fire with rifles, but the Comet steamed so close up to the obstacle that the Turks were near enough to throw hand-bombs. Our sailors soon found the big wire stretched across the river with dhows made fast to it. But as they were getting over their bows to cut the wire

Lieutenant-Commander Cookson, who

Turkish stand at was leading them, was shot in seven places and killed. His last words were: I am done. It is a failure. Return

When the ships steamed up again at at full speed." daybreak, after burying their commander, they found the Turkish rearguard had vanished, and as our wreckparty had dynamited the obstruction during the night, the flotilla was able to proceed up-river to Kut-el-Amara, where the British cavalry were already in possession. It was the first place in the campaign at which the army had arrived before the navy.

Kut-el-Amara, which we occupied on September 30th. 1915, was 120 miles from Bagdad by road, and 220 miles by water. At about three-quarters of the distance was the riverside town of Azizie. Azizie was about 40 miles by road from Bagdad, and 116 miles by the winding river. The retreating Turkish army made a stand a little to the west of Azizie, to allow time for its engineers to prepare, near Bagdad, the last and most formidable system of defences in Mesopotamia. Meissner Pasha, the very able German railway engineer, who had given the best part

Bagdad.

of his life to the service of the Turks, and had become the principal executive mind in the German attack upon our position in the Persian Gulf, had brought his line from Constantinople to within 380 miles of Bagdad. There were some important gaps in this line, where mountains required to be tunnelled, and much of the rolling-stock was in a deplorable condition. Not a few of its locomotives had gone to ruin, the boilers holed by rust, through Turkish neglect and incompetence.

After the outbreak of war, however, Meiss-

ner had been provided with the money and the skilled help he needed, and by the time our Expeditionary Force began seriously to threaten Bagdad, he, in all probability, had greatly extended his line across the desert, and had lessened the gap of 380 miles between Aleppo and the Tigris. This

undoubtedly great engineer was also building a railway of invasion from the Meissner Pasha's railway work southern edge of Palestine to the Suez

Canal, and laying a fresh-water pipe-line for the use of the army of Djemal Pasha. So he must have been at last abundantly provided with building material; and, as we have seen at Nasiriyeh, the Turks, with his help, had been able early in the year to bring heavy guns from Adrianople

with considerable rapidity. While the snow was only light on the Caucasian Passes, most of the reinforcements for Nuredin Pasha's troops were, apparently, hurried up from Syria by the half-built Bagdad railway line. We found at Azizie, which we reached on October 13th, 1915, that the enemy had already received the property of the state received thousands of fresh troops. General Townshend's division stayed at Azizie until the beginning of November, with part of the Turkish force entrenched four miles upriver. Skirmishing went on daily and hourly, the cavalry and the Royal Horse Artillery getting, as they put it, most of the fun. Meanwhile, the infantry dug for all they were worth, in order to strengthen their position against a possible grand attack. Naturally, the British commander would have preferred the enemy to return and attempt to recover his lost prestige among the tribes by flinging his troops on our trenches while our shore by flinging his troops on our trenches, while our shore batteries and armed vessels swept the ground with shrapnel. But the pasha, after receiving reinforcements that made his force four times as large as ours, would not risk an assault. He threatened and worried, but he was too doubtful of his men to march out and attack. Our small columns of reinforcements that tramped along the river continued to have brushes with some raiding Bedouins between Kut and Azizie; and even in the second week of October marching was still a wearing ordeal with the temperature at over a hundred degrees. Twenty-four miles

in twenty-four hours was very good going, and a mile or so away from the river the want of water was a source of great anxiety.

Our reinforcements did little more than restore the strength of the division, and though it was continually rumoured at Azizie that a large new force was coming from India in order to ensure the success of the advance on Bagdad, General Townshend only received enough men to fill up the gaps in his division and to provide a small reserve. As an officer in the little army at Azizie remarked, in a letter dated October 23rd, 1915, we then had in India men who had been training for ten months. "We shall shortly be heavily buoyed up by their arrival," said the officer. But for various reasons the Indian and British Governments decided to let the conquest of Bagdad be a wild gamble, like the Dardanelles affair, instead of

either taking proper measures to ensure victory, or ordering Sir John Nixon and General Townshend to remain safely on the defensive in the Persian Gulf region,

with Kut-el-Amara and Nasiriyeh garrisoned against

attacks along the Tigris and Euphrates.

Meanwhile, General Townshend went on performing miracles with a force that never consisted of more than four brigades. Towards the end of October the Turks were so strongly established in their new fortifications near Bagdad that they left only a single brigade in their advanced position near Azizie. This rearguard had a large number of guns, by means of which it held the river against our gunboats, and pestered our camp with occasional shells. Our force preserved a grim silence, with the object of lulling the Turk, and making him forget his danger. On one very dark night two of our brigades made a long roundabout march in Kut-el-Amara fashion, with a view to getting on the enemy's rear and encircling him, while a third Indo-British brigade undertook a frontal attack at dawn. But the Turk showed himself capable of learning by experience. On this occasion his outposts were flung far into the desert, apparently with a portable wireless instrument well out on their flank. Long before our wide turning movement threatened their

main position, the Turks were in full retreat, taking with them all their guns and most of their Their movement looked like a headlong flight, but it was really a well-executed retirement in face of superior forces, which had carried out so well-planned a manœuvre that instant retreat was the only answer to it.

The Indo-British division at once embarked in pursuit upon its picturesque flotilla of bellums, launches, paddle-steamers, horse-barges, and gunboats. An unending series of unchartered mud-banks continually interrupted

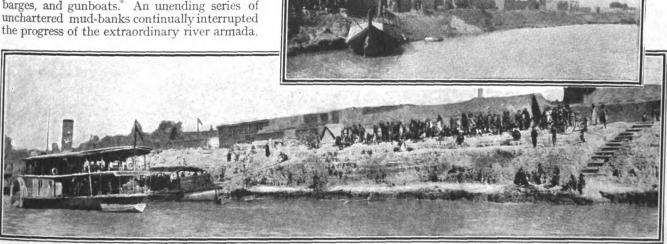
boats sticking sometimes for a day on a shoal, and having to wait till the large steamers arrived and dragged them off. A couple of gun-launches scouted ahead for possible ambushes which our aviators might have missed, and our airmen in seaplanes and aeroplanes circled over Bagdad. and watched the enemy's lines of communication running across the desert towards Syria, and up the river towards the Caucasus heights. By November 9th General Townshend's officers knew that the great adventure was about to be undertaken. The small British force was set the task of breaking through to Bagdad with a view to linking on with the advanced columns of the Russian army in the Caucasus. One of these columns was rapidly working down the Persian border by Lake Urmia, and another was advancing much farther south towards the city of Hamadan. From Bagdad to Hamadan the distance was 250 miles, across difficult and mountainous country. But it seems to have been thought that, with the Turks beaten at Bagdad, and the German-Swedish-Persian force routed at Hamadan, the task of connecting the troops of Sir John Nixon and the army of the Grand Duke Nicholas would be fairly easy. On November 19th General Townshend's division, having captured the village of Zeur, marched against Nuredin Pasha's main system of defences. These works had been constructed eighteen miles from Bagdad, near the gaunt and imposing ruins of Ctesiphon, which loomed against the sky, at the edge of a reed-grown marsh, half a mile from the Tigris. Here, some thirteen hundred years before, Chosroes, the great Persian Emperor who contended for the dominion of the world

with the emperors of Constantinople, had erected the noblest palace on earth. Just across the river a stretch of yellow

The attack on Ctesiphon

mounds marked the site of a still more ancient imperial capital-Seleucia-which the Greek masters of Mesopotamia built after Alexander the Great made his march into India.

Nothing remained of Seleucia, and little or nothing of the mediæval glories of Bagdad under Haroun Al-Raschid. But even the all-destroying Mongol had not been able to overthrow the mighty work of the Persian architects. Yet Ctesiphon, with its great vaulted hall—the largest



KUT-EL-AMARA, THE CAPTURED TURKISH COALING STATION ON THE EAST BANK OF THE TIGRIS.

iut-el-Amara interested in the arrival of a river steamer. At introunding portions of the Mesopotamian field of operations, another view of Kut from the Tigris. The quaint circular boat, like an ancient British coracle, is called a "kufa." Arabs at Kut-el-Amara interested in the arrival of a river steamer. At this and surrounding portions of the Mesopotamian field of operations, the campaign was conducted on soil famous in history and in legend—

existing vault in the world-and its magnificent Eastern curtain wall, rising from the reeds and desert sand in battered sublimity, was less a memorial of the imperial power of Persia than a memorial of the terrible striking force of Islam in the age of Mohammed. The conquest of Ctesiphon and the sack of the great palace of the Emperor of the Fire-worshippers was one of the first great warlike achievements of the army of the Prophet of Arabia. Turk and Kurd, Syrian and Arab, however unlettered, knew what the great

site chiefly for military reasons, was well aware of its strong appeal to the religious traditions which his medley of troops had received from the old Arabian conquerors. The battle for the ford of Ctesiphon was one of the most inspiriting stories of Islam. But now, by a strange vicissitude of history, the larger part of the descendants of the original warriors of the Prophet was inclining to the side of the British force. And in that force were many fighting Mohammedans from the North-West Provinces of India, brigaded with Mohammedans of the Deccan, Hindus of the warrior caste, Sikhs with a creed derived from both Mohammedan and Hindu elements, and Englishmen, with a sprinkling of Scottish, Irish, and Welsh officers.

Nuredin Pasha's army was greatly increased. He had four divisions strongly entrenched against our four brigades at Ctesiphon, with a large reserve of good troops encamped a little farther up the river near Bagdad, and composed probably of forces detached from the Caucasian front during midwinter. Yet, in spite of his overwhelming number of troops, his strong and well-planned lines, and his increased batteries of both heavy and light artillery, the Turkish pasha entered the battle a half-beaten man. He had

Nuredin Pasha outmanœuvred

been so continually outmanœuvred by British commanders with inferior forces that he could not trust his own judgment, and the truth is that we needed only one

division of the new armies that had been training for ten months in India in order to conquer Mesopotamia and capture Bagdad and Mosul. On the military authority, or on the politician, who did not send General Townshend—a man of proved genius—the twelve thousand more bayonets he needed, rests the responsibility for all that afterwards happened.

On the morning of November 22nd the single Indo-British division attacked the four Turkish divisions, stormed their fortress lines, wiped out an entire enemy



unlettered, knew what the great

THE VICEROY OF INDIA WITH THE SHEIKH OF ZOBEIR.

ruin at Ctesiphon stood for, and Viscount Hardinge, during his visit to the Indo-British Expeditionary Force in Mesopotamia, conferred Nuredin Pasha, while choosing the with local chiefs. The Turks persistently circulated false reports among the Arab sheikhs regarding the treatment they would receive at our hands.

division, taking eight hundred prisoners and a large quantity of arms, and bivouacked victoriously in the captured works of defence. The Turkish report of the battle, spread through the world from the German wireless stations, estimated the number of our troops at 170,000. As a matter of fact, General Townshend, at an extreme estimate, could not have had more than 25,000 men all told, and his striking force could not have exceeded 16,000 Indian

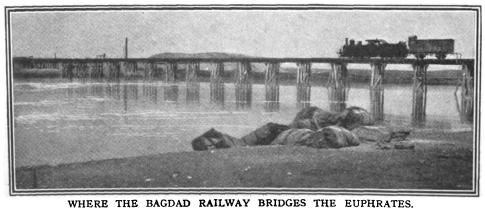
and British infantrymen. In spite of heavy counter-attacks by the reinforced Turkish army, our troops held on to the Turkish position at Ctesiphon till the night

Retirement on Kut-el-Amara

of November 24th, when want of water again robbed them of their full victory, and they had to retire four miles to the Tigris. Our position by the river, however, was too weak to be held, and as our small force had incurred heavy losses, many battalions being reduced to less than half their strength, a withdrawal was necessary. We removed our wounded to the boats, and embarked our prisoners, numbering 1,600, and then, after a rearguard action near Azizie, on the night of November 30th, our troops retired in perfect order on Kut-el-Amara. Two of our river-boats, which had been disabled by the enemy's shell fire, had to be abandoned after their guns and engines had been made useless, and the pursuing Turkish army arrived within two hours' march of Kut on December 3rd.

Our losses around Ctesiphon were 643 killed, 3,330 wounded, and 594 men not accounted for, bringing the total to 4,567. Having regard to the fine achievement of our men, the list of their casualties was light, and if the British Government had given General Townshend and Sir John Nixon the comparatively small reinforcement of another division, Bagdad would certainly have been won at Ctesiphon. But, as at the opening of the Dardanelles campaign, our politicians in authority thought only of winning an empire on the cheap, and tried to overthrow

a great military Power, first with a single army corps and then with four brigades. The attack on the Dardanelles, that began with a single army corps, cost us eventually, in dead, wounded, and sick, more than 200,000 men, and ended fruitlessly. How the attack on Bagdad, with a single division, was to end remained to be seen, for we lost the support of most of the Arab tribes, and the situation of our small, half-shattered force at Kut-el-Amara was one of extreme peril. General Townshend held out, however, with great skill and valour, and a relieving column was sent up the Tigris to his aid.



A temporary bridge at Jeralbus, built during the operations in Mesopotamia, and seen from the eastern, or Mesopotamian, bank of the Euphrates. This bridge was about a mile long, and cost three million francs. Beyond it is seen the mound which marks the site of the ancient Hittite capital, Carchemish.



The cordial meeting of Lord Kitchener and the French Commander on Gallipoli.



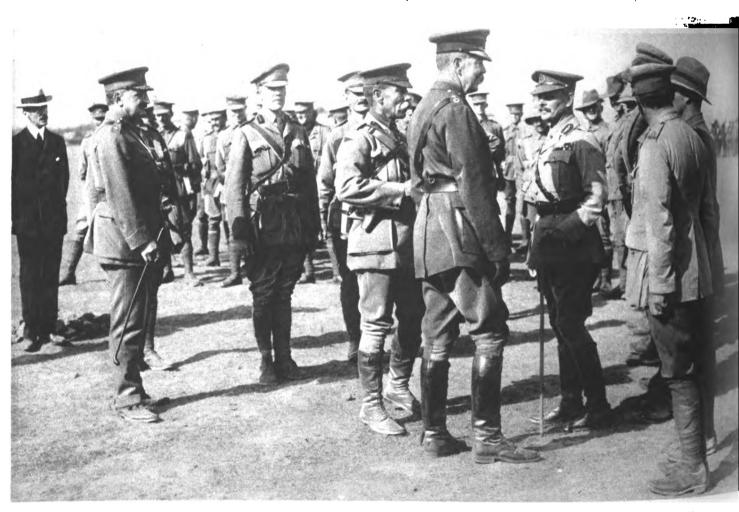
Major-General Davies (extreme right), Lord Kitchener, Generals Birdwood and Maxwell looking towards Achi Baba.

Evacuation of Suvla and Anzac: Lord Kitchener's visit in November, 1915
00

Digitized by Google



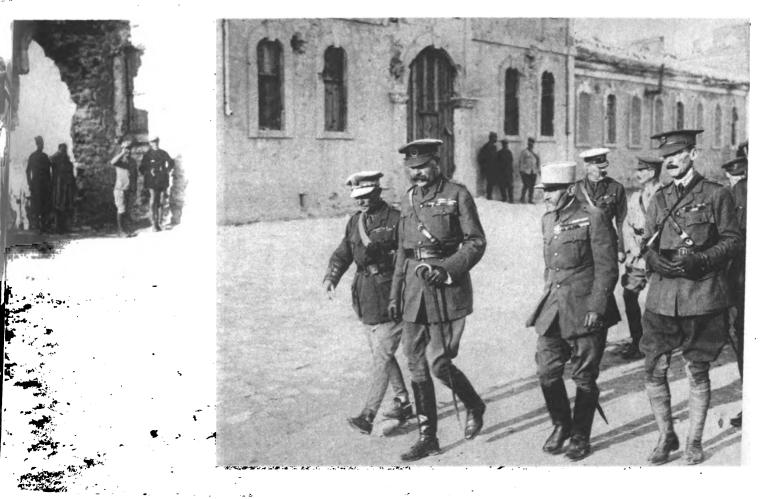
Lord Kitchener arriving on board a destroyer en route for Athens and the Greek Court.



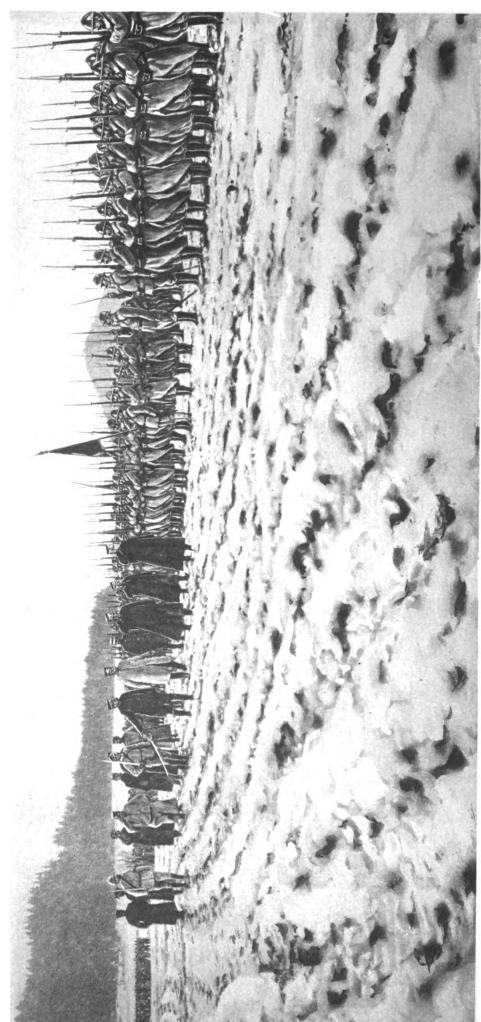
The Secretary of State for War, the cynosure of admiring Anzac eyes, on Gallipoli.



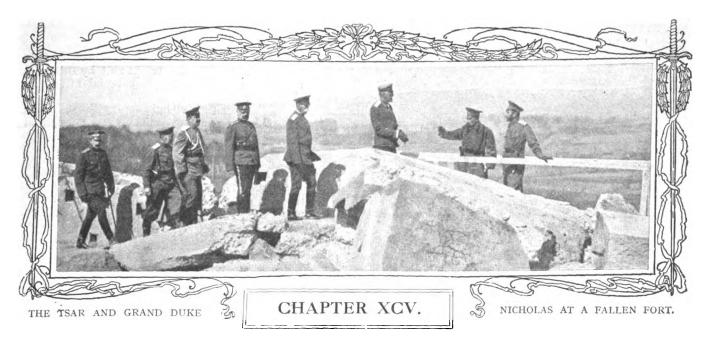
Lord Kitchener inside a Turkish fort with Col. Sir Henry McMahon and a French General.



Col. Watson, Lord Kitchener, the French Commander, and Col. McMahon at Seddul Bahr.



An echo of the panoply of former wars: General Foffre reviews his men on a snow-covered field of Lorraine.



## GREAT LEADERS OF THE ALLIES IN THE WEST.

Men Still the Raw Material of Armies—The Responsibility of Generals—Sir John French's Task—The British Expeditionary Force in 1915—Generals at G.H.Q.—Joffre's Tremendous Task—His Early Life—His Military Experiences—Named Generalissimo—Directs the Great Retreat—Takes the Offensive—French's Early Days—His Work in South Africa—His Duties at Home—His Work in France—Ferdinand Foch—His Valuable Services—General Pau's Career—General Dubail—His Campaign in Alsace and Lorraine—De Castelnau's Early Life—He Protects Nancy—Organisation of the French Army—France's New Armies—Maurice Sarrail—De Langle de Cary—Franchet d'Espérey—Maunoury—D'Urbal and Maud'huy—General Galliéni—General d'Amade—Gouraud and Sordet—France's Junior Generals—Sir Ian Hamilton—His Work in South Africa—His Leadership in Gallipoli—Sir Douglas Haig—His Services in Flanders—General Smith-Dorrien—His Services at Le Cateau—Sir Herbert Plumer and Sir Charles Monro—Sir John Nixon—Chiefs of the Staff—Commanders of Army Corps—Gough and Fergusson—Pulteney and Rawlinson—Cavalry Generals—Sir James Willcocks—Birdwood and Hunter-Weston—Our Dead Generals—Two V.C. Heroes among Them.

"They in all their deeds were so valiant that they ought to be reputed as sovereigns in chivalry."

-Froissart.

T

HE remarkable development in recent years of weapons of all kinds—guns, machine-guns, howitzers, mortars, the reintroduction of bombs, the adoption of melinite, lyddite, turpinite, and other high explosives of every possible variety to which must now

every possible variety, to which must now be added poison gas and liquid fire—have altered the whole nature of war. But one thing they have not done. They have not made the human material—man—less important; rather the reverse. Without men to use and direct them, to follow up and com-

to follow up and complete their work of destruction, all the missiles of death are useless. Men—and masses of men—still form the backbone of all armies. In spite of all inventions men—men with munitions—are still necessary.

Men are indispensable, and equally so are generals. Modern warfare places a terrible responsibility upon generals. A slight mistake, a moment's hesitation, a little indecision when faced with a sudden difficulty, on the part of one of them, may cost a country thousands of trained and valuable lives; may even lose a battle and jeopardise the fate of a nation. The responsibility upon Charles Martel or William

the Conqueror, upon Hawkwood or Cordova, or any other great captain of the Middle Ages, even upon leaders of a later age such as Condé and Montrose, was trifling compared with that which to-day rests upon the shoulders of a general in command of an army corps, to say nothing of those in higher place. More than ever before it is necessary for generals to have brains, training, and experience, and to bring every ounce of every quality to bear upon the task before them. They must be men who think quickly and act promptly, who are neither unnerved by loss nor unbalanced by success; who know when to sacrifice life and when to conserve it, when to take advice and when to reject it. The difficult and responsible work done by

some scores of British and French generals dur-ing the Great War has not been properly understood by the public, largely because it is unknown. Everyone has heard of French and Joffre, of Ian Hamilton, Douglas Haig and Smith-Dorrien, of Foch and Pau, but that is about all. Occasionally one saw a portrait of Sir Charles Monro, Sir Herbert Plumer, De Castel-nau, or Franchet d'Espérey, but these men and many others were not known as they should have been. it would be an insult to compare either their abilities or their actions with those of many second and third rate politicians whose names



FIELD-MARSHAL VISCOUNT FRENCH,

fate of a nation. The responsibility upon Charles Martel or William who was in command of the British armies in France from the outbreak of war till December 15th, 1915, when he relinquished his responsibility to General Sir Douglas Haig, to take over the appointment of Field-Marshal commanding the troops in the United Kingdom



BROTHER COMMANDERS OF THE SISTER SERVICES.

Admiral de Robeck and General Sir Ian Hamilton on board H.M.S. Triad at the Dardanelles on the day of the latter's departure for Englan 1. October, 1915.

were in the papers every day, and whose features were familiar to all.

First of all, look at the work done by our own generals during the first year of the Great War.

Britain has never in the past given to anyone a task anything like so big as that laid upon many of her generals in 1914 and 1915. Confining the story to the first year, there were, in addition to Sir John French, at least four British generals who commanded twice the number of troops that Napoleon had at Austerlitz or Wellington at Waterloo, and far more than famous soldiers such as Gustavus Adolphus and Frederick the Great ever led to victory.

As for Sir John himself, British history has no parallel to his task. Neither Wellington nor Marlborough ever commanded 100,000 British troops at one time, while French had under him at least seven times that number. The armies which fought under Henry V. at Agincourt and Cromwell at Naseby would be swallowed up, almost unnoticed, in

his vast host, while the troops sent by Britain to the Crimea would be merely a useful little reinforcement.

But this is not all. Until to-day Great Britain has never been a great military Power, and Sir John's task should therefore be tested by foreign standards. Be it so. In the spring and summer of 1915 he could have supplied Napoleon with the equivalent of the Grand Army of 1812, and both the Russians and the Japanese with the numbers they put into the field at Mukden, and still have had a considerable army left. He had more than the total of the three armies with which the Germans invaded France in 1870, and more than Grant or Lee ever commanded in the American Civil War. Below Sir John and his three or four principal lieutenants there were many who commanded bodies of men which in former days would have been large armies, quite big enough to have turned the scale of the Civil War in favour of Charles I., or to have given William of Orange some sweeping victories over the French.

Orange some sweeping victories over the French.

To illustrate this point, attention may be drawn to the organisation of a great army—say, the British Expeditionary Force in France as it was in the summer of 1915. At its head was the Commander-in-Chief, Sir John French, having under him—precision is impossible—perhaps 750,000 men. These were divided into armies—the First Army, the Second Army, and so on, each being commanded by a general and consisting of about 150,000 men. In their turn the armies were divided into army corps, each containing about 37,000 men, and each under its own general. Each army corps was divided into two divisions, each with a general of its own, and each division into three brigades, at the head of which was a brigadier-general. There the generals stop.\*

There the generals stop.\*

This refers to the infantry only. But the cavalry were organised on somewhat similar lines. There was a cavalry corps, divided into divisions, and each of these divided again into brigades. At the head of each there was a general of one kind or another, while other generals directed the movements of the artillery.

Other generals must be mentioned, especially those who worked at that mysterious place called G.H.Q., or General Headquarters. One of these, the Chief of the Staff, was, after Sir John French, perhaps the most important person in the field. He was the Commander-in-Chief's principal adviser, and under his direction information about the enemy was collected, plans of campaign were worked out, and operations arranged. Then there was the Adjutant-General, who looked after the personnel

of the Army, collected and arranged casualty lists, provided for reinforcements, etc., and the QuartermasterGeneral whose husiness it was to supply

General, whose business it was to supply the Army with food, clothing, and its other requirements. Other generals looked after auxiliary services, among which may be mentioned two of the utmost importance—the Flying Corps and the Medical Corps.

The task before the French generals was much bigger, and a fortiori the above remarks apply to them. At one time France must have had twenty men in the field for every British soldier, but gradually this proportion was reduced, until it stood, in the summer of 1915, at perhaps four to one. Accepting this as roughly correct, General Joffre's task was four times as great as was Sir John French's, and several of his generals had under them armies nearly as big as the one commanded by Sir John. Napoleon and

<sup>\*</sup> A little later there were three divisions to each corps, but the above is true of the time to which the chapter refers.



THE NEW BRITISH GENERALISSIMO ON HIS WAY TO SEE GENERAL JOFFRE.

Sir Douglas Haig, on the right, inspecting French troops on the occasion of his visit to our ally's headquarters after being appointed to the supreme British command on the western front.



GENERAL JOFFRE'S CORDIAL HANDGRIP. HISTORIC MOMENT AT THE FRENCH HEADQUARTERS.

Sir Douglas Haig has just bidden farewell to the French commander and is looking towards General Joffre, who is shaking hands with a British Staff officer. Here in this quiet, prosaic environment some momentous



BON PÈRE JOFFRE,

as our French friends christened him, returning from a review of his stalwart "children." Portly of frame, and ever genial of expression, General Joffre seemed to prove an exception among great strategists. Certainly in no physical characteristic could he be compared with Hindenburg, Mackensen, Napoleon, or Casar.

his marshals will always be prominent figures in the history of war, but Joffre and his generals were set a bigger task. The world's verdict upon their work has yet to come.

Joffre and French were undoubtedly the two dominating personalities in the western theatre of war, and this is still true if the Germans are included, for if they had Hindenburg and Mackensen in the east, they had no one on the other side of Europe to compare with the two allied leaders. Kluck, a possible rival, disappeared as suddenly as he had come, and even the high rank of Duke Albert of Würtemberg and Prince Rupert of Bavaria failed to make

them other than shadowy figures. Joffre and Joseph Jacques Césaire Joffre was born at Rivesaltes, a little place near French Perpignan, in the Pyrenees, on January

12th, 1852, and was therefore eight months older than Sir John French. When the Franco-Prussian War broke out he was studying for the Army, and his first taste of war was to assist in improving the defences of Paris. He was with the artillery during the siege of the French capital, and after its surrender he returned to the military school. In 1872 he became a lieutenant in a regiment of engineers, and, having spent some time in artillery practice at Fontainebleau, he was raised to the rank of captain, and set to work on the new fortifications of Paris.

Joffre's first experience of foreign service was in Indo-China. Having just lost his first wife, he went to Hanoi, the new French possession, in 1884, as chief of the engineering

corps, and he remained there for four years. On his return to France he served as lecturer on fortifications at Fontainebleau, and in 1892 he went to the Soudan, where he planned and built a railway from the Senegal to the Niger. While there he led a column to Timbuctoo, four hundred and seventy miles from his base at Segou. Another column, under Colonel Bonnier, had gone along the Niger, but its leader was killed before Joffre, marching by land, arrived. Joffre took over the command, fortified a series of posts, and succeeded in pacifying the country. He wrote an account of this little expedition which, under the title of "My March to Timbuctoo," has been translated into English.

As a colonel and a leading authority on fortifications, Joffre went in 1895 to Madagascar to superintend the construction

of the fortifications of the new naval base at Diego-Suarez, and coming home again Joffre's early he was made a brigadier-general. commands

He then married a second time, and
rose rapidly in the service. First he commanded a brigade

of artillery, then was made Director of Engineering at the Ministry of War, and then a general of division. In 1909 he was chosen to command the Second Army Corps at Amiens, and in 1910 he became a member of the Superior Council of War. In 1911, Joffre, then fifty-nine years old, was selected by the Government to fill the position of Chief of the General Staff and Vice-President of the Council. In



"THE MAN OF DUTY."

General de Castelnau, on the left, was General Joffre's right-hand man, and was appointed Chief of Staff on the western front towards the end of 1915. He was known to his brother-officers as "The Man of Duty." When the news of his son's death in battle reached him, he did not allow his personal feelings to interfere for one moment with the work he had



THE WARRIOR-LEADER OF THE MEN OF THE BLACK MOUNTAINS.

King Nicholas passing through a Montenegrin village. King Nicholas, like King Albert and King Peter, personally directed the fortunes of his realm. Of Spartan temperament and simple tastes, this monarch was the most democratic of all aristocrats. From the outset of hostilities Montenegro took its stand by Serbia.

the Republic this office carries with it the position of Commander-in-Chief in the event of war, and he had been three years at his post, engaged in the work of reorganising the Army, when hostilities broke out. At once he was named Generalissimo of the Armies of France.

Then came the test of his life. How would this student of fortifications, this quiet elderly man who had seen less active service than many an English major, acquit himself in his tremendous task of driving back the ready armies of the first military Power in the world? Could he grasp the plan of a battlefield on which millions of men would manœuvre as well as he had grasped the plan of his forts at Hanoi or Diego-Suarez?

The answer to these, and many other such questions which Frenchmen—and not Frenchmen only—were asking in the anxious days of August, 1914, is recorded on the indelible pages of history. Certainly Joffre was surprised by the overwhelming strength which Germany had massed on the Belgian frontier, and certainly some of his generals failed him at crucial moments, the result being that a large part of France was overrun, and Paris itself was in serious danger less than a month after the outbreak of war.

Joffre's coolness and judgment Everyone knows Joffre's face and form, as shown in his portraits, and it does not need a thought-reader to tell the kind of man he is. The clumsy word imper-

turbable perhaps describes him as well as any other, and he faced the new and difficult situation with rare coolness and judgment. Ruthlessly he cleared the Army of incompetent generals, and he let his forces retreat steadily until they were only a few miles from Paris. It was a hazardous operation. and a costly one for France, and many thought

that Joffre should have turned and fought sooner—say, on the Heights of Champagne. But he did not. The main fact was that the long retreat did not demoralise his armies, and when the reserves, which had been concentrating in front of Paris, were added to them, the Generalissimo was able to strike hard.

On September 5th Joffre told Sir John French of his intention to take the offensive, and on the 6th he issued his famous order to his men. "We have," he said. "but one business on hand—to.

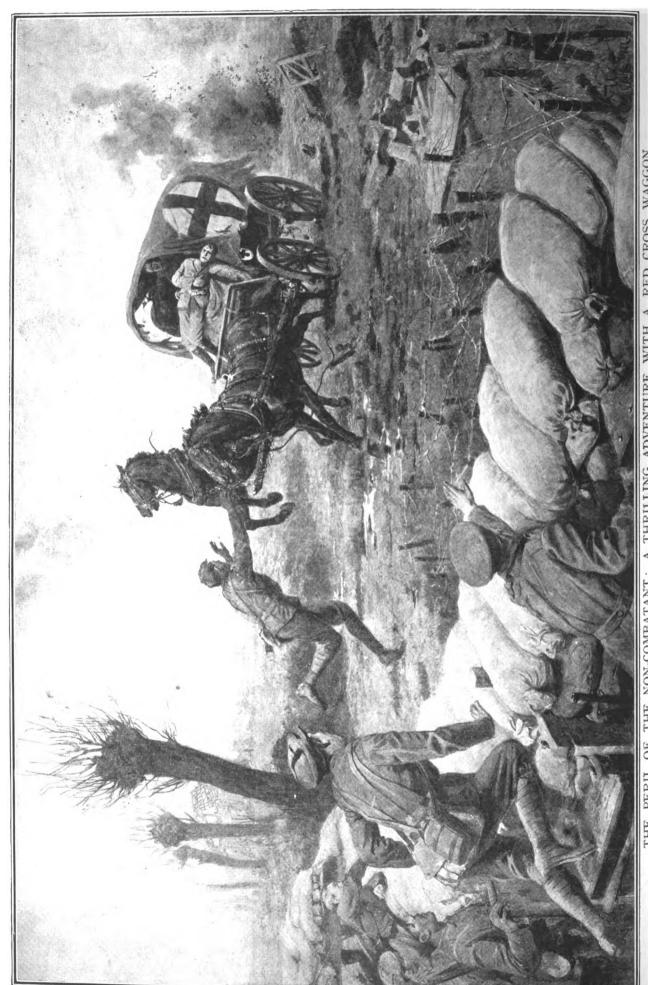
said, "but one business on hand—to attack and repel the enemy." He had waited long, but at last the hour had

come. The Germans were beaten on the Marne, driven back to the Aisne, and then began the long war of entrenchments. Throughout this Joffre continued to direct the operations, and from time to time his troops took the offensive. During the winter and the spring his methods did not regain much more ground, but none was lost, and he was steadily carrying out some plan. Perhaps there is truth in the story which represented him as saying that he was "nibbling away,"

This is not the time or the place to sum up Joffre's merits as a soldier, or the extent of his services to France and the Allies; but one thing can be said—in spite of reverses and disappointments, he kept to a remarkable extent the confidence of the Army and of the people as a whole. More than once during the war one Prime Minister and one Cabinet gave way to another, but there was no question of another Generalissimo. Joffre had critics, but one and all realised that he was giving his very best to France, and that to change him for another would be sheer

329

Generalissimo



THE PERIL OF THE NON-COMBATANT: A THRILLING ADVENTURE WITH A RED CROSS WAGGON.

This exciting incident, which occurred somewhere on the western front, gives an idea of the perils of the vehicle, and a stray bullet had killed the driver; who was lying across the seat. In the nick of time some towards them to a standstill before it careered wildly over the trench parapet.

Digitized by Google

Joffre's British colleague, John Denton Pinkstone French, was born in Kent on September 28th, 1852, being the son of a naval officer. For a few years he was a naval cadet and a midshipman, but evidently he grew tired of a quiet life at sea, for when he was twenty-two years old he left the Navy and joined the 8th Hussars. In 1884, having been transferred to the 19th Hussars, French went to Egypt on active service. During four years of peace he commanded the 19th Hussars, and then, having got a Staff appointment, he was able to gain experience of another

In 1899, French, by then a major-general, went out to Natal to command Sir George White's

French in cavalry, and he led them in much of

South Africa the fighting around Ladysmith. He
got out of that town by the last train
that left before the enemy closed round it, and was given

the task of holding back the Boers in the Colesberg district. He left this to lead 5,000 men to the relief of Kimberley, which he entered on February 15th, 1900; and then, without rest, he rode away to head off Cronje's army. Again he was successful, and some part of the credit for the surrender at Paardeberg belongs to him.

French remained actively engaged in South Africa until the end of the war. He was one of the generals who helped to clear the Boers from the Orange Free clear the Boers from the Orange Free State. Sweeping over the country to the west, he advanced with Roberts on Johannesburg and Pretoria, and he followed the retreating Boers, who were commanded by Louis Botha. During practically the whole of 1901 he was leading columns against the enemy, and his reputation was perhaps the foremost his reputation was perhaps the foremost of those made in the war.

French returned to England as Sir John French, K.C.B., and in 1907 he was made a full general. He held several high commands — Inspector - General of the Forces, and finally, from 1911 to 1914, Chief of the Imperial General Staff. He was by then a Feld-Marshal, and it was generally understood that in the event of a great war he would take command of the British troops. So it came about. In August, 1914. Sir John went to Paris, where he had an enthusiastic welcome from our Allies, and then to the front. Sir John French's history during the following year is part of the history of the struggle in France and Belgium, and that does not need recounting to the readers of THE GREAT WAR. His balanced judgment and wide experience were great assets in dealing with the many difficult problems

which confronted him from time to time. Like Joffre, he refused to be flurried. He conducted the retreat from Mons in masterly fashion; he loyally co-operated with the French when it came to taking the offensive; and, perhaps more difficult still, he arranged the transfer of his troops from the Aisne to Flanders. At Ypres his dispositions were highly tested, but events proved that in the circumstances they were thoroughly sound, and throughout the winter and the spring he carried out a plan of campaign which, though not spectacular, was in the best interests of the Allies. In December, 1915, Sir John resigned the onerous command which he had held for sixteen months, and was succeeded by Sir Douglas Haig. He was made a viscount, and was given the command of the troops in the United Kingdom.

Under General Joffre there were two or three other generals whose standing was not unlike that of Sir John French, or of Hindenburg and Mackensen in Germany, for they commanded not merely armies, but groups of armies. The enormous number of men in the field rendered something of this kind necessary.

Of these generals the most distinguished was Foch, and one careful critic, reviewing the first year of the war, de-clared that "he had some claims to be considered the first soldier in Europe." Ferdinand Foch was born in 1851, and fought in the war of 1870-71. When it was over, he studied for the Army at Fontainebleau, and soon became a lieutenant in an artillery regiment. He worked at the Ecole Supérieure de Guerre, and afterwards received a Staff appointment, which he vacated to take up an artillery command at Vincennes.

Foch was always a student of war. From 1896 to 1901



GENERAL ALEXEIEFF,

Chief of the General Staff of the Russian Army. One of the most remarkable men of the century, General Alexeieff rose to his exalted position from humble sergeant through sheer merit. The success of the great retreat from Warsaw was largely due to his skill and ingenuity, and he did much to keep up the spirit of the Russian Army all through this perilous period.

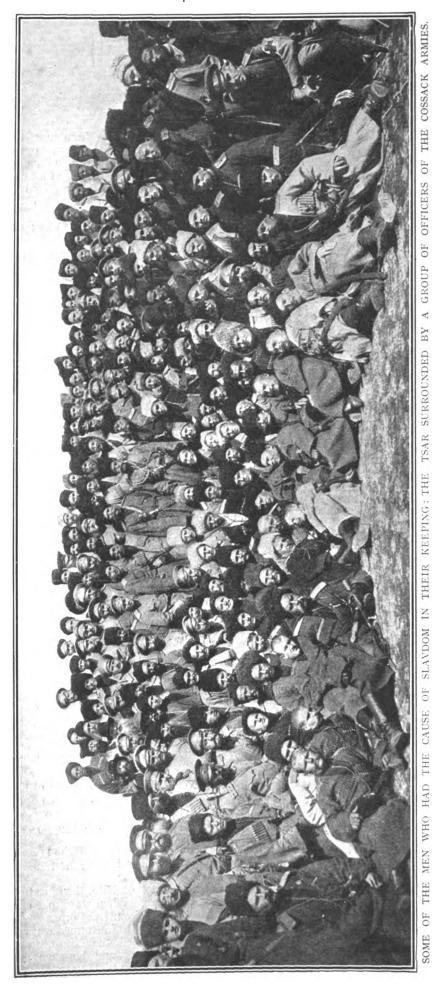
he was professor at the Ecole de Guerre, and some of his lectures there were published as "Les Principes de la Guerre" and "Conduite de la Guerre: la Manœuvre et la Bataille." In 1903 he became a colonel, and four years

later a general, while from 1907 to 1911 he was commandant of the Ecole de Guerre, and a member of the General writer and fighter
Staff. When his term of office came
to an end he was made Governor of Nice, then head of

the Eighth Army Corps at Bourges. When war broke out he was at Nancy, commanding the Twentieth Corps.

After the first battles of the war Joffre formed several

new armies, among them one called the Ninth, from the reserves which were assembling, and he gave the command of this to Foch, a man sixty-three years of age,



who had never seen a battlefield since 1871. However, he was soon to show that in the study and the class-room he had learned as much as some of his British colleagues had in South Africa and on the Indian Frontier.

The new army, consisting of three corps, came into line early in September, and fought at the Battle of the Marne. On the 6th it was in action with the Germans near Sézanne, and after two or

three days of fierce fighting it fell to Foch to make the decisive

Foch at the

movement of this battle. First of all he moved his left wing on to the flank of Von Bülow's army, and during the night of the 6th he pushed a division forward into a gap which he had discovered between Von Bülow and the German army on his left. His centre, after some hard fighting, drove the Prussian Guard with terrible slaughter into the Marshes of St. Gond, and when their flank was also attacked Bülow's troops fell back in something like disorder. The whole German line retreated to the Aisne, largely as a result of this success; Foch and the French followed, and on the 11th he entered Chalons.

Foch's army fought around Rheims at the Battle of the Aisne, and then Joffre sent him to Flanders to exercise a general control over the French armies north of Noyon and Compiègne, and to act in conjunction with Sir John French. At first there were only two French armies, the Seventh and the Tenth, but they were soon joined by the Eighth. This work occupied Foch during the remaining months of the first year. The winter fighting, especially the Battle of Ypres, and, in January, the Battle of Soissons, taxed his resources most severely, but he came through the ordeal with an enhanced reputation as a strategist. He personally superintended the French offensive between Arras and Lens in May, and in June and July his men were also busy.

General Pau held for a time a command not unlike that of Foch in Flanders. Marie César Gérald Pau was born in 1848, and as an infantry subaltern served in the Franco-Prussian War. At Fröschwiller he was seriously wounded, and his arm was amputated, but he returned to the battle-line, and took part in the later stages of the struggle. He rose in the Army step by step, and became remarkably popular among the soldiers, who called him "le premier troupier du monde." In 1903 he was made a General of Division,

and from 1909 to 1913
he was commander of
the Twentieth Corps at

General Pau's
popularity

Nancy and a member of the Superior Council of War. Pau's popularity was very useful to the Government when he helped to pass the Three Years' Bill through Parliament. He was one of the three generals—Joffre and De Castelnau being the others—who assisted M. Millerand to reorganise and strengthen the



RESPONSIBLE RUSSIANS IN SLAVDOM'S CRITICAL HOUR.

The Emperor of Russia, who assumed supreme command of his forces on September 5th, 1915, photographed with several near relatives, including the Grand Duke Nicholas, the Grand Dukes Peter Nicholaievitch and Michaelovitch, Prince Peter Alexandrovitch of Oldenbourg, officers of H.I.M.'s suite, and the Staff of the Grand Duke.

Army. In 1913, being then sixty-five years old, he retired owing to the age limit, but on the outbreak of hostilities he was recalled to active service, and was sent to command on the eastern frontier. This, however, turned out to be only a secondary theatre of war, and just before Joffre took the offensive in September he gave Pau a general supervision over the turning movement which resulted in the victory

Pau's mission to Russia

on the Marne. In 1915 the general visited Russia and the East, presumably to arrange for more concerted action between the Allies.

About the time that Foch was sent to command the northern group of armies, the direction of the southern group, those operating between Noyon and Belfort, was entrusted to General Dubail. Born in 1851, Augustin Yvon Edmond Dubail fought as a lieutenant in the Franco-Prussian War, and was taken prisoner in October, 1870. After the struggle was over, he lectured in a military school, became a captain, and later a professor at the Ecole de

Guerre. He served as a Staff officer, both at home and in Algiers; he was colonel of a regiment of Zouaves and Algiers; he was colonel of a regiment of Zouaves and commandant of the Ecole Spéciale Militaire. In 1908 he became a general of division. Three years later Dubail was at the War Office assisting the Secretary, M. Berteaux, and he was Joffre's predecessor as Chief of the General Staff. He found time to write two books on military matters: "Le Livre de l'Officier" and "L'Education Militaire" matters: Militaire."

When war began Dubail was commander of the Ninth Army Corps at Tours and a member of the Superior Council of War. He took the field as leader of the Army of the Vosges, and directed its early and, as events proved, premature movements into Alsace. Having retired from there, he devoted his attention to defending the heights between the Valleys of the Meuse and the Meurthe, the unfortified gap between Toul and Epinal, where in August and September the four corps under his command successfully resisted the German attempts to break through.



THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY AS AN ADMIRAL OF THE IMPERIAL FLEET.

THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE RUSSIAN ABOUT THE TSAT AT SEBASTOP THE TSAT AS SEBASTOP THE TSAT TOOK A PERSONAL INTEREST IN THE TSAT TOOK A PERSONAL INTEREST. THE TSAT TOOK A P



MAJOR-GENERAL SIR SAMUEL HUGHES, Canadian Minister for Defence, at Toronto Camp with General Lessard, who commanded the Toronto Division.

Before the Battle of the Marne Dubail's force was drawn upon for assistance elsewhere, and as it became clear that the main theatre of war would be away to the north, the Army of the Vosges became smaller and smaller until it was not an army—hardly an army corps. About the end of the year it was handed over to General Putz, while Dubail, who had received the Grand Cross of the Legion of Honour, took general command of the armies south of Novon. Somewhat later he divided this responsibility with De Castelnau, who took the northern section, leaving the southern one to his senior colleague.

The chief events of Dubail's winter and spring campaign were the desperate struggle for the Hartmannsweilerkopf and the fighting around St. Mihiel and Les Eparges. Metz was neared, but for some reason or other Joffre decided to

press the main offensive elsewhere. Progress was made by one or other of Dubail's armies along the Fecht Valley, and all through the summer he directed the continuous fight-Dubail in the Vosges ing in the Vosges and around Les Eparges.

Marie Joseph Edouard de Curiéres de Castelnau was, with the sole exception of Foch, Joffre's most trusted lieutenant. Descended from a very old family and born in 1851, he was intended for the Army, in which more than one of his ancestors had earned distinction, and he fought as a subaltern in the Franco-Prussian War. Afterwards he passed through the Ecole Supérieure de Guerre, and as a lieutenant-colonel he joined the General Staff in 1896. Four years later he was made chief of the Mobilisation Department, and then he commanded in turn a regiment, a brigade, and a division.

In 1912 De Castelnau went to the War Office as Joffre's principal assistant, and aided him in putting into execution

the provisions of the Three Years' Law. This increased the standing Army by 200,000 men, and so made a new scheme of mobilisation necessary. It was drawn up under the supervision of De Castelnau, who, in 1913, was rewarded with a seat in the Superior Council of War. This general is a man of very attractive personality.

When war broke out De Castelnau took command of the Second Army, called also the Army of Lorraine, and, in conjunction with the Army of the Vosges, he led a prompt offensive. But this premature movement failed, and he drew back his forces to protect Nancy. At one time it seemed as if this old city would fall to the Germans, but the defences improvised by De Castelnau on the Grand

Of Nancy

Couronne proved impregnable, and

assault after assault was beaten back. De Castelnau then moved forward, drove off the Germans, and on September 12th, when he entered Lunéville, the danger to Nancy

In September a new army, the Seventh, was formed for service in Artois, and De Castelnau was chosen to lead this. He attacked Von Kluck, and retook Noyon, but after a three days' battle he was obliged to fall back. On a line from Albert to Ribecourt he repulsed fierce German onslaughts, and during the winter this army fought under the general direction of Foch. In the spring General Petain took over the command, and De Castelnau was sent to supervise the movements of the central group of armies. It should be said that this leader lost, during the early stages of the war, two of his five soldier sons.

In December, 1915, when the campaign in Greece had begun, a change was made in the French command. Joffre was given the supreme direction of all the French armies, and De Castelnau became his Chief of Staff. Apparently



BRIGADIER-GENERAL LUKIN, D.S.O., C.M.G. He was appointed to the command of the 1st Brigade of the South African Infantry for the European Campaign.

the idea was that Joffre from Paris should direct all the operations, while De Castelnau should control those in France and on the frontiers. It may be well here to say something about

It may be well here to say something about the organisation of the French Army for war, and so to gain an idea of the places filled by its leading generals. In peace, military affairs are directed by the Superior Council of War. The president of this is the Minister for War, and the vice-president the Chief of the General Staff. The ten other members are all generals, the understanding being that in time of war the Chief

of the Staff will take supreme command, and the other generals, who have worked with him in peace, will serve under

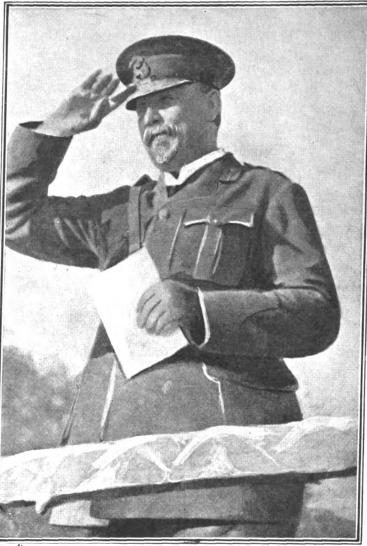
him. In time of war a perfectly free hand is allowed to the Generalissimo, as the Chief of the Staff becomes. He selects his army commanders both from within and without the Superior Council.

At the outbreak of war France put five armies into the field, numbered one to five, and counting from the south upwards. As already seen, Dubail and De Castelnau, both members of the Superior Council, were appointed to the First, or Army of the Vosges, and the Second Army. Ruffey, another member of the Council, took the Third, while the leadership of the Fourth and Fifth was entrusted to De Langle de Cary—an older man who was recalled to active service—and Lanrezac respectively. The latter was not



GENERAL THE HON. CHRISTIAAN SMUTS.

General Botha's right-hand man, this distinguished lawyer-soldier helped greatly to bring about the success of the Union forces in German South-West Africa.



GENERAL THE RIGHT HON, LOUIS BOTHA.
Striking photograph of the South African Premier acknowledging the plaudits of the crowd on the occasion of the thanksgiving service after the capitulation of German South-West Africa.

a success, and after Charleroi his place was taken by Franchet d'Espérey, hitherto one of his subordinates.

Such was the start, but soon five other armies were formed from the reserves, and all were sent to the cockpit between the Marne and the sea. They were numbered six to ten, but they did not appear in the field quite in this regular order, and to command them Joffre took full advantage of his powers of free selection.

For the Ninth, as already stated, he selected Foch, and for the Seventh he called De Castelnau from Lorraine. For the Sixth he recalled another general, Maunoury, from the retired list, but to command the Eighth and Tenth he pro-

moted two junior generals, D'Urbal and Maud'huy. The story must now concern itself with these leaders of armies, each consisting of 150,000 or 200,000 men.

General Maurice Sarrail

About Ruffey there is little to be said, for his place was soon taken by another. His army stretched, in August, from Montmédy to Rocroi, whence it advanced towards Luxemburg, only, however, to fall quickly back before the German armies. Before the end of the month a big battle was fought, after which the obsolete fortresses on the Central Meuse, such as Mézières, surrendered, and Ruffey retreated to the Argonne region.

Maurice Sarrail, who succeeded Ruffey about this time as leader of the Third Army, was commander of the Sixth Army Corps at Chalons when hostilities began, and this corps

formed part of Ruffey's force. When Joffre was planning the Battle of the Marne, he ordered Sarrail, whose army lay south of Verdun, to defend that fortress and the line of the Meuse. At first he fell back a little, but a series of savage attacks failed to break his army, and its firmness helped the others to win the Battle of the Marne.

The German attacks on Sarrail's force were repeated, if possible with more violence, during the Battle of the Aisne, but on the hills around Verdun the French engineers had prepared some very formidable obstacles, and aided by these he was able to beat back the onsets of an army much larger than his own. Once or twice the Germans came very near to success, but after a final repulse on October 3rd, 1914, they abandoned the attempt.

Throughout the winter Sarrail continued to protect

Verdun, pushing forward his trenches little by little, until in March he got well across the Meuse, and took the offensive. He only got a little way, however, and then in June and July he was called upon to meet another attack delivered by the army of the Crown Prince, who was evidently anxious to retrieve his reputation as a soldier. Sarrail's defence of Verdun marked him out for still higher things. In the autumn of 1915 the position in the Balkans, owing to the entry of Bulgaria into the war and the defection of Greece, became most threatening. Britain and France decided to send help to Serbia, and Sarrail was chosen for the supreme command in this new theatre of war. Under his direction the Allies advanced to help the Serbians and then fell

back to Salonika, which they fortified.

Next comes the leader of the Fourth General de Army. Fernand Louis A. M. de Langle Langle de Cary

de Cary was born in 1849, the son of a naval officer, He passed into the Army in 1867, and was an artillery officer during the Siege of Paris. He was very severely wounded, but happily he recovered, and rose in the service. Having commanded a battalion, he was made professor at the Ecole Supérieur de Guerre; in 1895 he became a colonel, and in 1900 a brigadier-general. Then followed the command of a division (1906), of an army corps (1908), and a seat in the Superior Council of War (1912). Being sixty-five years old, he had just retired from active service when Germany declared war.

Joffre at once entrusted Langle de Cary with the command of the Fourth Army, which was to hold the Valley of the Meuse in the neighbourhood of Sedan. He made a slight advance in August, but was soon compelled to fall back and to join in the great retreat. The attempt to defend the Meuse was given up, and in a series of battles the Fourth Army suffered very severely indeed. However, it recovered to some extent when the Marne was

General Franchet reached, and during the battle on that river fought hard against the army of Duke Albert of Würtemberg near Vitry. d'Esperev

For some days the issue swayed hither and thither, but when a fresh corps arrived to assist the Fourth Army, the Würtembergers had to give way.

Langle de Cary was one of the French leaders at the Battle of the Aisne. Again his task was to tackle the Würtembergers, but he was unable to drive them from their positions in Champagne, and a war of entrenchments began there. In February an advance was ordered in this

district, and some ground was won.

Near the Fourth Army the Fifth fought a similar battle. Its commander, Louis Marie F. F. Franchet d'Espérey, was the son of a soldier, and was born in 1856. Unlike most of the French generals of 1914 and 1915, he was too young to serve in the Franco-Prussian War, but, in spite of this, he saw more fighting than most of them during the next forty years. He was in Tunisia and in Indo-China when a young man, in 1900 he served in the expedition to Peking, and in 1912 and 1913 he commanded troops in Western Morocco. In the meantime he had served on the General Staff, commanded a battalion and then a brigade.

On the outbreak of war, D'Espérey was in command of the First Army Corps at Lille, and he led this into the field, being present at the Battle of Charleroi. In this disastrous encounter he appears to have rendered good service to France, for he was appointed a Grand Officer of the Legion of Honour, and was selected to take the place of General Lanrezac as commander of the Fifth Army, of which his own corps formed part. This promotion took place just before the Battle of the Marne.

In this battle D'Espérey was pitted against Von Kluck, who was pushed across the Grand Morin near Esternay, and was followed over the Petit Morin to the Marne and then to the Ourcq. In their advance the Fifth French Army won a strong position at Montmirail, and joined up with the British near Chateau Thierry.



GENERAL DE LANGLE DE CARY. On the left, with his Chief of Staff, Colonel Paquette. General de Langle de Cary was leader of the Fourth French Army, and one of the generals who directed at the Battle of the Aisne.



GENERAL MAUD'HUY. In charge of a brigade at the beginning of the war, General Maud'huy (right) rose to command the Tenth Army within two months. Later he was transferred to the Army of the Vosges.



MASTERS OF STRATEGY WHO COMPRISED THE ALLIES' GRAND COUNCIL OF WAR.

Representatives of the Allied Powers outside the French General Headquarters, where the Grand Council of War met on December 6th, 1915, under the Presidency of General Joffre. From left to right: General

Like the British on their left, D'Espérey's troops crossed the Aisne under heavy fire, and advanced against the Germans entrenched on the Craonne plateau. There, however, their progress was stopped, and although they fought with the utmost gallantry, it was in vain. A little later D'Espérey settled down to a long spell of trench warfare, his business being to hold the line while other armies made the grand assaults.

To command the new Sixth Army Joffre recalled another

general from his retirement. Michel Joseph Maunoury, born in 1847, entered the Army as a youth, and fought in the Franco - Prussian War. He rose to the rank of colonel in 1897. Four years later he was made a general, and he held the appointments of Com-mander of the Artillery in Paris and Director of the Ecole Supérieur de Guerre. At the time of his retirement (1912) he was a member of the Superior Council of War, and he was then made Military Governor of Paris.

Maunoury's army, one of not less than four corps, was fresh,

Count Porro (Italy), Sir John French, General Joffre. and General Jilinsky (Russia). General Wiellemans represented Belgium, and Colonel Stefanovitch, Serbia.

not having shared in the hardships of the retreat, so to it was given a big task at the Battle of the Marne. Early on September 6th Maunoury's men were advancing to the Ourcq, where, in conjunction with the British, they turned the flank of Von Kluck's army, and compelled it to fall back. Soon they were in possession of the line of the Ourcq, and the first victory for France and her freedom was won.

Maunoury had another responsible task at the Battle of

the Aisne. His army, advancing on the left of the British, forced the passage of that river between Soissons and Compiègne, and made some progress up the heights on the other side; but on the 15th it was attacked and driven back, almost to the bank of the Aisne. However, reinforcements arrived and this loss was made good. Trench warfare then became the order of the day, and to Maunoury was entrusted the defence of this section of the French line. In January his right wing fought the Battle of Soissons, but for some afterwards time the



SIR JOHN FRENCH LEAVING THE MINISTRY OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS IN PARIS.

On December 7th, 1915, the members of the Allies' War Council went to Paris for a luncheon given in their honour at the Ministry of Foreign Affairs. On the 8th the Council was resumed to deliberate on the situation of the Allies in relation to the Balkans.

Sixth Army did nothing more than hold its ground. Passing over the Seventh Army, led by De Castelnau, and the Ninth, at first under Foch, two armies remain, the Eighth and Tenth, and the names of the generals in command of these are especially familiar to readers of Sir John French's despatches, mainly because they—D'Urbal and Maud'huy—under the supreme direction of Foch, were mostly in touch with the British troops.

Victor Louis Lucien d'Urbal was born of a military

family in 1858, and after the usual training entered a cavalry regiment. He passed through the Ecole de Guerre, and held several Staff appointments before 1903, when he was made a lieutenant-colonel. When war broke out he was a brigadier-general. D'Urbal at once made his mark as a

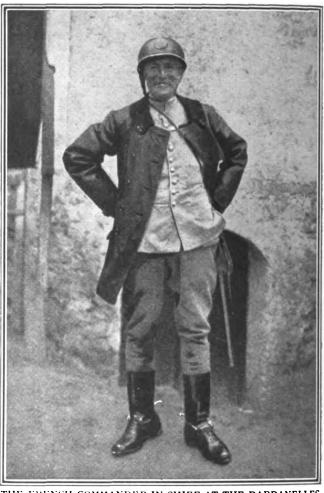
D'Urbal's rapid promotion

leader, and was promoted rapidly, first to a division and then to an army corps. In October, when a new army was formed to hold the threatened line along the

Yser and to support the Belgians, he was appointed to command it. It was called the Eighth Army, and in it were some Territorials. It came into position about the end of October, and from it D'Urbal sent assistance to the British during the Battle of Ypres. The savage German rush was driven back, and D'Urbal's was for some time one of the quieter parts of the front. His command ceased



General A. Y. E. Dubail, one of General Joffre's right-hand men, and commander of the Southern French Armies operating between Noyon and Belfort. When the war began, General Dubail was leader of the Army of the Vosges.



THE FRENCH COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF AT THE DARDANELLES. General Bailloud, who succeeded General Gouraud as Commander-in-Chief of the French Expeditionary Corps at the Dardanelle, when the latter was wounded in July, 1915, and until General Sarrail's appointment in August, 1915. Formerly General Bailloud commanded the famous Twentieth Army Corps at Nancy, and the Nineteenth at Algiers.

later to be of any great importance, and in March or April he succeeded Maud'huy as commander of the Tenth Army.

Louis Ernest de Maud'huy was born at Metz in 1857, two years before his soldier father was killed at Magenta. He studied at St. Cyr and the Ecole de Guerre, and entered the Army; served on the Staff and was a captain of Chasseurs before being made professor at the Ecole de Guerre in 1896. Two years later he obtained a high position in the War Office, but soon he was again occupying a professorial chair, lecturing on tactics and military history. In 1909 he became a colonel, and in 1912 a general. In August, 1914, he was in charge of a brigade, but in less than two months he was commanding an de Maud'huy

army, the Tenth, which took its place

in the line about the end of September. It occupied the region between Arras and Lens, and at once fought the

Germans at the Battle of Albert.

In the great campaign in Flanders in the winter of 1914-15 Maud'huy's army was on the British right. He advanced to Arras, but was soon forced to retire to the heights behind that city, where he just succeeded in repulsing a serious and strong German attack. From October 20th to 26th his position was well-nigh as desperate as was that of the British at Ypres a little later. Masses and masses of men were hurled at Arras, and at one moment they got near enough to bombard the city; but the French line remained unbroken, and as the Germans weakened and retired, Maud'huy gained ground from them by a vigorous and well-planned counter-attack. Like the British, his army kept to the trenches through the winter. In March

Dardanelles

or April Maud'huy was transferred to the Army of the Vosges, and D'Urbal succeeded him as leader of the Tenth

To two of the most distinguished of the French generals, Galliéni and D'Amade—both members of the Superior Council of War—special tasks were given. Joseph Simon Galliéni, born in 1849, has been likened to Lord Kitchener. He fought with the Colonial infantry in the Franco-Prussian War, being made prisoner in Sedan, and soon after the conclusion of peace entered upon a long and fruitful career in France's Colonial Empire. In 1875 Galliéni was sent to Senegal, and some ten years later was made commander of the Upper Sudan Territory. There he not only put down rebellions, but he organised the country, and improved its detences, its education, and its roads. In 1892 Galliéni was transferred to Tongking,

steps to put the capital into a state of preparedness. But his dispositions were not tested; instead, he had the satisfaction of leading the troops under his command against the retreating foe. At the end of October the general was made Minister for War under M. Briand, another parallel between his career and that of Lord Kitchener.

Albert Gérard Leo d'Amade was born at Toulouse seven years later than Galliéni. He served when young in Algeria and Tunisia, and also in Tongking, after which he gained a good knowledge of China during a period spent as military attaché at Peking. As the representative of France he watched the operations of the British

D'Amade at the Army in South Africa during the Boer War, and was afterwards military attaché in London. In 1908 D'Amade was made

a general, and was sent to command the French army in Western Morocco. After his return to France he commanded an army corps, and became a member of the Superior Council of War.

At the beginning of the Great War D'Amade commanded a Territorial corps stationed at Arras, which moved forward to assist the British Army after its retirement from Mons, but more important work was soon found for him. In April he was chosen to command the French detachment which landed at Kum Kale on the Dardanelles. He superintended this, and also the crossing to the Gallipoli



LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR RONALD CHARLES
MAXWELL, K.C.B.
When Sir William Robertson was appointed Chief of the
General Staff in France in January, 1915, Lieut.-General Sir
Ronald C. Maxwell succeeded him as Quartermaster-General of
the Forces

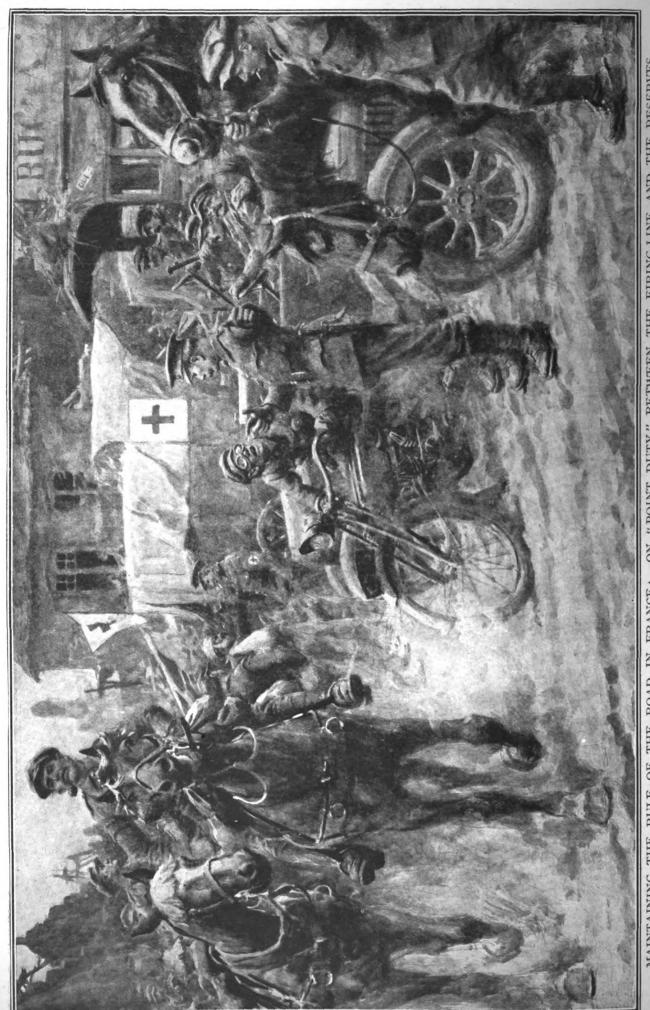
where he was put in command of a military district, one especially exposed to the raids of Chinese pirates. An end was put to these, and defensive works were erected, after which the administrator was able to do something to introduce needed and beneficial reforms. Being then a general, Galliéni was appointed in 1897 French Resident in Madagascar. For four years he did the same kind of work there, the new colony being thoroughly organised by him, the enemy crushed, and measures taken to restore

order and introduce prosperity. Gallieni at When Galliéni returned to France he was chosen inspector Paris of the African troops, and in 1906 he took command of the Thirteenth Corps and then of the Fourteenth. From 1908 to the beginning of the Great War he was a member of the Superior Council, being retained, in spite of his sixty-five years, because he had commanded in chief before the enemy

in Madagascar. Towards the end of August, when the Germans were rapidly nearing Paris, Galliéni was made its Military Governor, and at once he took



GENERAL SIR EDMUND H. H. ALLENBY, K.C.B. Commanding the Cavalry Expeditionary Force at the beginning of the war. In April, 1915, General Allenby succeeded Sir Herbert Plumer as Commander of the Fifth Corps.



A police-officer, khaki-clad, yet still in the familiar pose, administering the rule of the road—but in shelf-wreked Fronch village within range of the German guns. The imperturbable figure, wearing the red-and-black fronch village within range of the Sear standing in a sea of range, the large, uplified, and hilling and departed-carrying monor-cyclists, riding on war, but still ruled by the authoritative hand and thunderous voice of "Robert," from London.

-

Peninsula, and commanded the French in the attacks made early in May on the Turkish positions; but just after this he returned home invalided, and his place was taken by General Gouraud.

Born in 1868, Henri Joseph Eugene Gouraud, almost the youngest of France's generals, earned the title of "the lion of the Argonne" when he commanded a division and then a corps in that region. On June 30th, soon after he arrived at the Dardanelles, he was wounded, and, without arrived at the Dardanenes, he was wounded, and, without his right arm, was compelled to return to France. Sir Ian Hamilton described him as "a happy mixture of daring in danger and of calm in crisis, full of energy and

Another general with a reputation was François André Sordet, also a veteran of the war of 1870-71. Having entered a cavalry regiment, he became in due time a Gouraud and Sordet general. In 1912 he was chosen to command the Tenth Army Corps at Rennes, and in 1913 he became a member of the Superior Council of War and

Inspector of Cavalry.

In August, 1914, Sordet took the field at the head of a cavalry corps, and he was stationed a few miles behind the British army at Mons. During the retreat Sir John French visited Sordet and asked him for assistance, but the latter could do nothing owing to the tired condition of his horses after a prolonged and difficult march. The same thing happened on the following Wednesday, the 26th, "the most critical day of all." After this, however, Sordêt came up, and his help was very useful to the harassed British troops. Soon, his corps was incorporated in the new Sixth Army, but opportunities for cavalry action were few, and little was heard of him.

What of France's younger generals, the men who led the army corps and the divisions? Some of them had undoubtedly a big future before them, for they had learned war in the great school of experience. Among them was Bailloud, who succeeded Gouraud in Gallipoli; Putz, who, in turn, commanded little armies in the Vosges and on the Yser; and Petain, who succeeded De Castelnau as leader of the Seventh Army. Paul Grossetti, the commander of the Sixteenth Army Corps, and Dubois, the commander of the Ninth, both made reputations in the early battles, and both assisted the British at Ypres. Conneau, Moussy, and Bidon are other names which will surely be heard again. Let the final glance at these men be at Grossetti, sitting in an armchair in the square at Pervyse, not far from the burning church, and giving his orders under the constant fire of the German guns.

Among our British generals the best known after Sir John French is, undoubtedly, Sir Ian Hamilton, and to him was entrusted a most difficult task. Sir Ian had a temperament very different from that of Sir John, for versatile or mercurial describe him better than do stolid

or phlegmatic.

Ian Standish Monteith Hamilton, a grandson of Viscount Gort, was born in January, 1853, and twenty years later entered the Gordon Highlanders. The Gordons are generally to the front when there is fighting, and so

was Hamilton. He was in the Afghan Hamilton War, and was one of the survivors of Majuba Hill, where he was wounded

in the hand; in 1884 he went down the Nile to the relief of Gordon, and later he was fighting in Burma. After a few years of peace he was a colonel in the force that marched to Chitral, and in the Tirah campaign he led a brigade. After commanding the Musketry School at Hythe he went to South Africa, and there, like French. he made his name.

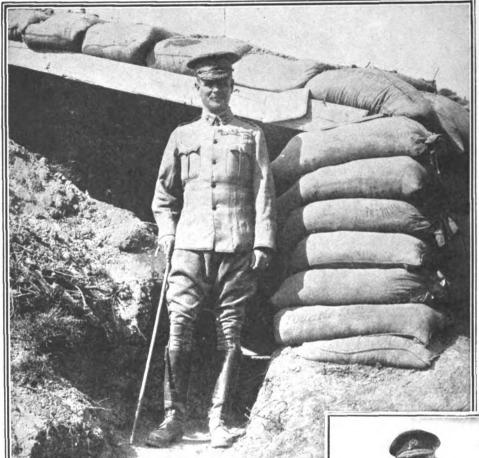
Ian Hamilton was in Ladysmith with White at the outbreak of the war, and he remained there until General Buller's relieving force entered. He was chosen by Lord Roberts to command the mounted infantry, and he led the right wing of the army which advanced on Pretoria. He did



GENERAL SIR HORACE SMITH-DORRIEN, G.C.M.G. Appointed to command of the Second Army of the original British Expeditionary Force, General Smith-Dorrien saw much service in the early critical days of the war. In December, 1915, he was given supreme command of the expedition against German East Africa.

good service in rounding up the Boers, and as Chief of the Staff to Lord Kitchener he had a great share in directing the final operations and in conducting the negotiations

After the war Hamilton was for a short time Quartermaster-General, but in 1904 the outbreak of the Russo-Japanese War gave him an opportunity to see warfare on a grand scale. As the principal British military attaché he was with the Japanese Army in Manchuria, and in "A Staff Officer's Scrap-Book" he wrote down his impressions. In 1990 he was made Adjutant-General, and in 1910 Inspector General of Overseas Forces, in which capacity he visited Canada and Australia, and advised the authorities



"THE SOUL OF ANZAC."

Lieut,-General Sir William Riddell Birdwood, K.C.S.I., K.C.M.G., C.B., A.D.C., D.S.O., commanded the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps above Gaba Tepe, Gallipoli. He was slightly wounded on May 14th, 1915, but did not relinquish his command. Pending the arrival at Gallipoli of General Sir Charles Monro, who succeeded General Sir Ian Hamilton in the command of the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force, in October, 1915, Sir William Birdwood took temporary command of the force.

there on measures of defence. In 1907 he was made a full general, and later awarded the G.C.B.

During the earlier stages of the Great Hamilton continued at his post, which also included the office of Commander-in-Chief in the Mediterranean, one then of great importance. Later, when the British troops were divided into armies, he was appointed to command the Fourth Army, and in March, 1915, he was sent to take charge of the attack on the Dardanelles.

Hamilton's despatch of May 20th tells something of his work there. He saw the "stupendous events"

of the bombardment by the allied Sir Ian Hamilton at Gallipoli warships, and this having failed proceeded to make his plans. Readers of The Great War are

familiar with the story of heroism which enabled the British to get a footing on those narrow beaches. But then followed one disappointment after another, a few yards of ground won at great cost, and then perhaps, of dire necessity, abandoned, until there came the crowning failure of Suvla Bay. This was a great blow to the general, and in October he returned to England, his place being taken by Sir Charles Monro.

Early in 1915, when our new armies began to reach the front, a new organisation was necessary, and Sir John French's force was divided into armies. The leadership of the first two armies was entrusted to Sir Douglas Haig and Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien; later Sir Herbert Plumer

took Smith-Dorrien's place, and when a third army was formed Sir Charles Monro was chosen to command it. On Sir French's retirement in December Monro succeeded Haig at the head of the First Army, while General Allenby followed Monro in command of the Third.

Sir Douglas Haig was born in 1861, and after an Oxford education entered the 7th Hussars. In 1898 he served under Lord Kitchener in the advance to Khartoum, and in the next year he went to South Africa, where he did good work in command of flying columns. But Haig was only a lieutenant colonel then, and it was not until 1903, when he had been in command of the 17th Lancers, that he began to come to the front. He was noted for the excellent work he did as Inspector-General of Cavalry in

Sir Douglas India, and in 1906 he became Haig Director of

Military Training and then Director of Staff Duties. Again,

for three years, he was in India as Chief of the Staff, after which he returned home to take command at Aldershot. When the Great War broke out the First Army Corps went from Aldershot, and at its head went Haig, and he retained this command until he was promoted to that of the

First Army.

Sir Douglas came through the first year of the war splendidly, and made a reputation which no later event could destroy. He arranged the successful retirement of his corps from Mons to the Marne, and the men got away from their perils at Maroilles and Landrecies on August 25th "mainly owing to the skilful manner in which Sir Douglas Haig extricated his corps from an exceptionally difficult position in the darkness of the night." His services at the Battle of the Aisne were also praised by Sir John French. "I cannot," he said, "speak too highly of the valuable services rendered by Sir Douglas Haig." And further on he mentioned his "particularly marked and distinguished service in critical situations." On



FROM YPRES TO GALLIPOLI. Lieut.-General Sir Aylmer Hunter-Weston, K.C.B., D.S.O., commanded the famous 29th Division at Gallipoli, and later the Eighth Army Corps, after serving with distinction in France and Flanders.

September 14th the action of the corps under his command was "of so skilful, bold, and decisive a character that he gained positions which have enabled me (Sir John

French) to maintain my position for more than three weeks of very severe fighting on the north bank of the river.

At the First Battle of Ypres Sir Douglas had a very anxious time. His corps was attacked again and again with savage ferocity and by overwhelming numbers, notably on October 31st, and by the Prussian Guard on November 11th, but its commander's nerve and judgment never failed. Reinforcements, the few available, were employed by him to the very best advantage, and his

dispositions, coupled with the bravery of his troops, fewer every hour though Haig at

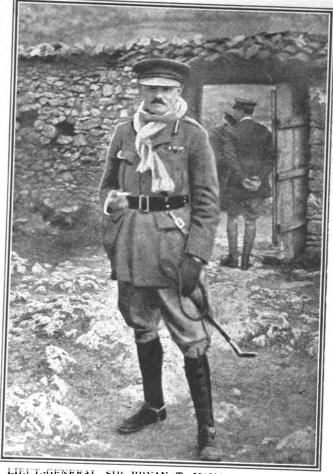
Neuve Chapelle they were, enabled the line to be held to the end, as Sir John French said, "with marvellous tenacity and undaunted courage."

The Battle of Neuve Chapelle was largely directed by Sir Douglas Haig. Here again, Sir John French must be quoted. "I consider that the able and skilful dispositions which were made by the General Officer Commanding the which were made by the General Officer Commanding the which were made by the General Omcer Commanding the First Army contributed largely to the defeat of the enemy and to the capture of the position. The energy and vigour with which General Sir Douglas Haig handled his command show him to be a leader of great ability and power." As at Neuve Chapelle, so at Festubert in May, the First Army did the bulk of the attacking, and again Sir Douglas Haig rendered valuable services, and so he did until the end of



GENERAL SARRAIL.

Appointed in January, 1915, to the supreme command of the Franco-British Forces at Salonika. In the west he had successfully withstood tish Forces at Salonika. In the west he had successfully withsto all the German attempts to break through in the region of Verdun.



LIEUT. GENERAL SIR BRYAN T. MAHON, C.B., K.C.V.O. He was appointed in October, 1915, to the command of the British Forces in Serbia. This photograph was taken outside his headquarters. General Mahon was formerly in charge of the roth Irish Division on the western front.

the year. When, in December, 1915, Sir John French returned to England Sir Douglas Haig was chosen as his successor. Comparatively he was a young man, and this was not the least of the points in his favour, for on him the hopes of Britons were set.

Sir Horace Lockwood Smith Dorrien was born in 1858, and entered the Sherwood Foresters when he was eighteen. Three years later he received his baptism of fire in the Zulu War, and he served under Sir Garnet Wolseley in Egypt. In 1884 he was in the Nile Expedition, and in 1885 and 1886 he fought in the Sudan. 'In the 'nineties he was in the force that marched to the relief of Chitral and in the one that fought the Tirah Campaign. In 1898 he was again in the Sudan.

Except for a year or two on the Staff in India, Smith-Dorrien had been all his life with the Sherwood Foresters, rising step by step until, when the Boer War broke out, he was colonel of one of its battalions.

He took this to South Africa and soon Sir Horace attracted attention by his ability as a Smith-Dorrien leader. He commanded the brigade which took the leading part in the Battle of Paardeberg,

and led a column during the later stages of the war.

His work in South Africa being finished, he passed six years in an Indian command. In 1907 he returned to England and was chosen Commander-in-Chief at Aldershot, where he made himself remarkably popular with the men, and in 1912 he was transferred to take over the Southern Command at Salisbury.

When the Great War began, Sir Horace was not chosen to go abroad. The Second Army Corps was sent out under Sir James M. Grierson. However, Grierson died in the

train a day or two after reaching France, and Smith-Dorrien was sent out to take his place.

The Second Corps was under Smith-Dorrien when the fighting began, and during the retreat it had the harder task. Against heavy odds it fought the Battle of Le Cateau, and its general's services on that critical day won the very highest praise from Sir John French. The passage has often been quoted, but it will bear reproduction: "I say without hesitation that the saving of the left wing of the army under my command on the morning of August 26th could never have been accomplished unless a commander of rare and unusual coolness, intrepidity and determination had been present personally to conduct the operations."

Sir Horace led his troops through the fierce autumn

fighting until after the Battle of Ypres it was exhausted by the enormous losses it had suffered. It was then given a rest, while reinforcements were sent out to bring it up to strength again; with these it was again ready for the front early in 1915. About this time the corps were grouped in armies, and Smith-Dorrien took command of the Second Army.

Sir Horace superintended the demonstrations made by the Second Army at the Battle of Neuve Chapelle, but the next that was heard of him was that he had returned home. In December, 1915, it was announced that he had been appointed to the supreme command in East Africa. He arrived at Cape Town on January 12th, 1916.

arrived at Cape Town on January 12th, 1916.
Sir Herbert Charles Onslow Plumer, who took Smith-Dorrien's place, was fifty-eight years old, and like most of our general officers, had made his reputation during the Boer War. He entered the York and Lancaster Regiment in 1876 and was in the Sudan in 1884. In 1896, when there was trouble in Bechuanaland, he raised

a regiment of mounted rifles, and he was in Rhodesia when the Boer War broke out. With a force of about 1,000 men he pressed northwards to the relief of

Sir Herbert Plumer

he pressed northwards to the relief of
Mafeking, and this difficult operation first made his name

known to the British public.

The war being over, Plumer, then a major-general, returned to England, and in a little while became Quarter-master-General. Later he held various commands at home, and in 1914 he was in charge of the northern district at York. Since 1996 he had been Sir Herbert Plumer, K.C.B.

York. Since 1906 he had been Sir Herbert Plumer, K.C.B. During the earlier months of the Great War Plumer remained in England busily occupied in training men, until early in 1915 he was sent out as commander of a new Army Corps numbered the Fifth. This was put into Smith-Dorrien's Second Army, and on March 14th and 15th it took the leading part in the fighting at St. Eloi.

This was just a baptism of fire; but Sir Herbert's conduct must have commended itself to Sir John French, for in April he took over the command of the Second Army, which he led during the Second Battle of Ypres. He had then very much the same task as the one which had fallen to Sir Douglas Haig in the previous November, and his dispositions, together with the courage of his men, were successful in checking the German rush. His "fine defence of Ypres" was mentioned by Sir John French.





HISTORIC INCIDENT IN THE DARDANELLES.

General d'Amade about to disembark from H.M.S. Lord Nelson after visiting Admiral de Robeck. The band was playing the "Marseillaise," and the admiral, officers and men stood at the salute. The first photograph

is of General Gouraud, successor to General d'Amade in command of the French Expedition against the Turks. General Gouraud was severely wounded on Gallipoli in July, 1915, and succeeded by General Bailloud.

The fourth of our Army leaders bears a name which, before the Great War, was quite unknown to the general public. Charles Carmichael Monro was born in 1860, and entered the Royal West Surrey Regiment in 1879. He saw service on the Indian Frontier in 1897 and 1898, and, of course, in South Africa, where he was on the Staff. In military circles he was chiefly known as a musketry expert, and he was made Chief Instructor and then Commandant of the School of Musketry at Hythe. From 1912 until he was sent to France he commanded one of the London Divisions.

As one of Sir Douglas Haig's chief lieutenants, General Monro made his reputation. He led his Division through the thickest of the fighting from August to November, and during the Battle of Ypres he was knocked unconscious by a shell. Early in 1915 he succeeded Haig as commander of the First Army Corps, and he directed its operations

throughout the spring and summer. A little later, when the Third Army Sir Charles was formed, Monro, by then a K.C.B. Monro was chosen to command it.

then came a surprise.

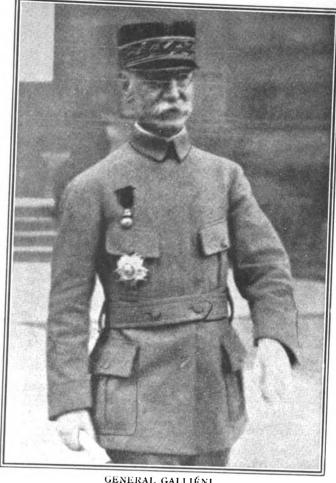
In October it was announced that Sir Ian Hamilton was returning from Gallipoli, and that his successor would be Sir Charles Monro, who left at once for the Near East, and reached Salonika in November. He superintended the successful withdrawal of our troops from the Peninsula, and then returned to Flanders to succeed Sir Douglas Haig as Commander of the First Army. Evidently the new British Commander-in-Chief had a high opinion of Sir Charles's abilities, and his future was watched with interest. He belongs to the type of general associated with Wellington's campaigns in Spain, and these were among the best that Britain has ever produced.

among the best that Britain has ever produced.

In the war against Turkey the names of three other prominent generals claim notice. Sir John Eccles Nixon, K.C.B., was, like French and Hamilton, one of our commanders-in-chief during the Great War From April 9th, 1915, when he succeeded Lieut.-General Sir Arthur A. Barrett, K.C.B., till January, 1916, when he also retired from the command on account of ill-health, he directed the operations against the Turks in Mesopotamia. General the operations against the Turks in Mesopotamia. Nixon was born in 1857 and, having entered the 18th Bengal Lancers, went through the Afghan War of 1879-80 and various expeditions on the Indian Frontier. In the Boer War he led a cavalry brigade, and after his return to India he commanded at Meerut and Peshawar, becoming finally head of the Southern Army. He was responsible for the British victory at Shaiba and for the advance on Bagdad. His successor was Lieut.-General Sir Percy Lake, Chief of the General Staff in India.

General Barrett, who was in command in Mesopotamia before General Nixon's arrival, was a man of like age. He had marched with Roberts to Kandahar, and had been in many expeditions on the Indian Frontier before he was made Adjutant-General in India in 1909. When the Great War broke out he was commanding at Poona. Chosen to lead the Indian Expeditionary Force, he arrived in Mesopotamia in November, and was responsible for the first Turkish defeats and the capture of Basra and Kurna. His principal assistants were Walter S. Delamain, William H. Dobbie, and Charles I. Fry.

During the Great War Sir John French had in turn two Chiefs of the Staff, and their responsibilities can hardly be exaggerated. The first was Sir Archibald J. Murray, who had served in the South African War with his regiment, the Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, and was there severely wounded. Afterwards he filled high positions at home, including those of Director of Military Training and Inspector of Infortance and he was Chief of the Centeral and Inspector of Infantry, and he was Chief of the General Staff when war broke out. He went to the front with Sir John French, who spoke very highly of his services in his fact dearly in in his first despatch, and he remained there until early in 1915. In October, Murray succeeded another general of the



GENERAL GALLIÉNI. Appointed French Minister of War in succession to M. Millerand in October, 1915. General Galliéni was invested with the responsibility of the Paris defences on the outbreak of war, and under his supervision many notable improvements were made to strengthen the city against a siege.

same name—Sir J. Wolfe Murray—as Chief of the Imperial General Staff, and in December he was sent to succeed Sir Charles Monro as British Commander in the Near East.

As Murray's successor French selected Sir William Robert Robertson, who had entered the Army as a private, and had obtained a commission in the 3rd Dragoon Guards in 1888. He served as an intelligence officer in India and South Africa, and was severely wounded during the Chitral Campaign. After 1902 he was on the Staff at Aldershot, Commandant of the Staff College, and Director of Military Training, so he should know something about war.

In August, 1914, Robertson went to France as Quarter-master-General. During the retreat from Mons his duties were especially onerous, for it was not easy to provide for the wants of an army which was march-

ing in the wrong direction. However, he met "the almost insuperable difficulties"

Robertson

Sir William

with his characteristic energy, skill, and determination, so Sir John French said, and it was "largely owing to his exertions that the hardships and sufferings of the troops—inseparable from such operations—were not much greater.'

Robertson entered upon his new duties just before the Battle of Neuve Chapelle in March, and in describing this Sir John spoke of his "able and devoted assistance" in arranging the operations. Some of the credit for the successful stand at Ypres and for the advance of Loos must also be given to him. In December General Robertson returned to London to succeed Sir A. J. Murray as Chief of the Imperial General Staff.

As Chief of his new Staff Sir Douglas Haig chose Major-General L. E. Kiggell, a name unknown to the general



KING-KING, D.S.O. GENERAL JAMES G. Standing between two members of his Staff, before his headquarters in the Balkans. The house was constructed with mud and sticks.

public, although not to students of war. Kiggell served in South Africa, and was afterwards Director of Staff Duties, Commandant of the Staff College, and Director of Military Training, while he also filled the position of Professor of Military History and Strategy at the Staff College. With his wide knowledge of the science of war he seemed just the man to beat the Germans in the subject in which hitherto they had excelled all others.

A word may be said here about the Sub-Chief of the General Staff, Sir Henry Hughes Wilson, K.C.B., who entered the Rifle Brigade in 1884. He was wounded in Burma and served in South Africa, but much of his military life was passed in Staff work. For three years he was Commandant of the Staff College, and for four years before the war Director of Military Operations. During it, he served as chief assistant both to General Murray and General Robertson, and for his services was made a knight. No officer won more golden opinions in

As Chief of the Staff in Gallipoli, Sir Ian Hamilton had Major-General Sir W. P. Braithwaite, an officer who had

served for many years in India, becoming Major-General finally head of the Staff College at Quetta. Sir Ian's opinion of his services is unmistakable. He was "the best Chief of the Braithwaite

General Staff it has ever been my fortune to encounter in war. I will not pile epithets upon him.'

The Adjutant-General in France in 1914-15 was Sir Cecil F. N. Macready, K.C.B., a man then fifty-two years old. He was a Gordon Highlander, and served with his regiment in Egypt in 1882, and during the Boer War. He remained in South Africa after the war was over, and then joined the General Staff in London. More than once Sir John French spoke highly of his services at the front. Finally, Robertson's successor as Quartermaster-General was Sir Ronald Charles Maxwell, K.C.B.

To command his army corps Sir John French had a number of able generals. The First Corps, after being led by Haig and Monro, was given to Hubert de la Poer Gough,

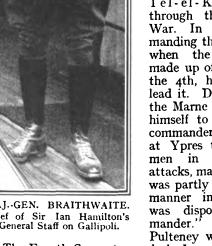
a member of a distinguished military family, and the son and brother of generals who had won the V.C. Gough entered the 16th Lancers in 1889, served with that regiment in South Africa, and in 1901 became its colonel. He was in command of the 3rd Cavalry Brigade in August, 1914, and he took this to the front, where his rise was rapid. Soon he was in charge of a division, and just before the Battle of Loos he had taken command of the First Corps. According to Sir John French, he soon proved himself to be a cavalry leader "of a high order."

Smith-Dorrien's successor as commander of the Second Corps was Sir Charles Fer-Sir Charles

gusson, a Scottish Fergusson baronet, the seventh of his line. He was one of the very few British generals who had not served in the South African War, for during that time he was with the Egyptian Army. He returned to England in 1904 to command a battalion of his old regiment, the Grenadier Guards, and

from 1909 to 1913 was Inspector of Infantry. He took the 5th Division, which he was then commanding, from Ireland to France, and this had a very bad time in the retreat. However, Fergusson managed to get it away, and his "great skill and tenacity" in main-taining a difficult position at the Battle of the Aisne were praised by Sir John French.
Throughout the spring and
summer of 1915 he remained
in charge of the Second in charge of the Second Corps.

For the whole of the first year of war, the Third Corps had only one leader, Sir William Pulteney Pulteney, who started his career in the Scots Guards. He was at Tel-el-Kebir, and served through the South African War. In 1914 he was commanding the 6th Division, and when the Third Corps was made up of that division and the 4th, he was selected to lead it. During the Battle of the Marne Pulteney "showed himself to be a most capable commander in the field," and at Ypres the success of his men in repulsing constant attacks, made in great strength, was partly due to "the skilful manner in which the corps was disposed by its com-mander." For his services Pulteney was made a knight.



MAJ.-GEN. BRAITHWAITE. Chief of Sir Ian Hamilton's General Staff on Gallipoli.

The Fourth Corps, too, only had one commanding officer during the same period, Sir Henry Seymour Rawlinson, Bart. Rawlinson had served in Burma, in the Sudan, and in South Africa, first in the 60th Rifles, and then in the Coldstream Guards, and had been in charge of the Staff College and afterwards of the 3rd Division. As everyone knows, he was sent out in command of the incomplete Fourth Corps when Antwerp was in danger, and in a few weeks constant fighting reduced it to a shadow. Early in 1915 it was re-formed as a complete corps, and was one of the two selected to storm Neuve Chapelle. There, one of the brigades of its 8th Division had a cruel experience in front of some unbroken barbed-wire, and two days later its 7th Division had one almost as saddening.
Rawlinson's reputation suffered as a consequence of

Neuve Chapelle. Sir John French stated in his despatch that "the difficulties above enumerated might have been overcome at an earlier period of the day if the general officer commanding the Fourth Corps had been able to bring his reserve brigades more speedily into action." However, he retained his command, and his corps took a leading part in the attack on Festubert. Later, it distinguished itself at the capture of Loos.

The Fifth Corps passed from Sir Herbert Plumer to Sir Edward Henry Hynman Allenby, K.C.B. Born in 1861, Allenby began his military life in the famous Royal Inniskilling Dragoons, and served in Zululand and the Boer War. Then he became colonel of the 5th Lancers and general of a cavalry brigade. At the outbreak of war he was Inspector of Cavalry, and he was in charge of the British cavalry at Mons. He soon earned Sir John French's commendation, and when the cavalry were organised in a corps he took command of it. His men served like the infantry in the trenches, and about the end of April Allenby succeeded Plumer as commander of the Fifth Corps. In June he directed a successful attack on the Bellewaarde Ridge near Ypres, and in September his corps did good work at Loos. So meritorious were his services about this time that he was chosen to succeed Sir Charles Monro in command of the Third Army.

Allenby's successor as leader of the Cavalry Corps was Sir Julian Hedworth George Byng, a son of the Earl of Strafford. In 1883 he entered the 10th Hussars, and after serving in the Sudan and South Africa rose to be colonel of his regiment. He commanded a brigade and later a division, and from 1909 to 1912 he held a high command in Egypt. Early in October, 1914, Byng went to Belgium in command of the 3rd Cavalry Division, and his men saw some very hard fighting indeed around Ypres. Byng's "eminent services" were constantly brought to Sir John French's notice by Sir Douglas Haig, and his reward came when he was chosen to lead the Cavalry

Corps.

The Indian Army Corps was under Sir James Willcocks, a veteran soldier with a long record of service in Afghanistan, the Sudan, Burma, the Indian Frontier, and especially West Africa. In 1900 he led the Ashanti Field Force to the relief of Coomassie, and for this deed received

the freedom of the City of London. In 1914 he was the com-mander of India's Northern Army, and in charge of the Indian Corps he reached France in October. In January he directed an attack on the German posi-Sir James Willcocks

tion at Givenchy, which was not very successful, but at Neuve Chapelle the Indians did excellent work, and something also was due to Sir James for keeping their martial ardour assame in the trying conditions of a European winter with its endless wet and cold. When he retired later in the year his place was taken by Sir Charles A. Anderson, hitherto one of his lieutenants. Finally, the Sixth Corps, formed about July, was commanded by Sir John L. Keir, K.C.B., who had taken the 6th Division to the front in the previous September, and had led it successfully since

Among the most distinguished of all the corps commanders were the two who served under Sir Ian Hamilton in Gallipoli-Birdwood and Hunter-Weston. Sir William Riddell Birdwood, henceforth known to fame as the Soul of Anzac," was born in 1865, and passed nearly the whole of his military life in India. In South Africa he was severely wounded, and after his return to India he

acted as Military Secretary to Lord Kitchener, Quartermaster-General, and then Military Secretary Government. From the desk Birdwood went straight to the field. He took command of the Australian and New Zealand troops in Egypt, and under him they landed in Gallipoli. His powers of leadership and resource were fully proved during the anxious days that followed, and the dauntless courage and unfailing cheerfulness of his men were largely due to his example. A wound which he received did not keep him out of the field, and before Monro's arrival he acted as temporary Commander-in-Chief.

By this time many people have forgotten the name of the major of Engineers who assisted Lord Roberts' march to Pretoria in March, 1901, by blowing up

Birdwood and an important railway culvert. It was Aylmer Hunter-Weston, who afterwards Hunter-Weston

served Sir John French as Chief of his Staff. He had previously been in several of the campaigns on the Indian frontier, and after 1908 he held high positions at home—Assistant Director of Military Training and Commander of the 11th Infantry Brigade—and in August, 1914, he took his brigade to the front. After distinguishing himself at Ypres, Hunter-Weston was chosen to command



LIEUT. GENERAL SIR PERCY H. N. LAKE, K.C.M.G., K.C.B. Sir Percy Lake's succession to Sir John Nixon as Commander-in-Chief of the British Forces in Mesopotamia was announced on January 11th, 1916. From 1912 to January, 1916, he had been Chief of the General Staff in India. the Immortal 29th Division proceeding to Gallipoli, and during the landings there and the subsequent attacks his abilities were severely tested. However, he came through the ordeal with credit, and showed that he had "very special qualifications as a commander of troops in the field." Later he was invalided home, but this was only

a pause in his career.

A name which cannot be omitted is that of the Canadian leader, Edwin Alfred Hervey Alderson. He went through the Boer War of 1881, the Egyptian War of 1882, and the Nile Campaign of 1884-85. In 1896 he commanded some mounted infantry in Mashonaland, and he did the same during the Boer War, while from 1903 to 1912 he held various commands in England and India. In 1914 Alderson was selected to command the Canadian Division, and with it he reached the front early in 1915. He pulled it together after its terrible experiences at the Second Battle of Ypres, and showed himself a most capable leader throughout.

A long list of brave men remains, and about them, too, a great deal could be said. Among them were cavalry leaders such as Michael Francis Rimington, whose knowledge of South Africa enabled him to raise a body of scouts or guides at the beginning of the Boer War. When

THE CIVILIAN HEAD OF FRANCE WITH THE MILITARY LEADERS. M. Raymond Poincaré, President of the French Republic, studying a map near the firing-line during a visit to the French front.

the Great War began he was Inspector of Cavalry in India, and as leader of the Indian Cavalry Corps he took part in the fighting in Flanders. Other cavalry generals were Sir Philip W. Chetwode, the first man to be mentioned in Sir John French's first despatch, and Charles T. McM. Kavanagh, whose "personal bravery and dash" were cited at the Battle of Ypres. Both won the D.S.O. in South Africa, and both went to France at the head of brigades of cavalry. So also did C. J. Briggs, H. de B. de Lisle, and the Hon. C. E. Bingham.

Among generals of division, Sir Thomas D'Oyly Snow

earned a foremost place. He hurried up his Division, the 4th, to protect the re-Other leaders of treat from Mons, and his work during the Second Battle of Ypres was singled out for distinction

special mention. Other generals who commanded divisions with distinction were Sir H. F. M. Wilson, J. A. L. Haldane, and R. C. B. Haking. Sir A. J. Godley, the leader of the New Zealanders, was Birdwood's assistance. and Sir W. Douglas led there the heroic Division of Lancashire Territorials. The Divisions of the Indian Corps were commanded by Sir C. A. Anderson and H. B. B. Watkis, the former being an artillery officer who had

served on the Indian frontier and commanded troops in China. Another leader of proved resource was Sir Bryan Mahon, the reliever of Mafeking, who commanded the British contingent in Greece.

Of the younger generals, those still nearer to the firingline, it is perhaps invidious to mention only one or two, but certainly the Earl of Cavan, Edward S. Bulfin, and F. C. Shaw made reputations as leaders. Lord Cavan, an Irish peer, led the Brigade of Guards in some of the hardest fighting of the war. On many occasions he was conspicuous "for the skill, coolness, and courage with which he led his troops, and for the

successful manner in which he dealt Generals who fell with many critical situations." At the head of the 2nd Brigade, General Bulfin

went through the thick of the fighting until November 2nd, when he was rather severely wounded.

Sir David Henderson, the head of the Flying Corps, was another general who did excellent work, to which Sir John French repeatedly drew attention; and so did Surgeon-General Sir A. T. Sloggett, the chief of the Medical Corps. Artillery leaders mentioned included Brigadier-Generals F. D. V. Wing, G. F. Milne, D.S.O., and J. E. W. Headlam. The Chief Engineer, Brigadier-General G. H.

Fowke, has also performed services as valuable

Finally, some mention should be made of the generals who fell on the field of battle, for the Great War took toll of them as it did of humbler men. General Hubert I. W. Hamilton, a brother of Sir Bruce Hamilton, and the commander of the 3rd Division, was killed by the explosion of a shell near La Bassée, on October 14th, 1914. The 1st Division and later the 7th also lost their leaders, as Samuel Holt Lomax, of the former, was wounded at Ypres on October 31st, 1914, and died in London in the following April; and Sir Thompson Capper, of the latter, was killed at Loos on September 26th. All three had risen from one rank to another in infantry regiments, had served in various wars, and were able and useful generals in the field. Another loss to the Army was the death of Brigadier - General John E. Gough, V.C., a brother of Hubert Gough, and a son of the late General Sir Charles Gough. V.C., who died of wounds on February 22nd, 1915. He had won his V.C. in Somaliland, and had also fought in South Africa. John Gough was on the Staff, and had a good deal to do with planning the attack on Neuve Chapelle. Speaking

of his services, Sir John French said he regarded him as "one of our most promising military leaders of the future." After his death he was made a K.C.B.

Another general who had earned the V.C. was killed

during the war. This was Brigadier-General C. Fitzclarence, one of the defenders of Mafeking, and a descendant of William IV. He fell at the head of the 1st Brigade at Ypres on November 11th, 1914. Two Divisions, in addition to the 7th, lost their leaders during the Battle of Loos. G. H. Thesiger, C.M.G., commanding the 9th, was killed on September 27th, and F. D. V. Wing, C.B., of the 12th, on October 2nd. N. D. Findlay, of the Artillery, was the first general killed during the area. first general killed during the war. Two brigadiers, Julian Hasler and J. F. Riddell, fell during the Second Battle of Ypres, the latter while leading a brigade of Territorials, and a little later the Army lost two others, A. W. G. Lowry-Cole and G. C. Nugent.

The expedition to Gallipoli cost many valuable lives. One of these was that of William T. Bridges, the Australian leader. Brigadier-General H. E. Napier was killed during the fight for the landing, and Brigadier-General Noel Lee died of wounds a little later. To the dead honour, and to the living trust; so did Britain and France feel towards the leaders of their armics in the feld.

the leaders of their armies in the field.



British airman dropping a wreath on a comrade's grave in the German lines.

Digitized by Google

340





All eyes on skycraft: British cavalry and French gunners contemplate the winged enemy.

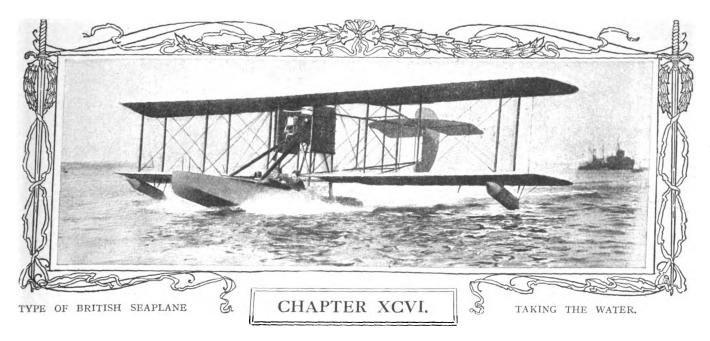




Belgian observation balloon ascending to search the horizon for German artillery positions.



Observation post fitted with instruments for gauging the height and speed of enemy aircraft, a giant searchlight, a listening post, and a "75" gun installed round Paris.



## THE AERIAL WAR ALONG THE WESTERN FRONT.

By G. Valentine Williams, Author of "With Our Army in Flanders."

How the Airmen Dispelled "the Fog of War "—Tactical and Strategical Scouting by Aircraft—Aerial Photography that Revolutionised Warfare by Revealing the Enemy's Dispositions and Intentions—Air Raids Generally Organised on Information Obtained by Aerial Reconnaissance—Aeroplanes more Effective against Zeppelins than Anti-Aircraft Guns—The Self-Sacrificing Heroism of the Pioneers of Aerial Combats—Martyrs in the Cause of Man's Ever-Growing Ascendancy in the Air—General Joffre's Thanks and Praise for the Efficiency of the Royal Flying Corps, which Flew an Average of Two Thousand Miles a Day during the First Months of the War—British and French the Best Airmen though they Learnt from the Germans—Enemy Aeroplanes Armed with Captured Canadian Guns—Thrilling Individual Exploits by British Aviators—Inciting the Indian Troops to Revolt by Pamphlets dropped from German Aeroplanes—A British Airman's Attempt to Bomb the Kaiser—How the Air Service Helped the British Victory at Neuve Chapelle—A British Aviator's Amazing Sang-froid—All Records for Daily Mileage Eclipsed Prior to the Great Advance on Loos—The Destructive Air Attack on the Railway Junction at Valenciennes—Braving Death in Many Forms in the Frailest of Craft—Some Heroes of the Royal Flying Corps who Lost their Lives but Won the Airman's Honourable Epitaph: "He Made his Report"—The British Aviator who Lived with the German Troops—Enemy's Respect for our Aerial Prowess—Discretion the Better Part of German Valour in the Air—Fighting in the Clouds at Five to One—Flying Corps Casualties Small in Proportion to their Immeasurably Valuable Services—German Chivalry towards the Royal Flying Corps Born of the Freemasonry of the Air—British Airmen Prisoners not Treated Harshly—The Splendid Work of the Naval Wing of the Royal Flying Corps—Their Daring and Successful Raids.

HOSE who, less than half a dozen years ago, crowded to the flying meetings and watched with fascination those gallant pioneers of aviation—the Wrights, Blériot, Hubert Latham, Bertram Dickson, Colonel

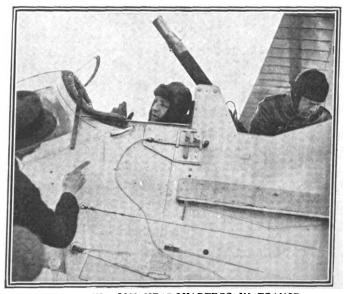
Cody, and the rest—disporting themselves in space, little guessed that they were assisting at the development of a science which was calculated to affect

war more deeply than any invention since the maga-For the aerozine rifle. revolutionised plane has warfare. Its effect has been more far-reaching than even the most sanguine supporter of the new arm ever dared to prophesy.

Curiously enough, however, its usefulness has not laid along the lines foretold by its disciples in the past. The aeroplane has not taken the place of troops as a weapon of attack. Its enormous importance lies in its functions as a scout. It has done away for ever with "the fog of war." It has become the eyes of the army. By means of it the commanders, working un-disturbed with their maps and telephones and wireless at their headquarters far, in

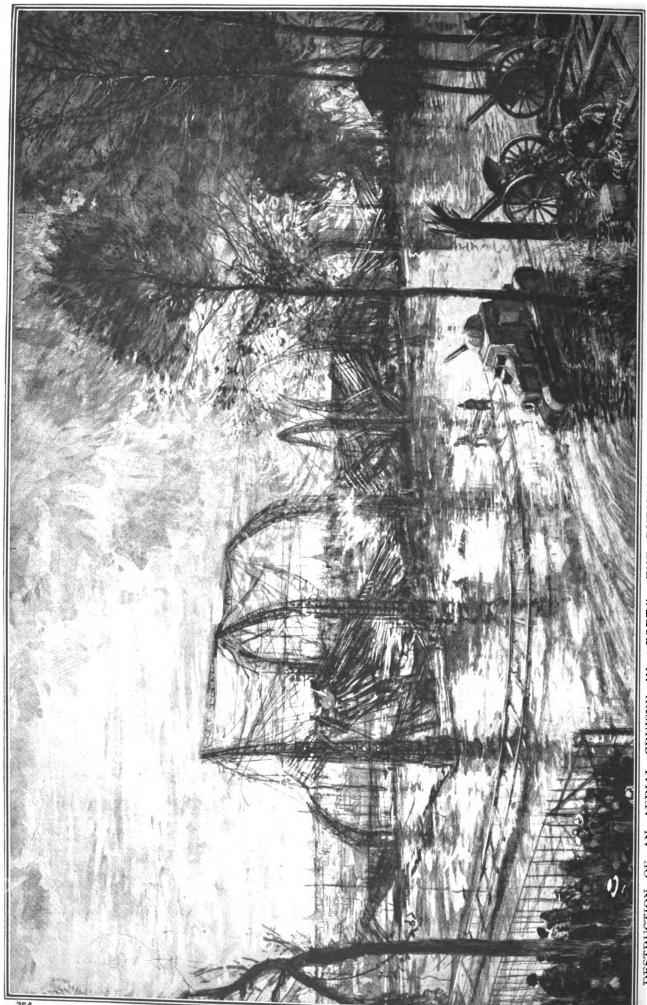
the rear, are able to spy out the enemy's movements, to see deep back into the enemy's country. It is on account of the revolutionising influence that the development of aerial reconnaissance has had on warfare that, when the time comes for the lessons of this, the greatest of all wars, to be reckoned up, the arm which will emerge as the most important innovation in the history of war will undoubtedly be the aeroplane. Reconnaissance falls roughly into two

branches—(a) tactical and (b) strategical. Tactical reconnaissance aims at the gathering of information upon which the tactics of the army may be based—that is to say, information of the enemy's dispositions and movements in a limited area of the front, close behind the firing - line. Strategical reconnaissance. on the other hand, is undertaken with an eye to the strategy of the army, therefore, rather for the purposes of the General Staff, and is on a more extensive scale, penetrating much farther into the enemy's country, for the purpose of getting more general information regarding the whole of the enemy activity in a par-ticular part of the theatre of war.



AT THE AVIATION HEADQUARTERS IN FRANCE. British aeroplane about to start on a reconnaissance over the enemy

Digitized by Google



DESTRUCTION OF AN AERIAL CRUISER IN "PORT": THE BURNING ZEPPELIN SHED AT EVERE AFTER THE BRITISH RAID.

The exploit of Flight-Lieuts. J. P. Wilson, R.N., and J. S. Mills, R.N., who on June 7th, 1915—the same day that Lieut. Warneford destroyed a Zeppelin in the air near Ghent—successfully bombed and destroyed Zeppelin in the air near Ghent—successfully bombed and destroyed Zeppelin in the heart and destroyed Zeppelin in the heart and destroyed Zeppelin in the destroyed Zeppelin in the destroyed Zeppelin in the heart and children by count Zeppelin's aerial cruisers. It he British raid. To the left are some Belgians watching the burning ruins; to the right are German attracts. Making a long flight in the dark, over territory occupied by the enemy, the two daring

Digitized by Google

the aviator

Tactical and strategical reconnaissances form the bulk of the work of the airman at the front. On tactical reconnaissance, undertaken with a specific objective, or consisting merely of trips to and fro over a stated strip of the front in order to observe anything of interest, his aim will be to look out for any change in the clear-cut line of the trenches, indicative of the laying out of fresh lines or communication trenches, to keep his eyes open for reliefs or any movement behind the lines, to divine the strength of the enemy at the part of the line in question by the number of transport columns seen; to watch the railheads for signs of unusual activity, to locate hostile batteries and Staff headquarters. In this reconnaissance work photography plays a very great rôle. Aerial photographs, which were extensively taken by the airmen of the British, French, and German armies, reveal even more clearly than the human eye can focus the lines of trenches. It is by means of these photographs that many of the army maps are made.

Strategical reconnaissance takes the airman farther afield, right into the enemy's country, where above important military centres, railway junctions, airship sheds, camps, etc., much may be gathered of supreme importance to those who are engaged in patiently framing the jig-saw puzzle of the enemy's dispositions and intentions as a basis for the strategy of the supreme command.

for the strategy of the supreme command.

Part and parcel of this daily reconnaissance work is the duty known as "spotting for the guns." Day by day, in all weathers, save in rain and fog, which are the only protection that modern armies enjoy from prying eyes in the air, the aeroplanes sally forth to hover over some point in the enemy lines which is to be the objective of the artillery, to watch the effect of the shells, and to signal back by wireless or smoke signals the result. An important part of this artillery work is the "spotting" of suitable objectives for the artillery (villages occupied by troops, an ammunition depôt, a supply park, etc.), and also the location of hostile batteries.

Aerial raids for destructive purposes do not form part of the daily programme of the military airman. Air raids are generally organised on information obtained by aerial reconnaissance showing the location of some suitable objective, such as an enemy flying-ground, or a Staff headquarters, or reporting activity at some railhead or military centre. Thereupon a bombing squadron is sent out, escorted by swift scouts to repel aerial attacks by the enemy on the slower bomb-carrying machines, to pour down a rain of destruction on the point to be attacked, and afterwards to return as swiftly as may be to its home aerodrome.

When military operations are in progress, the activity in the air increases. At such a time it is essential for the army command to be kept exactly and promptly informed of the precise strength of the enemy at given points, and of the location and disposition of his reserves. Every move is preceded by days of incessant flying on the part of the

Before a great attack aeroplanes which are out from dawn to

dusk "spotting" for the guns, others are despatched on bombing expeditions against the enemy lines of communication, to destroy the railway, to blow up trains and bridges—in short, to do everything possible to delay the bringing up of reinforcements.

Finally, the aeroplane has come to be regarded as the most efficient defence against hostile aircraft. Therefore, aeroplanes are employed day after day to chase off the enemy airmen who sally forth over the lines on reconnaissances or bombing raids. In 1915, London awakened to the fact that the aeroplane, properly utilised, is a more effective source of protection against Zeppelin raiders than any number of anti-aircraft guns, and on the rare occasions that hostile airships ventured forth over the towns and

villages in the British zone of operations in France and Belgium, our aeroplanes drove the invader off before he had time to inflict any great damage.

In the vast and unprecedented military effort which this war demanded of the British people, nothing demonstrated more strikingly the adaptability of our race than the development of military airmanship. When the war broke out, next to nothing was known about the practical uses of the aeroplane in war. Its utility had been surmised and tested as **History and** 

utility had been surmised and tested as far as might be under peace conditions, but it stands to reason that nothing

but it stands to reason that nothing could be known of such things as the effect of anti-aircraft projectiles on aeroplanes, or the tactics of aerial combats.

All this the British airman had to find out for himself. Every pilot became a cog of the great organisation of the Flying Service. Every flight undertaken over the enemy lines added its quota to the store of experience of active service upon which the whole tactics of aerial warfare had to be based. Of no man who has laid down his life on the altar of the Motherland in the service of the Royal Flying Corps can it be said that he died in vain. Every man of



THE MOMENT BEFORE GILBERT'S LAST FLIGHT.

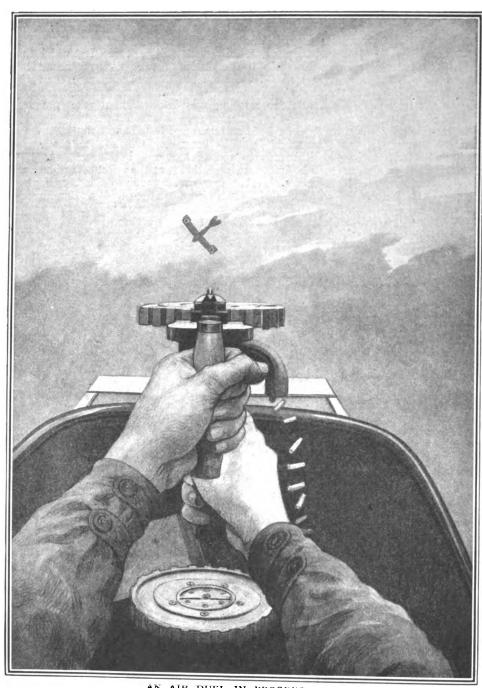
M. Gilbert, second from the right, discussing plans for his attack on the Zeppelin sheds at Friedrichshaven in June, 1915. Unfortunately he was compelled to descend, through engine trouble, on Swiss territory, and was interned in the "Island of Peace."

the gallant dead of the R.F.C. is as truly a martyr as any doctor who ever sacrificed his life in the cause of science. And history, when it eulogises the ever-growing ascendancy of man in the air, shall pay a tribute to the self-sacrificing heroism of the gallant airmen who lie buried beneath the broken propeller—the noble tombstone of the airman who falls on the field of honour—on the blood-soaked fields of France and Belgium and the Gallipoli Peninsula.

On the night of September 9th, 1914, at the height of the Battle of the Marne, General Joffre, the French Generalissimo, sent the following message to the French Mission with the British Expeditionary Force:

Please express most particularly to Marshal French my thanks for the services daily rendered by the British Flying Corps. The precision, exactitude, and regularity of the British airmen's reports are evidence of their perfect organisation, and also of the perfect training of pilots and observers.

It was a first tribute to the amazing efficiency of the British Air Service, which came as a complete surprise to all the belligerents. It was the British military airmen who discovered Von Kluck's famous swing-round from his



British observer using an automatic gun against a German Albatross machine. What looks like a horizontal cog-wheel is the drum of cartridges feeding a Lewis gun, and on the right, falling rapidly into the car, are the expended cases. The gunner's right hand firmly grasps the trigger handle, while the left holds the spade grip controlling the weapon.

march on Paris to the south-east, and by their timely intimation of this change of direction enabled the Allies to make in season those dispositions which inflicted on the Germans the great decisive defeat of the war.

Our air scouts had little rest during those days of ceaseless marching, of relentless fighting. During a period of twenty days up to September 10th, 1914, a daily average of more than nine reconnaissance flights of over one hundred miles each, was maintained by our airmen in France. How their efficiency increased with practice under actual conditions of war is shown by the fact that up to September 21st of the same year the total air mileage accomplished by our airmen since the beginning of the war amounted to 87,000 miles, an average of 2,000 miles per day, 1,400 hours representing the total time spent in the air.

In view of the indubitable ascendancy which our airmen established over the German military fliers, it is

perhaps vain to debate whether or not the German air service showed itself the better versed in aerial strategy and tactics on the outbreak of war. It is probably true to say that the German fliers, on first taking the field, showed that they had made a profound study of the whole theory of the tactical employment of the aeroplane in war, and that the Allies had still something to learn from them as far as theory went. But the French and British were the better airmen, and they lost no time in learning the game, and establishing that mastery of the air which they very steadily increased as the war progressed. Moreover, in certain points, the British were far ahead of the enemy, notably in aerial photography and in the arming of aeroplanes. The Germans made great efforts to improve their aerial photographs, which were of incalculable value to the Intelligence, but they remained still far behind the British, while in default of a light and efficient automatic gun for aeroplane work the Germans after a while used Canadian Colt guns, captured in the gas attack at the Second Battle of Ypres.

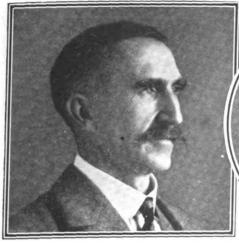
Reconnaissance being the first rôle of usefulness of the aeroplane in war, the British airmen were primarily employed at Mons, during the retreat, and on the Marne and the Aisne, on strategical and tactical reconnaissance work, the scope and object of which have been already explained. But before the war settled down to the long period of siege warfare, operations in the open offered our airmen opportunities which they were not slow to grasp. Raids were frequently made on German camps and supply depôts. On one occasion, while the Army was advancing from the Marne, an incendiary bomb was successfully exploded right in the centre of a

German bivouac, and on another day, a high-explosive bomb dropped on a column of German cavalry, hit an ammunition wasgon, and killed fifteen men outright, besides wounding many others. By

besides wounding many others. By the end of the second week in September our airmen had shot five German fliers in the air, and brought their machines to earth. Before the British Expeditionary Force had reached the Aisne, it was already possible to speak of the mastery of the British military airmen over the Germans.

mastery of the British military airmen over the Germans.

These were the early days of the war, but, though our airmen were almost in the learning stage, they showed themselves the possessors of all that infinite resource and glorious courage which still distinguish them now that they have perfected and mastered the whole theory of aviation in war. Thus in September, 1914, a pilot and observer of the Royal Flying Corps were forced by engine trouble to



MR. CHARLES BRIGHT.

Member of the Aeronautical Institute, who did much to expedite aircraft production.



PROFESSOR G. H. BRYAN, Sc.D., R.F.S. The well-known authority on mathematics, thermodynamics, and flight.



MR. L. B. DESBLEDS.

Another prominent member of the Aeronautical Institute.

aerial combat

land in the enemy lines. They sprang out of their machine and bolted for cover to a small wood. The Germans lost no time in possessing themselves of the British aeroplane, but failed to find the prisoners, who eventually managed to creep away under cover of darkness to the steep banks of the Aisne. Here they cast away their Flying Corps field-boots, and descending to the water, swam across in the dark, and reached their aerodrome in safety, but barefoot.

A little later one of our most successful military airmen was out scouting in a single-seater monoplane when he came across a German machine. Being alone, he had no rifle, so promptly manœuvred his monoplane so as to get in a revolver shot at the enemy. As he was mounting above the German, the German observer winged him with a well-aimed rifle shot. The Briton never lost his presence of mind, but turned and flew for home, landing in our lines,

with the propeller behind the driving seat), which he recognised to be an Otto machine. At first sight, therefore, he was able to make two important observations—namely, that he had the advantage of speed, and that his adversary, owing to the position of his propeller, could not fire from behind. The Briton had two rifles clamped down one on either side of his engine, and at once started out after the enemy, taking good care to keep well in the latter's wake. At sixty yards' range he opened fire without any apparent result; then, as his speed was bearing him past his opponent, he turned and came back and gave the Boche the contents of the other rifle. The Ger-

contents of the other rifle. The German wavered and began to descend. The British airman's rifles were empty.

He was alone. He had no one to reload. Depressing

the elevating plane, he planed down at a dizzy angle, and was thus able to take his hands off his steering wheel for a moment and recharge his weapons. The rifles jammed, but the airman managed to cram four cartridges home, and loosed them off at the stern of his adversary, who a minute later disappeared in a swelling cloud-bank. The Briton instantly dropped steeply down through the sky after him, but in the clear azure below could see no trace of his enemy. who must have come to earth in the French lines over which they had been manœuvring. The Germans made a number of spasmodic raids with isolated aeroplanes on towns in our zone of operations.



A LESSON IN MOBILITY.
French "75" gun elevated against enemy aircraft on an improvised platform consisting of an old gun-carriage.

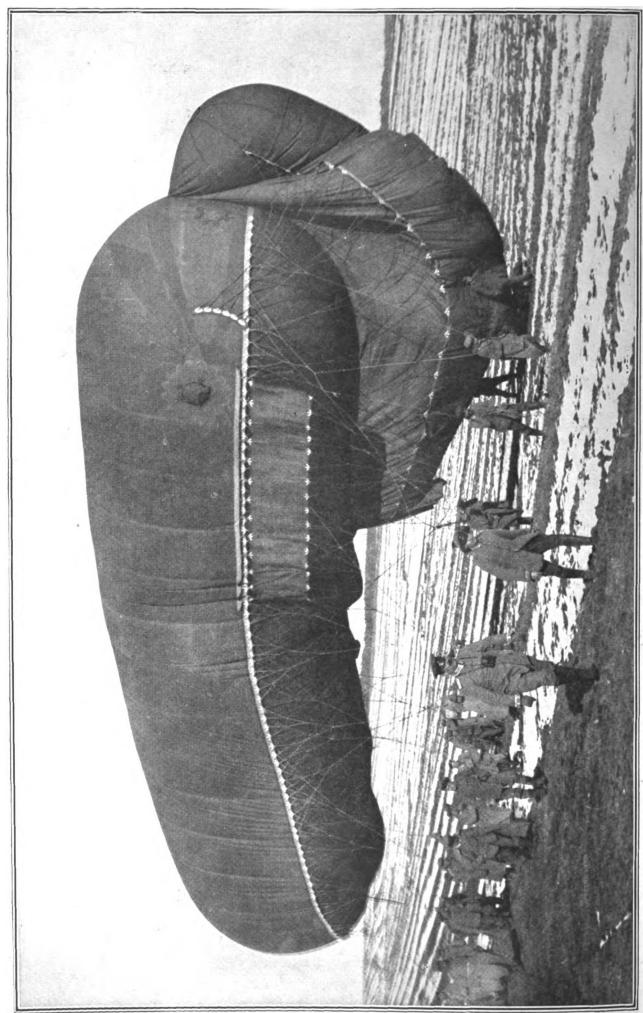
close to a motor-ambulance, which carried him off to the nearest dressing station

The importance of the position of the propeller in an enemy machine is seen in the following account of a thrilling aerial combat which took place between a British and a German airman on the Aisne. One of our airmen, who was flying a speedy scout, caught up with a German biplane of the "pusner" type (i.e.,



"ARCHIE" AMONG THE SAND-DUNES.

German anti-aircraft machine-guns, or "Archies," as our R.F.C. called them, in action against British aviators flying over the enemy lines in Belgium.



GERMAN OBSERVATION BALLOON ABOUT TO ASCEND TO SEARCH THE HORIZON FOR ALLIED ARTILLERY.

If all the belignments' accoplanes differed considerably in point of construction and power, the enemy and Allies possessed at least one aircraft which was identical. Such was the captive balloon, seen in the above illustration, used universally as an artiflery "spotter." The great quality of this gasbag was its stability. This was guaranteed by the appendix seen on the right.

35

seldom if ever organised raids with "convoys" of aeroplanes such as the British and French organised with remarkable success, especially on the eve of and during an advance like that at Neuve Chapelle, or the general offensive of September 25th, 1915. These German air-raids were for the most part innocuous. The material damage they did was very small and their victims were generally unfortunate civilians. St. Omer, Bailleul, Béthune, Merville-these and other places in our lines in France at one time or

Frightfulness pre-

another received the visit of hostile Frightfulness pre- airmen. A house or two would be ferred by Germans wrecked, a few wretched women and children and a couple of horses or mules

would be killed, but these raids never possessed the

slightest military importance.

At Bailleul on October 21st, 1914, a German airman dropped a bomb on the hospital. The projectile had a so-called "sensitive" fuse—that is to say, a fuse that would make it explode on impact. The shell burst accordingly as it went through the roof, and the greater part of the force was expanded in mid-air in one of the

wards which forty patients had just left. A solitary patient remained, and he was wounded.

On the same day two German airmen who were brought down with their aeroplane in our lines were made to cut a very sorry figure. Their machine fell into a part of the line held by the Indian troops. On searching the machine the British officers found large numbers of circulars, written in very faulty Hindi, inciting the Indians to mutiny, and announcing that the Caliph had pro-claimed the Jehad, or Holy War. The German airmen watched with amazement the British officers distributing these circulars to the Indian troops who, to the further stupefaction of the dis-comfited Boches, laughed with childish glee at the clumsy gram-matical mistakes of the German Orientalist who had composed the proclamation. For a time the Germans were extremely uncomfortable, for they were apprehensive as to the penalty for their violation of The Hague Con-

vention by inciting belligerent troops to mutiny. However, they suffered no harm, but they undoubtedly received an unforgettable lesson on Great Britain's methods of Imperial administration.

On November 1st the German Emperor was given an ocular demonstration of the prowess of the British airman, which he is not likely to forget to the end of his days. The Emperor had been visiting Thielt, in Belgium, where the German General Headquarters were then established. There is every reason to believe that his Majesty was in the General Staff building, when a British airman created something like a panic by suddenly appearing from the clouds and dropping bombs into the middle of a knot of motor-cars assembled outside. By way of retaliation the Germans bombarded Furnes from the air on the following day, in the belief that President Poincaré was in the place on a visit to the Belgian lines.

Despite high winds and drenching rain, in snowstorms and sleet-showers, all through the cold and wet season of the first winter of the war, our airmen carried out their reconnaissance work on an astonishing number of days. All the time they were improving their knowledge of this totally unfamiliar kind of warfare, fitting themselves for the great services they were destined to perform when the coming of spring heralded a forward movement after the dreary monotony of winter in the trenches.

The British success at Neuve Chapelle was largely due to the invaluable co-operation of the military air service with the Staff. It was our airmen who were in the main responsible for the selection of the slope running from the village of Neuve Chapelle to the Aubers-Fromelles ridge as the most suitable spot for a thrust at the enemy line. They ascertained the weakness of the Germans at that point and were able, moreover, to undertake that a series of carefully-prepared and daringly-executed air raids on important places on the German lines of communication would give the British thirty-six hours in which to make good any advantage they might gain before the enemy could bring up reinforcements.

Our aeroplanes furnished the General Staff with the information upon which its strategy for this operation was laid. While our troops were massing for the attack our airmen hovered out over the German lines, watching with hawk-like eyes for any sign that the enemy had



THE EVIL RESULT OF A LUCKY ENEMY SHOT. Aeroplane brought down by the Germans in Flanders. The ill-fated craft fell headlong on to the roof of a picturesque villa. So terrific was the impact that the machine embedded itself in the tiles, and stood upright until removed by a squad of German soldiery.

divined our intentions. Despite the hazy weather prevailing on that fateful March roth, our sky scouts went forth and, in the words of the British Commander-in-Chief, "continuous and close reconnaissance was maintained over the enemy's front." When the preliminary bombardment began, one of the most severe that the war, up to that date, had brought forth, our airmen were up, "spotting" for the guns while others went raiding into the enemy's country in order to hamper his movements along his lines of communication.

Bombs were dropped on the railways at Ménin, Courtrai, Don, and Douai; a wireless installation near Lille is believed

to have been destroyed, while one of the branches of the German Great General Staff installed in a house in a suburb of Lille was set on fire. The airman who

raided Courtrai Station displayed quite astonishing sangfroid. A troop train was in the station at the moment that the British aeroplane glittered into sight far aloft, and the German soldiers swarmed out of the carriages to shoot at the audacious invader. The Briton glided down to only a few hundred feet above the ground, whereupon

Digitized by Google

British airman's

audacious ruse



A JUST REPRISAL AS WELL AS AN ATTACK OF MILITARY VALUE.

On June 15th, 1915, twenty-three French aviators flew over Karlsrühe and dropped some hundred and thirty bombs on the city, thereby carrying out a just reprisal for Zeppelin raids on Paris.

This photograph shows a street of houses near the barracks, which were set alight by the bomb explosions.

the soldiers and station officials rushed gleefully into a thick cluster in order to seize the prisoner, believing that his machine had been hit. Suddenly the airman dropped half a dozen bombs right into the heart of the crowd, and, with a jerk of his elevating plane, soared aloft again and made off. His bombs executed hideous slaughter among the soldiers and railwaymen. Another airman came down to within one hundred and fifty feet of the important railway bridge at Ménin, in order to make sure of his mark, and destroyed one of the piers of the bridge with a bomb.

During the fighting that took place in the spring and summer, the Second Battle of Ypres, the British offensive on May oth against the Fromelles ridge, the operations in the Festubert region and about the ruined Château of Hooge, the aeroplanes continued to play their part quietly, modestly, usefully. But it was in the great Franco-British advance on September 25th that the airmen on the British front again had a great opportunity for showing what they had learnt in thirteen months' active service. They availed themselves of their opportunity to the full, and once more earned the admiration of their enemy and

Three weeks
of success
the warm eulogy of their commanders.
Probably all records for air mileage per
day were eclipsed by the Royal Flying
Corps in the three weeks or so preceding

our advance against Loos on September 25th, 1915. The weather was by no means invariably favourable, but, notwithstanding this, our airmen were out daily on reconnaissances of the enemy trenches, watching for any indication of the Boches being aware of the great events taking place, or of taking measures to meet the "big push." On more than one occasion our aeroplanes remained for two

hours at a stretch over the German lines, sometimes hovering at no greater altitude than seven thousand feet, the low-lying clouds preventing reconnaissance from anything like a safe distance above the enemy anti-aircraft batteries.

The great offensive was preceded by air attacks on the German railway communications south of Lille, the routes by which they would naturally bring reinforcements

from Belgium. Events subsequently showed that these systematic air raids materially delayed the arrival of reinforcements to stem the collapse of the

German front line under the sledge-hammer blows struck by our First and Fourth Corps. On September 23rd, two days before the day fixed for the attack, a German goods train was wrecked on the railway near Lille, and the line torn up in several places by bombs dropped from our aeroplanes. On the following day the railway was damaged in three places, while on the morning of the attack, despite hazy weather, our airmen sallied forth once more and bombed a train rushing up troops to the Loos region, damaging three coaches, and afterwards derailing a goods train and tearing up the railway line at three points.

On the day after the attack, when our troops were well through the German front line, and looked like getting on to Lens, one of our airmen appeared over the station of Loffre, east of Douai, on the railway between Valenciennes and Douai, two most important German military centres, and dropped a bomb on a troop train there. As the airman sped away he noticed that the German soldiers were swarming out of the train, and were gathering with a number of railway officials about the wrecked carriages. This airman must have remembered the feat of his comrade in-arms at Courtrai during the Neuve Chapelle affair, for

Digitized by Google

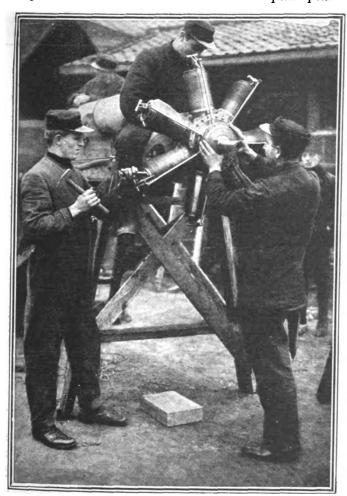
he turned back, and, gliding down to only about five hundred feet above the ground, unloosed a 110 lb. bomb he carried slung beneath his machine into the midst of the group. The explosion was so violent that it made his machine rock in the air as he clambered aloft and sped away unscathed.

On the same day the engine and six coaches of a troop train were derailed by aerial bombs dropped on the railway at Rosult, near St. Amand, on the line from Valenciennes to Orchies. Probably the most destructive raid of our flying men, however, was the air attack on the new railway station at Valenciennes, a railway junction of vital military importance to the enemy, as here the lines from Brussels and Maubeuge meet with the lines going out to Lille, Cambrai,

Twenty-six British wins Tournai, and Douai, the great military supply depôts in the northern part of the German western front. That the Britons were not permitted to accomplish these

were not permitted to accomplish these fine feats unopposed is shown by the circumstance that in the single week preceding our offensive there were no less than twenty-seven fights in the air between British and German machines, all of which save one terminated in our favour. One German machine was definitely known to have been wrecked.

Every time an aeroplane went out on duty over our lines on the western front its occupants braved death in half a dozen forms. The one thought inspiring every member of the Royal Flying Corps was to make his report—that is to say, to accomplish his mission successfully and return home to submit the results to headquarters. As the aeroplane hovered out over the German lines the German anti-aircraft batteries spat out their pear-shaped globes of pure white smoke with the characteristic "pom—pom—



IN THE "IRON BIRDS'" CRADLE.

Belgian mechanic repairing an aeroplane motor at the Allies' aviation base in Northern France.



MODERN MERCURIES AND THE MESSAGE OF MARS. French motor despatch-rider handing a message to a comrade of the Air Service, somewhere near our ally's first line.

pom," a sound which will haunt for ever the memory of every man who has served in the trenches on the western front. The German firing-line machine-guns and rifles poured their stream of lead upwards against the invader in the sky, but the pilot kept his aeroplane steadily on its course with one thought uppermost—to make that report.

There are dangers in flying quite remote from war, those

There are dangers in flying quite remote from war, those defects of the engine or in construction which no amount of care can guard against with absolute certainty. To these must be added the ever-present risk that a rifle bullet or the merest splinter of shell may, all unknown to the pilot, inflict irreparable injury on a vital part of the machine which will reveal itself at a critical moment in his flight, perhaps when he is assailed in the air by two or three hostile aeroplanes. Death from machine-gun, rifle, or shell fire in the air, death on the cruel earth

many thousand feet below, wounds, capture—these are the risks which confront every member of the Royal Flying Corps

as he fares forth on his frail bark of canvas, wood, and metal over the tortuous scars in the earth's surface marking the belligerent trench lines. But such was the spirit of the Royal Flying Corps—part and parcel, be it said, of the spirit of our Army in the field—that our airmen counted these risks as nought, so be it they might "make their report."

Thus it is that the annals of the Royal Flying Corps in

Modesty of

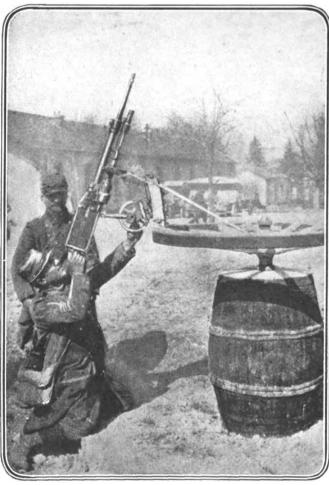
the brave

Thus it is that the annals of the Royal Flying Corps in this war may be said to be the most amazing record of thrilling adventures which the world has ever known. The rules of the corps prevent the names of the heroes of some of the most fantastic of these experiences from being given, but this rule may be relaxed in the case of three gallant airmen who made the supreme sacrifice of their lives in the country's service. They are Rhodes-Moorhouse,

V.C.; Mapplebeck, D.S.O.; and J. Aidan Liddell, V.C.; all of whom were killed flying.

"Eye-Witness" made Britain ring with the heroism of Rhodes-Moorhouse. While on reconnaissance work he sustained a terrible wound from a shrapnel which burst close beside his machine and maimed him in an appalling way. Nevertheless, he fulfilled his mission, and then turned his machine for home, and landed at his point of departure with a grim jest on his lips at the expense of himself for the horrifying nature of his injuries. Before he would consent to be attended by the doctor, he insisted that he must "make his report." That was his honourable epitaph: "He made his report," for when the doctors came to him he was past human aid.

Captain Aidan Liddell, a comparative new-comer to



A NOVEL EMPLACEMENT.

French genius in adapting anything and everything to further the cause of war was demonstrated in innumerable ways. This photograph shows once again the clever way in which an anti-aircraft mitrailleuse was fixed to a revolving platform improvised from an old barrel and cartwheel.

flying, came from a famous Highland regiment. At the beginning of August, 1915, he was piloting his machine on a strategical reconnaissance in Belgium in the heart of the enemy's country when a high-explosive shrapnel from a German anti-aircraft gun burst right over his machine. His leg was simply riddled with bullets, and all but severed. The pilot lost consciousness on the spot and collapsed over his steering-wheel, while, to the horror of the observer, the machine dived nose foremost earthwards. The jerk jammed Liddell hard between the steering-wheel and the sides of the driving-seat, while it flung the observer between the machine-gun and the struts, fortunately enough, as it proved, for the aeroplane proceeded to turn a complete somersault. Luckily it was at a great height when the mishap occurred, and it thus had time to right itself.

Liddell regained consciousness as the machine regained

a horizontal position. Faint as he was with the loss of blood—he had some fifty separate wounds in his leghe turned the machine round and made off straight across country for a Belgian aerodrome which he knew to be his nearest haven. He knew that he could not last very long, so would not waste time by climbing out of range of the enemy guns, but headed straight for the Belgian lines. He made a good landing at the flying ground, and said to those who ran forward to greet him: "You must lift me out. If I move I am afraid that my leg will drop off."

This brave man died in hospital a week or so afterwards, without living to receive the Victoria Cross which was laid on his bier in recompense for his deathless endurance.

Lieutenant Mapplebeck, who was killed while flying a new machine in England, was the hero of one of the most remarkable adventures of the war. He was shot down on a reconnaissance flight one day in the neighbourhood of a large town in the Mapplebeck's

German lines. He was able to make a memorable exploit

landing, but as his engine was badly damaged he could not hope to get away, so concealed himself, abandoning his aeroplane to the enemy. Presently German troops arrived, and started with loud hallo to search for the enemy airman, whom they knew must be somewhere in the vicinity.

They searched in vain. This remarkable young man, who spoke English, French, Flemish, German, and Dutch with equal fluency, managed to procure civilian clothing, and for about a week actually mixed with the German soldiers in the town, and even went so far as to attend their sports. The town was covered with placards announcing the flight of a British airman, and threatening dire penalties on whomsoever should venture to harbour him. Mapplebeck eventually succeeded in making his way through Belgium into Holland, doing thirty miles a day, a noteworthy performance, seeing that, as the result of an accident, one of his legs was shorter than the other. In a month he was flying at the front again.

It has been remarked already that pilot and observer had to work in closest harmony in their work at the front. Circumstances indeed frequently made it necessary for one to supplement the other. Thus, one day in October, 1915, while two Royal Flying Corps officers were reconnoiting over the German lines, they were attacked by a German machine. First the pilot was shot through the hand, and then the pilot, wounded in the arm and shoulder, lost consciousness and collapsed in his seat.

The observer, a man of exceptionally cool courage, promptly clambered through the back struts, wounded as he was, and took control of the machine. But the engine was damaged, so the officer cut off the petrol and started to glide earthwards. He actually managed to effect a landing in the French lines, where his unconscious companion and himself were tended by the French Red Cross.

The tenacity and fearlessness wherewith our airmen engaged and pursued any hostile machine they encountered gave the Germans a very healthy respect

For many Effects of British for our aerial prowess. months the ascendancy established by ascendancy our fliers over the enemy was so com-

plete that the German airman seldom waited to engage battle in the air, but made for home as soon as it appeared that the advantage was not immediately and obviously on his side. The British airman on the contrary, was not only always ready for a fight, but looking for a chance to close with the enemy, and destroy him in the air

or drive him to a forced landing.

One day in October, 1915, a British aeroplane with pilot and observer sighted on patrol duty two German machines approaching from the eastward—that is to say, from the enemy's country. They let the first German machine come within fifteen yards, and then opened with their machine-gun. The German did not wait to reply. He hurriedly dived for the earth at a very steep angle. The



SQUAD .- COMM. BIGSWORTH, who destroyed with bombs a German istically disdained to do any submarine on August 26th, 1915.

Briton did the same, the pilot firing at the enemy as long as he had a clear field of vision, and then passing the light automatic gun, with which our aeroplanes were fitted, to the observer, who gave the Boche the rest of the "drum" (or charger containing fortyseven cartridges).

The German machine, which was obviously quite out of hand, crashed heavily to earth in our lines. Our troops found the pilot stone dead in his seat, with a bullet through his heart, and the observer wounded. The British airman charactergloating over his prize, but, without even troubling to

look at it, clambered aloft again, without landing, and went after the second German machine. Unfortunately the engine of the British aeroplane began to missfire, so the chase had to be abandoned, and the airmen had to content themselves with a single prize.

A few days after this one of our machines, A few days after this one of our machines, while patrolling — i.e., looking out for German machines on reconnaissance—saw a British aeroplane hotly pursued by a German. The British patroller, who was at a very great height, dipped downwards to attack the Boche. The latter seemed to lose his head for the moment, for he turned and flew directly beneath his two assailants, who "let him have it" from their machine-guns as he passed. The their machine guns as he passed. The British machine which the German had been pursuing went away, leaving the field to the patroller and the foe, who circled round each other, firing rapidly, drawing ever nearer to the earth. Suddenly the German dived for his lines under a steady

stream of fire from the British machine, turned, "banked" steeply, lost his equilibrium, and flopped upside down to earth. Pilot and observer were killed

No odds were too great for our airmen. Thus a British battle-aeroplane, while on escort duty to a "covey" of slower aeroplanes out raiding, lost its way in the clouds

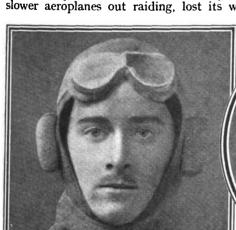
while heading off a German machine which looked like interfering with operations.
The fighter could not pick up its bearings, so decided to run for home. Suddenly two powerful German biplanes dived straight out of a cloud-bank at the Briton, firing through their propellers. The British airmen instantly took up the challenge, and got their machine-gun at work so promptly and to such good purpose that the leading German "reared up" on its tail and dropped like a stone. The British observer, stone. The British observer, craning his head over the side of the driving-seat, saw his adversary vanish in a FLIGHT-LIEUT. VINEX, who was awarded the V.C. for sinking a German submarine on November 29th, 1915. his adversary vanish in a high pillar of dust among



some trees far below. Enough was as good as a feast for the other Boche. Discretion was always reckoned the better part of valour in the German Flying Corps, and he made off.

On another occasion a big German battleplane, of the very latest type with double fuselage and twin engines, declined to give battle to one of our machines. The British machine, which was flying at a height of some 5,000 feet, sighted the German about 2,000 feet, signted the big Boche seemingly did not spot his little adversary until the reverberating boom of his own "Archies" (as our airmen called the anti-aircraft guns) drew his attention to the latter. Then he wheeled slowly, powerfully, above his antagonist for a space, firing in a desultory fashion. But the Britons reserved their fire, waiting for the chance of a round at close range against a vital spot. It was the Boche himself who robbed them of their opportunity. He seemed to think better of the encounter, for all of a sudden he turned

and made off, his superior speed allowing him to get clean away before the British aeroplane could open fire. the homeward journey the same British machine fell in with another German who also ran without showing fight. Four or even five to one were no uncommon odds against



SEC.-LIEUT. D. A. C. SYMINGTON. Awarded Military Cross for attacking an enemy train on September 26th, 1915.



M. RENÉ BESNARD. Under-Secretary for Aeronautics at the French Ministry of War.

CAPT. JOHN A. LIDDELL, R.F.C. Posthumously awarded the V.C. for bravery in reconnaissance during August, 1915.



CAPT. ROBERT LORAINE. Awarded the Military Cross for bringing down an Albatross machine on October 26th, 1915.

our airmen in these aerial combats. Two Royal Flying Corps officers, on escort duty over the German lines on October 22nd, noticing a German machine some five hundred feet below them, dived at it, firing as they glided. The German did not wait, but made off. It was probably a trap to draw the Britons into action against vastly superior forces, as subsequent events seemed to prove. As the British aeroplane was pursuing the German it was

Victory against odds

plane was pursuing the German it was suddenly attacked from behind by two German machines which opened with their machine-guns at a range of about one

hundred and fifty yards. The moment the British airman returned the Germans' fire, the enemy machines dived to right and left, letting in a fourth aeroplane which came soaring down from on high, with engine stopped and



VEDRINES AND HIS CAPTIVES.

The popular French airman standing between two German aviators whose "Aviatik" was brought down by Vedrines,

machine-gun rapping away merrily. The British airmen kept their heads, but the new-comer gave them no chance of a fight, for he never stopped his glide, but planed past them, firing all the time, to earth. In the meantime the other three Boche machines had disappeared. The British machine encountered and chased away yet another German machine before it reached home on that day.

On November 4th, 1915, a British machine fought and beat off three German machines in succession. The first machine passed at a distance of some two hundred yards, and immediately a second German opened fire from the rear, while a third passed to the right, firing from its machinegun. The British observer, with the bullets snapping about his head from three sides, picked the last-named machine for his quarry and got in a round from the Lewis gun which effectively drove the Boche away. The other two machines kept manœuvring about the Briton for about

twenty minutes, firing like mad, but they did no damage, and finally they also sheered off.

These fights in the air became part and parcel of the airman's life at the front. Never a flying day passed—in winter there was often too much haze to allow any flying whatsoever—but that at some point or other one of our airmen was at grips with the enemy in space. On the last Sunday of November, 1915, for example, there were no less than fifteen fights in the air between British and German machines. One of these encounters is well worth describing for the Britons "took on" and defeated four German aeroplanes which attacked a single British machine at the same time.

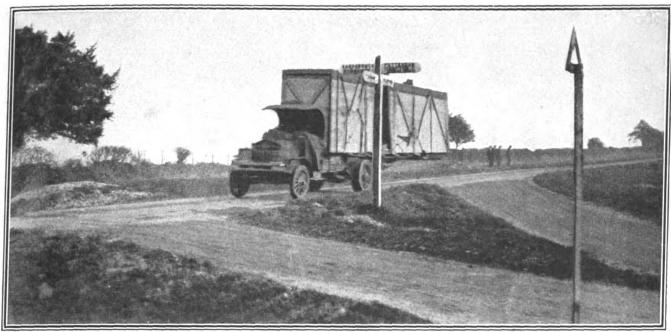
The British machine, with pilot and observer, was chasing away a big German Albatross that had been making a nuisance of itself prying over our lines, when the Boche was joined by two Fokker aeroplanes. Our men's endeavour was to head the first German machine away from its own lines and force it to descend behind our trenches. They therefore ignored the two Fokkers for the time being, and, rising level with the Albatross, got their machine-gun to work at very close range. The Albatross was apparently hit, for it suddenly dived steeply to earth and, as it landed, was seen to turn completely over. Meanwhile, two more German aeroplanes, with one of our fast scouting machines in swift pursuit, joined the two Fokkers which were coming up hand over fist, so to speak. Presently all four Boche machines were circling round the British, firing from their machine-guns. The Britons "stood their ground," for it was not the habit of the Royal Flying Corps to run away from the enemy. They returned a brisk fire to the stream of bullets poured in at them from four quarters, and by dint of very skilful manœuvring managed to let each adversary come under their fire in turn. The Germans finally cleared off and made for home.

Not all our machines came home, of course. On service so cheerfully undertaken in all weathers, among risks so bravely faced, there were inevitably casualties, though the number of airmen killed or wounded on active service was remarkably small and out of all proportion to the immeasurably great services they rendered to the Army. When a machine set out from the flying-ground at the front, with pilot and observer wrapped up to the eyes with fur hoods and leather overalls to protect them against the bitter cold up aloft, nobody could say whether it would return. One might sometimes see at one of the flying-grounds behind the lines—and it was an unforgettable sight—a little group of Flying Corps officers in their neat uniform, with the khaki forage cap and cross-buttoned tunic and mechanics in blue slops straining their eyes skyward in the hope of sighting a missing machine. Through long familiarity with the different types of machine, these airmen at the front could identify an aeroplane in the air and name pilot and observer long before the layman had made out anything beyond a shimmering grey and silver moth. They recognised the drone of the motor, the way the machine was handled in the air, with such infallibility that as soon as

the missing machine appeared high above the green stretch of the aerodrome, a sigh of relief would go up from the waiting

group. Great fires might often be seen burning on the flying ground at night to guide the homeward path of wanderers who had not returned—fires kindled in the hope that the missing machines had been delayed by nothing more serious than a breakdown.

But often the airmen at the flying-ground searched the skies in vain. That night there were two empty seats at a Royal Flying Corps mess. Sometimes it was the enemy himself who relieved the subsequent uncertainty as to the fate of the missing airmen, for this war developed between the belligerent airmen a kind of freemasonry of the air which was the more remarkable in view of the complete absence of chivalry on the part of our foemen on land and sea.



SEAPLANES SET OFF ON TERRA FIRMA FOR THEIR NATURAL ELEMENT—THE SEA.

Powerful Royal Naval motor-lorries transporting seaplanes to "somewhere" on the South Coast, where they were to be refitted and tested.

It is hard to say whether it is due to the common bond of danger which unites all airmen or the respect which our fliers exacted from the enemy by their unmatched disdain of death, but certainly the Germans went out of their way to be chivalrous towards the members of the Royal Flying Corps, who, in their turn, repaid the enemy by the most scrupulous courtesy.

Thus it was more or less a custom between the airmen of the two nations to send back word by aeroplane of any airmen who had been shot down in the hostile lines. A message was dropped by streamer—that is to say, enclosed in a small metal case to which a long pennant was attached to attract attention—and flung out over the enemy lines with the news that Flight-Lieutenant X had been unfortunately killed and his observer, Captain Y, seriously wounded; or that Squadron-Commander Z had been forced to land in hostile territory and had been captured. On one occasion, it is said, the Germans let the Royal Flying Corps know that a certain British airman had been killed on duty and that his funeral would take place on a certain date. Thereupon two of the friends of the deceased took a wreath up in their aeroplane and dropped it in the vicinity

of the military cemetery where their comrade was laid to rest. The Germans respected their desire to pay this last honour to the memory of a brave man, and neither going nor coming was the British aeroplane shot at.

The brutality with which the Germans habitually treated their British prisoners was, apparently, not extended to the British airmen. Certainly, on the British side, the German airmen were treated with the most scrupulous courtesy; but then all prisoners were well treated by their British captors.

There was a good deal of good-natured humour in the relations between the two air corps. Before the Battle of Neuve Chapelle, in his proclamation to the troops which were to take part in

the attack, Sir John French, alluding to the ascendancy established by our airmen over the enemy, said that the Germans had been driven from the air. A few weeks later, on the eve of Easter Sunday, a German aeroplane raided a town in the British zone of operations and threw some bombs, which did practically no damage, and claimed no victims. With the bombs they dropped a message by streamer. The message ran something to this effect: "Hearty Easter greetings from two Bavarian airmen who have been 'driven from the air.'—Uncle Ignatius and Cousin Tony."

In the same way, our airmen occasionally sent by air to the Germans news which it was thought they should know, and which there was reason to believe was not allowed to appear in their newspapers. More than once, it is reported, British airmen dropped packets of British newspapers over Lille and other French and Belgian towns in German occupation for the consolation and encouragement of the unfortunate civilan inhabitants.

No modern battle picture would be complete without the aeroplane, glittering up very high aloft, ringed about with tiny white balls of shrapnel smoke gleaming dead

white against the background of clouds or clear sky airmen were highly popular figures with the men in the firing-line. The man in the trenches knew that the aeroplane was, so to speak, the periscope of the Army. Every aeroplane he saw he knew to be out guarding against any form of "frightfulness" that the ingenious German might be preparing for him—the man in the fire-trench the man who was first to get the knocks. If a well-con-cealed battery made itself a nuisance by shelling our trenches, smashing up the dug-outs, and knocking down the parapet, word was sent back post-haste by telephone for an aeroplane to locate the hidden nuisance and reveal



proclamation to the troops which were to take part in be elevated or depressed according to the position of the hostile machine.

A TALON OF THE BIRD-MAN.

How a quick-firing gun was carried aboard a British aeroplane. It could be elevated or depressed according to the position of the hostile machine.

If our patrols ascertained TT 365



of disappointment, when the German, as so often happened, broke away and headed out "home to mother"; but, if the British airman, with a well-placed burst of fire, sent his adversary hurtling, a limp rag of torn canvas, to earth, such a burst of cheering rang forth to heaven from the narrow trench-line as might have reached the ears of the airmen even above the roar of their propellers.

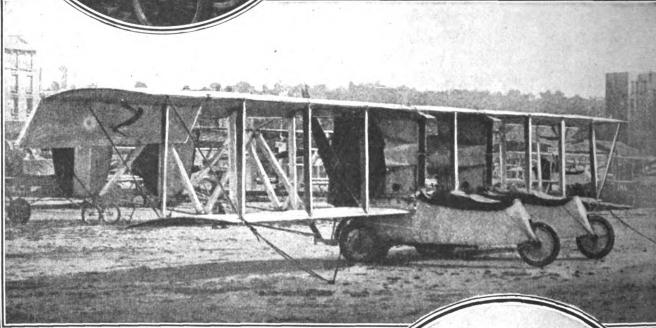
It was a rare and precious satisfaction to the men to be able to rush forward and secure the prize, to make prisoner the

hostile airmen if they had escaped unscathed. If the men were wounded, however, all the innate humanity of the British soldier came out, and he set

Succouring the fallen foe

about succouring his fallen foe with just as much enthusiasm as he had only a few seconds before displayed in applauding the attempts to encompass his utter destruction.

A highly humorous scene occurred one day when a German aeroplane was forced to descend in our lines. When our men reached the enemy machine they found pilot and observer engaged in a hot and angry discussion. The observer declared that there had been no need to land, and accused the pilot of cowardice, to which charges the



SEPARATE COMPARTMENTS FOR PILOT AND OBSERVER. A late type of French warplane, the chief value of which was the arrangement whereby the crew could sit alongside instead of one behind the other. The circle photograph above shows a 37 mm. mobile cannon affixed to a French Voisin aeroplane. Captain Jaffrelot is seen in the car setting off on a reconnaissance.

that undue activity was going on in the trenches opposite them, if they heard the clink of entrenching tools night after night, and by day caught glimpses of fresh earth accumulating behind the enemy trenches, an aeroplane was despatched for a "look-see."

Some of the most thrilling of the aerial combats which have been described in this chapter were fought out before the most enthusiastic audience to be found anywhere in the world—a couple of thousand or so of

British soldiers on active service. As the two aeroplanes wheeled in great circles round one another, so close that even the "Archies" ceased "popping off" for fear of hitting their own man, and the faint "rap-rap" of the machine-guns drifted downwards from the sky, one could have heard a pin drop in the British trenches, so tense was the interest wherewith the men followed the vicissitudes of the fight. With one muddy hand screening their eyes, they strained their gaze upwards, hoping with all their hearts that their man would

win. There was a gasp of relief, mingled perhaps with a touch

THE MOBILITY OF THE 37 MM. GUN. Companion photograph of the first one on this page, showing how the cannon could be moved to fire at an opponent on a lower level.

pilot replied with equal vehemence. The two nearly came to blows over the matter, and sulked with each other all the time they were detained at the front pending their examination by the military authorities.

The flying-grounds at the front were admirably organised. They were all self-contained, with their own motor-lorries, which daily journeyed forth to the railheads to fetch rations, supplies, and stores. The motor-lorries in their turn had their own travelling workshops where ordinary running repairs could be carried out. On the ground in and among the aeroplane sheds, solid wood constructions or tents, were the repair shops, from which echoed all day long the clink of tools and the hum of the lathe To these sounds of activity the droning of the motors of the aeroplanes circling the ground on testing flights, and the loud roaring of engines being tried on machines on the ground or on the bench in the shops, formed a continual accompaniment.

In one part of the ground the petrol store was found, with stacks and stacks of petrol-cans, at another the magazine with ammunition for the machine-guns. and all sorts and varieties of bombs, from the round, dumpy, incendiary kind to the long and swollen 110 lb. monsters, which were slung beneath the aeroplane, and loosed by an ingenious mechanism to drop on their objective. At the Flying Corps headquarters there were large

Work of the every imaginNaval Wing able kind of spare part was kept ready for use, and repair shops and work-rooms where aeroplanes could be put together or completely renewed with fresh planes, struts, and other accessories.

The object of this chapter has been to throw some light

on the work of the aeroplane in the war on the western front, and has therefore dealt exclusively with the Military Wing of the Royal Flying Corps, an integral part of the British Army in the field. A word should be said, however, of the splendid work accomplished by the Naval Wing of the Royal Flying Corps, which for long had its headquarters at Dunkirk, and distinguished itself by a number of daring and successful raids into Belgium and Germany, principally against the sheds in which the Germans harboured their Zeppelins with a view to air raids on England. On September 22nd,1914, Flight-Lieutenant Collet flew to Düsseldorf—a distance of some two hundred miles from his point of departure—and, descending to a height of only four hundred feet, dropped his bombs upon the Zeppelin shed there. Though the airman had his machine hit, he managed to return in safety. About the same time a similar raid was executed on Cologne, but the aeroplanes



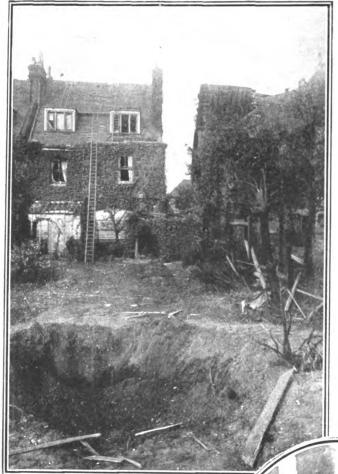
The above remarkable photograph of a Zeppelin over "the London district" was taken by an amateur, and has been only slightly retouched to give increased clearness to the details. The bursting of the shells from the anti-aircraft guns and the faint light of a street lamp in the foreground are noteworthy features of an unique photographic record.

returned without dropping their bombs, having been prevented by the haze from locating the airship sheds. In the following month—on October 8th—two parties of aeroplanes repeated these performances. At Düsseldorf, Lieutenant Marix literally flattened out the Zeppelin shed and the Zeppelin harboured there, and though the raiders' machines were damaged, they all managed to get back safely. At Marix's exploit

all managed to get back safely. At Cologne the great military railway-station was badly damaged.

Marix's exploit at Dusseldorf

Next came the turn of Friedrichshafen, the baptismal font, as it were, of Zeppelinism and of baby-killing generally. On November 21st, Commander Briggs, Lieutenant J. T. Babington, and Lieutenant S. V. Sippe executed a daring and most successful raid on Count Zeppelin's aircraft factory from Belfort, a distance of some two hundred and fifty miles. Much damage was done, but unfortunately





WHEN THE RAIDERS HAD
PASSED.
The effect of two Zeppelin bombs,
one of which fell on the roof of a
house in a London suburb; the other
in the garden.

Commander Briggs' machine was shot down and the airman taken prisoner. companions got away scathed. In December the Naval Wing made several successful incursions into Belgium, always making the airship sheds their objective. It will be remembered that Lieutenant Warneford, who earned immortal fame by his splendid exploit of destroying in mid-air a Zeppelin which had returned from a raid on England, belonged to the Naval Wing of the Royal Flying Corps established at Dunkirk.

The service which the Royal Flying Corps rendered to our Army in the field cannot be over-estimated. In his despatches Sir John French repeatedly rendered homage to the splendid efficiency and the unflinching courage of our Army airmen. The Germans, for all their aptitude for war, their organising talents, and their thoroughness in everything they undertook, despite the fact that they had the start of Great Britain the debris caused by a Zeppelin bomb falling in the fourth area mentioned in the official report of the aerial raid on London in October 1987. in military aviation-through

London in October, 1915.

ENGLISHMEN'S HOMES AFTER A ZEPPELIN VISIT. Ruined homesteads in the London district. The tragic result of bombs which fell in a working-class neigh-bourhood.

no merit of theirs, but solely owing to the supineness of our military heads-were outclassed in the air. The human element is not everything in flying, but it plays a rôle which can never be eliminated. The typically British qualities of grit and coolness, combined with a touch in the hands which has made Englishmen the finest hunters and steeplechasers in the world, proved them admirably adapted to the craft of airmanship, which has revolutionised war.

The enormous progress in flying, both in airmanship and in the elaboration of safe and reliable types of machine which the present war brought forth will war brought forth, will ultimately accrue to the advantage of the world at peace. The heroes who have uncom-plainingly and unflinchingly laid down their lives in the air service of the Empire will have deserved doubly well of the Motherland. Not only have they sacrificed themselves in defence of the Briton's birthright of liberty; they are martyrs also in the cause of the progress of the world.



Freakish effect of the raid on a suburban villa. The roof of the house was torn off intact, disclosing a small room, the walls of which were unaffected.



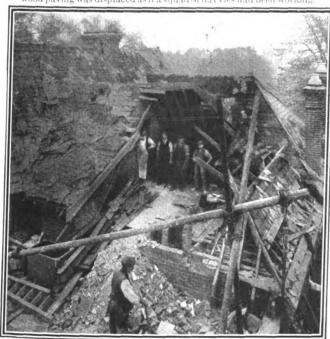
Where a bomb fell in the street of a London suburb, making a large hole, which was filled in, and destroying the doors and windows of ten houses.



Effect of a Zeppelin bomb on a well-known London thoroughfare. wood paving was displaced as if a squad of navvies had been working



wrecked by one bomb. Scene of devastation where a Zeppelin's infernal machine found a mark in the London district.



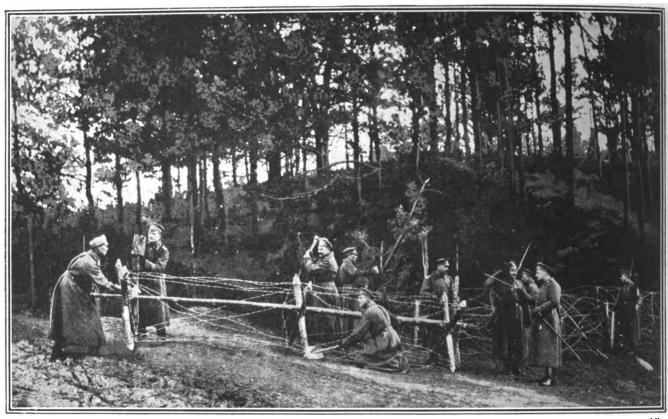


Wreckage caused by a bomb on the roof of a house. While the explosion shattered the roof, the house next door was comparatively undamaged.

DAMAGE IN THE LONDON DISTRICT AFTER

Room in a London business man's office, which suffered indirectly, but none the less heavily, from the explosion of a bomb in the garden.

THE AIR RAID OF OCTOBER 13TH, 1915.



Russian soldiers erecting a strong barbed-wire entanglement at a strategic point on the Bessarabian front. An officer was giving an order to a soldier who is seen standing at the salute. The thick foliage is typical of the country at this extremity of the Russian line.



In the Dwina forest—a machine-gun section in action against the advancing enemy. In spite of the obstinate nature of the soil, formidable trenches will be seen to have been constructed, consolidated with tree-trunks, and covered with brushwood. An officer is surveying the German movement through his field-glasses.

THE MACHINE-MADE WAR IN SYLVAN SURROUNDINGS ON THE RUSSIAN FRONT.



## THE STRUGGLE ON THE DWINA AND THE RESURGENCE OF RUSSIA.

Position of Russia after her Fortress Line had been Broken—Enormous Losses on Both Sides—The Unbroken Fighting Spirit of the Village Communities—Guerilla Bands Form along the German Rear—Hindenburg Fights for Comfortable Winter Quarters—Importance of the Riga-Rovno Railway Line—Dvinsk, the Fortress Gate into Real Russia—Terrific Attack by Massed Armies of Germany—Wonderful System of Russian Defences—Two Hundred Miles of Death-Trap Trenches—Unprecedented Losses Admitted by the Germans—Hindenburg Despairs of Taking Dvinsk and Tries to Storm Riga—How the British Submarines in the Baltic Helped to Defeat Hindenburg—Northern German Army Trapped between the Sea and the Swamp—The Rout at Kemmern, Anting, and Ragasem—Dimitrieff Advances across the Marshes and Captures the German Lines—Extraordinary Preparations Made in the Enemy's Entrenchment—Russky Plans to Wear the Germans Down by Winter Sickness—Guerilla Fighting in the Marshes and Kidnapping of German Generals—Woyrsch's Army Defeated and Thrown Back—Struggle Round the Styr and the Strypa—Appearance of First New Russian Army with Drum-fire Accompaniment.

H

TINDENBURG'S encircling movement against the Russian forces near Vilna in September, 1915, was the final manœuvre to obtain a grand decision against the armies of the Tsar. With the failure of this movement

the plan of campaign, begun by Phalanx Mackensen's on April 30th, 1915, came to a conclusion. The only important advantage which the Germans and Austrians had won by their tremendous artillery power and their unparalleled sacrifice of life was that they had shortened their eastern front by nearly three hundred miles. The prisoners taken by the Russians numbered by the end of September more than I,100,000; and the enemy troops, killed or disabled, reached a very much larger figure. Allowing for the multitude of cases of slight wounds which recovered sufficiently to enable the men to resume military service, the total permanent losses of the Teutonic Empires on their eastern front was incomparably

greater than any hitherto known in history. The pick of the Germanic populations was destroyed. Russia suffered even more heavily than her opponents in man power, and much more in equipment, while the loss of some of her busiest industrial regions further crippled her forces.

A COUNCIL OF WAR.

Russian Staff officers discussing the military situation at a farmhouse headquarters on the eastern front.

Yet she retained important elements of strength. In the first place, she had a far larger reserve of men capable of bearing arms than Germany and Austria, and when the Tsar in person took over the command of the armies, with the greatest of his fighting men, General Alexeieff, as his Chief of Staff, a vast new army was already in course of training.
Then behind Russia,
invisible, remote, and
ignored by the Russian peasantry, was the sea-power of Britain, dominating all the ocean-ways of the earth. And behind the British Fleet was the moneypower of London, which was also used in the service of Russia. With all the seas clear of German warships and the money markets still largely ruled from London, the munition

factories of Japan and America were linked with the Russian firing-line in such a way as to compensate Russia for the loss of her Polish factories. Moreover, the harvest in Russia in the autumn of 1915 was good, there were millions of fugitives from Galicia and Poland who helped to gather it, and all the captains of industry and mechanics in the Russian cities threw themselves with fierce earnestness into the vital labour of making high-explosive shells.

The struggle between the bureaucracy, based on the North Russian primitive system of village communism, and the young Parliamentary party, representing the plutocracy of the large towns and the important democratic forces in South Russia, was checked by the necessity of saving the Empire before attempting to better its form of government. Although the Duma was suspended, and the old reactionarism established by the creation of a Chancellorship for M. Goremykin, yet some of the most violent revolutionaries returned from exile to serve in the Army. There was a feeling that the old machinery for

revolution controlling the village communities would prove more immediately serviceable for the purpose of war administration than any new political system hastily con-

any new political system hastily constructed on the Western model. After all, the strength of Russia resided in her innumerable little systems of peasant communities, which, by hard work, hard living, and the continual production of swarms of children, had built up the Empire of the House of Moscow. Half the peasants could not read or write; their oral legends and traditions were still the chief source of inspiring national action in the country; so that the Tsar alone, acting directly as Imperator in the ancient Russian way, could evoke the full fighting spirit of the race.

From the point of view of the Allies of Russia, the action of the Tsar in placing himself at the head of his armies and creating a Chancellor to organise the Empire completely for war had a great and striking effect upon the international situation. This abrupt, intense concentration of actual power in Russia put an end to German intrigue for a separate peace. All the subterranean work which had been going on in Petrograd failed of effect when the Tsar removed from his capital, and lived in business-like seclusion with his Staff and some of his Council of Empire at general headquarters behind the firing-line.

The Russian communities were still full of fight. Even the peasant refugees of Polish, Lithuanian and Lettish race, who formed an immense trail of utter misery far into Russia, were premature peace

sternly hostile to anything like a premature peace. An American observer, who spoke to thousands of them, said that the general sense of all their statements was: "We must win now, no matter the cost or the time it takes. The sufferings we have undergone are too great to stop at anything short of victory." The Letts of Courland, who had been one of the main forces of the revolutionary movement in 1909, came in tens of thousands to General Russky at Riga and Dvinsk and volunteered for any kind of service as guerilla troops or regular soldiers. Many of the Polish peasants between the German frontier and the Pinsk Marsh remained on their farms during the Russian retreat, confiding in the word of the German Emperor that they should be well treated. The Austrian troops seem to have acted in a civilised manner, but the German soldiers soon began to pillage the lonely farmhouses and small villages. The systematic marauding was conducted with great severity beyond the line of the Vistula and the Bug Rivers. The German Staff seems



A MASS OF BOG-LAND PATCHED WITH COPSES AND PINE-WOODS.

Some idea of what the Russian marshes were like when saturated by the autumnal rains may be gathered from this photograph of a horse which lured by thirst, had wandered into the danger zone and got mired in a mudbank.



COLD COMFORT ON AN ICY MORNING, BUT ENOUGH FOR ARDENT PATRIOTS. "Daddy Frost" is the modern Moujik's name for Russia's two most famous commanders—Generals January and February. He has no terror for them, and they fought more stoutly on a cup of cold water, which they had to break the ice to obtain, than the Germans fought on hot coffee.

to have regarded the land within the rivers as definitely acquired territory, which could at need be held by fortified lines, and which it would therefore pay to foster and keep well peopled in order to increase the national resources. In any case the Polish, Lithuanian, and Lettish peasants beyond the rivers were used with extreme rigour. Their goods were taken from them without payment; they were subjected to insult and grievous injury; and their women were not respected.

The upshot was the creation of guerilla bands, composed of men driven to extreme desperation, who knew that they would receive no mercy if they were caught, and who

to Letts

therefore gave no mercy to the German soldiery. For some months there were no continuous lines in the eastern theatre of war. Both contending forces manœuvred

in the open field, with gaps between their main areas of concentration, and in the wide gaps there were only patrols and thin screens of observing troops. The guerilla bands were therefore able to work more freely than would have been the case if the opposing armies had firmly entrenched against each other all along the front. Most of the country was rough, with vast tracts of woodland and immense regions of lakes and swamps; therefore, the fighting peasants, with their special knowledge of the ground, had numerous places of shelter. By the winter many of the guerilla bands seemed to have crossed into the Russian line and taken service as regular soldiers. This was especially the case in Courland, where the work of defending Riga and Dvinsk was conducted by the young Letts, supported by the ironsides of Siberia and the sharp-shooters of Livonia and Pskov. Although the Letts became regular troops, wearing the Russian uniform, the German commanders refused, against all international law, to treat them as soldiers, and shot them out of hand when

This naturally did not make the young Lett any gentler in his treatment of the German. By this time the Lett was well aware of all that he owed the Germans for seven

centuries of serfdom, land robbery, and bloody repression, culminating first in the acts of the German barons of the Russian Baltic provinces in 1909, and then in the deeds of the German army of invasion in 1915. So when the Lett met the German in the autumn and winter of 1915, in the continuous battles around Riga and Dvinsk, there were not many prisoners taken on either side.

The struggle for the northern river-line of the Dwina, from Riga to Dvinsk, and then southward in the lake region above Vilna, was the principal feature of the eastern campaign throughout the autumn of 1915; for after Hindenburg had failed to capture the central Russian army round Vilna in September, 1915, there was nothing left for him to do but to prepare for a possible advance in the spring of 1916.

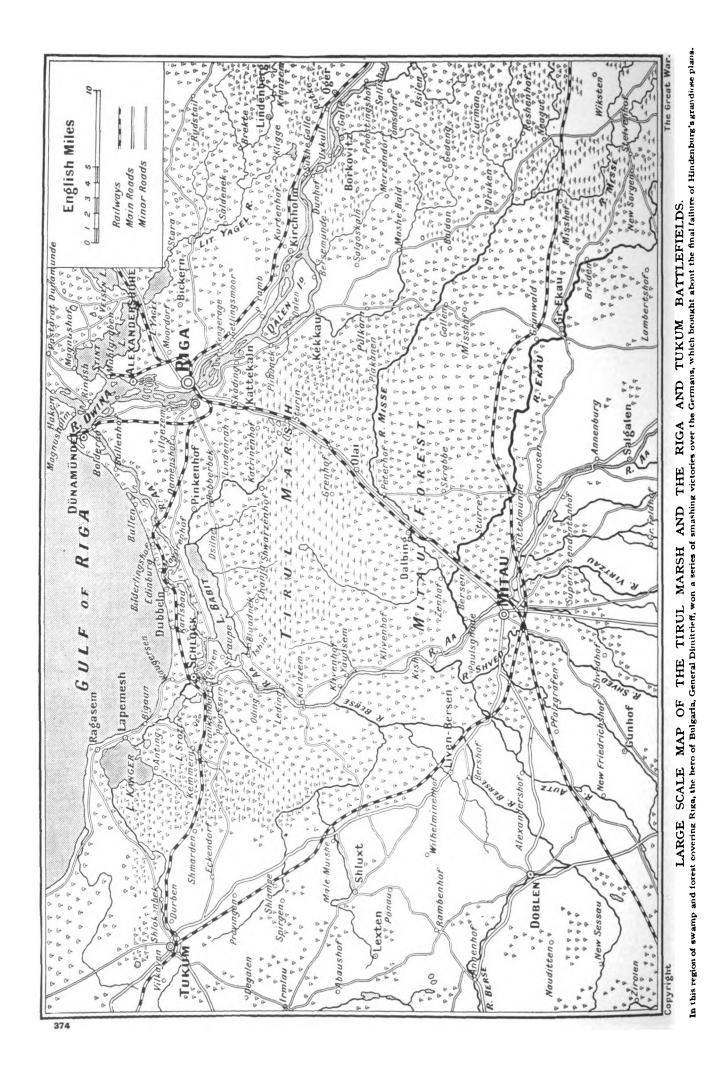
It will be seen from the map that there is a continuous line of railways running from the Gulf of Riga to Lemberg in Galicia. This railway line is made up of different sections—some double-tracked, a part of the grand European trunk railway, a stretch of single-line railway across the Pinsk Marsh, and bits of other systems. But it could be used to transport troops and guns north and south. Wherever the Russians were forced back from this Riga-Lemberg line, they destroyed the rails as thoroughly as possible. But they could

not blow up the embankments running through the marsh, or annul the primary

Riga and its railways

engineering work of levelling the country for railway-making. The country was flat and there were few tunnels; most of the rivers were not broad, and there were only half a dozen bridges that could not be rapidly reconstructed. Therefore, in spite of all the damage that could be done to it by the retreating Russians, the possession of the Riga-Lemberg line was of great value to the Germans.

It spanned the entire Russian front, and if the Teutonic armies could align themselves some miles east of it, their position during the winter would be admirable. Not only would their troops be rapidly fed and munitioned, but they



Digitized by Google

could be moved up and down the six-hundred-mile track in such rapid concentrations that the three Russian armies, based on Petrograd, Smolensk, and Kieff, with no cross-country railway connecting them, would be unable to help each other. But until the Riga-Lemberg railway line was won, the Germans and Austrians had no better communications than their opponents. In many respects they were worse off, as their system of motor traffic had sadly broken down in the Polish mud, and the unsuspected appearance of a British submarine flotilla in the Baltic cut their important sea-line supplies.

Our submarines, indeed, did very much to save the Russian Army from losing its hold upon the Riga-Lemberg line. First of all, as has been already related, our brilliant and daring sailors broke up the naval attack on the Gulf of

Riga in August, 1915, when our underwater craft torpedoed the battle-cruiser Moltke and put out of action some smaller warships, after attacking, in the previous month, the battleship Pommern and doing her much damage.

the battleship Pommern and doing her much damage.

The submarines with British crews were so cleverly handled as to escape observation, while moving to the attack on the German Fleet, and thus our men got home a series of blows which crippled German sea-power in the

Baltic. According to the plan arranged at Libau between Field-Marshal von Hindenburg, representing the German Army, and Prince Henry of Prussia, representing

the German Navy, the conquest of the Riga-Dvinsk section of the railway was to have been accomplished by a seaborne supply of shells and other munitions; for even when the existing railways in Courland had been extended by the building of a new light railway, the German guns could not be served quickly enough to beat down the Russian defences. The German admiral transformed the Courland port of Windau into a provisional munitioning base for Hindenburg's northernmost army, in the expectation that this army would conquer Riga, which would then become a base of seaborne munition supplies for the drive against Petrograd.

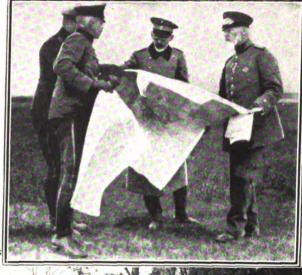
But after the failure of the great German naval attack on the Gulf of Riga, in August, 1915, the channel by which the German ships had entered the Gulf was closed by a very difficult minefield and other obstructions. At the same time the German traffic through both Libau and Windau was disorganised by British and Russian submarines, with the result that Hindenburg continually ran short of shells in Courland, where his local commanders, Below and Lauenstein, were relying upon their superior artillery to save their infantry. They had the two great siege trains which had shattered Kovno and Novo Georgievsk, and General Eichhorn, who had swung his right wing towards Riga early in the campaign, now moved the bulk of his forces from the Vilna sector towards the river-line of the Dwina. The condition of the roads prevented him from bringing up his

heaviest howitzers, but he had hundreds of 6 in. pieces and a host of 8 in. howitzers. The point he selected for attack was the river-fortress town of

The attack on Dvinsk

Dvinsk, which guarded the junction of the Riga-Smolensk and Vilna-Petrograd railways. Dvinsk, sometimes known by its older name of Dunaberg, was one of the most vital positions in Russia, for it guarded the river-line of the Dwina and the vast lake district that covered Petrograd. For more than four hundred years the military importance of Dvinsk had been recognised by its being strongly fortified; and in 1812 Napoleon's army of invasion had met with a severe repulse at the bridge-head before carrying the town. Any advance on Moscow had to be protected by the capture of the great northern flanking position, to prevent the Petrograd army from driving down on the rear of any advancing forces.

Hindenburg at the time was very close to all the line of the Dwina River from Riga to the lakes south of Dvinsk.





HOW THE RUSSIANS TOOK THE HEART OUT OF THE ADVANCING GERMANS.

Every conceivable difficulty was put by the Russians in the way of the pursuing Germans, who had to make temporary bridges for their transport over every stream and ditch they came to. Above: Prince Leopold of Bavaria studying a war map with some of his staff.

He had stormed the bridge-head at Friedrichstadt on the Dwina on September 3rd, 1915, while General Russky was working to save the army far to the south of Vilna. But after snatching this advantage from his hard-pressed opponent, the German Field-Marshal, who also threw every man he could spare into the Vilna fight, found that he had to rearrange his plan of operations on the Dwina front; for Russky had meanwhile received strong reinforcements from Petrograd, and had closed the gap at Friedrichstadt in the vital river-line. During the close of the grand struggle with the armies of Russky and Evert round Vilna, the German commander tried to distract Russky by hammering at Dvinsk, and there threatening to break through and entirely turn all the Russian forces based on Petrograd, Smolensk, and Moscow. But the Russian fortress-town was defended in a different way from Kovno or Brest Litovsk, and the other frontier strongholds. General Russky knew as much about fortification as any German, for he had stormed through the Austrian fortresses in Galicia in the first period of the war; and among his commanders was Radko Dimitrieff, whose long series of victories against Turk, Austrian, Hungarian, and German had only been broken by Mackensen's thousands of guns

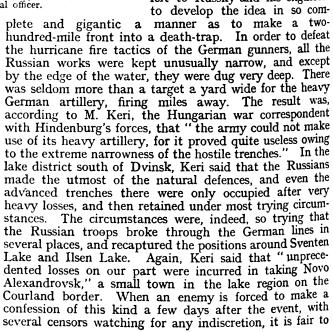
diameter, which swept through a country so spotted with small and large lakes that it looked like an irregular piece of lace. Despite the watery nature of the ground, the fortified Russian trenches ploughed up the whole district. Each important position was arranged somewhat in the form of a crescent. Every frontal attack was caught on both flanks from the horns of the position. The horns in turn were strengthened by advanced trenches

were strengthened by advanced trenches. The general result was that, when the hostile infantry charged, it was held up

A 200-mile death-trap

until its pressure became more than the men in the advanced trenches could sustain. These men, having done all their work, retired down the communication trenches, in as great a disorder as they could assume. The charging mass of enemies, seeing the opposing line give way, advanced through the central gap, where they met with the exact degree of resistance as would herd them together inside the crescent. Then from each horn and arm, and from the main trench behind, there came three crossing sheets of musketry and machine-gun fire, which mowed down the trapped battalions, while a storm of shrapnel from the Russian batteries burst over their heads, and also curtained off their reinforcements. All that the Russian

infantryman afterwards had to do was to walk over the bodies of his fallen foes and resume his garrison work in the advanced trenches. Sometimes the Russian went forward with the bayonet, when his fire had broken up the enemy. But, whether he worked with steel or bomb, he went forward. In other words, the Russian front line was made to break. Only the horns of each crescent, which could not be distinguished from other advanced trenches, resisted the pressure of an enemy attack. Russky's front was about two hundred miles long, and there were over a thousand places in were over a thousand places in it which the German infantry could occupy whenever it liked. The new system of constructing positions with a false front, flanked by strong arms, seems to have been a German or Austrian invention; but it was left to Russky and his engineers to develop the idea in so com-





A RUSSIAN GENERAL'S QUARTERS NEAR THE PRIPET MARSH.

So that it stood on Russian soil the rudest hovel satisfied any Russian, even of the highest rank. On the dreary plains of the Pripet Marsh, beyond which the Germans could not penetrate, this was the best temporary home that could be found for one general officer.

on the Dunajec river line. Since Dimitrieff in 1912 tried to carry the Chatalja lines near Constantinople by an infantry attack he had led the Russian infantry against the Przemysl forts, and had been at last blown out of his own lines by a million high-explosive shells. So he also well knew what modern artillery could do, and the defence of Riga and Dvinsk was therefore conducted by men who abounded in experience.

Their task was to hold out for two or three months between Riga and Dvinsk until their own artillery and their

own shell supplies were raised to the German level. Hundreds of heavy guns were coming from the Putiloff Works at Petrograd and from Japan and America;

and the shell factories of three great countries were working at high pressure to save the Dwina line. As a matter of fact, General Russky had been given most of the best available artillery in Russia; and though his shell supply was still much inferior, in September, 1915, to Hindenburg's, it was greater than that of any other Russian general.

The original fortress at Dvinsk was an insignificant

The original fortress at Dvinsk was an insignificant affair, the works being thrown out scarcely more than a mile beyond the old citadel. Russky arranged his new defences in an immense circle more than twenty miles in



Lieut.=Gen. Sir Percy H. N. Lake, K.C.M.G., K.C.B., Commander=in=Chief in Mesopotamia.



Cossack cavalry on the alert in the snowbound Caucasus.



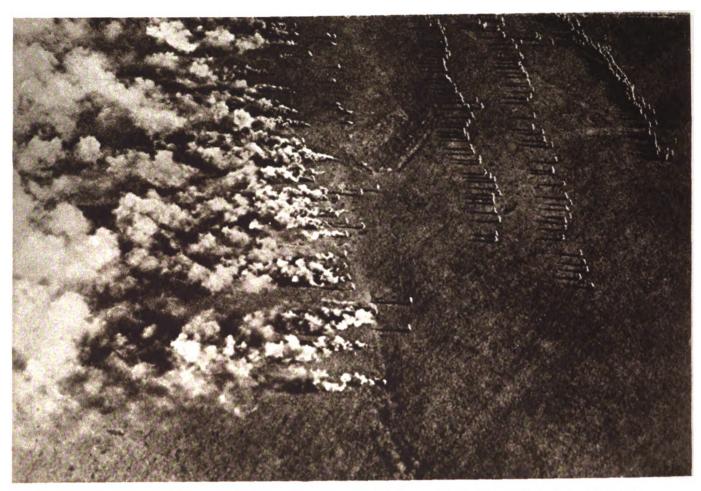
Austrian munition column crossing a stream in the Pripet Marshes.



Another wonderful photograph of Cossacks on the march in the frozen Caucasus.



Austrian supply column passing over a pontoon bridge in the Pripet Marshes.



German gas=attack on the eastern front photographed by a Russian airman.



Russian trench on the edge of a forest on the Dwina front.

assume that the casualties of the attacking army must have been enormous.

And so they were. In the course of three months' fighting, General Russky—a weak, ailing invalid, whose brain worked with strange brilliance in his sick body—first fought Hindenburg to a complete standstill, and then advanced and drove him back from the Riga line. It is impossible to describe in detail the incessant furious fighting that went on for months between the Gulf of Riga and the

wilderness of swamps and marshes north
of Vilna. The great river fortress itself
was never in serious danger, though the
enemy approached from the west to the

railway town of Illukst. The railway enabled him to bring up heavy guns and shatter village after village with gusts of his fire; but the Russian troops, feeling at last that they also had good guns behind them, continually counter-attacked with extreme violence. By September 27th, it was reckoned that one-seventh of the northern German armies had fallen in front of Dvinsk. The last attack was pressed ten days and ten nights, and it increased in strength towards the end, eight army corps being massed around the fortress. The trenches often changed hands half a

dozen times in the twenty-four hours, without weakening the ferocious determination of attackers and defenders.

Finally, the Germans made a grand effort in the old-fashioned massed formation, but the masses were broken up by rapid fire from the Russian rifles, Maxims and guns. Three times in one day did Hindenburg launch a massed infantry assault, but without effect. On each occasion the Russians held back their fire to the last possible moment, and then annihilated the grey swarms at a range of two or three hundred yards. According to the official state-ments by the Russian Staff, all the fighting which had gone on for fourteen months in Poland and Galicia was mild when compared with that of Dvinsk. Hindenburg apparently thought that, as he had stormed Kovno at

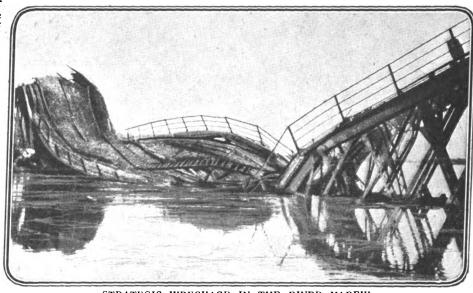
a cost of 100,000 men, he could take Dvinsk at the same price in man-power. A single Russian regiment on Monday, September 29th, had to withstand ten thousand rounds of high-explosive shell from the German siege-guns, and then beat back line after line of charging infantry. It was only the extreme narrowness and depth of the Russian trenches that saved the men from shell-blast, shell fragments and poisonous fumes. In the last fortnight of September the enemy did not advance more than a mile in two days against the new works of Dvinsk, and at the end of a month he was still ten miles from the town, with the last line of lake defences in front of him. He tried to turn the position from the north and from the south side; but whatever move he made he had to continue his frontal attacks, as the circle of Russian defences was complete. At the beginning of October the Germans again struck at the Dwina, forty miles north of Dvinsk; but having got off the main metalled road, their artillery was bogged in the mud and their convoys were disorganised by the guerilla bands.

their convoys were disorganised by the guerilla bands.

By this time the effect of the Franco-British blows against the western German line in Champagne and Artois were felt on the Russian front. The enemy's offensive movement perceptibly slackened everywhere except at Dvinsk, and General Russky began to advance through

the southern lakes and also in the north around Riga. The Germans meanwhile laboured at the construction of a field railway running along the Wilkomir road to Dvinsk, so that the largest howitzers and heaviest shells could be brought near the firing-line. Steam cranes were erected in large numbers at the new railhead to lift the monster cylinders into motor-waggons, and all the siege machinery from Kovno and Grodno was brought up to facilitate the working of the great arc of artillery at Dvinsk. The Lithuanian guerilla bands between Dvinsk and Vilna were checked in the first week of October, when Hindenburg at last closely linked his two armies and formed a continuous line from the Dwina to the Pinsk Marsh. Bands of peasant fighters, however, still wandered as far as seventy miles in the rear of the German firing-line, and wrought havoc among the enemy's communications.

By the middle of October the German pressure on the southern lake-line had been relieved, and Hindenburg, seeking the line of least resistance, brought his main forces to the north of the town, where there were more facilities for employing his heavy howitzers. After thirty-five days of continual storming attacks, Russky still faced the enemy with a strong semicircle of earthwork



STRATEGIC WRECKAGE IN THE RIVER NAREW.
Ruins of a railway bridge over the River Narew, that was blown up by Russian troops operating in Poland.

fortifications extending for thirty-five miles in front of Dvinsk. The town was bombed by Zeppelins and monster aeroplanes, but the Russian aviation service had greatly increased the output of aerial craft. The Russian Armies, possessing giant machines, bombarded the enemy's ammunition depots, and, what was still more important, maintained a regular and far-reaching system of reconnaissance over the enemy's lines. By this means it was found that Hindenburg, in the third week in October, was massing against Riga, having apparently come to the conclusion that Dvinsk was impregnable.

While still attacking the great fortress from the north-west, the German commander brought six army corps

Six army corps

against Riga

against Riga, and, heralded by bomb-dropping Zeppelins, an assault was made some miles south of the town, where the broadening Dwina is split by a large island. Dalen, as the river-island is called, lies just north of the farm of Bersemunde. Only a comparatively narrow stream separates it from the bank which the Germans were approaching. A crossing, therefore, could easily be effected, and there was high ground on the northern tongue of the island, from which the broad main eastern stream could be dominated. An immense swamp, ending in a large lake, Babit Lake, stretched to the Riga Gulf from the



Scouts on the alert between a Russian outpost position and the enemy lines in Poland.

north of the German line of advance. The great swamp known as Tirul Marsh served to protect the attacking army from any flanking movement; and immediately between the swamp and the sea there was only a tongue of sandy soil shaded with pine-woods, along which ran the railway from Schlock to Riga. In addition to the long stretch of water of the Babit Lake, a wide, winding river, the Aa, ran around the swamp and flowed along the seaward tongue of land into the estuary of the Dwina. Altogether, the position on the northern German flank seemed excellent, especially as the seaward peninsula was held by strong forces, entrenched with artillery against any sally from Riga.

But the Russian fleet in the Gulf of Riga began to assert its power in a disconcerting way, and while the enemy was trying to close on the town a Russian force landed far to the rear at Domesness, just by the entrance to the Gulf, and menaced the railways from Windau and Libau. The more immediate object of this surprise landing

was to destroy a German force on the Surprise by the coast, which was trying to remove the Russian fleet obstructions in the channel between the mainland and the island of Oesel. With a

loss of only four men wounded, the Russian landing-party scattered the Germans, destroyed all their works, strengthened the obstacles that kept all German ships out of the Gulf, and produced confusion along the enemy's rear. This neatlyhandled little affair had a considerable effect upon the operations on the Dwina, for it enabled the Russian admiral to maintain complete mastery over the waters of the Gulf. He had four 12 in. guns in the old battleship Slava, and many 4 in. and 6 in. guns in vessels of lighter draught. With this considerable power of mobile artillery, he continually abolted the Courland tinually shelled the German batteries along the Courland shore of the Gulf, and, like our bombarding squadron off the Belgian coast, held up a considerable force of the enemy by the threat of a landing.

All this, it must be remembered, was achieved in the Baltic waters, where the Germans could employ a much stronger fleet than the Russians possessed. But the Russian Navy had some small but deadly helpers. In both



SCANNING THE ENEMY'S LINES. Russian officer and Cossack, stationed in the fork of a tree, and watching the German position.



A LONELY WATCHER IN THE RUSSIAN VAN. Scout on outpost duty at an exposed position near the enemy's trenches.

a direct and indirect manner our submarine flotillas exercised much influence upon the land battles along the Dwina, by making the German Admiralty Staff fearful of risking their capitals. Remarkable was the tale of German warships sunk or damaged by our submarines in the Baltic during Hindenburg's operations against the Dwina line. The Pommern, the Moltke, the Prince Adalbert, Undine, Bremen and Gazelle were torpedoed, the Bunz, a minelayer, was destroyed, and three destroyers and four torpedo-boats were sunk. In October, 1915, the seaborne commerce that German steamers had been carrying on with Sweden was stopped, after the enemy's mercantile marine had suffered great losses. German munition factories began to lack Swedish ore, which was needed for special purposes. Most of the lighter German warships were lost while attempting to clear the Baltic of our under-

Loss of German warships water craft by chasing them with Zeppelins acting as scouts. Our seamen showed such splendid fighting power and trained ingenuity that all through the

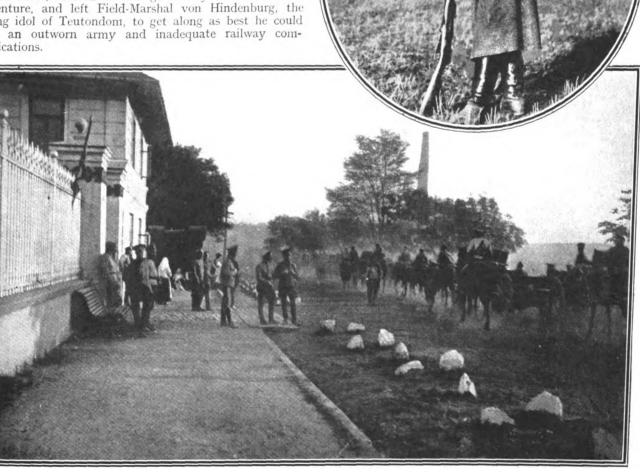
critical period of the campaign against Riga they remained

practically masters of the Baltic Sea.

The German Admiralty, discovering itself unable to protect the last remnant of its merchant steamer traffic, was averse from resuming its operations in the Gulf of Riga. The British submarine was not the only and chief danger. New Russian battleships were either in commission or approaching completion. In order to engage the increasingly powerful Russian Navy, the Germans would have had to use a large number of their finest battleships and battle-cruisers, with an excellent chance of losing many of them even if a victory were won. The new head of the German Naval Staff, Admiral von Hötzendorff, who was a cautious man, with his weather eye always on our Grand Fleet, refused to indulge in any further Russian adventure, and left Field-Marshal von Hindenburg, the falling idol of Teutondom, to get along as best he could with an outworn army and inadequate railway communications.

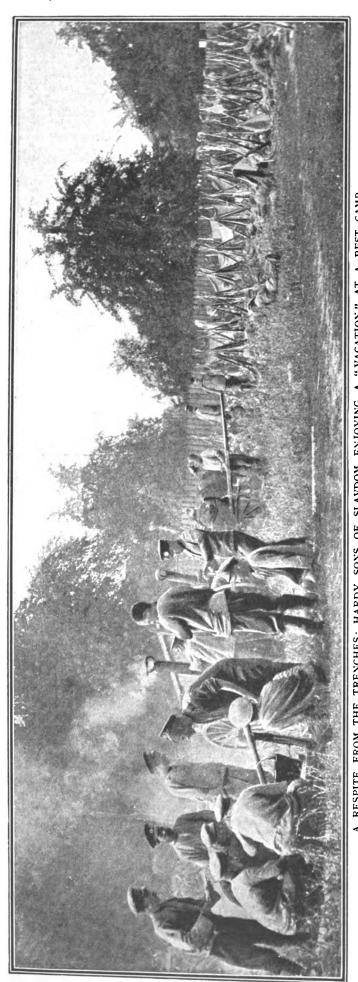


TABLE REFINEMENTS UNDER DIFFICULTIES.
Russian officers at an alfresco luncheon behind the firing-line in Poland.



WITH TSARDOM'S FORCES ON THE POLISH FRONT.

Cavalcade of Russian field-guns and ammunition supply waggons passing a house used by Russian Staff officers, and on their way to a new position on the Polish front. In circle: Russian outpost sentry on the plains near the Pripet Marsh.



DOM ENJOYING A "VACATION" AT A REST CAMP. some of the stacked rifles are their clothes, being dried; the men in the foreground pail as a cooking utensil; behind are two travelling field kitchens, where steaming t soldiers' favourite soup, "stchi," are being prepared. A RESPITE FROM THE TRENCHES: HARDY SONS OF S After a long spell in the trenches, fighting stubbornly against superior numbers of Germans, these sturdy Russian soldiers were enjoying a brief and well-deserved respite from actual fighting and from the roar of the guns, at a rest camp in a village behind the front lines. Hanging between

In these circumstances the old Field-Marshal, with Generals Below, Lauenstein, Eichhorn, Scholtz, Litzmann, and Ludendorff under his control, resolved on a supreme effort against Riga towards the end of October. The troops, who were already suffering badly from the cold, damp climate, were told that the new operations would close the war. First of all, they would win warm, comfortable, healthy winter quarters in the ancient Hanse town of Riga, and add the historic German-founded city to the Empire; and then the great Slav enemy, having lost the last line of defence and the railway from the Baltic to Galicia, would be compelled by hopeless disaster—military, naval, and economic—to sue

and economic—to sue for peace. There was a smattering of truth in this official statement. The

German Chief of Staff, Erich von Falkenhayn, had fixed on Riga as the northern limit of the Teutonic advance. When the Dwina line was secured and strongly fortified, it was intended to swing a large part of the army through Poland into Galicia, with the object of reaching Odessa.

reaching Odessa.

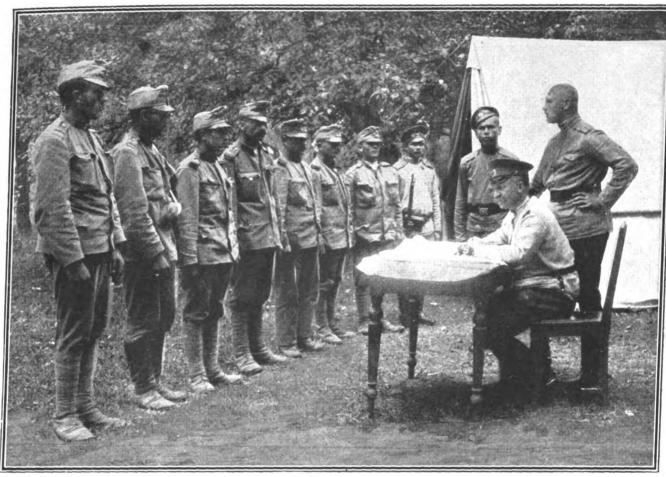
It was expected that Mackensen's forces, operating in Serbia, would quickly clear the road to Salonika with Bulgarian aid, and be released for the Odessa expedition about the same time as certain of Hindenburg's armies were set free for work in the south. The comparatively mild climate and great productiveness of the wheat region of South Russia made it a favourable ground for a winter campaign. Falkenhayn considered that Russia would need at least six months to arm her new formations, and from his point of view, therefore, it was a matter of vital importance to press her as hard as possible during the winter, and deliver a decisive blow early in the New Year before her new armies were ready.

But before all this could be done, and a

But before all this could be done, and a great slice cut permanently out of Russia from Riga to Odessa to form the new kingdom of the Eastern Slav Confederation, Riga had to be captured. Hindenburg's forces had been terribly weakened by the continual storming mass attacks against Dvinsk. So a large body of fresh troops, most of whom were only half-trained, was railed into Courland, and collected round Tukum and Mitau. As will be seen on the map, both these towns are close to Riga, and are connected by a railway that skirts the large swamp of Tirul. From Mitau the railway runs along the eastern side of the swamp by the village of Olai to Riga. Hindenburg's design was to attack Riga from the south through Mitau and Olai and

through Mitau and Olai and the island of Dalen, and at the same time to close in on the north from Tukum,

the north from Tukum, along the peninsula and the shore of Lake Babit. At the beginning of October the three northernmost German army corps advanced from their strong entrenchments between Tukum and Schlock and spread along both sides of the Babit Lake. By the sea the land narrows in places to less than a mile; and the enemy had to go forward in a formation of great depth with an exceedingly narrow front. All the fighting had to be done by a small front rank which could be held up by a few well-entrenched machine-guns and quick-firing batteries. And



PRISONERS BEING INTERROGATED ON THE DWINA FRONT.
Russian Staff officers interrogating Austrian prisoners in an endeavour to elicit useful information as to the enemy's strength and possible movements.

when the front German lines were checked, the dense masses behind jammed together, and in many places interfered with the gun teams. This alone would have been sufficient to enable the Russian heavy artillery, working with aerial observers, to blast the masses away. But to add to the difficulties of Hindenburg's men, all the Russian warships in the Gulf of Riga steamed close to the shore and opened fire on their flank

shore and opened fire on their flank.

General Russky, with Radko Dimitrieff in immediate control of the Riga army, had his foes again in a death-trap. It was far worse than the bottle at Lodz into which he lured two of Mackensen's army corps. Between the anvil of the warships and the hammer of the heavy Russian batteries near Schlock, the German advance was completely broken up with little expense to the Lettish and Russian infantry. Then, on the south-west of Lake Babit, where the Germans managed to storm some Russian trenches, a strong defending column recovered the position and turned round the western edge of the lake, and there joined with the victorious force advancing along the peninsula. By the end of the first week in November all the German operations along the north of the marsh of

Kemmern taken
by storm

Tirul came to an end, and before
Hindenburg could reorganise his battered
divisions Dimitrieff closed on Kemmern and took it by storm.

Above Kemmern is Lake Kanger, with the village of

Above Kemmern is Lake Kanger, with the village of Anting on the southern shore and Ragasem on the north. All the ground in the late autumn was a mass of bog-land, patched with copses and pine-woods, and the forces on both sides were frequently fighting waist-deep in the slimy morasses. The struggle lasted nearly a fortnight, the German commander throwing fresh troops into the fighting-line as his front continually weakened. But these new men were unfit for their work, being half-trained levies whose lack of discipling, shown by their marauding exploits, had already made them a byword among the veteran

German troops. The German Staff had intended them only to be used with an overwhelming force of siege artillery to make a mass attack preparatory to the charge of the more experienced troops.

But the German commander on the Dwina front had lost so many of his best men that he had to use the raw levies in important holding positions. They were strengthened with an extraordinary number of machine-guns; in many places there was one gun to every ten infantrymen. This

reliance on the machinery of war did not help the enemy. At Kemmern especially the new troops, many of them discontented Social Democrats, broke and fled in

utter panic before the pressure of the Russians became really severe. The previous long and wearing fight in the bog-land had taken the heart out of the northern army, and it was only the heavy German guns of position, placed immediately around Tukum, and provided with a good store of shells, that prevented the German line in Courland from being turned. The victorious Russian column, by the third week in November, had pushed the enemy beyond Lake Kanger, and had arrived within seven miles of the railway at Tukum. Only the impossibility of bringing the heavy guns of the Riga defences across some twenty miles of swamps, soaked with autumnal rain, stopped General Dimitrieff from reversing the Russian and German positions, and laying siege to the Tukum defences.

As it was, the victorious Bulgarian commander at Riga devised a more subtle means of wearing down the remaining strength of the German forces. The chief German position had run from Kemmern along the River Aa; and after capturing this line the Russian soldiers were astonished at what they found there. It was well known that the German Emperor had stated that if any of his commanders had any men in winter suffering from frost-bite and chill he would be tried for negligence. This sounded at the time like a vain boast; but it was found

Digitized by Google



MAP ILLUSTRATING THE RIGA-LEMBERG RAILWAY SYSTEM.

that the organisation of the German lines in view of the winter campaign was a marvel of efficiency. The Germans had suffered terribly along the Rawka in Poland in the previous winter; but since then their ingenious engineers had devised a scheme for keeping the army warm during the hardest frost. Light metal buildings, manufactured in great quantities in standardised parts and fitted with steam-heating apparatus, were erected in dug-outs beneath the trenches. Each man had a sleeping-sack; a large daily supply of alcohol was provided, and orders were given that the soldiers should rub themselves all over with the spirit regularly every day. The officers had to act like doctors, and see that their men did not suffer from frost, Hindenburg's orders being that the officer who lost a single man from the frost deserved to be shot.

Even more astonishing than all these medical preparations was the great accumulation of cotton and linen goods found

in the captured positions. Collections of domestic linen had been made throughout Germany; and all the houses in the Russian provinces occupied by the enemy

had been systematically pillaged of calico, linen and holland, and any material of white colour. Then there were tripod devices for carrying a vast expanse of light white material, sometimes square for the troops to bivouac under it, sometimes narrow and long to cover an advancing line. The idea was to hide the troops when the snow fell, and enable them to creep across the frozen marshes for a grand surprise attack, with all uniforms and supply carts covered in white material, making them invisible on the snow. The Germans had also accumulated an amazing quantity of boring tools and blasting explosives. In the Courland winter the ground freezes to a depth of four feet and more, and trench-digging, under battle conditions, becomes impossible. So the ingenious and foreseeing Germans organised a large boring corps, whose duty it was to creep forward and plough up new trenches by means of dynamite as cover for the advancing forces.

But in the early part of the winter the boring corps around Riga and Dvinsk used all their energies in making land-mines by the hundred thousand, for it was found that the ordinary system of wire entanglements became quite useless in Courland. The ground froze, the rivers iced over, and the snow ceased to melt. It piled above the wire entanglements and buried them; and, as the snow thickened and hardened, there was at last enough hard material above the wires to enable the troops to climb safely over the entanglements. So a vast system of dynamite mines was constructed by the German engineers. Then a large number of infantry were trained in ski travelling. In the previous winter the Germans had won some small successes in East Prussia by means of ski work. After three days of snowstorms the Russian troops had sunk up to their chests in the snow, and while in this difficult posture they had been attacked and defeated by German troops on skis.

So at Tukum the entire German army was trained in Arctic sports, and provided with sledges and skis in preparation for a great raid on the Russian lines after a

heavy snowstorm. Naturally our allies, from whom we derive all this information, took steps to counter this Arctic method of warfare, in which cotton-dressed troops, white-washed sledges, and ski-ing divisions were expected, and the result we have to relate in our next Russian chapter.

Meanwhile, when the first light frosts of winter only were felt, General Dimitrieff's troops worried the enemy back to Tukum on the north and Mitau on the south. The German position at Olai was stormed in the first week of November, and the creeping movement continued on the line of lakes south of Dvinsk. Only a single company, or at the most a regiment, was usually employed in this kind of fighting, which the Russians called "little war." The object was to rob the enemy of small stretches of



Picturesque impression of a band of refugees taking cover in a wood. With the typical Russian waggon, they had come miles away from the danger zone, and were about to pitch their camp for the night. The womenfolk are preparing an evening meal.

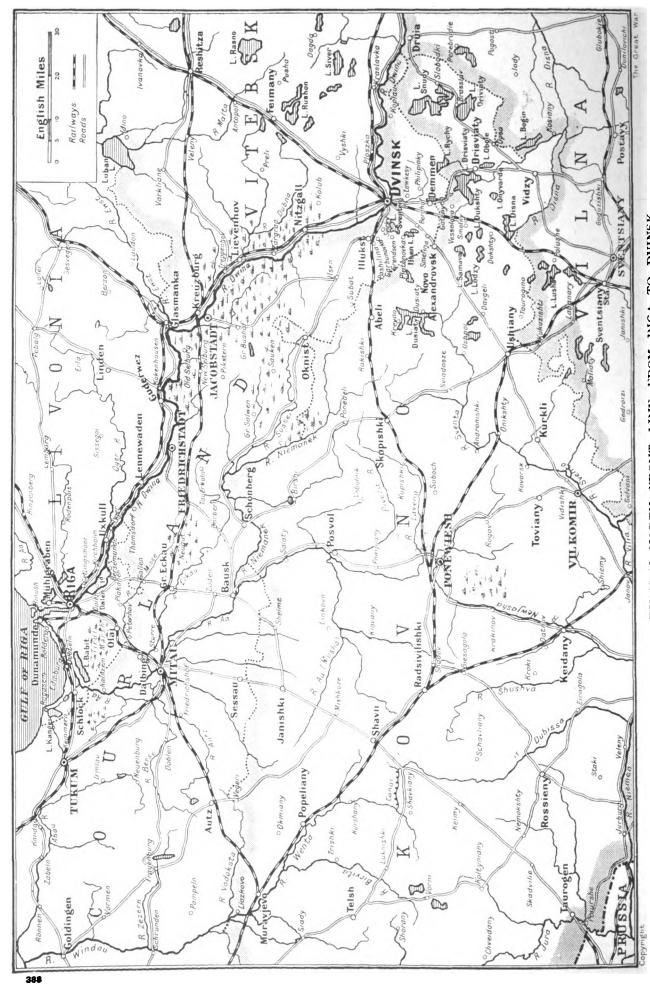


Russian artillery descending into a dale in the neighbourhood of Grodno in order to take up a new position facing the enemy, whose advanced trenches may be faintly discerned on the horizon.



Russian engineers repairing a road in a pleasantly-wooded section of the eastern front. An engineer officer seated imperturbably on a grey charger superintends the pressing work. The sturdy proportions of most of the soldiers seen in this illustration will be remarked.

THREE PHASES OF THE STRUGGLE BETWEEN TSARDOM AND THE CENTRAL EMPIRES.



MAP SHOWING THE RUSSIAN NORTH FRONT LINE FROM RIGA TO DVINSK. The country is so spotted with lakes, large and small, that it resembles an irrogular piece of lace.

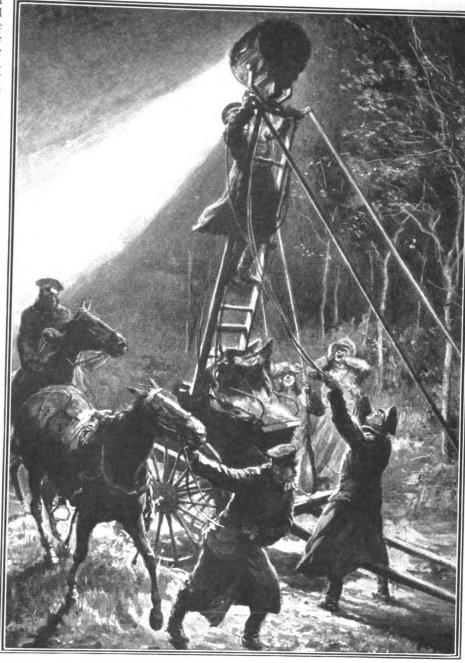
his highly-organised trenches, and throw him back a few hundred yards where he would feel the stress of the weather. It was the patches of dry ground that the Russians coveted, and, having a manifest superiority over their foes, they pushed them into the bogs and low-lying watery ground by the river-courses. All this was done in accordance with a systematic plan; and when General Russky, the army group com-mander over Dimitrieff, had at last to retire from his command through illness, he left his successor in a happy position. The Germans held some healthy hill-country at Tukum, but their lines round the Tirul swamp and along the Dwina and the lake district, were calculated to sicken them of war. General Evert, who took control of all the Russian lines, from the Gulf of Riga to the Pinsk Marsh, became only the assistant to the two most famous of all Russian commanders "General January" and "General February." These were their names, at least, in the days of Napoleon, but the modern moujik combined them into one personification—" Daddy Frost."

Most of the work of the little war was carried on by local volunteer forces and other new formations of fresh, spirited troops. Owing to the numerous bogs and lakes between Riga and Brest Litovsk, the enemy was unable to construct and hold an unbroken fortified front. There were hundreds of gaps in his trench system, and these had to be watched day and night by mobile forces which were generally scattered along the firm tracts marked on the Staff maps. But there were many other paths known to the local peasantry, and as the weather changed under recurring spells of frost and rain, the geography of the marshes altered in a way that only the inhabitants could foresee. A hard frost at night would open new lines of attack along ways

where Staff maps
falled

unguarded by any German patrols, and the consequence was that there were hundreds of little raids through the German lines which were never mentioned in the official reports. But their cumulative effect throughout the winter campaign did more to wear down the strength of Germany than any of the ordinary methods of the war of position followed on the Franco-

methods of the war of position followed on the Franco-British front. In Courland, especially, the Germans were too far from their own country to make full use of their resources. In the previous winter they had had immediately behind them the splendid Prussian railway system, but along the Dwina their communications were so bad that they were beaten to a standstill for want of high-explosive shells, at a time when their munition factories were producing a quarter of a million shells a day. And,



THE WAR BY NIGHT.

Russian soldiers fixing a powerful searchlight in position on the outskirts of a wood. This apparatus was essentially mobile, and could be drawn rapidly from place to place by a horse attached to a small waggon. At the desired point, it was only necessary to elevate the light, the supports of which were horizontal with the shafts of the conveyance. It was then connected with the battery and a telephone-post, so that the light, artillery, and trenches were inter-communicable.

seeing that they could not transport sufficient shells from their abundant home magazines, it may be taken that the lack of other less important but very useful supplies was more severely felt by the troops, particularly when they lost their well-organised positions and had to improvise new trench systems.

Their convoys were raided by the guerilla bands, and by adventurous parties of regular soldiers, who broke through the marshes. The most famous exploit took place in the Pinsk Marsh in November, near the little town of Nevel. Here the commander of the 82nd German Division had his Staff headquarters in a comfortable country-house, standing in a garden with no other houses near it. A young Russian officer in charge of a scouting party learnt from the peasants in the swamp that the place was not closely guarded. With a local guide the



UNDER SAFE COVER. German troops engaging a Russian outpost from behind a sand-bag



PRISONER AND CAPTOR FRATERNISE. The genial Slav apparently bore the Hun little or no malice if he could dine with him, as is seen in this illustration.

Spirited impression of Russian soldiers about to attack an enemy patrol.

An officer precedes the company.

raiders set out one dark night with snow falling, and, after a fifteen-mile tramp across the bog-land, they came within sight of the lights of Nevel. The small band had a short rest, and then crossed the Stochod River, and got among the enemy's detachments. Working forward quietly, they entered the garden, and, crawling up through the snow to the house, found sentries guarding the back and

Swift, silent death overtook the unsuspecting sentries, and the Russians entered, and were at first mistaken for German soldiers. They slew the telephone-operator, and then, with bayonets and hand-grenades, worked through the house, capturing two German generals in their beds, with two other officers, a doctor, and some

German generals privates. Meanwhile, the shots roused the German division, and the nearest regicaptured ment hurried to the rescue. But a few

Russian riflemen held them off till all the prisoners had been taken across the river, and were lost to pursuit amid the bogs. The little rearguard also got away with the loss of only two men, and after another tramp of fifteen miles, the raiders reached their own lines in the morning with their amazing capture. It is clear that when German generals could be captured in this manner at their head-quarters, well behind the fighting-line, the risks run by company officers and their men, while trying to hold the

marsh regions, were very great.

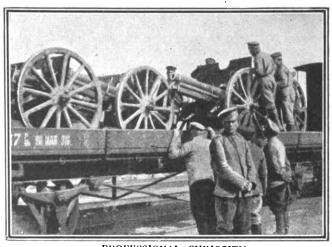
General von Woyrsch's army, which had advanced from Brest Litovsk to the wildest part of the Pinsk swamp, was utterly worn out by guerilla bands in its rear and skirmishing Russian parties along its front. In his first strong sweep Woyrsch drove far along the Pripet River and its northern tributaries, and reached, at the of Pinsk. The railway line from Riga to Lemberg passes through it, also the railway from Brest Litovsk and Moscow. The position was therefore one of high strategic importance. But though General von Woyrsch fortified it, and brought

up his main force as a garrison, he could not keep what he had won. For he was in the worst part of the 33.600 square miles of marshland, generally known as the Pinsk, or Pripet, Marsh, but referred to in both German and Russian communiqués as the Polyesye—which is Russian for waste forest-land. The drainage operations, begun in 1875, had only affected the swamp region near Brest Litovsk, and the region at which Von Woyrsch's army arrived was still primitive bog-land, which only the defending forces knew how to use.

They cut up the German convoys, starved the invading army of munitions, and then, in a series of terrible conflicts, threw the Germans out of Luninetz and pursued them along the swamp beyond the town of Pinsk. At the time when the German generals were captured by the marsh trappers, General von Woyrsch, instead of commanding the most advanced of the Teutonic forces, had his line bent farther back than any other German or Austrian Army leader. On his left hand Prince Leopold of Bavaria fought for months round the railway junction of Baranovitschi, 125 miles south-west of Vilna. On his right hand Linsingen, Ermolli, Bothmer, and Pflanzer tried in vain to advance from Kovel and Eastern Galicia and get command of the Rovno section of the Lemberg-

Riga line. In this southern area of battle General Ivanoff continued to hold the enemy by a continual swaying movement along the Strypa and Styr Rivers, with the little town of Czartorysk, near the southern skirts of the Pinsk Marsh, as the chief pivot of

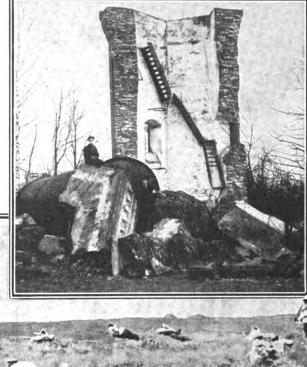
The process of attrition proceeded with a very high wastage on General Ivanoff's front. For the Austrian and German generals were as active on this right wing as was Hindenburg on the left wing. They had been set the task of clearing the Russians out of Galicia and making the great drive towards Kieff and Odessa. The forces of Austria-Hungary were mainly devoted to this scheme of operations. German reinforcements were also sent to Linsingen, and all the German centre was weakened to strengthen



PROFESSIONAL CURIOSITY.

Guns captured by our Russian allies from their western "neighbours."

As the photograph shows, the Russian soldiers were much interested in the mechanism of the guns and in the marks indicating the place of their manufacture.





WITH THE TSAR'S VANGUARD ON THE DEFENSIVE.

Russian infantry advancing to the attack, having crossed a narrow stream by means of an improvised bridge. The centre illustration depicts a ruined railway reservoir near Kelze. The edifice was neatly sectioned by artillery fire.

the wings. Battles of large scope were fought along the Strypa and the Styr every week. Sometimes, indeed, there were three great battles a week, in which ten thousand prisoners were taken and a score of guns. All through the late autumn until Christmas, 1915, General Ivanoff and his brilliant army commanders stood on the defensive; for even their sudden victorious thrusts into the enemy's front were only designed to keep him quiet, and knock the attacking power out of him.

Everywhere the Russians were fighting for time. They had new levies, amounting to four million men, and they were arming and training them by the hundred thousand, as rifles and guns came from Japan. The terrific series of blows dealt by Falkenhayn had left Russia too weak to make any attack upon Bulgaria and save the Serbian armies from complete disaster. But feeble though Mother Russia was, with the flower of her young manhood destroyed or disabled, she yet managed to withstand the last blows by which her enemics sought to overthrow her. The cost of weakening her had been so great that Germany and Austria were also too much exhausted in man-power to carry out their plan of campaign. Thus there was produced in the eastern theatre of war a position of stalemate similar to that existing for a year in the western field of conflict.

to that existing for a year in the western field of conflict.

Towards the beginning of December, Erich von Falkenhayn made one last effort to reach a more favourable line of fortified entrenchments. Linsingen and Ermolli,

Falkenhayn made one last effort to reach a more favourable line of fortified entrenchments. Linsingen and Ermolli, who had been trying for ten weeks to conquer Sarny and Rovno, gave up all attempts to make a serious advance, and dug themselves in near the Rumanian frontier behind ten and more lines of wire entanglements. As a Russian officer put it, they created provinces of barbed-wire; and behind the wire were thousands of machine guns and the remnants.

the Rumanian frontier behind ten and more lines of wire entanglements. As a Russian officer put it, they created provinces of barbed-wire; and behind the wire were thousands of machine-guns and the remnants of the older manhood of the Dual Monarchy. What fresh troops were immediately available were sent far north to Mitau, where Hindenburg made one more essay to capture Riga.

He selected for attack the large river-island of Dalen,

lying in the Dwina within gunshot of Riga. He advanced against this island from the south along the little stream Berse which flows into the Dwina at the farmstead of Bersemunde, fourteen miles south of the coveted seaport. The farm was captured by the Germans on November 24th, and preparations were made to occupy the river peninsula and pass over to Dalen island, and thence force a passage across the Dwina at a spot where a series of islets half bridged the main western current. As a matter of fact, Hindenburg's forces had twice won a foot.

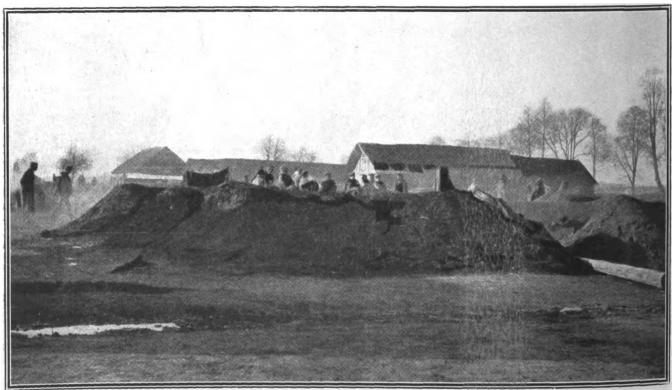
ing on Dalen island since the summer of rors. They had been driven out of it owing to their weak hold upon some

The fight for Bersemunde

owing to their weak hold upon some dominating hills in the neighbourhood. These hills rose along the Berse stream near the farmstead, and on November 24th, 1915, the Germans, besides occupying the farm and all the area between the rivers, stormed the heights and occupied them with machine-guns and light artillery, and began to haul up their siege trains for the bombardment of the south-

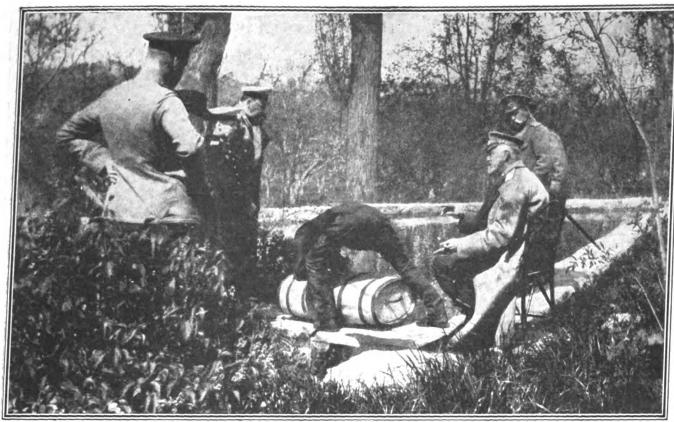
western sector of the Riga defences.

The positions they had won, quite close to the town, and with excellent means of crossing the river, seemed to promise victory at a time when all hope of further conquest had been abandoned. But most of the heavy guns had to be brought around the Tirul swamp, and across the marshy land and forests farther south, where both the Courland guerilla bands and the Russian scouting parties were working actively. And long before the guns and reinforcements arrived. Radko Dimitrieff, while repulsing an advance on Kemmern, designed to distract his forces from the points of importance, launched a division of fighting Letts against the lost farmstead and hills. For three days the struggle went on with increasing fury. The farmstead was recovered and lost and again recovered. Then after a hill had been carried and some machine-guns captured, the enemy was pressed back and thrown over the Berse in a shattered condition. As in most of the struggles round Riga, the Russians had but few prisoners to show the extent of their victory. This was merely a sign that the eighty-hours' fight had been conducted by the Lettish volunteers.



"GONE TO EARTH," A PHENOMENON OF SIEGE WARFARE IN RUSSIA.

Owing to the scarcity of accommodation behind the firing front our Eastern ally resorted to underground quarters, building spacious dug-outs and endowing them with some semblance of home comfort. This photo-



THE VICEROY OF THE CAUCASUS IN THE FIELD. GRAND DUKE NICHOLAS IN CONSULTATION WITH SOME OF HIS STAFF. After withdrawing the Russian forces from their perilous situation on the eastern front, only abandoning Warsaw at the last moment, the Grand Duke was appointed Viceroy of the Caucasus in October, 1915, so that the Tsar in person could take over command of the armies in Western Russia. In spite of a lack of munitions, the Grand Duke's strategic ability

The Germans in Courland paid for their long tale of crimes against non-combatants within a few months of the time when they committed their misdeeds. So heavy was the continual wastage that a considerable part of the army of Prince Leopold of Bavaria had to be moved up to garrison the Dwina front during the winter.

Meanwhile the first new Russian army, which was armed too late to help Serbia, became ready to take the field in the last week of December, 1915. Had the bold Russian Commander-in-Chief, General Alexeieff, been able to choose

his attacking point, he could have broken the German front as soon as the frost solidified the marshground The German centre especially was very weak, and as the Russian gunners had some millions of shells for immediate use, they could have equalled the hurricane fire effect of Mackensen's Phalanx. But the need of bringing pressure to bear on Bulgaria and helping Rumania to retain her freedom of action, and assisting the stricken Serbians in Albania, compelled the Russian commander to attack the enemy on his right wing. In other words, General Ivanoff received the new army as a reinforcement, with orders to begin a strong offensive movement against the German and Austrian troops on the Styr and Strypa. The movement developed on December 30th, 1915, and its immediate effect was to bring Mackensen in haste from Serbia, check the Austro-German-Bulgarian attack upon the Franco-British camp at Salonika, and

was recognised as having saved Russia from overwhelming defeat. The importance of the Caucasus front could not be over-estimated, and only a large army led by a cool and far-seeing commander could prevent the Turco-Teutons from swooping down on Persia and making this country a base for operations against India.

relieve the pressure upon the Serbian and Italian troops So desperately hard pressed were the Teutons in Albania. that they had not sufficient men to resist the Russians, and a Bulgarian force of 30,000 men had to be brought into Bukovina to strengthen the defence. Some of the Bulgarians, dressed in Austrian uniforms, were captured, and they readily revealed all the facts of the situation—with which they naturally were not pleased.

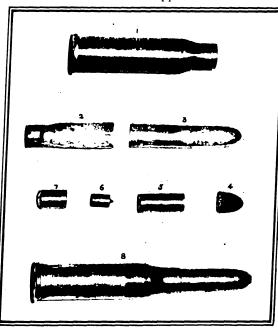
Such were some of the immediate results. But the mere

appearance on the battlefield of the great new Russian

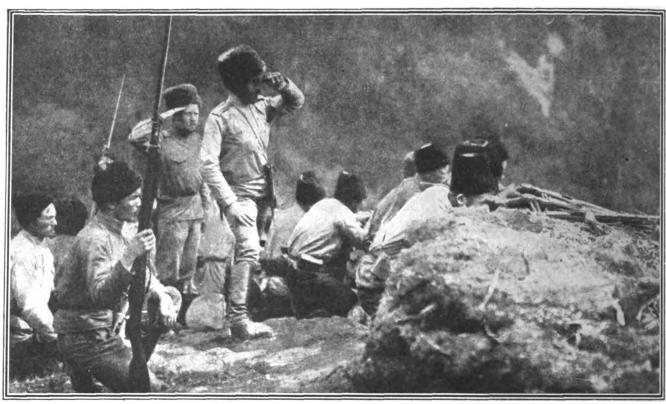
army, that fired heavy shell continuously for twenty-four hours. was an event of mighty import. By an effort of recuperation unequalled in the history of her struggles against Mongols, Swedes, Prussians, and the Grand Army of Napoleon, Russia had, three months after the battles in the Vilna salient, shown herself capable of striking harder than she had ever done before. Reckoning from the date of the appearance of Mackensen's Phalanx at Gorlice, it had only taken Russia eight months to organise an artillery power as formidable as that of the enemy, and to create a new army as large as that which had been lost. And all this had been done while the Teutons were hammering their way through the frontier fortresses, capturing province after province, and straining the Russian power of resistance

to breaking-point.

Moreover, while engaged on the double task of holding back the enemy from the Riga-Rovna railway line, and building up a



USED CONTRARY TO THE LAWS OF WAR.
Cartridge found on Austrian soldier.—I. Brass case. 2. Case
for explosive bullet. 3. Lead lining. 4. Lead bullet at head
of cartridge. 5. Cylinder containing explosives. 6. Pin which
strikes cap attached to cylinder. 7. Cylinders in which the
pin is placed. 8. Cartridge complete.



DEATH'S EYRIE AMONG THE PEAKS OF THE CAUCASUS.

"Eagle's Nest" is a peak 5,000 feet high in the Caucasus, where Russian sharpshooters were posted to pick off the enemy. Every man was a crack shot, and the place was a veritable eyrie whence Death swooped down upon the foes of Russia.

new army and a gigantic siege train, Russia—colossal Russia—had sufficient strength left over to extend her armed forces into Persia and prevent the Turks, Germans, and Swedish police-officers from conquering the country and making it a base for operations against India and our Persian Gulf possessions. The help we rendered Russia by our submarine flotillas in the Baltic was repaid by the aid which the Russian Army of the Caucasus rendered us in Persia. About the middle of December one Russian column, after breaking the Swedish-officered gendarmerie

and the German mercenaries at Bulak, captured Hamadan on the road between Teheran and Bagdad. Soon afterwards another Russian column carried the still

more important enemy centre of Kum, situate half-way between Hamadan and Ispahan. If our Indian Expeditionary Force in Mesopotamia had been as strong as the occasion required, the combined operations of the outlying forces of the Russian and British Empires could have struck such a blow against the eastern flank of the Ottoman Power as would have broken the prestige of Turkey in the Mohammedan world. As it was, the Army of the Caucasus, under its new commander the Grand Duke Nicholas, carried out its work in Northern Persia, and prevented another country from being flung into the German fighting-line. This greatly helped to relieve the perilous situation of our forces on the Tigris, though it could not lessen the high prestige which the Turks had won in Gallipoli and in the battle for Bagdad.

The Persian campaign developed with great rapidity until the victorious Russian force and the sorely struggling British columns on the Tigris were only separated by a fortnight's march. The intervening distance was nearly two hundred miles, but the track ran through difficult mountainous country, where Kurds and other hostile tribesmen could hold up an army. The Turks, however, were much alarmed by the narrowing gap between the British and Russian columns, and in the first week of January, 1916, strong forces were collected in the Caucasian region, and marched over the Persian frontier, with a view to beating back the Russian expeditionary force. At the same time a band of Persian freebooters, numbering a thousand men under Khan Kassandan, swept down to

the shore of the Caspian Sea and ravaged a couple of towns there, and tried to cut the line of communications with the Russian column. But the Russian commander flung out detachments on his menaced rear. In parties of about three hundred men, the men covering the line of supplies toiled over snow-covered mountains, and by a remarkable little piece of accurately-timed strategy surrounded the band on all sides, and destroyed it.

This defeat made the Turkish commander yet more anxious to deliver, at all costs, a staggering blow against the Russian expeditionary force in Persia. By still further strengthening the army he had sent over the frontier, he succeeded in pushing the Cossack vanguard back and occupying the town of Kermanshah. The main body of the Russian expeditionary force was then at Kangavar, on the way to Kermanshah, and it looked as though the Turks, having effected a junction with the rebellious Persian police and their Swedish and German officers, would be able to cause grave trouble in Persia. Kermanshah stood on a mountain fifty miles from Kangavar, and a hundred and sixty miles from Bagdad. It was one of the frontier arsenals of Persia, with a considerable store of ammunition and an important garrison of regular troops. and since the autumn of 1915 the Germans had been in control of it. With the Russians held up strongly in front of Kermanshah, and the British still more violently thrown back from Bag- Why the Grand Duke

more violently thrown back from Bag- Why the Grand Duke dad, the position of the Allies seemed went south very gloomy.

The man who had designed this seemingly wild venture of snatching Persia and Mesopotamia from the Ottoman by means of two small columns that could not meet was the Grand Duke Nicholas. After conducting with success the retreat of the Russian armies from Galicia, Poland, and Lithuania, the Grand Duke had apparently retired under a cloud from the command on the Eastern Front, his disgrace being, it seemed to some critics, merely mitigated in consideration of his Royal birth and undoubted personal merit, by his appointment to the command-inchief in the Caucasus, where only routine defensive work was required.

This was the common superficial view taken of the affair. But the truth of the matter was far different. During the

extraordinary battle in the Warsaw salient Russia had discovered that in the son of one of her non-commissioned officers of the last generation she had a leader of great capacity, who had won slowly forward by success after success during the Manchurian campaign and the European War. This officer of humble origin was General Alexeieff, and his successful stand against overwhelming odds along the Bzura, along the Narew, and at Vilna proved him to be a man of daring and coolness. The Grand Duke Nicholas, on the other hand, appeared rather a man of talent. He was a cautious calculator and an experienced organiser, but he was supposed to have given some of his army commanders rather too free a hand. Alexeieff was reckoned to be bolder in action, as when he let Russia apparently dance on the edge of death at Vilna, in order that his assistants, Russky and Everts, might trap the over-confident Teuton. Alexeieff was also a firmer disciplinarian than the Grand Duke. There was more of the drill-sergeant in him, and by working over the Russian

Army battalion by battalion he removed Alexeieff to the all the weak links in a way that the Grand Duke, who trusted largely to his Staff, had not done. fore

But the Grand Duke, with all the defects of his aristocratic temperament, was a master of war, and he was given the command of the Caucasian front because a fine intellect was urgently needed there. About the time that the Russian armies escaped from the enveloping movements of Mackensen and Hindenburg, the Franco-British expedition to the Dardanelles suffered a complete and decisive defeat. This led Ferdinand of Bulgaria to conclude that the day had come for him to assist the Germans, Austrians, and Turks, in order that he might share fully in the spoils of

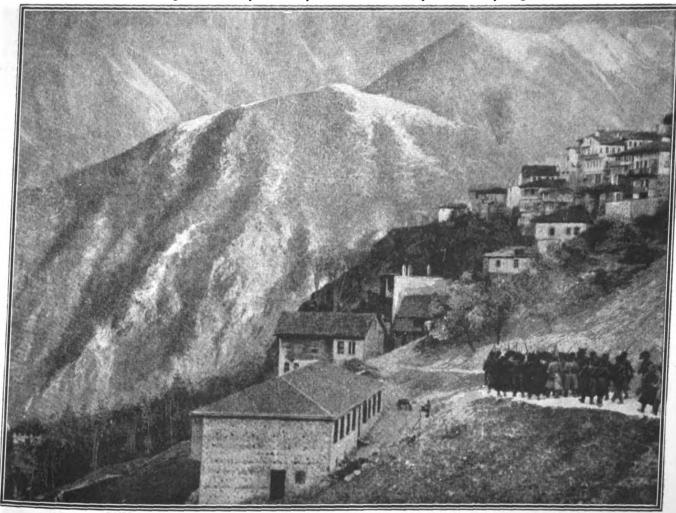
victory. It could be foreseen that, with railway communications restored between the Ottoman and Teutonic empires, guns, shells, and other munitions of war would rapidly be poured into Turkey. One result of this would be that newly-armed Turkish levies would largely strengthen the existing armies, and these armies would have an increased artillery power. The Caucasian front would become, in the spring of Importance of the

1916, one of the principal theatres of

war; for the German Staff would arrange for the main striking force of Turkey to be hurled against the Caucasian line, with a view to distracting large Russian forces from the European field of conflict.

So important, therefore, was the Caucasian front that if the Grand Duke had not gone there Alexeieff would have been sent. The Grand Duke was at last on his mettle. When he had taken over the commandership of all the Russian armies there had been no general of any genius in his nation against whom he could measure himself, for all the generals then rested under the dark cloud of the Manchurian campaign, in which Kuropatkin, by aimless vacillation, had prevented his subordinate commanders from showing the best that was in them. But in the European War, thanks in large measure to the Grand Duke Nicholas' sound and steady leadership, Russia had produced a fair number of competent leaders.

The Grand Duke then received the impetus which comes of contact with other fine minds, and the result was that he came to the Caucasus in a mood of daring as great as that of Alexeieff. Many of his former successes were not of his design. The first smashing Galician campaign had been worked out by Russky, and it was Russky who chiefly engineered, with the assistance



RUSSIAN ADVANCE GUARD ENTERING A TURKISH VILLAGE IN THE CAUCASUS. Though the Russian Army of the Caucasus was very silent for months it was by no means idle. At the end of August, 1915, it fought a series of small engagements, in which 2,000 Turks were killed, took 5,000 prisoners, and captured a number of guns.

of Ivanoff, the destruction of a large part of the Austro-Hungarian first-line armies. It was also Russky who had trapped Mackensen near Lodz, and had it not been for the recurring illness of this great Russian strategist he would probably have won the supreme position that Alexeieff gained.

However, in the Caucasus the Grand Duke at last had a clear field for displaying his personal powers of mind. And we think it will be generally admitted that he showed a combination of subtlety and strength such as Russky and Alexeieff only equalled. In order to take the Turk completely by surprise, he chose the apparently impossible season of midwinter for his swoop across the grim, frozen, snow-mantled heights. The physical strain he thus put upon his men was terrible, but he mitigated it by procuring strong reinforcements from Western Siberia and Manchuria—regions where men were hardened and toughened by a very rigorous winter climate.

Opposed to him was a Turkish army of about a quarter of a million men, based on Erzerum, the capital of Turkish Armenia. The Turkish entrenchments, dug under the

ditions of the parallel battle in the Caucasian Mountains were similar to those afterwards obtaining in the High Alps between the Italians and Austrians. Long and laborious engineering operations were needed to capture merely one useful observation peak, so that the line scarcely altered for a year. The former Russian commander extended his operations to Lake Van and the Persian frontier, seeking merely for easier ground

in which to engage the enemy. The Grand Britain and Russia Duke Nicholas' plan of sending a strong draw near careful to provide the company of the company o

expeditionary force into Persia seemed to be merely a continuation of this routine and almost mechanical extension of the fighting-line. But as it was combined with a British advance up the Tigris, the outlying Russian and British columns threatened a great turning movement against the Turkish forces entrenched in the Caucasian Mountains. The natural answer to this was to move a fairly considerable body of Turkish troops from the Caucasus front into Persia and this, we have seen, was done. Apparently Field-Marshal von der Goltz, supposed to be the grand modern master of strategy,

directed all the Turkish movements. He merely did what seemed to be the sound, sensible, ordinary thing, in weakening his mountain front, which was safely buried in snow, in order to check the eastern extension of the Russian and British lines towards

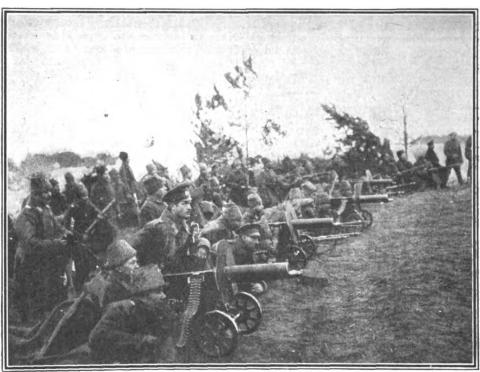
Bagdad.

He did, in fact, what the Grand Duke Nicholas calculated he would do, and on January 8th a little incident occurred on the Turkish Caucasian centre, near Tortum Lake, which seemed to be without significance. A party of Russian scouts dropped down from the snowy heights and threw the Turks out of the village, while a stronger force of Russians stormed the hamlet of Tev by the lakeside. The Russian commander sent up local reinforcements which met with unexpected resistance. Then, at other places along the fortified line, skirmishes of the same kind occurred. In all of them the Russians bombed and bayoneted their way into advanced posts from which they could not be expelled. The Grand Duke was testing the strength of the enemy's system of entrench-

of the enemy's system of entrenchments, and the result was so satisfactory that on January 17th, 1916, a general attack was delivered against sixty miles of the Turkish mountain line between Lake Tortum

and Chariansu River.

At several places the Russian troops had to climb over heights towering above the clouds, and dig trenches in the deep snow in blinding, freezing snowstorms. But the terrible severity of the weather amid the mountains was one of the contributing causes to the Russian victory. The Turks were completely overwhelmed in their fortified lines by the Russian attack, and they retreated in disorderly haste on their second positions along the Deve Bovun mountain range north of Erzerum. Then it was that the great physical powers of endurance of the Russian troops, and the masterly strategy of their Royal commander, told with full effect. The Turkish centre was broken, and the three army corps, entrenched on the mountains, were routed with great slaughter, and scarcely more than half the Turkish troops won to the shelter of the Erzerum forts, for the Cossacks got among the fugitives



STRONG ENOUGH TO HOLD AN ARMY AT BAY.

If one machine-gun could hold up a battalion, one can imagine the destructive power of a whole section of these deadly weapons. This illustration shows a squad of Russian machine-gunners in action on the Bessarabian front.

supervision of German engineers, stretched northward along the Deve Bovun range to Lake Tortum and eastward past Koprikeui. The former commander of the Russian Caucasian Army had attacked the Turks in November, 1914, near Tortum Lake, and had routed two Turkish divisions. But in December, 1914, Enver Pasha arrived at the head of the main fighting force of the Ottoman Empire, and, by an outflanking movement with superior numbers, drove the Russians over the frontier towards Kars. In very violent mountain fighting on Russian

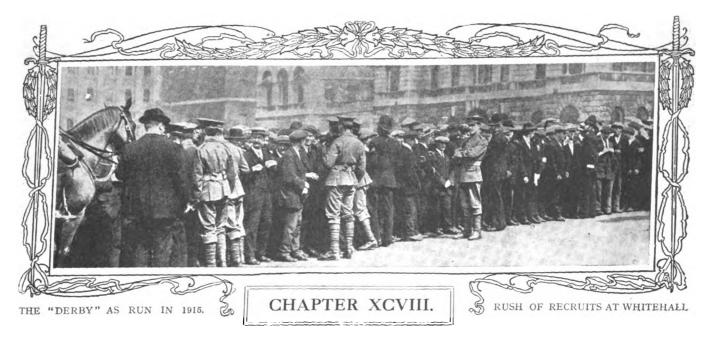
territory, between large bodies of troops.

Turks vanquished the Turks were again defeated and thrown back to their own land, and before Enver Pasha could again bring

all the Ottoman reserve forces to bear against Russia, our Dardanelles expedition relieved the pressure upon our ally.

The Turk then turned the Caucasian front into an affair

The Turk then turned the Caucasian front into an affair of siege warfare, and each side deeply entrenched on the mountain slopes and drew off many troops to participate in the more important operations in Europe. The con-



## THE DERBY RECRUITING CAMPAIGN.

The Splendid Initial Response of Britain's Finest Men—Thirty Thousand Men a Week Required—The Apparent Exhaustion of the Voluntary System—The Vain Calls for Fresh Men—The Hesitant Two Million—The Desire to be "Fetched"—Feeling in the Highlands and the North Country—Our Traditional Opposition to Conscription—The Feeling Among the Working Classes—The Ridicule of Lord Roberts—Mr. Asquith and Lord Kitchener Confer with Labour Representatives—Lord Kitchener's Guarantee of Victory—The Organisation of a Fresh Recruiting Campaign—Lord Derby to the Fore—A Summary of his Services—Lord Derby as an Advocate of National Service—The Recruiting Director's New Scheme—The National Register as the Basis of a Recruiting Canvass—Volunteering under the "Group System"—The Forty-six Groups—Lord Derby's Optimism—The One Weak Point in the Scheme: The Case of the Married Men—Mr. Asquith's Declaration of Policy—His Pledge to Married Men—Lord Derby's Official Statement—The Appeal from the King—Sir George Pragnell's Armlet Suggestion Adopted—Growing Resentment Against the "Slackers"—The Foolish "White Feather" Campaign—Women's Attitude to Unenlisted Men—District Directors of Recruiting—The Sudden Lapse of the "Boom"—Mr. Bonar Law Voices the Threat of Compulsion for Single Men—Lord Derby Reaffirms the Promise to Married Men—His Letter to Mr. Asquith—Local Tribunals Appointed with a Central Appeal Tribunal—Net Results of the Scheme Disappointing—The Appeal of the Joint Labour Committee—The Final Revival in Recruiting—Extending the Time Limit—Lord Derby's Significant Statement—The Thirty Opponents of National Service—The Anti-Conscriptionists' Suggested Way Out—Serious Dissension in the Cabinet—Sir John Simon's Opposition and Resignation—Lord Derby's Report—The Figures—The Introduction of the Military Service Bill—Those to be Exempted—The Premier's Clear Statement: "We Must Keep our Promiscs"—Sir John Simon States the Case Against the Bill—General Seely's Passionate Speech—Mr. Herbert Samuel's Reply to Sir John Simon's Facts and Figures—The D



Y the autumn of 1915 the question how to maintain a regular and sufficient supply of recruits was

causing great anxiety to the authorities. There had been a magnificent response to the appeals for volunteers. At the outbreak of the war hundreds of thousands of young men, the very pick of the nation, had flocked to the Colours, many of them before any public call for recruits was made. Elaborate advertising schemes promoted by the War Office had forced the question upon every man in the country. Recruiting meetings, recruiting marches, military displays, public lectures, and private canvasses had all been used on a scale and with a persistence never dreamed of before. And the response to these had been larger than even the warmest advocates of voluntaryism would have deemed possible in the days preceding

But if the response had been great, the requirements were still



THE CHIEF RECRUITER AND HIS ASSISTANT.

Lord Derby with General Sir Henry MacKinnon, who resigned
the Western Military Command at Chester in order to assist Lord
Derby in his recruiting campaign.

greater. The war was eating up men. At the Dardanelles alone close on 200,000 were, up to the autumn, killed, wounded, missing, or invalided. In infantry battalions Flanders, were losing an average of fifteen per cent. a month from one cause or another. At least 30,000 new men were required every week to make up "wastage." By September, 1915, the voluntary system had apparently almost exhausted itself. Meetings were redoubled. Posters and placards calling for volunteers were more abundant, more artistic, and more persuasive than ever. But the recruits now joined in mere driblets. Skeleton battalions, their ranks swept by war and disease, called vainly for fresh The fresh men did not men. come.

There were over two million single men of military age in the country who had not offered themselves for enlistment. There were many more married men, with family claims, who felt it unfair and unjust that they, with wives and children to support, should be called upon to



serve, while others, unmarried and having no one dependent on them, were going free. It was obvious that some among those who had not volunteered were engaged in necessary war work at home. But many had no good excuse; some said that they would not come until the Government fetched them. There were large districts, let it be said, where practically every man of military age had offered himself. This was particularly true in the Highlands of Scotland and in the North of England. The Government tried, by a more liberal scale of allowances to soldiers' wives and

tamilies, and by other means, to make it possible for men to come who had others dependent upon them. But it soon became clear that something more must be done.

In endeavouring to form a fair estimate of the attitude of the British people at this time, it must be remembered that the greater part of the nation was by tradition and instinct strongly opposed to conscription in any shape or form. It had been our boast for generations that ours was a voluntary Army. "One volunteer is worth three pressed men" was a favourite but ridiculous English adage. The Englishman was accustomed to compare the British volunteer soldier with the Continental conscript, very much in favour of the British volunteer. In the mind of the average Briton, voluntaryism was associated with freedom, and conscription with the system of State regulation of the lives of its citizens such as



SIEGE OF THE RECRUITING OFFICES IN OUTER LONDON. As the test period of Lord Derby's scheme drew near its end, volunteers besieged the recruiting offices. At Camberwell the waiting queue was dense, and at Southwark the men, who were in high spirits, as the upper photograph shows, cheered enthusiastically when they were admitted into the Town Hall.

Germany maintained. Among the working classes, in particular, the feeling against conscription was deep rooted. There was a belief that conscription, if it came, would be the rich man's dodge to make the poor man's son serve, and that conscription for the Army would be followed by conscription for labour purposes, forced work, low wages, and industrial servitude.

This prejudice was so strong that for years it stood fast against every attempt to move it. Hatred of conscription caused many Britons, with great short-sightedness, as events afterwards

proved, to shut their eyes to the German peril. Lord Roberts, the greatest soldier of modern times, realising the danger facing our country, gave up the last years of his life to organising, pleading, and writing on behalf of national service. He was sneered at, publicly rebuked by Cabinet Ministers, held up to scom by a section of the Press, and ridiculed as an old and ridiculed as an old man in his dotage. Papers like "The Times," the "Daily Mail," and the "Morning Post," supported him, and he won many fellowers but not mough to followers, but not enough to carry the country. What the pleadings of Lord Roberts and the warnings of the Press had failed to effect in the past, was now, however, being slowly accom-plished by the progress of



the system of State regulation of the lives of its citizens, such as "A SUNDAY MIDNIGHT SCENE AT A SOUTH LONDON RECRUITING DEPOT the lives of its citizens, such as "A SUNDAY MIDNIGHT SCENE AT A SOUTH LONDON RECRUITING DEPOT the whole twenty-four. This photograph was taken at midnight on Sunday in one depot in South London."

events. Mr. Asquith and the majority of the members of the Cabinet had always been avowed advocates of the voluntary system, but Mr. Asquith himself admitted, as the war went on, that if sufficient recruits could not be induced to volunteer, they must be brought in by other means. The safety and honour means.

of Great Britain came first.
At the end of September the Prime Minister and Lord Kitchener met a representative group of Labour leaders in conference. Lord Kitchener clearly put the facts before them. Men, many more men, must be secured

for the Army, Navy, and munition work. Would the Labour organisations throw all their energy into the work of securing these men? There can be little doubt but that Lord Kitchener, backed by Mr. Asquith, solemnly warned the Labour leaders that if the recruits were not had by voluntary means, compulsion must follow. Mr. Will Thorne, M.P., told afterwards how Lord Kitchener said that if he could have account. if he could have seventy divisions—about 1,500,000 men—in the field, between then and the next spring, he would guarantee victory. He staked his honour upon it. A discussion followed, in which the Premier was told that voluntary recruiting would be more suc-cessful if the Government





CONFIRMATION

Above: Recruits at Southwark Town Hall taking the oath on attestation under the Derby Scheme. Below: A recruiting officer at Hammersmith Town Hall distributing the official khaki armlets to already accepted men in confirmation of their enlistment.

DELIBERATION BEFORE ALLOCATION.

When the Derby Groups were called up the men were allowed to choose the regiment to which they preferred to be allotted. Sergeants from many regiments attended to help them in their choice, and were eager to secure the finest men for their own battalions.

would frankly state actual requirements and the number of men who had come forward. Some speakers declared that many more men would volunteer but for the attitude of the employers. In the end, the conference pledged itself to do its utmost, and it set about organising a big campaign. This campaign was to include meetings of the workers throughout the land, the preparation and distribution of special recruiting literature, and the sending of deputations to Trades Councils and other

influential Labour organisations to explain the needs of the country and to e their co-operation in secure meeting them.

A big recruiting rally was held throughout the country on the first Saturday in October, with marches of troops and special meetings everywhere. The rally was very successful, despite rain. But people were now coming to see that spasmodic efforts could scarcely ensure the regular inflow

of men necessary.

A new and very important step forward was made on October 5th, when Lord Derby undertook, at the request of the Secretary of State for War, the direction of recruiting for the Army. Lord Derby had already done great public service. Head of the house of Stanley, and the leading territorial magnate in Lancashire, he was above all things a Lancashire man-blunt of speech, a hard worker, shrewd and genial, a good sportsman, and a born leader. As a young man he joined the Grenadier Guards, and served for some time



A GLAD SIGHT FOR MEN JUST HOME FROM THE FRONT.

Men home on leave reading the proclamation calling up the Derby
Groups. Above: Sir Pieter Stewart-Bam appealing for fighting men
from the Nelson Column, Trafalgar Square.

as aide-de-camp to the Governor-General of Canada. In the South African War he was at first chief Press Censor, and then private secretary to Lord Roberts. Returning to England, he became Financial Secretary to the War Office and Postmaster-General. He threw himself into the life of Lancashire, and won the confidence and goodwill of Lancashire men-men who pride themselves on being the hardest headed and "canniest" in England. In a county noted for its great business he became a leading business organiser, director of a prominent newspaper, foremost in all public duties, trusted and followed by all who knew him. Lancashire thought of Lord Derby not so much as the earl of ancient lineage and owner of some 70,000 acres, but as a man among men, who talked in its own speech, who knew its ways, and who was equally good at a

directors' board table, on the race-course or hunting field, or in some great department of philanthropic work.

When the news that Lord Derby had taken over the direction of recruiting was published, Lancashire chuckled. "Now," it said, "London will see what can be done." You of the South of England do not know Lord Derby as we of the North," said one writer at the time. "It is true that he has been Financial Secretary of

the War Office, Postmaster-General, and a Member of the House of Commons. Such achievements, however, indicate but

little. The seventeenth Earl of Derby has the same courage as had the first earl who took part in the Battle of Bosworth, in 1485. He is a strongly-built, red-faced, John Bull Englishman. He is hail-fellow-well-met with everyone, has a complete absence of 'side,' and has great knowledge of men and things. We who have stood by him in many

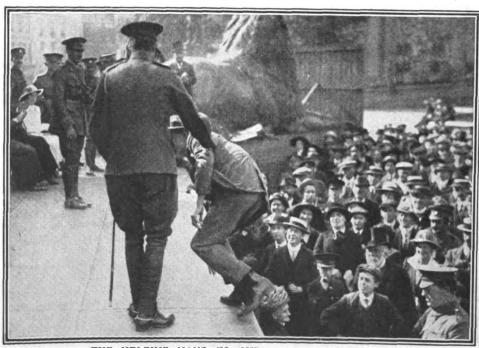
We who have stood by him in many arduous periods of his career know that he will not flinch from the task. We know that he will throw his unbounded enthusiasm and genius for organising into the work. We know that he will inspire the canvassers in their unpleasant rounds, and that just as he has sacrificed every moment of leisure and peace at his palace at Knowsley since the war began, so he will work, from morning till night, writing, speaking, travelling, and inspiring."

A John Bull

Englishman

and inspiring."

Political opponents joined with others in praising him. Thus Mr. T. P. O'Connor, the well-known journalist, himself M.P. for a Liverpool constituency and on the opposite side in politics, described him as good-humoured, rough-and-ready, brusque-spoken, genial. "For the work of recruiting this was the ideal man; for he knows his crowd without study, by sheer instinct, by the roots of his being. He is an Englishman with the Englishman's infallible instinct for taking the common-sense view; he is an



THE HELPING HAND TO THE NEOPHYTE SOLDIER.

An assiduous sergeant who was one of the most successful recruiters. Helping the men whom he secured on to the plinth, he swore them in, and had them into khaki at once, to show the improvement uniform made in the wearer. The effect was electrical.



NAVAL RECRUITING MARCH IN THE METROPOLIS.

Men of the Royal Naval Division marching through London, under Commander the Hon. Rupert Guinness, to be reviewed by the Lord Mayor, who by virtue of his office was the Admiral of the Port of London.

aristocrat who thinks like the people and with the people. Like the people, his heart comes straight and authentically from the soil of his great and proud country. His was the voice of voices to reach the nation at the moment of the nation's direst need. He can best appeal to men in the language they understand for all the sacrifices of personal interest, of sweet affections, of ease of limb, of life for the good old country that gave them and him the heritage of her glory, her power, her history, her freedom."

Lord Derby was himself a believer in national service.

but since the beginning of the war he had sunk his personal

Lord Derby on make the vol had led rec

preference and worked strenuously to make the voluntary system a success. He had led recruiting in Lancashire with much originality and marked success. He

referred to his appointment at a meeting at Waterfoot, Rossendale, on October 5th. He told how, ten days before, he had asked two questions of the Government—whether it had decided on the number of men it had to put in the field; and whether, having decided that, were it prepared, if it could not get enough men by voluntary means, to employ other means? "I had the question answered in a rather peculiar way," he continued. "Lord Kitchener has asked me to become director of all recruiting throughout the United Kingdom. I have accepted out of personal loyalty and friendship to Lord Kitchener. It is not a position to be envied. I feel something in the position of a receiver who is put in to wind up a bankrupt concern; but I hope I shall be able to do it with such satisfaction as will enable the creditors to receive their 20s. in the pound. I myself am an advocate of national service, but I do not think that even those who have been my most bitter

REFLECT—AND BE A MEMBER OF THE "KING'S NAVEE."
Among the many ingenious devices resorted to to convince the hesitant cligible of his country's needs was the one illustrated in the above photograph. The blackboard was placed outside the Royal Naval Division office in the Strand. A curious and likely recruit, reading the notice, would see himself reflected in the mirror, whereupon the businesslike-looking handy-man would help him to make up his mind.

adversaries will deny that I have done my level best to make the voluntary system a success. I have done all I possibly could to get men under the voluntary system."

The appointment of Lord Derby was quickly followed by radical changes in the recruiting organisation. Ten days after his appointment, Lord Derby issued details of his new scheme. These details were elaborated in a notable speech at the Mansion House on October 19th. Every recruiting organisation at work was to be employed, the Parliamentary Recruiting Committees taking prominent place for a grand canvass of unenlisted men of military age. Their work was to be systematised and thoroughly co-ordinated. The National Register, which had been taken some weeks before, was to be used as a basis for this canvass. Civilians were to be asked to volunteer under a group system.



THE HISTORIC SCENE IN THE HOUSE OF COMMONS WHEN Parliament in the interests of national salvation—the Military Service Bill passing its third reading in the Commons. By 383 votes against 36 the meetre became law. At the first reading a total of 105, including Irish Nationalists, voted against the Isill, but during the second and third reading the

Digitized by Google

There would be forty-six groups -twenty-three for single men and twenty-three for married menarranged according to age. single men who volunteered would be called up for service in the order of their groups; the men in the twenties being used in their order before the men in the thirties were called upon. The married men would not be asked to serve until the lists of single men were exhausted. Those who wanted to join the Colours at once could do so. The others, after joining their groups, would go back to their ordinary voca-tions until wanted. "Starred" men-i.e., men working at trades such as munition production, necessary for the war-and unstarred men found indispensable in their employments would be sent back at once to their employments after attestation, if necessary. But Lord Derby clearly intimated that even in "starred" trades there might be men who could be liberated from their employment. He evidently had in view the developments of women's labour

in munition work, which were to be so marked a feature of the industrial development of Britain in 1916.

"There are people who seem despondent about the spirit of the country," he said, at the close of his speech at the Mansion House. "I am not. I believe the heart of the country is right. Only the heart of the country

Attitude of the Press is right. Only the heart of the country has got to be touched. I believe we can do it. I believe that if men can only realise now, by their individual effort, they

are going to secure for their children, and their children's children, a lasting and enduring peace, they will be prepared to make some sacrifice, or even any sacrifice. I believe implicitly that if we can get the country at the back of us now, we are going, even at this eleventh hour,



FIRST STARTERS IN THE DERBY VOLUNTEERS' FINAL.

Armleteers studying the proclamation pasted up outside the Mansion House calling the first four Derby Groups to the Colours.

to make the voluntary system an unqualified success." Lord Derby's proposals were received with a chorus of approval. The section of the Press which defended voluntaryism was naturally pleased, because it realised that here was a possibility of saving its position. But those newspapers which upheld national service were also perfectly loyal, and declared they would do everything possible to forward Lord Derby's plans. They kept their promise. During the weeks of the canvass they gave the scheme the utmost publicity and the warmest advocacy. "The new recruiting campaign starts under the most favourable auspices, and without the slightest sign of opposition," "The Times" declared. "Everybody wishes it well, and Lord Derby has a host of eager helpers."

wishes it well, and Lord Derby has a host of eager helpers."
The "Daily Mail," which had good reason to be pleased that the plan of "single men first," for which it had fought for many months, was now officially adopted, pledged itself to cooperate. "We wish Lord Derby every success in his scheme," it wrote, "and so far as the 'Daily Mail' is concerned, we will support it most strongly now it is a case of 'single men first.' We hope that our readers will give it every assistance in their power. It is not the first time that the 'Daily Mail,' though believing firmly in the justice and necessity of national service, has put forth all its efforts in the cause of the voluntary system"

voluntary system."

While the substitution of a direct canvass for the old haphazard system was widely praised one weak point was at once pointed out in the scheme. If large numbers of married men volunteered and comparatively few single men, the married men



INSPECTING THE PAPERS OF PROSPECTIVE SOLDIERS.

Derby men handing in their armlets at the White City Central Depot in exchange for a full uniform.



FACSIMILE OF BRITAIN'S "CASUS BELLI."

might be called upon before they ought to be, despite the promise of "single men first." Thus we might still see young "slackers" walking about the streets, while married men with families were taking upon themselves the responsibilities of the firing line. This

themselves the responsibilities of the firing-line. point was brought before Lord Derby by the Town Clerk of Chiswick. Lord Derby's reply was: "It is clear that if sufficient young single men do not enlist under the scheme, some other steps must be taken to fetch them. This would occur before the married men are taken."

People, however, asked something more than a general statement from the Director of Recruiting. It was felt that the Prime Minister himself ought to make a definite and unmistakable declaration of policy. Mr. Asquith did so in a notable speech in Parliament on November 2nd. He admitted that there had been differences of opinion in the Cabinet over the recruiting question. The question of compulsion was one of practical expediency. He admitted that our system of voluntary recruiting operated in time of war in a haphazard, capricious, and somewhat

unjust way both as regard individuals and classes. His objection to the introduction of compulsion was that under existing conditions it would forfeit the maintenance of national unity. If it were applied without something in the nature of general assent, the nation would be disunited. He believed that the result of Lord Derby's recruiting scheme would be wholly satisfactory. "But," he said, "if there should still be found a substantial number of men of military age not required for other purposes, who without excuse hold back from the service of their country, I believe that the very same conditions which make compulsion impossible now—namely, the absence of general consent—would force the country to the view that it must consent to supplement, by some form of legal obligation, the failure of the voluntary system."

Then he went on to refer to the doubt among married men whether they might not be called upon to serve, if they joined their group while younger, unmarried men were holding back and not doing their duty. "Let them disabuse themselves of that idea," declared the Premier, in a statement that affected the whole future history of Britain. "So far as I am concerned,

I should certainly say the obligation of the married man to enlist ought not to be enforced, or binding upon him, un-

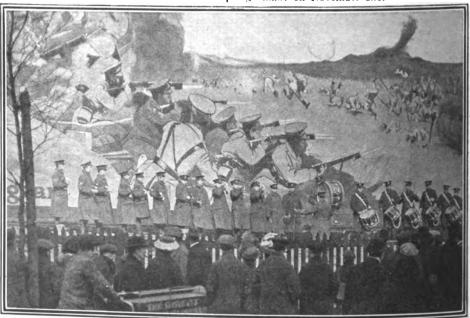
to be enforced, or binding upon him, unloss and until—I hope by voluntary effort, and if not by some other means—the unmarried men are dealt with first."

Even this declaration did not suffice. Married men when canvassed said that the Premier had merely given an expression of personal opinion. They wanted more than that. Nine days afterwards, on November 11th, 1915, an official statement was circulated to the Press which placed the matter beyond doubt:

Lord Derby is authorised by the Prime Minister to express his surprise that his statement in the House of Commons on November 2nd should be considered in any way ambiguous.

The Prime Minister on that occasion pledged not only himself but his Government when he stated that if young men did not, under the stress of national duty, come forward voluntarily, other and compulsory means would be taken before the married men were called upon to fulfil their engagement to serve.

Lord Derby is further authorised to state definitely that if young men medically fit and not indispensable to any business of national importance, or to any business conducted for the general good of the community, do not come forward voluntarily before November 30th, the Government will after that date take the necessary steps to redeem the pledge made on November 2nd.



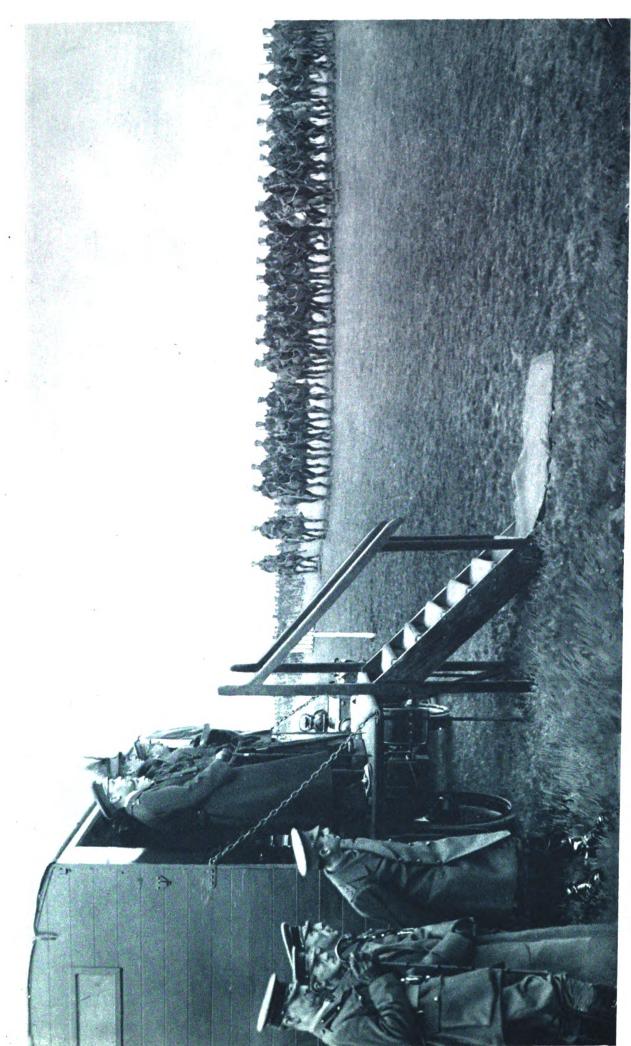
The monster poster erected in Aldwych, Strand, London, in front of which a recruiting band is giving a patriotic selection.

"I rejoice in my Empire's effort."—His Majesty King George.

AAA 405



Pied Pipers of London Town: How the wild music of the Highlands helped to swell the ranks of Britain's fighting men.



The Queen with Princess Mary and Prince Albert watching the march-past of Irish cavalry at Aldershot.

407



The moment of farewell: A touching scene at Victoria Station during war time.



Home on leave: After the arrival of the trench "special" at a London terminus.

The new scheme was further supported by a direct appeal from the King to the people of Great Britain:

Buckingham Palace. TO MY PEOPLE.

At this grave moment in the struggle between my people and a highly-organised enemy, who has transgressed the laws of nations and changed the ordinance that binds civilised Europe together, I appeal to you.

I rejoice in my Empire's effort, and I feel pride in the voluntary response from my subjects all over the world who have sacrificed home, fortune, and life itself, in order that another may not inherit the free Empire which their ancestors and mine have built.

I ask you to make good these sacrifices.

The end is not in sight. More men and yet more are wanted to keep my armies in the field, and through them to secure victory and enduring peace.

In ancient days the darkest moment has ever produced in men of our race the sternest resolve.

I ask you, men of all classes, to come forward voluntarily, and take your share in the fight.

In freely responding to my appeal you will be giving your support to our brothers who, for long months, have nobly upheld Britain's past traditions and the glory of her arms.

GEORGE R.I.

Lord Derby and his assistants felt that their campaign would be greatly helped by intro-

ducing some badge that would openly and publicly mark off the volunteer from the "slacker." This was provided by the adoption of an idea advanced some months before by Sir George Pragnell—the issue of armlets to all men who offered themselves for enlistment in the groups, and to other qualified persons. khaki armlet was undoubtedly a dramatic stroke. The difficulty at first was that in some cities, particularly in London, young men did not care to wear their badges. They were driven to it more and more by public opinion, and by an appeal from the King.

An enormous mass of feeling in favour of military service had been gathering force in this country during the summer of 1915. Sometimes it found crude and foolish expression, as in "white feather" campaigns, when irresponsible young won in the attracts with young men in the streets with cowardice. But essentially the

feeling was sound. The young man out of khaki or without his armlet soon found himself in a painful position. Young women formed leagues, pledging themselves not to marry any man who had shirked his duty of enlisting. Mothers who had lost their sons, wives who had lost their husbands, would stop young civilians in the streets, or turn to them in omnibuses, and demand why they were not doing their duty.

and demand why they were not doing their duty. "I've lost my son and my husband in this war," said one lady in an omnibus, where three young civilians were sitting. "I am proud of them, and would not have Public opinion kept them back; but I am ashamed when I see young fellows like you, as fit as they were, lolling in London and enjoying yourselves in place of doing your duty, and I hope you are ashamed of yourselves." This was the kind of talk which met the "slacker" at every turn

of talk which met the "slacker" at every turn.

The new canvass was launched on October 25th, and was to last for six weeks. Leading men in different parts of the country accepted the posts of directors of recruiting for their districts. Thus, for instance, Lord Wimborne, the Lord-Lieutenant, undertook the duties of director-

general of recruiting for Ireland. The machinery of political organisations was enlisted. Liberal and Unionist canvassers joined together, and people volunteered by the thousand to do the necessary work of canvassing without pay. The campaign began with a unanimity rarely witnessed in Britain. Every newspaper gave it day by day the leading place in its pages and urged its importance in its editorial columns. "The

Times" published a special recruiting supplement. Municipal authorities gave Extension of the time limit up their public buildings to the workers.

Every house in which a man of military age lived had to be visited and the man invited to join the Army. If he refused he had to be asked his reasons for refusing. The local Parliamentary Recruiting Committee responsible for the canvass in each district was at work often day and night, meeting difficulties, solving problems, and pushing on the campaign. The nation as a whole quickly came to learn that Lancashire's opinion of Lord Derby was right. He was an ideal man for the post, prompt in business, ready to face difficulties, frank and willing.

The campaign had its ups and downs. It was launched

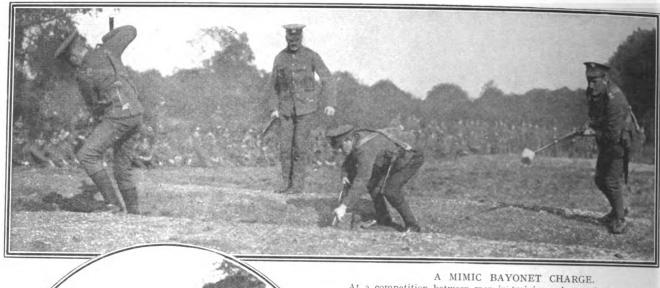


EVOLUTION OF THE ANCIENT CATAPULT.

white feathers, the symbol of Machines for hurling bombs that worked on the principle of the catapult. This photograph was taken at a "school" for grenade-throwing at a training centre in England.

by what seemed to be a great boom, but that did not yield so many men as expected. All classes joined—civil servants, schoolmasters, many ministers of religion, and business men galore. In some cases the entire staff of a business house went and attested in a body. It seemed as though the great wave of enthusiasm would sweep every eligible man in. Then the boom suddenly exhausted itself. A statement made by Mr. Asquith in the House on November 15th—that no attempt would be made to apply compulsion in any shape or form without the consent of Parliament-was used in some quarters against the campaign. An attempt was quickly made to remedy this, and Mr. Asquith repeated and emphasised his earlier pledge to the married men. "What the Prime Minister meant," said Mr. Bonar Law, speaking for the Government, "and what we mean, was not if they do not come in, but if there is a general shirking of their duties then they will be made to come in before the men with wives and families.

The effect of the misunderstanding was, however, unfortunate, and for a week or two things looked very bad. The time limit for the canvass was extended to December



A WARLIKE SCENE IN RURAL ENGLAND. Machine-gunners defending a bridge in a village where men of the New Army were in training.



TRAINING FOR TRENCH WARFARE. Practising rudimentary bayonet work. Charging the trenches, the men endeavoured to transfix scraps of card placed on sacks.

At a competition between men in training, where points were awarded for skill and speed in bayonet work by the Earl of Kerry, who acted as judge. The men were required to bayonet cards placed on sacks while

leaping across trenches.

11th, and Lord Derby, in speeches at Edinburgh and Glasgow, reaffirmed the promise to married men. "What more can I say to you on the subject," he asked, "except that as one who has been responsible for this scheme I should give you my own personal pledge? To the fullest extent in my power I will see that absolute faith is kept with these partied are the second of the seco with those married men who have joined under the assurance given. I am not a member of the Government. I am only a recruiting sergeant. I have no personal power, but I have behind me in this matter an overwhelming powerthe power of public feeling of the country. The country is long-suffering, and has stood a great many things, but it is not going to stand anything that would be like bad faith with those ready and willing to risk their lives for it."

On November 19th, in order to leave no room for misunderstanding whatever, Lord Derby wrote a letter to the Prime Minister, in which he clearly stated the position as he understood it:

> Derby House, Stratford Place, W. November 19th, 1915.

My dear Prime Minister,-As some uncertainty exists as to the effect of the various statements recently made in Parliament and the Press on the subject of recruiting, may I endeavour to put the position in a few words?

Married men are not to be called up until young unmarried men have been. If these young men do not come forward voluntarily, you will either release the married men from their pledge or introduce a Bill into Parliament to compel the young men to serve, which, if passed, would mean that the married men would be held to their enlistment. If, on the other hand, Parliament did not pass such a Bill, the married men would be automatically released from their engagement to serve. By the expression "young men coming forward to serve" I think it should be taken to mean that the vast majority of young men not engaged in munition work or work necessary for the country

men not engaged in munition work or work necessary for the country should ofter themselves for service, and men indispensable for civil employment and men who have personal reasons which are considered satisfactory by the local tribunals for relegation to a later class, can have their claims examined for such relegation in the way that her elegation be a later class.

way that has already been laid down.

It, after all these claims have been investigated and all the exemptions made mentioned above, there remains a considerable number of young men not engaged in these pursuits who could perfectly be spared for military service, they should be compelled to serve. On the other hand, if the number should prove to be, as I hope it will, a really negligible minority, there would be no question of legislation. of legislation.

Yours sincerely, DERBY.

The Prime Minister replied:

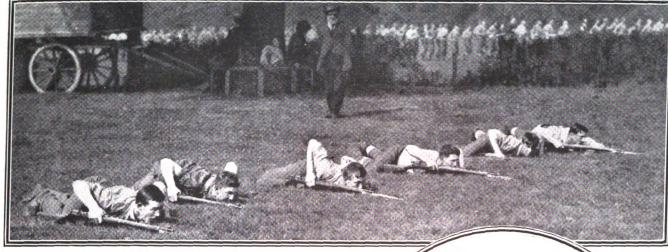
10, Downing Street, S.W. November 19th, 1915.

My dear Derby,—I have received your letter of to-day. It correctly represents the intentions of the Government.

Yours sincerely,

H. H. ASQUITH.

One of the urgent questions that arose during the canvass



CROUCHING PRELIMINARY TO AN ADVANCE.

Men of the 4th Batt. City of London Regiment (Royal Fusiliers) learning the rudiments of charging at a training camp. They are in the first position for advancing in extended order over open ground and under fire.

was how to decide which men were indispensable to the industries of the country, and which would serve the country better by enlisting in the Army. Lord Derby here laid down the cardinal principle that it was for the State, not for the employer, and not for the man himself, to say whether he was indispensable or not. It was the duty of the man to attest, and then to submit his case to the authorities. Local tribunals were appointed in which the various authorities interested were represented and these authorities were empowered to decide.

Besides local tribunals, a central appeal tribunal of five members was appointed. At the head was Lord Sydenham, a famous artillery officer and Army organiser; Sir George Younger, the second member, was a Scottish Unionist whip, and chairman of a well-known firm of brewers; other members were Sir Francis Gore, who was formerly solicitor to the Inland Revenue; Mr. Cyril Jackson, a prominent educationalist; and Mr. G. J. Talbot, K.C., a distinguished ecclesiastical lawyer.

On December 3rd, despite all that had been done, it was felt by those behind the scenes that the net results of the scheme had been very disappointing. Lord Derby and the

other leaders issued another appeal to all men of military age in the United Kingdom, pointing out to them once more that it was their duty to express their willing-

ness to serve their country in the field. If they had difficulties which made it hard for them to do so, impartial tribunals would weigh their arguments, and, if necessary, exempt them from immediate service. "Let him"—the available man—"join the Army under the Group System, and show his country that he puts her interests before his own, and show the world, the Allies, neutrals, and enemies alike, that there are hundreds and thousands of our citizens who are ready to fight for her." At the same time the Joint Labour Committee, which had been working hard among the working classes, issued its final appeal "to the free men of Britain to respond to the call of their country, and to enrol themselves at once in the great volunteer army which stands between us and the loss of our rights and liberties."

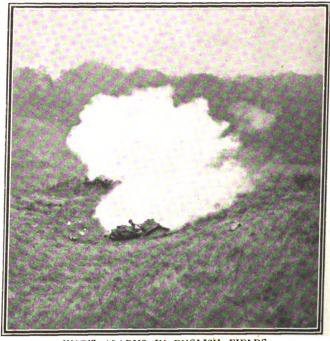
Churches backed up the messages. The Free Churches of North Wales issued a stirring manifesto calling on Nonconformists to fight for Christianity, and all that Christianity stands for. "If any war in the whole history of the world can be called a righteous war, this is it."

Four days before the end an amazing final "boom" began. The recruiting officers suddenly found themselves overwhelmed by thousands of men pouring in. From all parts of the country, from Great Scotland Yard to East Ham, and from Manchester to the South Coast, the news was



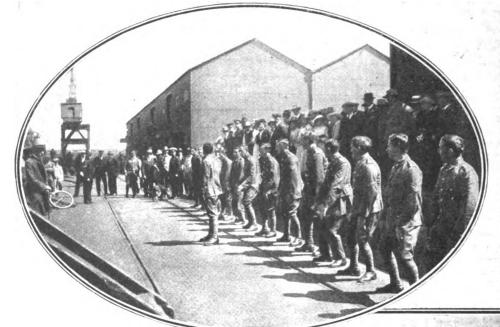
PUBLIC SCHOOL MEN IN TRAINING.

I.earning to hurl bombs from a small trench mortar—a necessary accomplishment in accordance with the exigencies of siege warfare.



WAR'S ALARMS IN ENGLISH FIELDS.

The explosion of a bomb fired from a small trench mortar by recruits of a Public Schools Battalion.



looked for. After a few days rumours began to be circulated that the total results were not quite so good as had been hoped. Very many men had joined—that much was certain—but a large number of these were married, and quite a considerable proportion of single men had not attested. Soon it became clear that there had been enormous numbers of single men "slackers." Under the terms of Mr. Asquith's pledge, the Government must either compel these men to serve or not call upon the married men who had attested.

On Wednesday, December 15th, Lord Derby made a significant statement in the House of Lords. He said that the first part of his report, dealing with the figures

ANZAC INTERLUDE AT CAPE TOWN.

Men from "down under" giving a Maori
war-dance display at Cape Town before
his Excellency the Governor-General of
South Africa.

the same. Long lines of men were waiting outside the doors of the recruiting offices to attest. In some cases the men had to wait for half a day before they could be seen to. In other cases the offices were kept open all night. It was not, however, really known how great this rush actually had been until Lord Derby published his report. Then it was shown that in these four days, from December 13th, a total of 1,070,478 men had attested.

In the last two days it became evident that it was impossible to make the medical examinations. The only way of coping with the rush was to swear the men in, take their names, pay them their

take their names, pay them their attestation money, 2s. 9d., and let them go away, and be examined more carefully later. In Manchester on Thursday evening the long corridor of the Town

evening the long corridor of the Town
Hall became so packed with men
that the police decided to close the
doors. In London bodies of young men
marched to the recruiting depôts singing, and concerts were
arranged for the crowds waiting their turn. Men in silk
hats and men in fustian, employers and clerks side by side,
lads not yet twenty and middle-aged men—fathers of
families—hustled one another to get in.

Despite the fact that it had been repeatedly stated that no further extension of the time would be made, the time had to be extended in the end. It was found impossible to take the names of all offering themselves before midnight on Saturday, so attestations were continued during Sunday, December 12th, and those whose names were taken on that day, who even then could not be attested, were allowed until the following Wednesday to offer themselves.

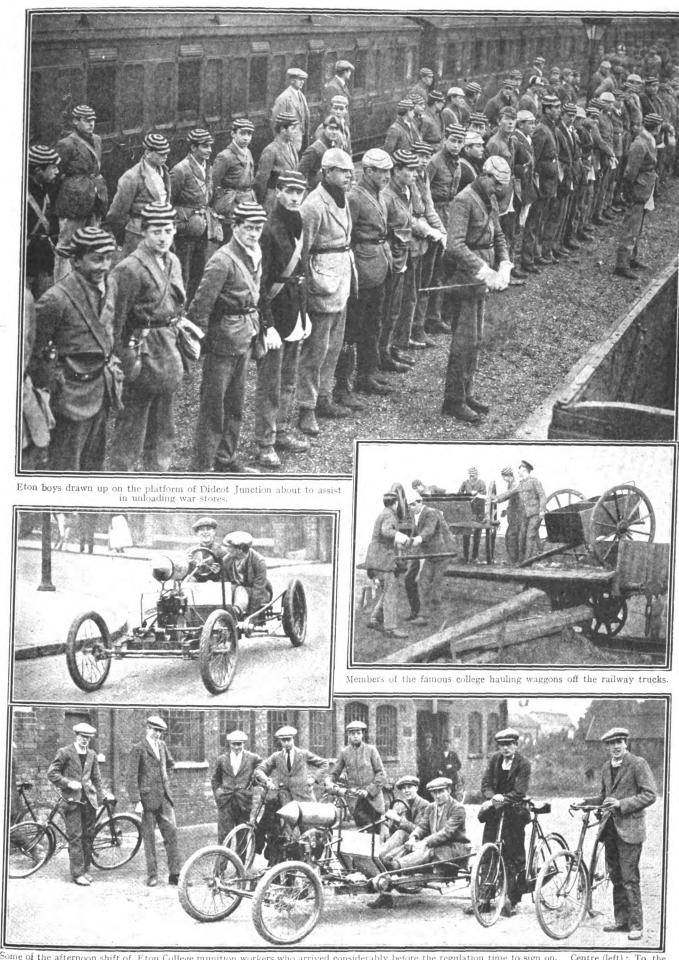
These dramatic and surprising closing scenes gave every encouragement to the advocates of the voluntary system. They proclaimed that conscription had been killed once and for all. Lord Derby's report was eagerly



WARRIORS FROM THE WEST INDIES.

The Lord Mayor of London inspecting a fine body of men from Trinidad drawn up before the Mansion House. His Worship is wearing the uniform of the National Guard.

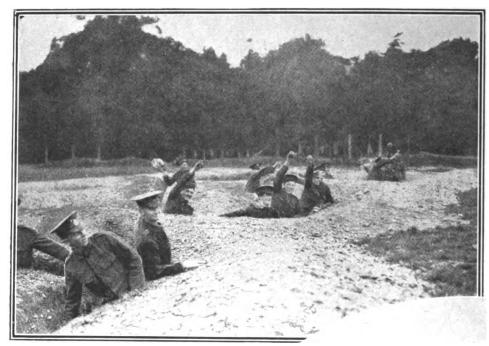
up to November 30th, had been submitted to Lord Kitchener and Mr. Asquith on the previous Sunday, but no judgment could be formed from it. Then Lord Derby added: "I ask your lordships to support me in saying that it will be absolutely impossible for any action to be taken which will necessitate the calling up of married men until the country is absolutely convinced that the single man has come forward to such an extent as to leave only a negligible quantity unaccounted for. We must, above all things, keep faith with the pledge the Prime Minister gave to the married men." The meaning of this was unmistakable. On the following day a group of some thirty resolute opponents of national service, led by Mr. J. H. Thomas, the railwaymen's Member of Parliament, requested the Prime Minister to receive them as a deputation on the subject of the compulsion of single men. The proceedings were private, but there can be little doubt about what the deputation asked. They were anxious to induce the Prime Minister to consent to a plan for yet another canvass of the single men who had refused to come in.



Some of the afternoon shift of Eton College munition workers who arrived considerably before the regulation time to sign on. Centre (left): To the munition works by car. Two Eton boys who made shells in their leisure hours at the local munition works going "to business."

"FIOREAT ETONA PRO DATRIA". MEMBERS OF THE EAMOUS COLLEGE WHO WERE UNDERIGIALLY

"FLOREAT ETONA PRO PATRIA": MEMBERS OF THE FAMOUS COLLEGE WHO WERE UNOFFICIALLY ENGAGED ON WAR WORK.



were satisfied he would keep it to the full. Some newspapers, however, and a few politicians urged that the Government and Parliament were not bound by the Prime Minister's pledge, but that it was merely a personal promise which the Cabinet could break or not as it saw fit. Sir John Simon, the Home Secretary, led the opposition to compulsion in the Cabinet, and two other Ministers, Mr. Runciman and Mr. McKenna, were understood to be strongly against it. They feared the effect of a further considerable increase of our forces upon our economic position and our production of wealth, which must be maintained for success in the war.

GETTING ACCUSTOMED TO THE DEADLY BOMB.

Some of the Sherwood Foresters getting their hands in at bomb-throwing, one of the most difficult and hazardous branches of scientific warfare.

The majority of the nation had by now made up their minds that if the Derby scheme did not succeed, compulsion for the succeed, compulsion for the slackers must come. Men of all classes, Labour leaders, Liberal Members of Parliament, religious teachers, who had for years consistently fought conscription, now declared that circumstances alter cases. They did not like conscription and they did not worth tion, and they did not want it, but better conscription than that Britain should lose the war. If the Government decided, with all

the Government decided, with all
the facts before it, that conscription was necessary,
they would submit. This was the loyal view of the
overwhelming majority. A small group, however, still
stood out, including some members of the Cabinet.
They asked, in the hope of delaying conscription,
that a measure should be passed
directing all single men who had not
attested to come before specially appointed tribunals and give the reasons

pointed tribunals and give the reasons why they did not join. If these reasons were satisfactory,

the man should be marked off. If, however, in the opinion of the tribunal the reasons were not satisfactory, the man's name should be recorded. The total of the unsatisfactory men should be ascertained, and if this total was considerable, then, and only then, should a measure of compulsion be passed for them.

During the end of December it was an open secret that a serious struggle was going on with the Cabinet between the compulsionists and the non-compulsionists. Lord Derby's final report was to hand, but the Premier had delayed giving it publicity.

It was known that Mr. Lloyd George had taken a firm stand in favour of compulsion, declaring that to create further tribunals would merely be to postpone the struggle over the question. It was known, too, that Lord Derby had insisted rigorously on the maintenance of the pledge given by him. The compulsionists announced their faith in the Prime Minister's pledge, and said they



TRAINING IN THE HOME COUNTIES.

Members of the 3rd/19th Batt. London Regiment taking cover in a trench preparatory to attacking the imaginary enemy with bombs.



A NERVE TEST FOR THE PHOTOGRAPHER. Officers undergoing instruction in the use of the rifle. To pass through a military college was only the beginning of an officer's training. Before proceeding on active service a rigorous course of drill, trench-digging, and other warlike duties, was imperative.

As 1916 opened it became clear that the voluntaryists were defeated. Sir John Simon resigned his position as Home Secretary, and Mr. McKenna and Mr. Runci-man fell in with the views of the rest of the Cabinet. On January 1st a whip was issued to members of the House of Commons stating that on the following Wednesday the Prime Minister would introduce a Bill dealing with military service. Between the Saturday and the Wednesday those opposed to conscription used every possible effort to coerce and persuade the Cabinet even at the eleventh hour. Vague threats were made of a general strike of labour should compulsion be attempted, and particularly of strikes of railwaymen and miners. The Irish





BOMB-THROWING FROM TRENCH TO TRENCH.

Bombers of the 3/19th Batt. London Regiment having presumably taken part of the enemy's first-line position, are hurling grenades preparatory to a further advance.

OFFICERS IN TRAINING FOR ACTIVE SERVICE LEARNING THE ART OF SIGNALLING.

DISLODGING THE IMAGINARY "BOCHE."

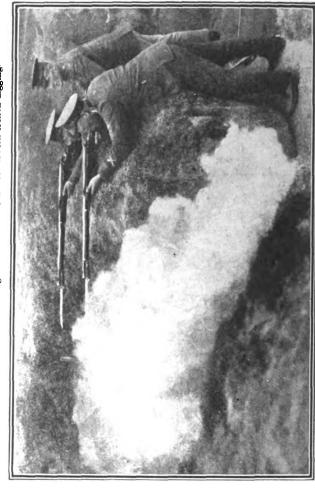
Men of the 3/5th Batt. London Regiment for home defence undergoing a course of instruction in bomb-throwing. An attacking party is proceeding along the trench. One of them has just hurled a harmless missile at the retreating figure in the foreground

Party, which had been from the first opposed to national service, was swayed by confident assurances from Sir John Simon's friends that at least 150 Radicals would oppose compulsion, and decided to aid them. "The first mutterings of a labour storm are coming from the country," wrote one political correspondent. Dismal pictures were drawn of the economic ruin that would follow a big increase of the Army. All these threats and forebodings failed, however, to affect the Cabinet.

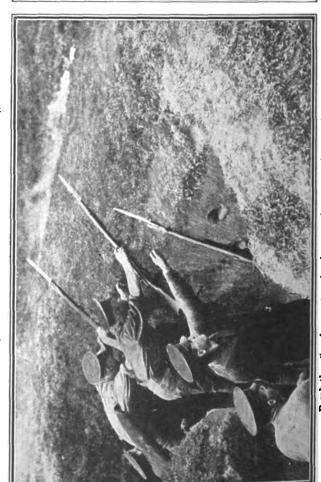
On Tuesday, January 4th, Lord Derby's report was made public. In it he gave a careful and luminous statement as to the whole recruiting problem, the difficulties raised by starred men, and the problems that often prevent single men as well as married men from offering themselves. But public interest fastened on the figures, which showed that over 1,000,000 single men of military age had not attested under the scheme, and that after allowing for those who were starred (or marked with a star as required for some indispensible post at home) there still remained unaccounted for 651,160. Following is a table of the figures:

	SINGLE.	MARRIED.	TOTAL.
Total Men 18 to 40	2,179,231	2,832,210	5,011,441
Went to Attest	1,150,000	1,679,263	2,829,263
Did Not Attest	1,029,231	1,152,947	2,182,178
Of these are Starred	378,071	465,683	843,754
Unaccounted for	651,160	687,264	1,338,424
Total Attested	840,000	1,344,979	2,184,979
Of these are Starred	312,067	449,808	761,875
Unstarred	527.933	895,171	1,423,104
and in reserved jobs	184,547	407.495	592,042
Actually Available	343,386	487,676	831,062









Bomb-throwing from a trench whence a charge was about to be made.

SONS OF THE EMPIRE TRAINING NEAR LAKE ONTARIO, CANADA, TO FIGHT FOR THE MOTHERLAND.

"This," said Lord Derby, referring to those who had not attested, "is far from being a negligible quantity, and in the circumstances I am very distinctly of opinion that in order to redeem the pledge mentioned above (the pledge to married men), it will not be possible to hold married men to their attestation unless and until the services of single men have been obtained by other means, the present system having failed to bring them to the Colours."

On the day after the publication of the report Mr. Asquith introduced the Military Service Bill into Parliament. This Bill applied only to England, Wales, and

Scotland (not Ireland), and affected
all single British men and widowers
without children dependent on them
who were between the ages of eighteen

and forty-one on August 15th, 1915. The men were offered the choice of voluntarily joining the Derby Groups; if they did not do so a day would be

they did not do so a day would be appointed five weeks after the Bill passed, and on that day, unless they had been exempted, they would be deemed to have enlisted for the duration of the war. Certain exemptions were made. Persons to whom compulsion would not be applied were clergy and ministers of any denomination, persons with certificates of exemption, those medically rejected, men necessary in national employments, men who supported relatives and would leave dependents without support, necessary civil servants, and conscientious objectors to combatant services.

The scene in the House of Commons on the afternoon when the Bill was introduced was striking. The House was crowded, the benches and side galleries were full, and members sat even on the steps of the gangways. Many soldiers, Unionist and Liberal alike, had come straight from the front to record their votes. Some, like General Seely, himself formerly Minister of War, had only left the field of battle early that day. The atmosphere of the House was electric.

The Premier rose to the occasion and gave a clear statement of his position. He was opposed to general compulsion, and did not think that any case had been made out for it. This Bill was confined to a specific purpose, the redemption of the pledge publicly given by him to the House on November 2nd. This pledge was given because at the time overwhelming evidence was submitted to him that if the pledge was not given there was serious danger of the whole campaign breaking down. The Premier dismissed the idea that when he spoke he was not defining the general policy agreed upon by the Cabinet. After he

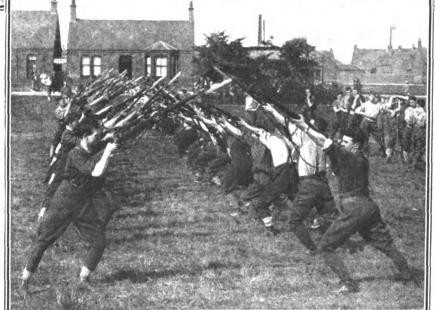




MODERN CANADIAN CAVALRY GARBED LIKE THE KU-KLUX-KLAN.

For protection of the men and horses while practising sword fighting with the real weapon, the Canadians were supplied with hoods and pads. The effect was grotesque when the troops were lined up for the attack. Above: The hoods thrown back during an interval.





MAGNIFICENT YOUNG MANHOOD OF OUR OLDEST COLONY.

Newfoundland, our oldest Colony, raised the first regiment she has ever had, to help the Empire at the great crisis of its history, and the men, who were of exceptionally fine stamina, came "home" to train. The photographs of them starting on a route march and at bayonet exercise well exhibit their superb physique.

gave the pledge in Parliament he had received neither then nor subsequently any sign of protest or remonstrance. He could not treat the estimated number of the unmarried men who had not attested—650,000—as anything but a substantial and even considerable amount, even when all possible deductions were made from it. "Our primary obligations, mine at any rate, must be to keep faith with those to whom I have given that promise." There were only two ways in which the promise could be fulfilled. One would be releasing the married men—over 400,000—418

from their obligations, and the second course would be to treat the single men of military age, without exemption or excuse, as though they had attested or enlisted. "This course," he said, "we propose to adopt in this Bill. I mean to keep my promise. We must keep our promises, and do not let it be said that we dallied and delayed in the performance of an obligation of honour."

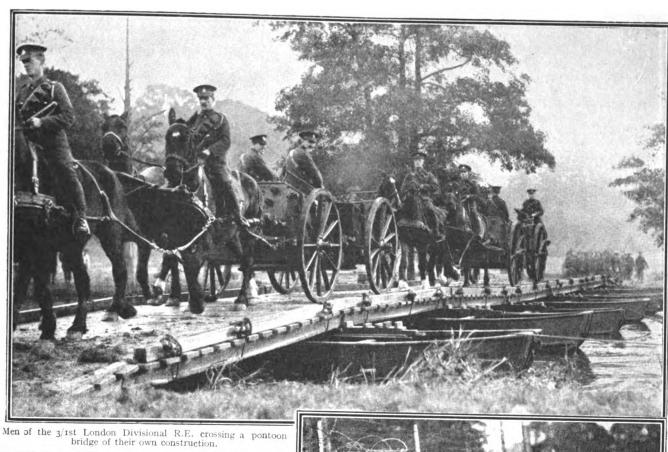
Even now the voluntaryists did not give up hope. They thought that they had a considerable strength in the House, and they placed much reliance upon Sir John Simon. Sir John Simon was known as an able lawyer and a skilled Parliamentarian, but when he sat down after a long speech, which was evidently meant to be one of the great efforts of his life, everyone knew that the case against the Bill had broken down.

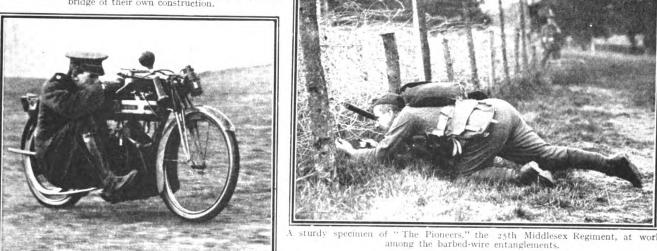
against the Bill had broken down.

"It was full of cleverness, of course," said the "Daily Telegraph" in describing the speech, "for it revealed the involved windings of a legal conscience.

What to others was a plain pledge was to him something amazingly subtle, governed by one consideration here and

another there, and contingency A and contingency B, and some ingeniously concealed 'whereas.' His main complaint seemed to be that the Prime Minister was performing the letter of his bond before the conditions had been fulfilled, and yet it was clear from his whole speech that, however long the Prime Minister had waited and whatever the result the final investigation showed, Sir









Above: Sergeant Milner, motor despatch-rider, showing how to take cover while riding. Left Members of the Inns of Court O.T.C. returning to camp after trench-digging. Right: Men of the Hackney (189th) Gun Brigade, enlisted at 2 p.m. and in uniform at 2.45 p.m. the same day!

LEARNING THE ARTS OF WAR: BRITONS IN TRAINING AFOOT AND AWHEEL.

John Simon's conscience—the late Home Secretary is pure conscience—would have led him just the same to make 'the grand refusal' at the end. And he claimed that there were others on the Treasury Bench who held identical views with himself, and were anti-compulsionists on strict principle, and did not regard the question, like the Prime Minister, as one of expediency only, or like Mr. Redmond as one to be judged by the degree of necessity.

"It was one of those speeches of resignation which widen

"It was one of those speeches of resignation which widen the gulf between colleagues who have parted company. It was bitter—Sir John resembles Mr. Dillon in not being able to get certain newspapers out of his head—and seems also to agree with him that the Prime Minister was trapped into making the pledge and bullied into keeping it. So with a great show of civility he yet spoke to wound."

Two more speeches drove home the Premier's declaration. One was from Mr. Bonar Law, who had during the last weeks of 1915 steadily strengthened his position in Parliament as a businesslike statesman. The other was by General Seely, who spoke with a passion, enthusiasm, and emotion that stirred the House. The Liberal War Minister of other years, looking now the soldier he was, for he was serving at the time as a brigadier-general with the Canadian Division, told how he had long opposed conscription, but since the Prime Minister and Lord Kitchener said this Bill was necessary, he held it his clear

duty to support them. Then he turned on those who denounced the Bill in the name of liberty. "Liberty to do what?" he asked. "When the Lusitania had been

sunk, when poisonous gases have been turned on, when thousands of innocent lives have been destroyed in defiance of every law of war and humanity, when overwhelming masses of your countrymen have risen in horror and said. 'We will not be ground down by Prussian despotism and tyranny.' Then you are going to appeal to liberty—liberty that you may send another man in your place."

The debate was concluded on the second day, when an

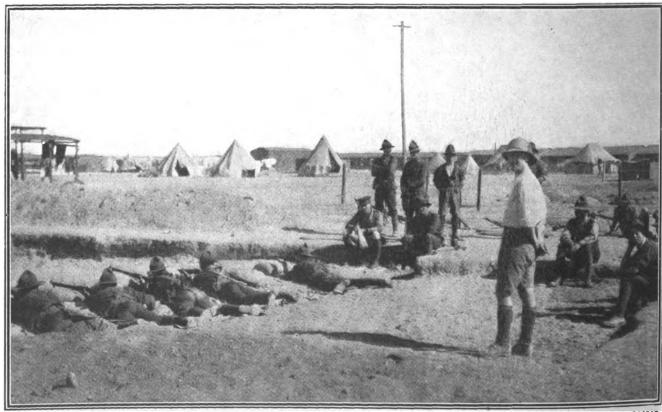
amazingly eloquent speech from Colonel John Ward, the well-known leader of the Navvies Battalion, thrilled the House. Mr. Herbert Samuel pulverised Sir John Simon's figures and arguments. When the division came there was a majority in favour of the Bill of 298—403 against 105. The result was a great disappointment to the anti-

The result was a great disappointment to the anticompulsionists, who had hoped that many members would abstain and many more vote against the Government. When the division came to be analysed the disappointment was still greater. The minority of 105 included no fewer than 60 Nationalists. The action of these in voting against a Bill which did not apply to Ireland

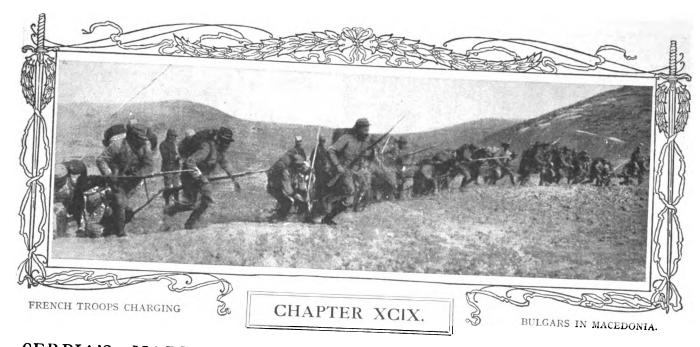
a Bill which did not apply to Ireland created so much unfavourable comment that when the second reading of the Bill came on the Nationalists decided not to

The majority for compulsion

vote. The opposition thus dwindled to 39, and the second reading was carried by a Government majority of 392. On Monday, January 24th, 1916, the Bill passed the House on its third reading by a majority of 347, the opposition having now fallen to 36 votes. The members who voted against the Bill, either on the introduction or on the second reading, found in many cases that their action created great resentment. The Liberal organisation in Sir John Simon's own constituency asked him to resign. Another member pledged himself after the first reading not to vote against the Bill again. Great efforts were made to enlist the Labour party as a whole against the Bill, and a conference of Labour delegates carried a resolution against compulsion, which it was at first thought would compel the Labour members of the Government to retire. It was soon found, however, that all hopes of united and solid Labour opposition were vain. Many labour representatives were among the Bill's warmest advocates. The Government took pains to reassure those who believed that conscription for the Army might lead to industrial conscription. The few men who had whispered a threat of a general strike of labour against the Bill were silenced by their friends.



NEW ZEALANDERS ENCAMPED ON THE EGYPTIAN SANDS PREPARING FOR A THREATENED ATTACK ON THE SUBZ CANAL. Their long and severe training finished, these New Zealanders were sent out absolutely ready and intensely keen to prove their superiority over the soldiers of militarist Germany. They occupied much of the brief period before entering the firing-line in keeping their marksmanship up to form on the rifle ranges.



## SERBIA'S HARD FATE, THE RETIREMENT, **ALLIES'** AND MONTENEGRO'S OVERTHROW.

By Robert Machray.

Some Bright Gleams in Serbia's Dark Sky—Heroism of Vassitch and his Soldiers in the Babuna Pass—Sarrail's Attempt to Join Up with Vassitch Across the Hills—Battle of Mount Arkangel—Failure of the French—The Crushing of Serbian Frocedis—Advance—Serbians Hemmed in on the Famous Kossovo Plain—Remorseless Enemy Drive—Fall of Mitrovitza and Pristina—Retreat Fall of Monastir—Position of the Allies on the Vardar—Object Gone—A Dangerous Salient—Equivocal Action of Greece—Allies Across the Frontier—Brilliant Military Achievement—Bulgar Boasts—Allies Retire Unmolested on Salonika—A Great —Capture of Lovtchen by the Austrians and Fall of Cetinje—"Capitulation" of Montenegro—The Facts of the Case—King Nicholas Retires to Italy and then to France—Austrians in Possession of Montenegro—Calm at Salonika.



HE disastrous week which saw the fall of Nish on November 5th, 1915, and the enemy in occupation of the greater part of Serbia, did not, however,

close without witnessing a splendid vindication of the fighting qualities of the Serbians. If by this time the general situation of the little kingdom was becoming gloomy, the dark sky was not entirely destitute of gleams of light. As narrated in the concluding paragraph of Chapter XCIII., the soldiers of Bojovitch and of Vassitch respectively had repelled all assaults of the Bulgarians on the Katshanik Pass, north-west of Uskub, and the Babuna Pass, south-west of Veles, two places of extreme strategic importance, as subsequent events clearly showed. The heroic Vassitch did far better than merely hold the Babuna Pass against repeated attacks, for he was victorious in it in a battle which, had circumstances been more propitious, might have favourably influenced the whole course of the letter places of the letter places of the letter places. whole course of the later phases of the struggle for his country's existence.

During that first week of November, 1915, Vassitch, in and around the Babuna Pass, had only 5.000 men to pit against over 20.000 Bulgarians, who besides had much heavier artillery. Day after day, night after night, his small force of Serbians, often without



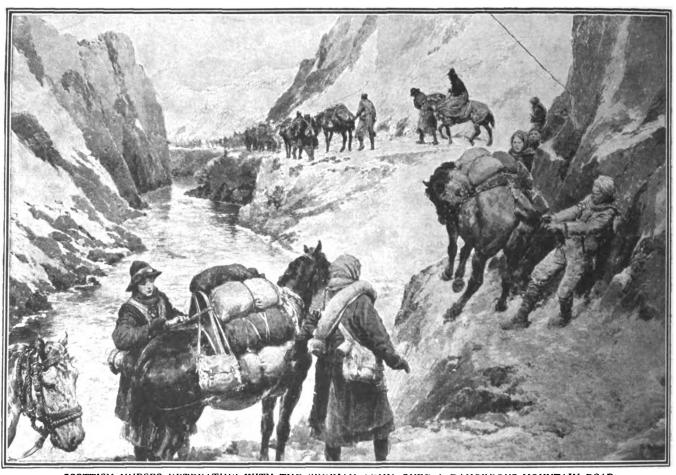
GENERAL MARTINOVITCH.
Owing to his influence Austria's infamous peace terms to Montenegro were rejected. General Martinovitch tried his best to defend Mount Lovtchen.

food, always under fire, but cheered by their commander, and singing their plaintive national airs, fought dauntlessly on, repulsing with serious loss to the invader all his most stubborn and persistent efforts to force the pass. They did more. From November 4th to November 6th an incessant and sanguinary hand-to-hand fight, in which the combatants made free use of their knives, raged in the deep and narrow gorges of the defile, ending in the complete rout of the Bulgarians, who were driven through Izvor pell-mell into

And on the other side of the hills the French, under General Sarrail, were only a few miles away—almost in touch. It looked as if the Allies might effect a junction, and telegrams were despatched from Greece which actually asserted that not only French but also besides treams and united with the British troops had united with the Serbians. The truth, unfortunately, was altogether otherwise.

A thoroughly capable soldier, who had already proved his merit in France, General Sarrail did wonders considering the shortness of the time at his disposal the shortness of the time at his disposal and the inferiority of the facilities at his command, but the numbers of his men were utterly insufficient for their task, and he could not achieve the impossible. He made a great, an even desperate, attempt to join up with

Digitized by Google



SCOTTISH NURSES RETREATING WITH THE SERBIAN ARMY OVER A DANGEROUS MOUNTAIN ROAD.

the remnant of the Serbian Army retreating over the Albanian Alps,

Part of the way the nurses were compelled to walk, but

With the remnant of the Serbian Army retreating over the Albanian Alps, the first Serbian unit of the Scottish Women's Hospital trekked every inch of the way as philosophically and courageously as the sternest infantryman. The unit travelled through Montenegro to Scutari and San Giovanni di Medua, whence it proceeded by ship to Italy and London.

Vassitch, and so nearly accomplished it that nothing but the absence of reinforcements at a critical moment robbed him of success. In this effort his troops were entirely French, the British, lying around Lake Doiran, being well to the south and east on his right flank.

As soon as possible after his arrival at Salonika, he railed all his available forces up the Valley of the Vardar, towards Veles. He had only a single-tracked and indifferent railway for the transportation of both men and supplies, yet he pressed on with surprising speed. The line followed the snaky twistings of the river, and parts of it, built on shelves cut out of the solid rock, passed through deep gorges, the longest of which, known as the Demir Kapu Ravine, extended for ten miles. As possession of this defile by the enemy would have been a fatal bar to his advance, his first business was to get it into his own hands, and after some fighting at Strumnitza station, a few miles to the south, he secured it without further opposition. Then he pushed on north of it to Krivolak, about 110 miles from Salonika. He reached Krivolak on October 19th, but at first he had only a handful of troops, and could do little till more had come up.

By a magnificent thrust Vassitch recaptured Veles from the Bulgarians on October 22nd, and managed to hold it for a week. This town lay along the railway some thirty-

Vassitch robbed of success

five miles north-west of Krivolak, but the French were not sufficiently strong to push their way up the line to it, and they had to fight hard, as it was, to maintain

themselves. It was not till after they had gained possession of a steep and forbidding height, called Kara Hodjali, three miles north of Krivolak on the road to Ishtip, that they established their position, and, defeating furious assaults of the enemy on October 30th and November 4th and 5th, made an effective bridge-head on the east side of the Vardar. In the meantime Vassitch, far outnumbered and out-

Part of the way the nurses were compelled to walk, but at Ipek some pack-horses were requisitioned. This illustration gives an idea of the perilous passes which had to be negotiated, frequently narrow, snow-covered ledges round precipices. A lack of food and Arctic cold contributed to the hardships endured by these valiant Scots women.

gunned, had been compelled to evacuate Veles again and withdraw to the Babuna Pass.

Krivolak was twenty-five miles almost due east of the pass, and Sarrail's problem now was to bridge the distance which intervened between himself and Vassitch. The first part of the way was easy, fifteen miles across an undulating

plain to the Tserna, a tributary of the Vardar, but the remaining ten miles, on the west side of the former river, were over very difficult country, consisting of rugged

Sarrall assaults

Mount Arkangel

hills and mountains, interspersed with water-courses, the whole of this terrain, on which the Bulgarians had erected fortifications, lending itself readily to a powerful defence.

Having secured Kara Hodjali, which the French soldiers renamed Kara Rosalie, after the pet word for their bayonets, Sarrail, for whom reinforcements had all the while been arriving at Krivolak, marched south-west across the plain through Negotin and Kavadar to the Tserna, an unfordable stream of considerable width, with but one bridge over it, and that of wood, at a place called Vozartzi. On November 5th the French moved over the bridge, and occupied the adjacent crests of the precipitous slopes which, often rising above 1,000 feet in height, line for miles that side of the river. Here they were so near the Babuna Pass that they could hear the thunderous rumble of the artillery taking part in the fierce battle in which Vassitch was victorious. Advancing northwards along the west bank of the Tserna, Sarrail next day began an assault of Mount Arkangel, ten miles down-stream from Vozartzi, and the centre of the Bulgarian position, which had to be stormed if a junction was to be made with the Serbians.

Mount Arkangel, however, was an extremely hard nut to crack. The Bulgarians had strongly fortified it, were numerically much superior to the French, and, moreover, were constantly being reinforced by Teodoroff from his main army. In war, "L'audace!" typified the spirit

of the French, and on this occasion, with their precarious communications and relatively small numbers, it needed all their boldness and courage to make the attempt. After skirmishes with outposts at the base of the mountain, they drove the Bulgarians out of the villages of Sirkovo and Krushevitza, and on November 10th they carried, by an encircling movement, with great dash the village of Sirkovo, situated some distance up the side of the eminence. But they did not get far above this point. By the close of the second week of November the Bulgarians concentrated upwards of 60,000 men, with a corresponding strength in guns, on Mount Arkangel and along the west bank of the Iserna, and on the 12th they took the offensive.

Their obviously best course was to cut the French off from the Vozartzi bridge, the latter's sole Bulgarians take the line of supply and retreat, and then hem them in against the impassable offensive river in the rear. For three days, in

fighting of the most violent description, they made the most determined efforts to carry out this purpose, but the French, combining higher skill with equal determination, held their ground, and in a grim conflict, which took

place on Mount Arkangel itself, inflicted a severe defeat on the enemy, who was forced to retire in great disorder, leaving 3,500 dead on the field. In this battle the Bulgarians charged to within twenty yards of the French trenches, but, faltering under a withering fire and then counter - charged by the French with the bayonet, broke, turned, and ran. Mr. G. Ward Price, the authorised representative of the London Press with the Allies in the Balkans, reported that if only there had been enough French troops to throw into the struggle at that moment, the retreat of the Bulgars would have been made a rout.



GENERAL SARRAIL IN THE NEAR EAST. The famous French leader, who was in supreme command of the allied armies in the Balkans, going on a tour of inspection with some officers of the British Expedition.

Vassitch held out in the Babuna Pass, ten miles away all the next day, November 15th, but the French could not get across the hills, and as he was compelled to retire, in order to escape envelopment, on Prilep on November 16th, the opportunity passed. The French, still hoping to assist the Serbians in some way, retained their positions. It was November 20th, nearly a week after the Battle of

Mount Arkangel, before the Bulgarians, freshly strengthened, renewed the attack, and they were again heavily checked, but Sarrail was unable to advance, the plain fact being that he neither had nor could get men in adequate

force. And, meanwhile, in other parts of the country the progress of events, moving from disaster to disaster for the brave but unfortunate Serbians, had rendered

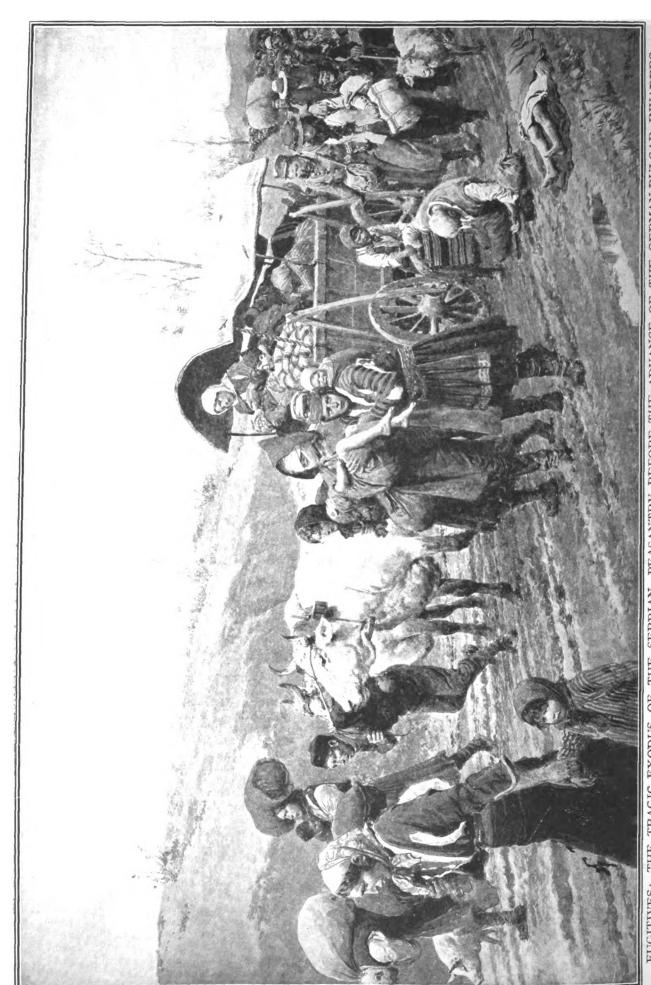
Sarrail's lack of

it evident that the enemy's overrunning of the rest of Serbia was a question of but a very short time, on which the venture of the Allies would exercise little or no influence.

Up to the fall of Nish, the true crisis of the campaign, the policy of the Serbian Chief Command had been to retreat slowly before the enemy on all sides, delaying everywhere his advance as much as possible by stubborn rearguard actions, so as to give time for the expected effective co-operation of the Allies. Even after Nish had been occupied by the Bulgarians and the larger part of Serbia was gone, the great mass of the Serbian people still thought that the assistance of the Entente Powers would suffice to enable their armies to hurl back the invaders, and the Serbian leaders themselves seemed to have been for a short time under a similar illusion. M. Pasich, the Premier, declared that the Serbian "General Headquarters, as well as the members of the Government and the whole



SEEING THAT "ALL'S WELL." Above and in circle: Two impressions of General Sarrail personally conducting members of the French Parliamentary Mission round the camp at Zeitlenlick, near Salonika



FUGITIVES: THE TRAGIC EXODUS OF THE SERBIAN PEASANTRY BEFORE THE ADVANCE OF THE GERMAN-BULGAR INVADERS.

Unlike the Belgians, the Serbian population had time to retreat, and most of them, fearing the bringing of the investment invader, elected to with draw with their soldier-compatitions. One can but finense cold, a large of food, and unwonted physical strain, an aged peasant or frail child would fall fall think would fall

people," were convinced that as soon as the allied troops had arrived in sufficient numbers and entered into action, "success would be rapid and sure." This was on November 7th, and the same policy was continued a little longer, but it soon was clear that there was one thing—and one thing only—left to Serbia, and that was the salvation of her Army from capture or destruction.

On the north and north-east the crushing of Serbia went on unrelentingly, as the Serbian main armies were steadily pushed back towards the frontiers of Montenegro and Albania by Kövess, Gallwitz, and Bojadieff, in spite of the more difficult, because more mountainous, character of the country they had to take into account. The Serbians had no reserves from which to make good their losses, whereas the enemy kept bringing up reinforcements; his greater numerical strength and the efficiency of his long-range guns told heavily in his favour. Now becoming woefully short of supplies of both munitions and food, the Serbian armies, whose moral remained undiminished, fought bravely on in a struggle daily more hopeless. The fortnight after the fall of Nish saw the development of a great converging movement of the three enemy commanders on the historic Kossovo Plain, with the object

Mitrovitza

of rolling up and encircling the Serbian principal forces.

At the end of the first week of November, Kövess with

his Austro-Germans was marching towards Mitrovitza on the north side of the plain from Kralievo up Serbians retire on the Valley of the Ibar, an affluent of the

Western Morava. After a bitter fight he drove the Serbian rearguards out of the hills north of Ivanitza, and occupied that town on November 9th. Four days later, having driven the Serbians from their positions in the district of the Stolovi range, he forced his way to Rashka, a town on the Ibar, well on the road to Mitrovitza, and a few miles from Novi Bazar, which he took on November 20th, finding in its arsenal—the last the Serbians had left—fifty large mortars and eight guns that were, as the German official communiqué admitted, "of a somewhat ancient pattern." Farther east, Austrian troops were in possession of Sienitza and of Nova Varosh, close to the Montenegrin boundary, about the same date. Thrown back near Zhochanitza, the Serbians retired on Mitrovitza, from which Kövess on the 22nd was only five

miles away East of Kövess, Gallwitz with his Germans had also been advancing southward, his objective being Pristina, on the east side of the Kossovo Plain and some twenty miles south-east of Mitrovitza. He had to negotiate the high mountain ridges of Central Serbia, and the Serbians, fighting desperately in the Jastrebatz and other ranges, made him pay a heavy price for his progress, but on this front them. front they furthermore had to endeavour to stem a rising tide in the shape of Bojadieff and his Bulgarians, and against the two they had not the ghost of a chance.

Starting out from Krushevatz about November 8th,



WAR-BITTEN FRENCH VETERANS MARCHING OUT OF KAVADAR. French troops retreating from Kavadar via Negotin to the Salonika lines. Owing to a superior concentration of Bulgarian forces, our allies were compelled to withdraw over the mountains, using pack-horses for transport in the absence of railways. This illustration shows the familiar steel-helmeted infantrymen leaving Kavadar.

Gallwitz, following the course of a small tributary of the Western Morava, struck south-west towards Brus with one part of his troops, and with another due south across the high hills of the Jastrebatz in the direction of Kurshumlia. He soon reached Ribari and Rabaska Bania (Baths), and subsequent to what the Germans themselves described as desperate local fighting, stormed the chief pass on the road over the mountains, and gained entrance to the Valley of the Toplitza, a river flowing westward into the Morava, the rophiza, a river howing westward into the Morava, the main stream of that name which in this section of the country was changed into the "Southern" or "Bulgar" Morava. After a week's hard struggle Gallwitz entered Kurshumlia, which the Serbians had evacuated, stripping it first of everything of military value, but

being forced to leave several hundreds of Enemy occupies their wounded, who fell into the hands of Old Serbia the Germans. Moving on from this town,

which lay about midway between Krushevatz and Pristina. Gallwitz pushed across to Prepolatz, east of the Kopaonik Mountains, occupying it on November 20th, and then advanced southwards over the intervening ridges. Serbians struggled on, but the same day which saw Kövess within striking distance of Mitrovitza beheld Gallwitz, from the north of the Lab Valley, threatening Pristina as closely.

Vienna announced with triumph, on November 20th, that on the preceding day the Serbians had been driven by force of arms from the last portion of Old Serbia by the three allied armies. Included in these were the operations of the Bulgarian divisions under Bojadieff, whose right wing had joined up with Gallwitz in the march on Pristina. Bulgarians, however, had had anything but a walk-over.



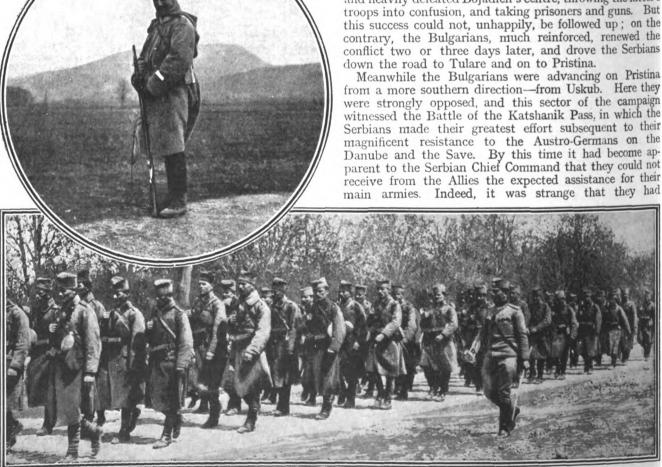
RUDE SHELTER FROM WIND AND WEATHER. A Serbian soldier's resting-place during the great retreat.

After withdrawing from Nish, the Serbians, under Marshal Stepanovitch, retreated to the west bank of the Morava, destroying the bridges as soon as they had got across, and, encouraged by the presence of King Peter in their midst, held up the Bulgarians there for some time. But farther north and farther south in the Morava Valley they were at first less successful in checking the enemy. On the north the Bulgarians captured Alexinatz on November 7th, the Serbian Army of the Timok, in retreat from Zaitchar, barely succeeding in crossing the bridge over the river in time. On the south, and on the same day the Serbians had to abandon Leskovatz. With the capture of these towns and other points on the line, the enemy secured complete possession of the great trunk railway from Belgrade through Nish to Sofia and Constantinople and of the Nish-Salonika railway as far south as the French entrenchments at Krivolak.

Of these two gains, the former was infinitely the more important. The passing into Germanic occupation of the international highway, reaching from the North Sea to the Bosphorus and beyond, was up to that time one of the most striking features of the war, which, with free communica-tion opened up between Germany and Asia, showed itself more manifestly than ever a world-war.

From Alexinatz the hard-pressed Army of the Timok had only a single Heavy defeat of Bojadieff line of retreat, the road to Prokuplie and

Kurshumlia, and, in danger of being cut off by the Germans on the west, it marched swiftly, though fighting rearguard actions all the while, and was able to unite with the army retiring from Krushevatz. Prokuplie did not fall to the Bulgarians till November 16th. North-west of Leskovatz, where the pressure was not quite so extreme, Stepanovitch made a determined stand, on November 11th and 12th, and heavily defeated Bojadieff's centre, throwing the latter's troops into confusion, and taking prisoners and guns. But this success could not, unhappily, be followed up; on the contrary, the Bulgarians, much reinforced, renewed the conflict two or three days later, and drove the Serbians



SERBIANS' SPLENDID FIGHTING SPIRIT AFTER MANY DAYS OF BATTLE.

Our Serbian Allies entered the European War as veterans, having just previously fought in two stubborn wars with the Turks and Bulgars. That fact doubtless accounted for their wonderful stand against such overwhelming odds. One has only to contemplate this illustration,



and 155 type (3 in. and 6 in.), which rained thousands of shrapnel and high-explosive shells on the trenches of the Bulgarians, who, under this terrible fire, retreated south for four miles. Then the Serbian infantry drove on, falling wave after wave on the reeling Bulgarian ranks, which, however, rallied as their supports came up. One Serbian regiment charged desperately seven times, each time capturing and then losing six Bulgarian guns. In several parts of the field there was a savage hand-to-hand mêlée, in which the combatants, throwing down their rifles, fought with daggers, knives, fists, and even teeth, the wildest, fiercest scenes in the envenomed fighting on the

BROKEN IN THE WAR OF AGGRESSION.

AGGRESSION.

It is idle to speculate on the mortality which the taking of Serbia cost the enemy. The true figure may never pass the German censor, but the losses were undoubtedly great, to judge only by the hosts of wounded shown in official photographs.

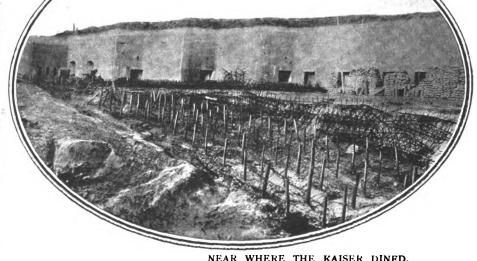
cherished the idea so long, as they must have known of the comparatively small numbers of the troops which had landed at Salonika and the difficulties of various kinds, such as the scarcely veiled hostility of the Greek authorities, with which the allied commanders had to contend. They now perceived that the only hope of saving their armies intact was by keeping open or forcing a way to the south through Uskub.

This meant first of all that the Katshanik Pass, which in the

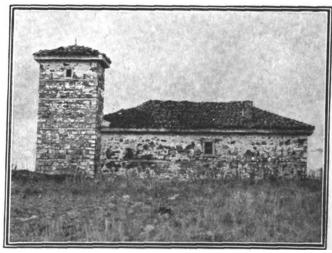
Battle of Battle of Katshanik Pass second week of November was still in the hands of the Serbians, but was beleaguered on the south by the Bulgarians, had to be cleared of the enemy, who thereupon was

to be driven out of Uskub, whence the Serbian armies would retreat west to Kalkandelen (Tetovo), and then south by the road through Gostivar and Kichevo to Monastir. This was the plan, and a most heroic attempt was made to accomplish it. It failed, but not without shedding fresh lustre on the Serbian arms. Certainly it was the most hotly contested fight that took place between the Serbians and the Bulgarians; it was protracted for five days, and nothing except the overwhelming strength of the enemy prevented a decisive Serbian victory.

About November roth Bojovitch's slender army of 5,000 men was reinforced by three regiments, including one from the Shumadia and one from the Morava Divisions, which were sent by the railway—the only bit remaining to Serbia—from Pristina to Ferizovitch, some ten miles from the Katshanik Pass. The weather was intensely cold, and the roads were indescribably bad. The Serbians, though exhausted by much marching, and weak from want of food, pressed on to the pass, and Bojovitch began the attack without a moment's delay. According to one account he had a hundred guns, mostly of the French 75



A strong position at Nish, fortified by barbed-wire, steel stakes, and sand-bags.



A HOUSE OF MARS ON THE BATTLE-PLAIN.

Typical Balkan blockhouse on the Serbo-Bulgarian frontier, in the neighbourhood of which much heavy fighting took place.

Timok being far outdone. For some time the Serbians on the whole made progress, the enemy's centre being pierced by a prodigious effort of the Shumadia and Morava troops, and it seemed as if Serbian valour would prevail. But here, once more, the Serbians had no reserves to ensure success. The Bulgarians were all the time being strengthened by large numbers of fresh men railed up from Uskub, and in the end this superiority was the deciding factor. On the 15th the battle was lost, and the Serbians were forced out of the pass, retiring by the passes of the Jatzovitza Hills on Prisrend.

Thus the plan of the retreat of the Serbian armies to the south completely collapsed, and its effect was immediately seen in the withdrawal from Mitrovitza of the Serbian Staff, such members of the Serbian Government as had remained there, and the personnel of the Legations of the Allies. The Bulgarians had not been unconscious of the scheme that lay behind the Battle of the Katshanik Pass, and had sought to forestall part of it by attacking Kalkandelen, a point which had been taken and retaken more than once. On November 15th they captured it for the last time, and driving the small Serbian force that had

occupied it before them, they took Gostivar on the following day, the Serbians retreating to Kichevo, on the road to Monastir. About the same dates, or a little later, Bojadieff, after a stiff fight, stormed the heights near Gilan, north-west of Katshanik, and occupying Gilan itself, advanced towards Pristina, being on November 22nd no more than two or three miles from the last-named town.

The enemy had now succeeded in his great object of rolling back on to the Kossovo Plain the Serbian main armies, which were united, but in considerable confusion and hampered by

vast crowds of fugitives fleeing from all parts of the north, centre and east of the country. Near Mitrovitza, on the north of the plain, near Pristina on the east of it, and at Katshanik at its southern extremity, the Austro-Germans and the Bulgarians had, in the beginning of the fourth week of November, absolutely rounded up and hemmed in all the chief forces of the Serbians, for whom nothing really was left but surrender, destruction, or a terrible retreat into the mountains of Montenegro and Albania, now in the grip of winter, deep in snow, and swept by biting winds.

Serbia decided to make a last stand on the plain, and then, if that failed, to retreat, thus defeating the principal strategic purpose of Mackensen, which was

the surrender or destruction of the Serbian Army. King Peter himself was present, and the Serbians fought well, but by this

time the Serbian Army, though in the military sense intact. had been greatly reduced in numbers by constant fighting and perhaps also by desertions, for the ordinary Serbians did not understand that a retreat was not a defeat, and in all probability no longer preserved that high *moral* which

had distinguished them throughout the earlier stages of the campaign.

stages of the campaign.

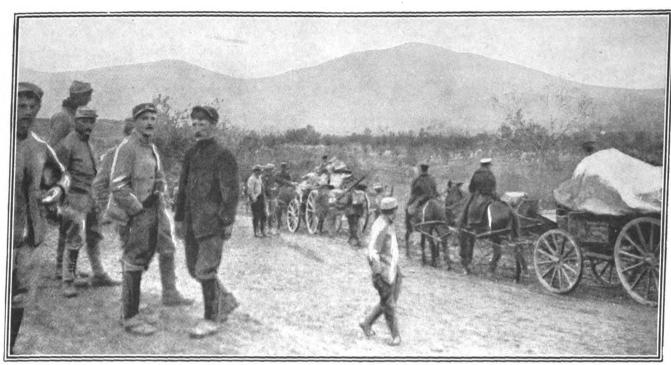
Known as the "Field of the Blackbirds," thus styled from the great quantities of those birds which frequent it, the Plain of Kossovo, a high plateau forty miles long and ten wide, had depressing memories for the Serbians, for there Lazar, the last of their ancient Tsars, in the days when Serbia was a powerful kingdom, was defeated and slain along with the flower of his nobles and chiefs in 1389. King Peter, old and bent with rheumatism, but shouldering a rifle, went up and down the ranks

his soldiers, heartening them to endure to the bitter end, and declaring that he was prepared to share Lazar's fate. But the enemy was far too strong for the Serbians. Kövess, having swept away the Serbian entrenchments north of Mitrovitza, entered that town on November 23rd, taking, by his own statement, 10,000 prisoners, 19 guns, and much railway material. On the same day Gallwitz, with his Germans, and the Bulgarians under Bojadieff captured Pristina, the former attacking it from the north and the latter from the south and east, capturing many thousand prisoners.
That evening an official Sofia
bulletin stated that Pristina was
taken after bitter fighting, and said that when the Bulgarian army closed in on the Serbians the latter made the "most desperate efforts to hold" the town, "but were unable to withstand our pressure. and driven out of their last position, were forced to retreat to the west.





BRITISH AND NEUTRAL WAR ACTIVITIES IN THE LEVANT.
Highlanders repairing a broken trench parapet at the extremity of a British line in the Balkans. In circle: A Greek five-wheeled transport lorry being driven through Salonika. From the moment of the allied occupation of this port the Greeks made preparations for the eventuality of war.



Some of the first contingent of British troops arriving on the Balkan front. A group of French soldiers who preceded them are contemplating their British comrades and transport waggons with interest.

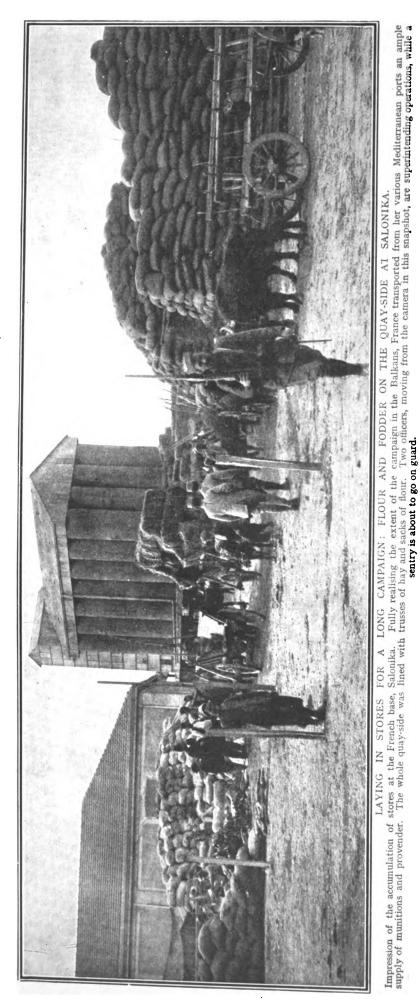


After the arrangement with Greece regarding the temporary occupation of Salonika by the allied forces had been settled, Greek soldiers evacuated the ancient port. A large body of these men, whose uniforms were singularly like those of our own troops, are seen on the march to another base,



Preparing for a massed attack. Some idea of the enormous number of men involved in the Austro-German advance in the Balkans may be gained from this impressive picture. As far as eye can see along the river bank are troops and war equipment about to proceed across the river by the several improvised pontoon bridges.

ALLIED, ENEMY AND NEUTRAL MOVEMENTS IN THE BALKAN COCKPIT.



From Mitrovitza a part of the Serbian Army, accompanied by multitudes of civilian fugitives, retreated to Ipek in Montenegro, and some proportion of them eventually arrived at Scutari, by way of Podgoritza, after suffering the cruellest hardships and privations—the rest perished miserably from cold and starvation. Retiring from the same town, another part of the force which had opposed Kövess stood and fought him again at Vutshitrin, but was beaten and pursued across the Sitnitza, on the western bank of which stream it was still fighting on November 25th. But the main line of retreat of the Serbians was along the high road from Pristina to Prisrend, and the Bulgarians pressed on quickly Serbian rout behind in this direction, took at Prisrend the heights west of Ferizovitch, and also advanced northerly towards lpek,

against which town Kövess had sent a detachment. The retreat to Prisrend was covered by the Shumadia Division. On November 27th upwards of 80,000 Serbians stood at bay in front of this town, but next day, after a most sanguinary conflict, and having fired their last shell, they spiked their guns, and fled across the frontier into Albania, making along the White Drin for Kula Liuma, sometimes called Lum Kulus, while several thousand prisoners fell into the hands of the enemy.

As her forces still fighting in the south, in Macedonia, were inconsiderable, and were already being heavily pressed by the Bulgarians, the rout at Prisrend and the consequent flight signalised for the time being the end of Serbia. The Serbian Government, with the venerable Pasich at its head, had left Prisrend a few days before the débacle, and arrived without misadventure at Scutari on November 30th. King Peter, attended by two or three devoted soldiers told off to see to his personal safety, made good his escape, and after wandering among the snow-covered mountain paths, reached the Adriatic, whence he was conveyed to Brindisi, and later to Salonika. The Crown Prince Alexander, with the Princess Heléne, succeeded in getting to Cetinje, having suffered much from hunger and cold in a wild ride through Montenegro.

Marked by horrors unspeakable, the retreat of the Serbian Army will remain one of the most terrible in history. Day by day thousands of men, ill-clad, ill-shod, or with bare and bleeding feet, and, crazed with famine, eating raw

horse-flesh with avidity, stumbled painfully and wretchedly along the two available roads, and these no Horrors of better than mule-tracks, from

the flight

Kula Liuma, one going west to Scutari, and the other south through Dibra to Elbasan. Saddest of all, with these wearied and war-worn soldiers there travelled long, mournful processions of the aged of both sexes, of the women and children, of Serbia, exhausted and starving, but preferring to face anything than to fall into the hands of the Austro-German and Bulgarian conquerors. Each via dolorosa was strewn thickly with the bodies of these unfortunate people. It was estimated that out of half a million civilians, who sought refuge in flight into the Alberta mountains refuge in flight into the Albanian mountains, more than 200,000 died. The ranks of the Serbian Army also were woefully thinned in the retreat, but not to anything like the same extent.

On November 28th German Headquarters issued an extraordinary report, in which it announced that with the flight of the scanty remains of the Serbian Army into the Albanian mountains "our great operations against the same are brought to a close. Our object of effecting communication with Bulgaria and the Turkish Empire has been accomplished." After briefly describing these opera-

been accomplished. After offeny describing these operations from a German standpoint, and admitting the "tough resistance" of the Serbians, who had "fought bravely," this communiqué asserted that more than 100,000 of them, "almost had the entire Serbian fighting forces," had been taken prisoners, while their losses in battle and from desertion could not be estimated. These

statements, calculated to give the world the impression that the Serbian Army had been annihilated, were gross exaggerations, after the familiar German pattern, the truth being that on the date mentioned Serbia had 200,000 men left.

But it was true that Germany had effected communication through Bulgaria with Turkey. Her engineers and military railway staff had the trunk line from Belgrade through Nish to Sofia and Constantinople in running order by the middle of December. Having got the railway, she withdrew most of her own troops from Serbia, leaving the Bulgarians to finish Macedonia, and the Austrians Montenegro.

While the main Serbian armies were being driven out of their native land, the Bulgarians, after taking the Babuna Pass and Kichevo, as well as Krushevo on November 20th, did not forthwith advance to the capture of Monastir, and that city was subjected to many alarms for days, most of its population making haste to remove into Greece, whither the railway was still open. Vassitch had retired from the Babuna to Prilep, and there awaited the

assault, which, however, did not materialise. When the Bulgarians at last moved, and took Brod with a view to cutting off his retreat, he quitted Prilep, and fell back on Monastir, which he evacuated on December 2nd, with-drawing his small band of heroes to Resna. The last fight of importance by the Serbians took place near that town, from which Vassitch retired on December 5th, and marching round the southern shore of Lake Ochrida, effected the escape of himself and his men into Epirus. There were some encounters between small groups of Serbians and Bulgarians at Ochrida and Struga, but the retreat of Vassitch marked the conclusion of Serbia's glorious resistance against overwhelming odds.

Just about ten weeks had passed since the Germans had begun shelling Semendria on September 21st. While the struggle was still going on Serbia might have come to terms with the enemy.

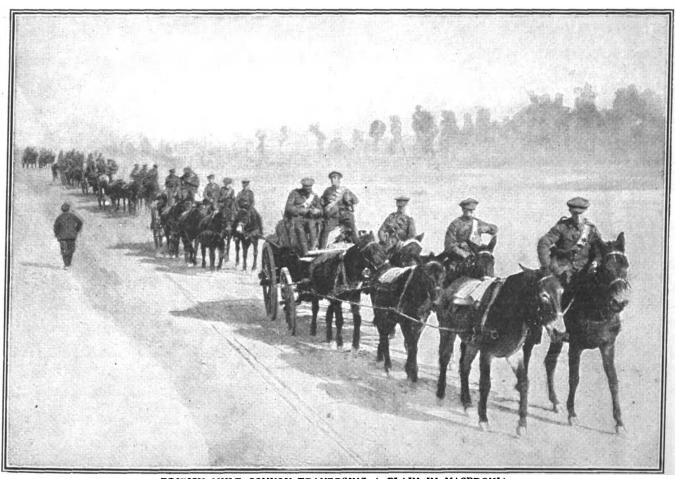
On November 14th Marshal Mackensen made an offer of an armistice to Prince Alexander, the regent, and the Serbian Government, with a view to a separate peace, the basis of which was the cession to Bulgaria of a tract of territory on Serbia's eastern frontier, including Pirot, Kniashevatz and Zaitchar, and the whole of Serbian Macedonia. By that date the most optimistic of the Serbian leaders

Separate peace

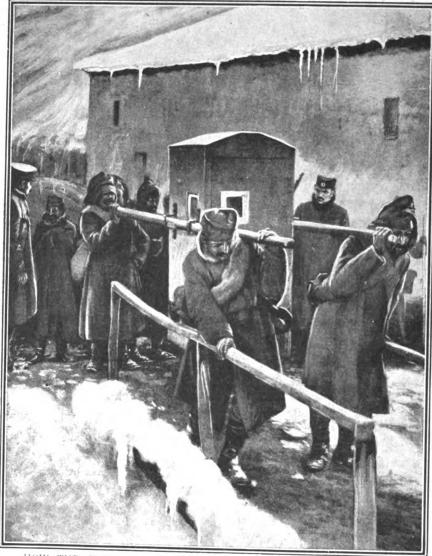
must have realised that, from the military rejected point of view, their country was doomed

if the conflict was continued, but the proposal was rejected. In the Council of Ministers which considered it Pasich declared: "Our way is marked out. We will be true to the Entente, and die honourably." And in honour Serbia went down, fighting to the last.

With the disappearance from Serbia of her armies, the French and British forces which had come to endeavour to save them had no longer an object in remaining on



BRITISH MULE CONVOY TRAVERSING A PLAIN IN MACEDONIA



HOW THE SERBIAN GENERALISSIMO WAS CONVEYED TO SAFETY.

The aged Marshal Putnik, whose able command of the Serbian Army was one of the remarkable features of this unique campaign, was too ill and frail to retreat on horseback. He was therefore carried in a crude Sedan chair by four faithful bearers.

Serbian soil, particularly as they were not of themselves able to undertake an offensive, though during November large reinforcements arrived at Salonika. The rumours of military action by Russia on behalf of Serbia had proved unfounded, and a second bombardment of Varna had no effect on the general course of the campaign. Italy had done nothing in the Balkans to help her Allies, except to shell Dedeagach on November 11th. A month later she landed an army at Valona and elsewhere on the Adriatic coast, but this action had no influence on the immediate fortunes of her friends. That the allied forces in Macedonia would be unable to unite with the Serbians had been demonstrated in the Mount Arkangel fighting. For several days after November 20th, when the French on the west bank of the Tserna repulsed the Bulgarians on that portion of the front, nothing occurred. The first sign of what was about to happen appeared on November 27th in a Paris official communiqué, stating that, in consequence of the situation of the Serbian armies at that time, the French troops that had occupied the west bank of the Tserna had been brought to the east side of that river a movement which was made without any difficulty. A general withdrawal into Greece, with Salonika as base, had been decided on by General Sarrail, in accordance with instructions from Paris and London.

But Greece was a doubtful quantity, and all through November and part of the following month her ambiguous attitude to the Entente Powers caused them much anxiety. The question was how she would comport herself in the event of the retirement—seen to be possible after the fall of Nish—of the forces of the Allies from the Tserna-Vardar and the Vardar-Doiran positions. Would she give them complete freedom of communication south of the frontier to Salonika, or seek to disarm and intern them and such Serbians as crossed the border?

M. Skouloudis succeeded M. Zaimis as Prime Minister of Greece, but he was a mere mouthpiece of King Constantine, who had taken the reins of government into his own hands. Venizelos was not silent, but was no more than a voice crying in the wilderness. At the start Skouloudis expressed the opinion publicly that Greece's "benevolent neutrality" did not extend to protecting the allied troops — whether French, British, or Serbian—from the operation of international law, and that, therefore, these troops would be disarmed and interned on their passing over into Greek territory. Of course, Germany backed him up. His words created a painful impression throughout the allied countries, which was deepened when it became known that Greece had concentrated 200,000 men in menacing positions in and about Salonika. A report that she had signed a treaty with Bulgaria further increased the tension. The question now was whether Greece was to be permitted to carry out her declared intentions or not, and the Allies unanimously replied in the negative.

Ordinary arguments proved valueless, and time was lost in talk. Opinion and feeling grew heated in France and Britain over the delay, as well as over the question itself. France in particular called for immediate and energetic action, urging that it was necessary to show the iron hand under the velvet glove. The

urging that it was necessary to show the iron hand under the velvet glove. The iron hand was a figure of speech for the fleets of the Allies, which could to Greece to Greece

coasts of Greece, but deprive her of her supplies. It was a very powerful argument, and after a meeting of an urgent War Council in Paris it was brought to bear upon her in the form of a partial embargo of her shipping. Two visits paid to King Constantine while the crisis was acute had a favourable influence upon it. One was from M. Denys Cochin, a member of the French Government, and a man held in the highest estimation in Greece; the other was from Lord Kitchener, who was on his way back from Gallipoli, whither he had been despatched by his colleagues in the British Cabinet to report on the advisability or the reverse of abandoning that peninsula. Yet the negotiations were spun out, and it was not till November 23rd that matters were brought to a head by the presentation of a combined Note to Greece.

This Note demanded formal assurances that the allied troops should in no circumstances be disarmed and interned, but should be granted full freedom of movement, together with such facilities as had been already promised. On the other hand, the Note categorically stated that the Allies would make restitution of all territory occupied, and pay suitable indemnities. Two days afterwards, the Greek Government replied in friendly but somewhat vague terms,



Gen. Sarrail, who assumed command of the Allied Forces at Salonika, January 16th, 1916.

Digitized by Google



General Putnik, Serbia's invalid chief, conveyed in a Sedan chair across the River Drin.



Serbian engineers directing the transport of their pontoons over Mount Voshibatz.



French troops, withdrawing from Kavadar, transporting supplies by pack=horse.



A study in physical energy: Serbian heavy gun being dragged up a steep incline.





The fugitive King Peter and his escort crossing the River Orin at the foot of the Albanian Alps.

Digitized by Google

which were not considered satisfactory, and on the 26th the Entente sent a second Note, asking for a precise assurance regarding the liberty of movement of the troops. The Greek answer was liked so little that the iron hand had again to be displayed, with the result that a fortnight later Greece gave in, accepting practically all the Allies' demands, and withdrawing most of her men from Salonika, while the Gevgheli-Salonika and the Doiran-Salonika railways, with the adjacent roads and land, were handed over to the Allies. King Constantine complained that he was between the devil and the deep sea, or words to that effect, and protested that Greek neutrality was violated. But Greece, owing to her having invited the first Entente troops, was not genuinely a neutral. The King, anxious to be rid of his unwelcome guests, let it be understood that if the Allies would only retire from Greece altogether, he and his Army

retired from the Kavadar Camp with all his stores, of which there was a tremendous accumulation, and entrained at Krivolak, blowing up the bridges and tearing up the railway behind him. On December 5th he reached the north end of the Demir Kapu Ravine practically without opposition, but in the gorge he had to fight hard to get out of it. He had had the prevision, however, to form a strong bridgehead near its entrance, and this enabled him to repel the Bulgarian attacks, in spite of their being pressed home with the utmost determination. The retreat through the ravine was an extremely difficult operation, as there was no way of egress save by the single track of the railway lying on a narrow shelf cut out of the rocks beside the Vardar. Yet by December 8th the French emerged, still

December 8th the French emerged, still with all their stores, and, after having destroyed a tunnel and another bridge across the Vardar, continued their retire-

Sarrail's fighting retreat

ment to Gradetz, which had a fortified bridge-head. And here the Bulgarians attacked violently both on the 8th and 9th, but were driven off with heavy losses. On the 10th the French announced that they occupied a new front, defined by the course of the Bojimia, a tributary of the Vardar, and were in touch with the British.

It will always seem a somewhat strange thing that, though British troops arrived in Salonika in the first week of October, two months should elapse before they took any prominent part in the fighting. General Mahon reached Greece on October 12th, and General Monro a month later, but the British made no move of importance. There were some trifling encounters with outposts, and these the Athens lie-factories magnified into battles. The French bore the brunt of the struggle on the Tserna—perhaps because they were more numerous than the British, who were not actively engaged in force until the first week of December.



CROSS AND CRESCENT.
British sentry outside the Turkish Consulate at Salonika after the arrest of the Consul and his Staff.

would ensure their safe embarkation against all comers. But the Entente Powers had come to the resolve that Salonika was to be held, and Constantine's suggestion fell very flat.

Although no arrangement had been concluded between Greece and the Entente by the beginning of December, the French, under the direction of Sarrail, with General Bailloud in local command, began their retirement on the 2nd of the month. There was good reason for anticipating the result of the Greek negotiations. The French position had become a most dangerous salient, with the Bulgarians surrounding it on the north-east, north-west, and south west. Tendoroff had

and south-west. Teodoroff had brought up large forces, with plenty of artillery, from the other Bulgarian fronts where they were no longer required, and greatly outnumbered the French.

Under cover of a feigned attack on Ishtip from Kara Hodjali, Sarrail drew in his men from the Tserna, and before the enemy had realised what was going on, had



tions. The French position had become a most dangerous salient, Three enemy aeroplanes having thrown bombs on Salonika, General Sarrail, on December 30th, 1915, arrested with the Bulgarians surrounding it on the north-east, north-west,

Their trenches lay north and west of Lake Doiran, among bleak hills covered with snow, spreading out fanwise in the direction of Strumnitza, and they had taken them over from the French when the latter had gone up the Vardar to Krivolak. One of the difficulties of Sarrail's retreat was that while it was going on he was unable, owing to the

nature of the country, to maintain close communication with the British prior to the 10th.

On the east side of the Vardar Teodoroff had massed four divisions—or roughly 100,000 men—and he made his first great assault on the British in the grey of early morning, and under cover of a fog, which permitted him to get close up to the British trenches, without being clearly perceived, on December 6th. The British force opposed to this Bulgarian army—for it was nothing less—consisted of the 10th Division, which had come from Suvla Bay, and could hardly have been in anything like full strength, and supports drawn from the Salonika base. The enemy first of all poured a rain of high-explosive shell on the British trenches, which were held mainly by the Inniskillings, the Connaughts, the Munsters, and the Dublin Fusiliers—the pick of Ireland and the Hampshires. After very heavy fighting, often

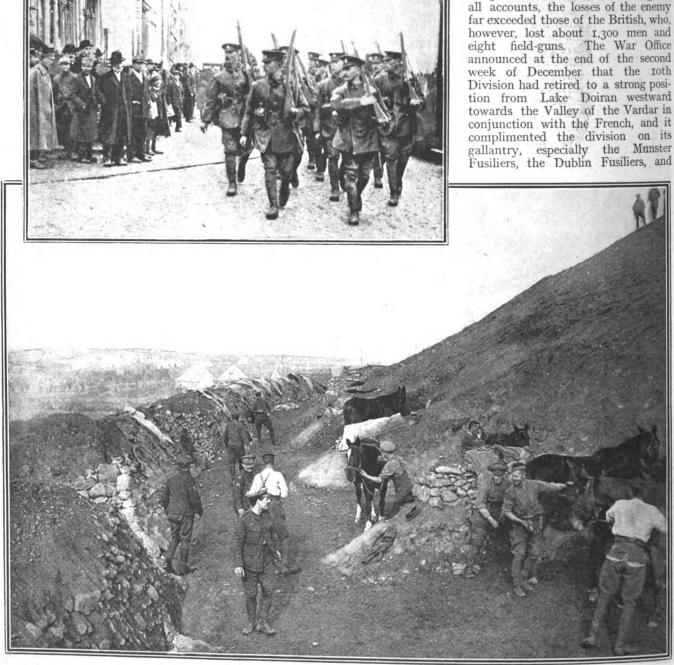
hand-to-hand, with the advantage now on one side and now on the other, the overwhelming strength of the Bulgarians told, and the British were driven out of their first line. The battle had raged all day, with hardly a pause, and it was renewed next morning with equal or even fiercer intensity.

As on the 6th, the conflict commenced with a tremendous bombardment by the Bulgarians of the British lines, and then the enemy came on, hurrahing and cheering, and threw himself in successive waves on the 10th Division, which resisting stoutly, gave ground slowly, its rate of retirement being about two miles a day, which was wonderfully little con- 10th Division's memorable stand

sidering the enormous pressure exerted by Teodoroff's four divisions. More

than once the British looked like being annihilated, but a free use of the bayonet, added to

Irish and English pluck, succeeded in extricating them from the most dangerous situations. According to all accounts, the losses of the enemy far exceeded those of the British, who, however, lost about 1,300 men and eight field-guns. The War Office announced at the end of the second week of December that the 10th Division had retired to a strong posi-tion from Lake Doiran westward towards the Valley of the Vardar in conjunction with the French, and it



A CORNER OF THE BRITISH CAMP AT SALONIKA. Stable dug-out at the foot of "Mount Arrowroot," as the soldiers called it—an official photograph, of which the Crown copyright is reserved.

Above: British patrol marching through the streets of the ancient Greek port.

the Connaught Rangers, by whose bravery the withdrawal had been successfully accomplished. It explained the loss of the guns as being due to the mountainous nature of the country, the guns being placed in a position from which it was impossible to withdraw them when the retirement took place. On December 11th the Bulgarians attacked the Allies at Furka, and were repulsed with a reported loss of 8,000 men.

Without much further fighting, the Franco - British troops on December 12th gained the other side of the frontier, having torn up the railway behind them, and fired Gevgheli and other points on the Macedonian side, so as to delay the Bulgarian advance.



ON THE SERBO-BULGARIAN FRONT.

British troops on their way to the first-line trenches. At the time the photograph was taken fighting was proceeding on the hill in the distance.

By a fortunate coincidence Greece had on the previous day agreed to accept the proposals of the Allies by which their forces were to have free and unimpeded liberty of action. Considering the difficulty of the operations in face of the immense strength of the enemy, the whole retirement, which reflected the greatest credit on General Sarrail, had been carried out most successfully. Although his men had at their disposal only one line of railway and no roads, their retreat was executed in such an orderly

manner that they were able to save and withdraw all their stores, while the total of their casualties did not exceed 3.500, a very moderate figure in the circumstances.

In reality a brilliant military achievement, the Franco-British retreat, in less skilful hands, or with less steady troops, might easily have been turned into a serious disaster for the Allies. That the expedition had to withdraw from Serbia without effecting the object for which it had entered the country was, of course, very unfortunate; but the best was certainly made of a bad job. It was

satisfactory that everything which could be saved was saved, and it was something more than satisfactory that the Bulgarians were taught several severe

Bulgarians were taught several severe lessons. According to their own version of the fighting they were everywhere victorious. One of the features of the Balkan Wars had been the extravagance and the bombast which had characterised the communiqués issued by the Bulgarians, but their statement, announcing the close of their operations in Serbia at this time, far outdid them all.

This document, published about December 14th, stated: "December 12th will remain for the Bulgarian Army and nation a day of great historical importance. The Army on that day occupied the last three Macedonian towns which were still in the hands of the enemy—namely, Doiran,



CONTRAST IN TRANSPORT.

British and Greek transport passing in the vicinity of Salonika. The small two-wheeled native carts aroused the active interest of the British soldiers.



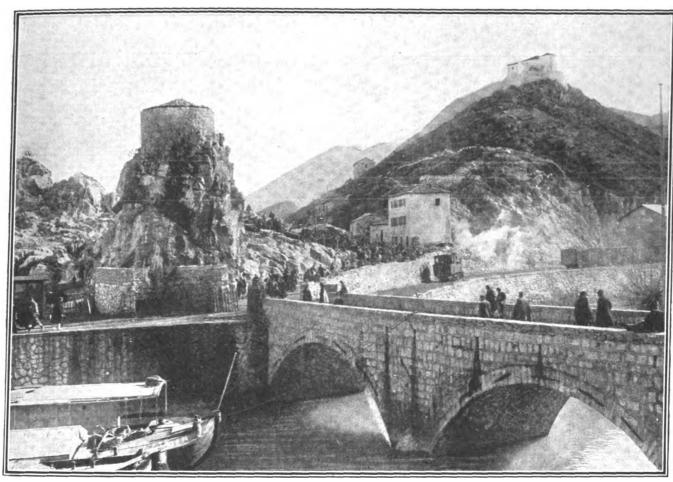
AMMUNITION FOR THE BALKAN FRONT.

Huge stacks of supplies at Salonika brought oversea, and being transferred by motor-waggons from the quays to the British lines.



MAP OF THE ROADS AND RIVERS OF MONTENEGRO.

Specially drawn to illustrate the story of the Austrian invasion of the little Slav State, and the line of retreat of the Montenegrin forces after the fall of Mount Lovtchen and Cetinje.



TERMINUS OF THE ONLY RAILWAY IN THE LAND OF THE BLACK MOUNTAIN.

The terms of surrender demanded of Montenegro by the Austrians included a clause that all communications, especially railways, should be given up to the Dual Monarchy. Owing to the mountainous condition of the country, there was only one small narrow-gauge line, which ran a distance of fourteen miles from Antivari to Virbazar on the shore of Lake Scutari.

Gevgheli, and Struga. The last fights against the British, French, and Serbians took place near Doiran and Ochrida Lakes. The enemy was everywhere beaten. Macedonia is free! Not a single hostile soldier is to be found on Macedonian soil . . . In the course of ten days the expeditionary army of General Sarrail was beaten and

Bulgarian braggadocio thrown back on neutral territory. On December 12th the whole of Macedonia was freed. The pursuit of the enemy was immediately stopped when the neutral

immediately stopped when the neutral frontier of Greece was reached." This communiqué boasted that Bulgaria had beaten Serbia in forty, and the British and French in ten, days. A semi-official paper in Sofia declared that the victories won over the "Franco-British hordes" were even more glorious than those won over the Serbians, and declared that Bulgaria had given a lesson to the so-called Great Powers, Britain and France, showing them at the same time the manner in which small nations could fight for their independence.

These preposterous statements had a certain effect throughout the Balkans, especially in Rumania, which had had, not unnaturally, very little to say, but thought a great deal, while Serbia was being crushed out of existence. Yet so far as the withdrawal of the Allies was itself concerned, the simple truth was that it was a conspicuous success, the retirement being resolved on for sufficient reason on a given date, and on the motion of the Allies themselves.

Somewhat contrary to the expectation of the Entente Powers, the Bulgarians, in obedience probably to orders received from Germany, did not cross the boundary in pursuit of the retiring allied troops, for whom there was now free passage from Doiran to Salonika, as the Greek forces,

In spite of its diminutive character, this particular line was invaluable to British nurses and a detachment of naval men from Belgrade. Our striking photograph shows the terminus at Virbazar on the Lake of Scutari. The entrance to the station is the small gate seen at the foot of the bridge on the left.

in accordance with an agreement which had been at length arrived at, had evacuated that part of the country. Germany sarcastically inquired of the Greek Government whether Greece was still neutral, but the Greeks, in whom hostility to the Bulgarians was ingrained, waited anxiously to see what turn events would immediately take.

Sofia published the most reassuring things about Bulgaria's friendliness to Greece, but somehow Athens could not quite bring herself to put her trust in these protestations—perhaps recalling how Bulgaria had similarly proclaimed her good intentions before suddenly falling on Serbia. Greece stated in almost minatory language that she could not permit her hereditary enemies, the Bulgarians, to pass the boundary. She changed her tune afterwards, but at the moment it was this attitude of hers which was at the bottom of the orders from Germany to Bulgaria, and which gave the latter pause. At any rate, Bulgarian troops did not venture across the frontier into Greece after the Allies.

Meanwhile, the French and the British had fallen back, slowly and in a somewhat leisurely fashion, on an entrenched line two or three miles on the south side

of the border. This line stretched from Karasuli on the Vardar to Kilindir on the Doiran-Salonika railway, the whole pre-

Allied line of resistance

senting a sort of bridge-head of about fifteen miles, the western moiety being in the hands of the French and the eastern in those of the British. The distance from the eastern end of this (British) front to Salonika was about thirty miles. The Allies now set strenuously to work on fortifying this line, and made it particularly strong, not so much with a view to holding up an immediate enemy advance—though that was looked and prepared for—as with the intention of

Digitized by Google'



SEARCHING THE HORIZON FOR SIGNS OF THE AUSTRO-GERMANS.

Montenegrin outpost looking for enemy artillery from a fortified position in the fork of a venerable tree.

checking and delaying him for a length of time sufficient to allow of the easy retreat of the main body of the troops to Salonika, and of the fortification on a great scale of that important sea base.

Just at first when the Allies landed at Salonika there was some uncertainty whether the port should continue to be occupied if it was found the expedition failed to save the Serbians, but the great value of the place was speedily perceived by the Entente Powers. Even if it was the fortune of war that Serbia should temporarily be lost, they came to the conclusion that it would be a grave mistake to relinquish Salonika, the possession of which was of high advantage from the military, political, and commercial standpoints.

Further, naval men suggested that if it ever passed into the power of Germany it would be made special use of as a submarine base in the Eastern Mediterranean, which would be most damaging to the allied fleets in these waters, already the scene of considerable hostile submarine activities, as was demonstrated by the sinking of not a few

The Key of
the Levant
liners, transports, and other vessels by the
enemy. As the terminus on the sea of the
great natural high-road across Serbia and
Macedonia from Belgrade through Uskub

to the Ægean, Salonika, an old town with a history of over twenty centuries behind it, ought to have been—and could have been—made one of the strong places of the world. Austria had long been aware of the high significance of the port; her policy in the Near East prior to the outbreak of the war turned on its acquisition sooner or later by her; and it was a profound disappointment to her when its possession fell to Greece as one of the results of the Balkan Wars, but she still kept her eye on it. In Turkish hands, Salonika

was more or less prosperous as a shipping centre, owing to the business of the town being conducted by Jews, who formed the vast majority of its population.

When Greece got it, little change took place, and when the troops of the Allies began to disembark there in the beginning of October, 1915, they were at once confronted with a serious difficulty in the fact of the absence of large harbour or docking accommodation. There was, besides, the further serious difficulty of obtaining space ashore for the camps and marching ground for the troops, as well as suitable stretches of level surface for aeroplanes, Greek troops being in occupation of all desirable spots. Moreover, the railway facilities, as already mentioned, were distinctly inferior.

Very little progress was made by the Entente Powers in the direction of fortifying Salonika in great strength until after the Allies were actually in retreat and on Greek soil again, because Greek troops simply blocked the way, and even interposed obstacles. It was no good-will on the part of Greece that gave Salonika to the Allies and kept it theirs during October, November, and the first half of December, but it was the powerful allied fleets, standing out in the bay, ready at any time for action, that really determined its ownership. Naval guns had

position in the fork of a action, that really determined its ownership. Naval guns had been landed and placed in position; from the ships, the country for ten or twelve miles inland was covered, and these supplied the convincing argument

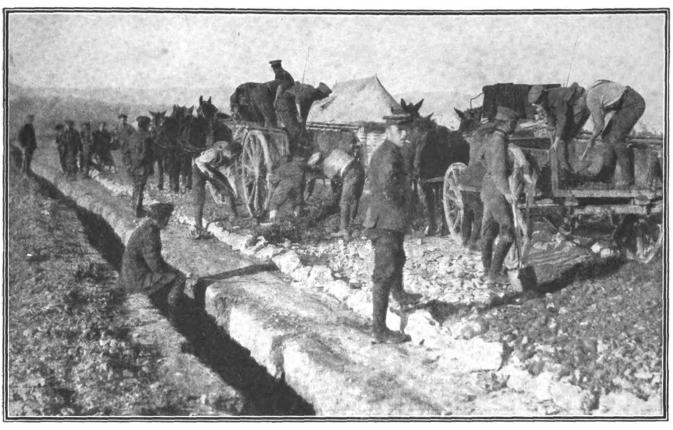
these supplied the convincing argument.

A very different state of things prevailed in and around Salonika on and after December 12th, the Entente having

at last succeeded in bringing Greece to her senses. As the Greek troops withdrew, French and British troops took their place, some being fresh arrivals, for troopships

were arriving every day, and others coming from the front. The guns, munitions, and stores of all kinds that had been evacuated from the other side of the frontier were sent on to Salonika with a minimum of delay. There were many reports that the enemy contemplated marching at once to the attack and capture of the place, and the Allies worked at fever heat to make it as formidable as possible. Steps were immediately taken to organise the semicircle of hills lying some distance to the north and north-east of the town, many Serbian refugees in addition to natives being employed on the works. In the course of a week or ten days a strongly-fortified front of hills and lakes was prepared, some fifty miles in extent, reaching on the west from the Vardar to the Gulf of Orphanos on the east, and enclosing a very considerable area, over which good roads were built, giving the Allies sufficient freedom of movement.

On December 20th Salonika saw the arrival of one of France's greatest soldiers, General Castelnau, the Chief of General Joffre's Staff—that is, of the whole French Army. He had come—rather unexpectedly, it was said—on a tour of inspection. No doubt a certain anxiety was felt in France and England with respect to the security of the Salonika position, and Castelnau had been despatched to



BRITISH ENGINEERS LAYING TRACKS IN GREECE TO FACILITATE TRANSPORT OF MEN, MUNITIONS, AND GUNS.



HOLT "CATERPILLAR" TRACTOR HAULING HEAVY ORDNANCE ALONG A MAIN ROAD OF SALONIKA.



Hardy Montenegrin soldiers going to the trenches to hold a mountain position against the invaders.

of the French or western portion of the defences, and with General Mahon he undertook an equally searching tour of the British or eastern section. Having thoroughly satisfied himself that all was well, he stated in an interview that the situation of the Allies in the Salonika sector was excellent. After spending nearly a week with Sarrail and Mahon, he paid a short visit to King Constantine on the 26th. On the same day Paris issued an official communiqué which announced that Castelnau, in concert with Sarrail and Mahon, had settled upon the plan of action by the Allies, and that he had assured the French Government that the arrangements which had been already made rendered the safety of the whole expedition absolutely certain.

This statement came as a handsome and effective set-off to a declaration which emanated about this time from Berlin that the Germans would be in occupation of Salonika

on January 15th. Perhaps an even more remarkable and satisfying answer to the German boast was given by the appearance of Salonika on Christmas Day, which was celebrated with great enthusiasm by the troops of Christmas Day in Salonika

the Allies. The Commander-in-Chief, knowing that everything was well in hand, and that his men had been having a hard and heavy task in trench-digging, gave them a holiday. The day itself was warm and bright, which helped the merry-making. Thousands took part in football, races, and games of all kinds. In the evening the camps were alive with entertainments and sing-songs. Never had Salonika seen such a Christmas Day. But the best reply of all to the German brag was the constant disembarkation of troops, many of them belonging as it happened to Scottish regiments, in large numbers, and of quantities of guns, including several batteries of heavy calibre.

The year did not close at Salonika without some sensational incidents. At ten o'clock on the morning of December 30th the enemy directed his first attack on the town by dropping bombs on it from three or four aeroplanes, which did a certain amount of damage. Two hours later other aeroplanes appeared over the town. But neither in life nor in property was there much loss to the Allies. One bomb, however, fell on a detachment of Greek troops which was carrying out manœuvres in the presence of Prince Andrew of Greece. This bombardment from the air by the enemy was a flagrant act of war, and General

PICKABACK FOR THE SLIGHTLY INJURED.

Montenegrin Red Cross workers carrying their wounded comrades out of the danger zone. They were about to embark on the Lake of Scutari.



AN URGENT CASE.

The difficulties of the ambulance men were augmented by the rough ground over which their suffering burdens had to be carried on crude stretchers. A sorely wounded veteran is seen on his way to a field hospital.

444

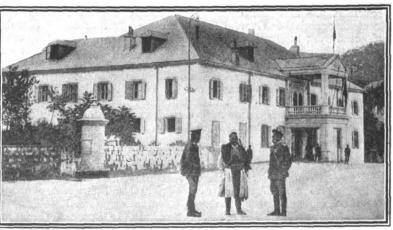
Sarrail, now in chief command of the allied forces, immediately retaliated. The warships lying in the gulf opened fire with their antiaircraft guns, but the aeroplanes were at a height of over 10,000 feet, and were not hit. French aeroplanes went up in chase of them, but were equally unsuccessful. As some such contingency as that of this air raid had been expected, certain plans to deal with it had been prepared in advance, and they were swiftly put into operation.

At four o'clock in the afternoon of the same day troops of the Allies suddenly descended on the German, Austrian, Bulgarian, and Turkish Consular buildings, and arrested the enemy Consuls and Vice-Consuls, with their families and their entire staffs. Taken completely by

## Exeunt the enemy Consuls

surprise, the Consuls and their personnel offered no resistance, and were shortly afterwards all marched down to

the quay, where they were put into boats and transferred to a battleship of the Allies. The four Consulates were taken over at once as billets for French troops. On the following day the Consuls and their belongings were on their way across the Mediterranean to some unknown destination. Later the Norwegian Consul, a pro-German, also was arrested. One of the numerous disadvantages under which the Entente Powers lay at Salonika was that the place was a nest of spies; the Consuls who had been arrested and deported had long been suspected of espionage, and abundant evidence that this was the case was discovered when The Greek their houses were searched. Government protested at this breach of Greek



CETINJE, THE CAPITAL OF EUROPE'S SMALLEST KINGDOM. The palace of King Nicholas, the venerable monarch of Montenegro.



KING NICHOLAS SEEKS REFUGE ON FRIENDLY FRENCH SOIL. The arrival of the Royal fugitive at Lyons on January 24th, 1916, in company with members of his suite. The centre group photograph, taken in France, is the Royal family. Reading from left to right: Princesses Vera,

Xenia, and Militza (wife of the Russian Grand Duke Peter Nikolaievitch), the President of the Council, M. Muskovitch, and Prince Danilo. Seated: The King and Queen of Montenegro.

"sovereignty," and the enemy Powers also protested, threatening reprisals. General Sarrail made reply that he had acted from military necessity, and he took the opportunity at this time of clearing out the swarms of spies with which Salonika was infested, and who had been unquestionably giving valuable information to the enemy. The Austrian Consulate turned out to be a miniature arsenal, hundreds of Mauser and Mannlicher rifles, besides numerous revolvers and dynamite cartridges, being found in it. Perhaps there had been a scheme to arm the mob in Salonika.

The strong measures taken by General Sarrail roused the wrath of Germany and her friends, but were welcomed in the Entente countries as evidence that the Allies were determined to carry on their campaign in the Balkans with the utmost energy and decision. A proof of this had been already exhibited a few days previously in the occupation by the Allies of Castellorizo, an island lying between Rhodes and the mainland of Asia Minor, and commanding

the Gulf of Adalia. French troops to the number of five hundred had been landed, with a view to using the place as a base in case of operations in that part of Asiatic

Turkey. The Greek Government protested, as it also did when, during the first week of January, 1916, the Allies arrested the German, Austrian, and Turkish Consular officials at Mitylene for reasons similar to those which had led to the arrests in Salonika, and placed these men and their belongings on board a ship of the Allies. Greece made a still louder outcry when, on January 11th, a detachment of French soldiers took possession and military control of the island of Corfu, but she offered no opposition. She had been informed that the Allies intended to make the island into a vast sanatorium for the Serbians. The place, however, was of considerable strategic value.

While the French and the British were strengthening

While the French and the British were strengthening their hold on Salonika in every possible way, two movements were taking place on the part of the other Allies—one, by the Italians, having a very direct bearing on the whole situation in the Balkans; and the other, by the Russians, exerting an influence less direct but of great importance.

Early in December, Italy had enormously increased the force with which she had laid her grip on Valona (or

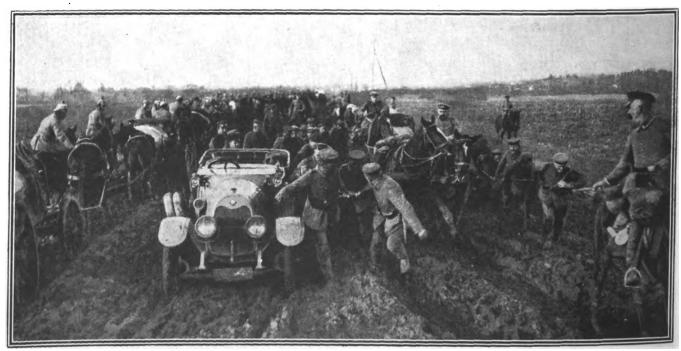
Avlona) months before. This town, often described as the "Gibraltar of the Adriatic," was not much more than fifty or sixty miles from the Italian coast, and its possession by an enemy was highly undesirable in Italian interests. On December 1st, Baron Sonnino, the Prime Minister of Italy, made a speech in which he declared that Italy was determined to do everything possible to assist the Serbian Army, and that the presence of the Italian flag on the other side of the Adriatic would also constitute a reaffirmation of Italy's traditional policy, which included the maintenance of Albanian independence.

In the first week of that month Italy despatched troops in large numbers, but almost in secret, to Valona, and continued landing them there until an army, reported to muster over 50,000 effectives, had been accumulated. With part of this force she occupied Durazzo in strength on December 21st, joining up there with Essad Pasha, the famous Albanian chief, whose sympathies were entirely pro-Serbian and anti-Austrian. Within a few days it was officially announced that he had declared war on Austria, Meanwhile Austrian warships had been

active in the Adriatic, sinking provision ships destined for the starving Serbians;

but they received a severe check on December 29th, when, in an attempt to bombard Durazzo, they were attacked by Italian and other allied vessels and defeated with a loss of two destroyers.

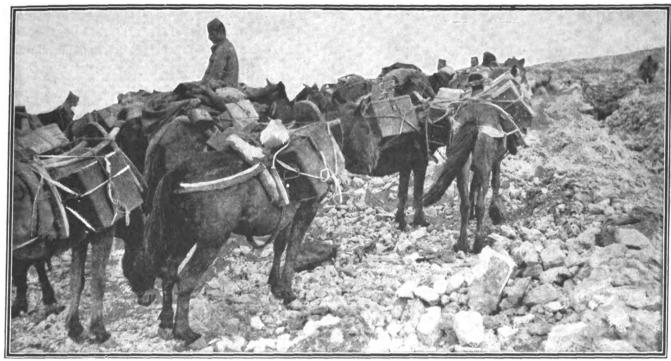
Though the Russian offensive between the marshes of the Pripet and the frontier of Rumania had nothing to do directly with the Balkans, so far as fighting in that region itself was concerned, it yet materially assisted the Allies at Salonika by drawing off from Serbia large German contingents which otherwise might have been employed in an assault on the Greek port. It was on December 27th that the Russians launched a determined and most violent attack on the Austrian positions near Czernovitz, between the Pruth and the Dniester, and simultaneously assaulted the Archduke Ferdinand's army on the Styr, and other enemy forces on the Strypa, with such embarrassing results to the Austrians that German troops had to be sent in all haste from the Balkans to their aid, and German plans, in consequence, entirely changed for the time being. In spite of these substantial German reinforcements, the Russians made considerable progress before they were



GERMAN TRANSPORT COLUMN IN DIFFICULTIES SOMEWHERE IN SERBIA.

Climatic conditions and incessant transport rendered the highways of Serbia as impassable as were the roads of Flanders during the first winter of the war. This track was little better than a ploughed field, and the

difficulties of conveying ammunition and supplies from place to place can well be imagined from this illustration, which shows an officer's car being pushed out of a rut.



HOW THE MONTENEGRINS CARRIED AMMUNITION.

Owing to the absence of roads, wheeled traffic was an impossibility. Therefore, the Montenegrin gunners had their munitions transported on the backs of their sturdy mountain ponies.

held up. While this struggle was going on, Rumania remained silent and "neutral" as before; but she must have been greatly struck by the recuperative power evinced by Russia after Germany had asserted that she and the Austrians had reduced the Tsar and his armies to impotence.

While this Russian movement was holding the stage of general attention, and nothing particular was happening at Salonika—albeit at Gallipoli there had been a startling development in the withdrawal of the Allies from that peninsula—events were taking an untoward course with respect to Montenegro. During the ten weeks in which the fourth invasion of Serbia was taking place, the world heard very little of Montenegro, though the warriors of the Black Mountain were engaged in supporting their kinsmen the Serbians all the time. Indeed, the Montenegrin Army, which for some length of time held a slice of Bosnia that it had conquered from the Austrians, formed the right flank of the whole Serbian position, and did good service during the earlier stages of the conflict, holding the enemy round Fotcha and on the Lim, a tributary of the Drina.

When Serbia was overrun, Mackensen redistributed his forces, various German and Austrian divisions being sent north to watch the Russians who, at that juncture, were rumoured to be about to make a diversion in the Balkans, either through Rumania or by a descent on the Bulgar shore of the Black Sea. German troops were transferred to Bulgaria, and even to Turkey, both of which countries were now openly "run" from Berlin. But troops were not withdrawn from the Montenegrin front; on the contrary, they were greatly increased. Just as Austria hated Serbia with a deadly hatred, so she hated this still smaller Slav State which, with a population of less than

Fate decides against
Montenegro

half a million, had been long independent
of her as of Turkey. Austria determined
to destroy it. The undertaking was difficult, because of the almost inaccessibly

mountainous character of the country and the bravery of its inhabitants, who were inured to war and every kind of hardship, like the Serbians; but it was not impossible, if men and guns were provided in adequate strength. What could be done in Serbia could be done in Montenegro.

As far back as the beginning of November it was announced from Rome that Austria was assembling a force of three army corps in Herzegovina to attack Montenegro

from that side. There were also available the Austrian troops already in Serbia on the Montenegrin eastern frontier, to say nothing of the Bulgarians who so far assisted Austria as to take Djakova on December 3rd. The whole expedition was placed under the direction of Von Kövess shortly after the fall of Mitrovitza. King Nicholas was not

ignorant of what was coming. At the end of November, after Serbia had been crushed, he issued a proclamation

to his people, in which he said that Montenegro, faithful to her traditions, would resist to the death, preferring death to slavery. He went on to state that the Allies had charged themselves with the supply of the Army and population of Montenegro. Supply was always a great trouble in that poor little land, and, when the Serbian refugees came flocking in, it became an insoluble problem, unless with much help from outside, which was not always forthcoming.

Although the Austrians advanced during December some distance on the east side, or Sanjak front, capturing Plevlie, Ipek and Bielopolie, their great offensive did not start till January, 1916. In the interval the Montenegrins had at least one considerable victory, at Lepenatz, but in general they were driven steadily back. In the last days of the year Mount Lovtchen was heavily shelled, and then attacked in some force, but the Montenegrins were successful in repelling this assault on their stronghold. It was not till January 6th that Kövess began decisive operations by a series of concerted violent attacks on the Montenegrin east front, on the Tara, the Lim and the Ibar, while at the same time warships in the Gulf of Cattaro opened a terrible fire on Mount Lovtchen.

Desperate fighting continued for four days. Berane, on the Lim, was captured by the Austrians on the 10th; and, far more important, Lovtchen succumbed on the same day to infantry assaults prepared by the fire from the warships. Some surprise was expressed among the other Allies that the fortress should have fallen in such a short time, but the feeling changed when it became known that the place was defended by less than 6,000 men—starving, with insufficient clothing, and lamentably short of guns and munitions. With Lovtchen gone, Cetinje could not be held by the Montenegrins, and it was occupied by the Austrians on the 13th. Four days later the announcement was made in the Hungarian Parliament that Montenegro had "surrendered unconditionally," but the subsequent

telegrams that almost immediately arrived from Italy and Montenegro dealing with the subject cast a great deal of doubt and uncertainty on what had exactly occurred. And this obscurity cannot be said to have been wholly cleared up at the time this chapter of the Balkan story was written (February 5th, 1916).

When it was publicly announced that Lovtchen had

been taken by the Austrians there was great rejoicing in Berlin, and the tremendous strategic importance of the

stronghold, as against Italy, was dwelt on with enormous complacency by the Germanic But when the news Press. flashed over the wires that Montenegro had capitulated there was the wildest jubilation throughout Germany and Austria, and the other Allies were bid to see in her fate and in that of Serbia a sure prophecy of what the future had in store for themselves. Then were published in a wellknown Vienna journal what purported to be the conditions imposed by the victor, and they proved to be harsh and brutal in the extreme. Next there was a curious, a strange silence. Things did not seem to be going just as anticipated by the enemy.

Meanwhile among the Allies, who had not expected that the Montenegrins would give in so quickly, there was much criticism of the little State's surrender, which it was suggested-and not without some show of reason - had been inspired for dynastic purposes by the pro-Austrian section of the Montenegrin Court. It was even asserted that King Nicholas had secretly come to terms with Austria weeks before the fall of Lovtchen, and that the resistance put up by the Montenegrins was unreal and of a purely theatrical character. It was recalled that the wife of the Montenegrin Crown Prince was a German princess. It was said that a compact was in existence, and had been in existence for a

couple of months, by which

Montenegro agreed to hand Lovtchen over to the Austrians in return for Scutari. While these things were being canvassed and discussed, it was rather forgotten that the Montenegrins had been short of food-and short, in fact, of everything-and that their small Army, plus such Serbians as were able to fight in its ranks, was outnumbered by the Austrians by more than twenty to one, a circumstance quite sufficient in itself to account for the capitulation.

Then, in the midst of this strange silence from Germany and Austria, there appeared an official statement from Sir J. Roper Parkington, the Consul-General for Montenegro in London, who said that King Nicholas and his Government had peremptorily refused all the Austrian conditions, and that Montenegro would continue to fight to the last. This communiqué also said that the false insinuations of which Montenegro had been the victim, based on the mendacious reports of the enemy, had caused a most

painful impression A somewhat similar statement was issued from the Montenegrin Consulate at Rome. People hardly knew what to think, till in the fourth week of January the Montenegrin Premier, M. Muskovitch, issued a Note admitting there had been negotiations with Austria, but asserting that the purpose behind these negotiations had been to gain time to ensure the retreat and evacuation of the Montenegrin Army towards Pod-goritza and Scutari, as well as to give opportunity for the Serbian troops to leave Podgoritza and Scutari for Alessio and Durazzo. On January 23rd King Nicholas was in Rome, and shortly afterwards he journeyed to Lyons, where his queen had preceded him, and there, thanks to the courtesy of the French, the Montenegrin Government was temporarily established. The Austrians continued their advance, occupying Scutari on the 23rd, and San Giovanni di Medua on the 25th. By the end of January Austria was in full occupation of Montenegro, and was advancing south towards Durazzo, to meet Essad Pasha and the Italians.

Little happened for some weeks at Salonika after the arrest of the enemy Consuls and the clearing out of the spies. Everywhere the place was made stronger and stronger. East of it General Sarrail made its position still more secure by blowing up the railway bridge at Demir

Hissar, on the line running towards Bulgarian territory. Additional reinforcements were constantly being landed at the Greek port. But up to the end of the first week of February no attack had been attempted by the enemy except by occasional aeroplanes. German Kaiser at Nish in the middle of January as "Imperator, Cæsar et Rex."



This was hardly what was meant when King Ferdinand of Bulgaria saluted the

After the capture of Mount Lovtchen, Cetinje, and San Giovanni di Medua the Austrians advanced south towards Durazzo, which had been captured by the Italians.

<sup>\*\*\*</sup> A vivid personal narrative of the tragic retreat from Serbia across the snow-bound passes of Montenegro will be included in Volume VI. of THE GREAT WAR. This chapter will be from the pen of Mr. and Mrs. Claude Askew, the well-known novelists, who did much valuable hospital work for the Serbian Army, shared its adventures, and were among the last to leave.

